

MMORPG: REBIRTH OF THE LEGENDARY GUARDIAN

BOOK 03

Flying Alone

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

MMORPG: Rebirth of the Legendary Guardian

(Wǎngyóu zhī zhàn yù tiānxià) (网游之战御天下)

by **Flying Alone**(孤单地飞)

Synopsis

The phoenix is a creature of legends, a wonder of the world, an imagery of life and destruction. This fabled creature signifies the rise of a hero in a virtual world where battles occur for the sake of honor and glory!

Zhang Yang was a professional gamer in the first and most fantastic game that revolutionized the world: God's Miracle. A game where traditional knowledge in RPGs did not matter anymore, players would have to manually target and evade attacks, giving rise to a significant gap in skill between a professional and an amateur gamer.

Zhang Yang's downfall came a little too soon. His girlfriend was snatched, his guild was harassed and disbanded, and he was even driven to commit suicide! Jumping off the top floor of a hotel, Zhang Yang seemed as though he was soaring like a phoenix. Little did he know that the end of his life also signified his rise from the ashes!

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by EndlessFantasy Translation @ Qidian International

Translation Edits by EndlessFantasy Translation @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 201: Yang Zhi Xian

Yang Zhi Xian only deepened her frown and expressed her disgust. However, she remained quiet. Her silence towards Fatty Han sent the message that she would never lower herself to talk to a person of his stature.

Li Ru giggled. "Yang Zhi Xian. I've not seen you in 4 years. Your temper seems to be much better now!"

"Please." Yang Zhi Xuan only replied with a single word.

What an arrogant and prideful lady!

Looking at the lady, fully clad in branded clothing, she looked like she came from a wealthy background. No one dared to put up a face publicly and kept their judgment by themselves. They went back to the dishes and let things run its course. The world won't stop turning just for one person. It's best not to think too egoistically!

Zhang Yang only smiled knowingly. Even though Yang Zhi Xian tried her best to play the role as the cool and noble beauty, he saw right through her immediately. This was not her true nature, but a persona, carefully crafted to express her apparent status.

To put it bluntly, it's an expression derived from psychological motivations. When one encounters a true lady, the person would consciously try to imitate the behavior as she would deem it superior and exemplary. Yet, if she could not behave like the original, she'll end up...weird and strange. Something would be off. She would fail to portray the true noble-like behavior, turning out egotistical, rude, and stand-offish.

A good example would be Sun Xin Yu. That was what a real, cool, ice queen should look and behave like. She does what she thinks, and whenever she encounters anything that does not sit right with her, she would immediately take action. She would do it without fail as it's her true nature!

People true to themselves would not need to put up any pretenses. It would naturally be expressed out.

After a short period of silence, the noise returned and the atmosphere in the hall returned to its liveliness.

At the table, Yang Zhi Xian was always clicking her tongue with a cold, patronizing grimace. As she turned to the left, a "tsk" could be heard. As she turned to her right, another "tsk" came again. She was disgruntled, dissatisfied with something, apparently, and she made a huge show out of it.

At one point, Fatty Han could take it no more. Just when he was eating happily, he would raise his head to see a blackened, disgusted face! How could he even eat in peace! He laughed awkwardly again and said, "Yang Zhi Xian. So, where are you working?"

If it was Sun Xin Yu, she would not even be bothered to look at you, much less answer your question! You could reel in the moon

and blacken the sun, but she would still ignore your entire existence. On the other hand, this lady, who loved to put up airs, pretended to stall a little but eventually replied to Fatty Han in a rather happy tone. "It's nothing. I'm working as a deputy chief in the Industry and Commerce Bureau in Chang Lang province."

"Is that real!?" Wang Hai was the first to be startled. His face was filled with excitement and shock. "You just graduated recently and was able to work in the government as a chief!? Oh my lord, that's Industry and Commerce Bureau we're talking about. The most lucrative department!"

Zhao Hui Shan looked like she was forming an alliance with Fatty Han. Among the 3 Queens, despite Li Ru being the wealthy widow due to her million-dollar inheritance, Yang Zhi Xian seemed to be in an even better position!

No matter how much money Li Ru had, everyone knew that she had obtained that money by selling her own body for it. With the tag "lonely widow" on her head, everyone else would want to have her as their own. She was no threat to Zhao Hui Shan!

But Yang Zhi Xian was different. Back in high school, she was called the genius girl and the beauty queen! And, right now, she bore the aura of nobility with a rather good position in society. In an instant, she had managed to place a huge gap between them. Others could only gaze up to her as if she was higher than anyone of them.

The meal, the gathering they were having right then was all because of her and Zhou Kang Ming! But when people like Fatty Han, Li Ru, Yang Zhi Xian had appeared and grabbed the spotlight, Zhao Hui Shan had been left wordless.

She laughed lightly and said, "I heard that to climb ladders in the department is easy as unbuckling one's pants. The leader would surely obliged!"

What a poisonous utterance!

Zhang Yang truly believed that if Sun Xin Yu was here and heard what Zhao Hui Shan had just said, the latter's face would have a reddish hand print on her cheek. However, after listening, Yang Zhi Xian only smiled and replied evenly. "My father is the Head of Magistrate of the Cang Lang province."

Head of Magistrate! That is a Provincial officer leader! It's the same as local governor.

No wonder! Hah! No wonder! Everyone exchanged a look in understanding. They turned back to Yang Zhi Xian, and looked at her with a sense of respect. A citizen cannot compete with an Official, that was the beliefs of the people of China since the ancient times!

Zhang Yang returned to gaze at her seemingly nonchalant, casual expression. He could easily observe and detect, she was actually expressing a hint of pleasure. From the slow beginning, to when she revealed the information about her father, Yang Zhi Xian wanted to experience the shock of the crowd!

And she had pulled it off successfully!

Back to when he was in high school, Yang Zhi Xian was the one who Zhang Yang admired the most. He really loved her conduct and elegance. However, as how things were now, he would not even think of marrying this woman. Even if he wanted to get back to her, he would completely start over again, he would only do it for the fun of it. Once a relationship with her carries on for a longer period of time, no one could possibly endure her snobbish attitude.

To qualify as a true beauty, a beautiful face alone is not enough to pass the bar. Without a sense of independence, a beauty would be no different from a pretty picture. Back in ancient china, a so-called classic beauty would need to be good with the ancient Chinese music instrument, Gu Qin, Chinese Chess, books, drawing, calligraphy and more!

Zhao Hui Shan was bitter. But just as she was about to sulk even more, she had a sudden realization. Among the three-beauty queens, she was the least successful one. One had a million-dollar inheritance. The other was the daughter of a Head of Magistrate! As for her, her family background was rather normal. Even though she managed to got herself a rich husband, how could she compare herself with the other two?

Because of that, Zhao Hui Shan had failed in her intention to further shame Zhang Yang. She lowered her head in silence and ate the meal in front of her, licking her own wounds quietly.

The entire hall was still rather lively. Many of them were still

drinking and chatting happily. Slowly, they spent close to two hours in the dining hall before one by one, they started to leave.

Zhou Kang Ming eyes was filled with lust and depravity, glancing with every chance, at Li Ru's magnificent chest and called out. "Guys! Everyone! Since it's such a rare occasion for all of us to gather together, shall we continue the party? How about a trip to the KTV Karaoke center?!"

"Oh! Sounds good!"

"Nah, we can't make it. We left our baby back at home and got to go back soon!"

"I'll go! I'll go!"

"GRAH! What a shame! I've work tomorrow!"

A part of the crowd could join, while the others had to leave the party. After a headcount, there were about 40 people that had to go back to take care of their children, others had to work tomorrow and rest early. In the end, only 12 remained.

Zhang Yang wanted to leave but he was dragged along again, by Fatty Han. Fatty Han had successfully hooked up with a former member of the Disciplinary Committee. Because of that, he wanted Zhang Yang to tag along and have a good time at the karaoke center.

When they leave the building, Zhang Yang whispered to Fatty Han. "You fat f*ck! Didn't you once hate Wu Hai Li?"

Wu Hai Li was the Disciplinary Committee of the class they were in back then. Whenever Zhang Yang and Fatty Han got into trouble, Wu Hai Li was almost always responsible because of her whistle-blowing tendencies. That got them to write dozen of books worth of punishment writing. Back then, wherever Fatty Han heard the name Wu Hai Li, he would grit his teeth so hard and he could grind them into bits.

Fatty Han laughed. "That's because we deserved it back then. Right now, I'm going to drill her, like really drill her, as payback for what she did to us!"

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes. Fatty Han was truly beyond saving.

Back at the parking lot, Fatty Han gallantly dragged Wu Hai Li by the hand to ride along in his car. He turned around and told Zhang Yang, "Bro, this car has no more space for you now! How about you join that Li Ru chick?"

He flabby hands pointed at the smiling Li Ru.

"Zhang Yang! Join me! Let's ride!" Li Ru waved at Zhang Yang.

Now that it has come to this, Zhang Yang had no choice but to sit in Li Ru's Ferrari.

Right then, everyone could easily distinguish those who had a fortune and those who did not. Fatty Han has his Maserati, Li Ru had her Ferrari, both of their cars are world famous sport cars. Some had cars that at most cost around 200,000 to 300,000, while the majority of them had cars that only cost around 100,000 dollars.

Watching the Maserati and Ferrari driving off, leaving only a trail of dust behind them, the crowd was filled with both admiration and envy. Zhao Hui Shan was even madder. Blood had already drained off her face. Clenching her fist with pure rage, she turned to see Zhou Kang Ming's own 600,000 dollar Toyota. She got into the co-driver's seat and slammed the door with great force. Her face turned bitter.

Zhou Kang Ming had no reaction to what that had just transpired. Which could only mean that his attention was no longer on Zhao Hui Shan. Compared to Zhao Hui Shan's natural beauty, Li Ru's mature style had awoken a new kind of itch in him. When he was still in high school, he had always known that Li Ru was a sl*t. Now that she had lost a husband, he would not believe that the woman could endure being alone for long! If he could just put some effort, he believed he could reel in the widow, and then he would kill two birds with one stone, claiming both her fortune and her body.

But, it would be even better if he could get his hands-on Yang Zhi Xian as well. If he did, he could be living together with all 3 beauty queens! That would really be realizing his lifelong dream!

With a lewd smirk, Zhou Kang Ming started his car and drove out

of the parking lot.

• • •

The sound of the Ferrari engine roared through the narrow roads of Zhou Su City.

"Hey Hey! You're not really trying to cause an accident, do you?!" cried Zhang Yang as he tried to stabilize himself in the car. Watching cars being overtaken by this red sport car at an incredible speed, Zhang Yang could not help but to feel and make a show of his horror. Even though he had died once, it had not turned him into a daredevil! On the contrary, it would be the lamest thing for him to die in a car accident!

Li Ru laughed loudly, shaking wildly as she laughs, causing her massive jugs to jiggle about vigorously! "What's wrong, Zhang Yang? Back then, you're the one people called the daredevil of the school! Was it all a facade of Zhang Yang the scaredy-cat?"

Zhang Yang forced himself to laugh. "I'm not afraid of fighting! But I do not wish to die in vain in a car accidental!"

SKREEEE!

Li Ru hit the brakes suddenly. The tremendous inertia and pushed Zhang Yang forwards and slammed him face first onto the dash board. He would have broken his nose if he had not shielded himself with his arms.

He was not wearing his seatbelt.

"WHAT THE F—" Zhang Yang turned around to faced her. But just as he was about to give her his piece of mind, Li Ru had already caught hold of him and laid him on her lap. She pulled his chin up and planted a deep, passionate kiss onto his lips.

"Ooh~ You naughty boy!" After a while, Li Ru withdrew from the kiss. She looked down to him, with sparkling eyes of lust as she spoke to him playfully.

Zhang Yang didn't know what to think, or feel. Instinctively, he tried to push her away but found his hands sinking deep into her voluptuous breasts! A wonderful, blissful, feeling that you would usually find in heaven -- rushed across his palms. That sudden jolt of sensation left his hands resting there for a little too long. From the looks of it, it looked like he intentionally did it.

"I can explain!" cried Zhang Yang. Colors had vanished from his face. His senses were just beginning to return!

"Trying to give an excuse would only mean you're guilty!" said Li Ru. She raised her hands and ran them down her own red-color lips, tasting her own fingers. She then put her index finger into her mouth and licked it ever so sexily. She moaned and touched herself as if tasting the remaining saliva on her lips had given her the ultimate pleasure.

"I have been wanting to kiss you since five years ago! Now, my

wish has come true! Ah! That felt really good!"

Chapter 202: A Meeting Of Chance At The Karaoke

There is a song out there with lyrics that goes like this: "A woman's heart is like a puzzle~"

Zhang Yang did not understand what was happening to him. Could it be? That he was reborn with the hidden attribute of a bastard?! Sun Xin Yu wanted him to be her boyfriend (well, technically, he did ask for it), Li Ru has this "I've been m*st*rb*t*ng to you for several years" kind of look on her! If he had not died and had his rebirth, he would have quickly hopped onto this train of pleasure and went off to sexville. However, this time, in his better sense of mind, he could not possibly accept things lying down like this -- literally!

The gods must be crazy! How could they just toy with his life! Zhang Yang had never wished to be the center of a huge harem! Why would the gods keep sending these minxes to compel him into committing such sins!

But what Zhang Yang did not know, was that a woman's heart was much simpler than he could imagine. Women view romance in a simpler way than men believe it to be. For starters, the men that they would like should have these three attributes: Handsome. Smart. Famous. Zhang Yang did not have superstar handsome looks, but he was tall and buffed. Moreover, he was, in fact, one of the famous boys in high school! That time, Li Ru falling in love with Zhang Yang was no accident. Following the years after, she had dropped out of university to be married to an old and ugly gold mine. Every time she slept, she would have dreams of her first

love, and that was Zhang Yang.

That being said, back then, Li Ru was not truly aware of her own crush on Zhang Yang. But after her marriage, she was constantly comparing her husband and Zhang Yang, creating her own fantastical image of Zhang Yang, intensifying her love towards Zhang Yang. Perhaps, the one she had really fallen in love is not the current Zhang Yang, but the high school delinquent. These pure and innocent emotions, sculpted the perfect Zhang Yang in her own mind.

Li Ru started her car again and drove off. This time, she drove normally, without speeding off like a F1 driver. She rolled down the driver's window and let the wind blow her hair off randomly. She had a smile on her face. Her smile was rather genuine and happy, as if she had never experienced true happiness for a long time. "I love this feeling. The sensation when you let the wind to blow you away. That feeling of freedom and I can just forget about anything I want! That is why I love to drive!"

By the looks of it, Zhang Yang could clearly see that even though she had inherited a large fortune, she had also been burdened by something unseen.

"My husband had no legitimate kids. However, he had many nephews and nieces. Those little buggers have been harassing me for a while. Pestering me to give up my dead husband's inheritance. They have been throwing all sort of insults at me. They called me a sly fox. They called me a witch. They said that I did no deserve to inherit anything! But, all I see and hear are the same thing! They just want the money!"

Zhang Yang listened to her complains and turned to his window. As lights and shadows came through the car, illuminating the interior momentarily, he replied. "It's their right to speak, and your right to ignore. Don't mind about the others."

Li Ru was surprised at his words and smiled happily. "Well... what they say was true anyway. I did cause my husband's death." Her face turned solemn. "That old man had a weak heart. One fateful night, when he was on the bed with me. I wanted to give him a rather nice son! But, little did I know, sex is rather cruel. To have the ultimate pleasure in bed is truly a dream. But he was old, his body didn't work the way it used to be. He had to rely on drugs and supplements if he wanted to have me in bed. Eventually, one thing led to the other. He died in my arms."

She scoffed. "Still. I had it better when he's gone. I do have to see his ugly face anymore. You have to know that when my parents saw their son-in-law, they thought he was my husband's grandfather! Grandfather! Do you understand how serious is this matter was? After I cleared things up with my parents, they scolded me that night and even refused to attend the reception! I had shamed my family!"

Zhang Yang remained quiet the whole time. Even though they were old friends, neither of them were really close enough to reveal deep secrets to each other like in such manner.

Realizing his silence, Li Ru finally stopped talking and drove on through the night. Neither of them looked at each other after that. After approximately 10 minutes, Li Ru drove into a parking lot. The two of them remained silent as they got down the car and walked away. A short distance away, Zhou Kang Ming and the rest of the merry little band were already waiting.

"What took you so long?" said Zhou Kang Ming as his eyes flitted repeatedly between Zhang Yang and Li Ru suspiciously. His voice had a trace of jealousy as he spoke.

On the other side, Fatty Han's right arm was around the slim waist of Wu Hai Li. He had completely seduced and "claimed" her. "Zhao Kang Ming. What does his tardiness have to do with you?"

Li Ru smiled playfully, "I was shagging Zhang Yang on my way here! That's why I was late!"

After she said that, everyone was completely dumbfounded. To count the time they had taken from the hotel to here, they were only late by a few minutes. No matter how quickly some people did it, they couldn't have actually done the deed as she claimed. But, that was beside point. To think that she would dare use that term to joke around, it was only further testament to her boldness. Furthermore, she had only allowed Zhang Yang in her car and no one else. Who else is there to say otherwise?

Zhou Kang Ming got even more jealous. Truthfully, Zhao Hui Shan was not as pretty and alluring as Li Ru, but they say that a wild flower would bloom better than a potted flower! What you cannot own makes it even more valuable to you. Since Zhao Kang Ming was aiming to "own" Li Ru and everything that she had, it was just a natural reflex to direct jealousy and hatred towards Zhang Yang.

"Let's go! Let's blow our vocal cords out!"

Everyone walked away from the parking lot and headed into a karaoke center called "Dream City". This time, it was Zhao Kang Ming who paid the fees and got them a private room to sing in. After the transaction was made, a beautiful usherette led the little party into a large room.

Everyone got themselves a large case of beer and started to sing with the lights dimmed down. As the lights dimmed, everyone grabbed the microphones and sand with the beer in their hands.

Yang Zhi Xian did not know what to think then. Although she was constantly putting on airs, like she was looking down on everyone, but eventually, she did come along. However, she was hiding silently in one corner, occasionally glancing over at Li Ru and Zhao Hui Shan.

Perhaps she was silently judging the two ladies who were respectively once the class queen and as well as the school queen with her keen eyes.

Zhang Yang did not sing along. He opened a bottle of beer, blew the cap off the mouth, and gulped the beer down. He turned around the room and found Fatty Han and Wu Hai Li snooping around in one corner. Even though the lights was dimmed down, he would make out their silhouette. Both of them were practically stuck to each other like sandwiches. Now, even though he could not make out what they were actually doing, even an idiot could easily guess it right. Still, the man was unmarried, and the same goes to the woman, no matter what they did was none of Zhang Yang's business.

Zhou Kang Ming was the mic hogger. Even when his singing was always out of tune, he would still hold onto the mic without giving a chance to others. He had even winked at Li Ru seductively, earning the rage of Zhao Hui Shan. Even thought it was rather dark, her glowing red cheeks could practically set the room on fire.

"Li Ru! Let's sing this together!" Zhou Kang Ming had purposely picked a duet and boldly asked Li Ru to be his partner.

Glancing back at Zhao Hui Shan with a pitiful eye, she understood how she felt and shook her head. "Sorry. I don't know this song."

"That cannot be! We all know that you were practically a superstar back in high school! In fact, we still know that you can be a superstar someday! How could you not sing this song?!" Zhou Kang Ming was borrowing the power of the alcohol in him to speak so boldly.

Zhao Hui Shan had finally snapped. She got up. "Kang Ming! I'm heading out to buy a few things. Come with me!" She pulled him, or rather, dragged him out of the room to, obviously, give him a piece of her mind.

By the time the angry couple came back, Zhang Yang and Li Ru were singing the very song that Zhou Kang Ming had picked

earlier!

It was like a tight slap to the face!

Zhou

Kang Ming sulked. If his self-consciousness was any good, he would have already picked up the telltale sign that Li Ru had no interest in him! He managed to "own" Zhao Hui Shan by baiting her with his money! However, Li Ru was a rich widow! What would money do to her? She could have several more digits behind her fortune, what reason was there for her to look up to Zhou Kang Ming?

Why! Why!?

Zhao Kang Ming could not understand it! He wanted to humiliate Zhang Yang, but nothing ever went past the planning stage. Before he could throw the first strike, he had already been slapped in the face multiple times! How did that happen?

Zhang Yang sang the song together with Li Ru because he was forced to do so. After that one song, Zhang Yang quickly went back to his seat and glued himself to it. No matter how Li Ru tried to push, dragged, and persuade, Zhang Yang was determined to remain stationary.

The singing continued on for another hour. By then, Zhang Yang had already drunk 4 to 5 bottles of beer. A sudden discomfort

struck Zhang Yang. It was like his arse was about to explode. He quickly got out of the room to find a toilet, only to realize that the establishment did not have one. He had to leave the center entirely. Toilets were only available at the end of buildings around here.

After taking his time to answer nature's call, Zhang Yang exited the toilet and returned to the karaoke room. Just when he was about pull the door, he heard a loud 'thud' coming from the room opposite. He saw a shadowy figure bumping against the wall.

"Haha! Miss Yu! Don't be shy! Come back! Let's sing a little more!" Immediately, a rather large middle-aged man, with a huge beer belly came out. He reeked of alcohol. The first person who came out of the room was a young lady, around the age of her early twenties. She had the most alluring body; with full frontal peaks and a curvaceous butt. Her face was flushed red. It was not the kind of red you see on a shy person, but rather, the red cheeks, of a person who has clearly drank too much. Her eyes were out of focus. In her dazed, disoriented struggle, she cried out, "No! I-I-I can't drink anymore! I'm going back!"

The man smirked slyly and grabbed the woman. "Going home? Sure! I'll send you home!" said the man as he grabbed the woman and pulled her forcefully back into the room.

Zhang Yang hand was already holding on the door knob, but when he saw the face of the woman, Zhang Yang instinctively walked up to her and grab the woman's other free hand.

The man felt a sudden jerk. He pulled the woman again only to

find that she would not budge. He turned around to see a huge man holding on to her hand. Annoyed, he scolded. "What are you doing! Let her go!"

Zhang Yang calmly replied the middle-aged man with a low voice whist staring straight into him. "Didn't you hear what Teacher Yu said? She wants to go home, yet you're dragging her back into the room. What are you planning?"

"Teacher...Yu?" the man was stunned and quickly expressed an understanding emotion. "I see that you're Miss Yu's student! Don't worry! There's nothing to fuss about. We're singing and drinking together with a couple more colleagues from work!"

"Zhang...Zhang Yang?" the woman tried her best to lift her head. Her hands reached out and grabbed to Zhang Yang sleeves tightly, her expression terrified. "S-Save me!" she pleaded.

This woman was clearly one of the lecturers that had taught Zhang Yang in university.

Zhang Yang nodded confidently and said, "Teacher Yu! Worry not. I shall send you back home!"

"Don't you dare walk away!" the middle-aged man was obviously infuriated. His hand was still holding onto Yu Li's feeble wrist. "Mind you own business, boy! Leave!"

As he spoke, another man came out from the room. "Chief Qian,

is there something wrong?"

He revealed his face and Zhang Yang could easily recognize the man. He was the Dean F.I.C.T (Faculty of Information, Computing, and Technology). His name was Hou Bi Hua. Since he was not really good person in the campus, students had given him a nick name, Monkey Butt.

When Monkey Butt saw Zhang Yang, he was stunned. Zhang Yang recognized him but the same was not the case for the other party. Afterall, there were so many students in the entire campus, he could not possibly remember all of their faces! He was annoyed. "Who are you!? Trying to act like a thug?"

Zhang Yang laughed boldly. "I'm not trying to, I'm the real thing! At least, I'm not some pretentious bastard that look all righteous while planning to harass a girl. You're the ones acting!"

"Bullsh*t! Let her go now! Or I'll call security!" Monkey Butt started to threaten Zhang Yang.

"Hmph!" Zhang Yang scoffed and with lightning speed, he threw a punch at the shoulder of the person called "Chief Qian". The pain was unbearable that the man let her go in reflex. Zhang Yang quickly walked up, covering Yu Li behind him and readied his fist. "Monkey Butt. You can try, if you dare!"

When he heard Zhang Yang called him Monkey Butt, he knew instantly that Zhang Yang was a student from his university. His heart sank.

This outing was all for the university president's nephew, the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen. He had an eye for Yu Li and had requested Monkey Butt to pull a few strings to get them together. However, Monkey Butt knew that Yu Li was not the kind of woman who would spread her legs for money. If that had been the case, he would have gotten onto her earlier! So, make it less sketchy, he invited a few more lecturers from his own faculty and made the encounter with Qiang Hong Wen, purely coincidental.

Everyone had started a drinking session and at Monkey Butt's direction, the other lecturers had pushed Li Ru to drink. With no effort at all, they had successfully made her drunk. The rest of the lecturers were proactive and quickly left with many random excuses. The remaining people in the room were Monkey Butt, Qian Hong Wen, and the heavily intoxicated Yu Li.

Tipsy and dizzy, Yu Li sense their ill intentions and and had quickly decided to leave the room. However, she was so dizzy that she needed the wall to support herself. If she had not drawn Zhang Yang's attention, she would have been dragged into the room and the following events that could have unfolded would have been most undesirable.

This could have been the start of her downfall from his past life!

If Zhang Yang was indeed a student from his university, he could use his authority to pressurize him. If he wasn't, what that is about to follow would be a little rough. Monkey Butt looked at Zhang Yang with a deathly stare and asked. "What year did you

graduate?"

Monkey Butt – The author used a word play that sounded the same but writes differently. The Chinese word used was 候, which sounds Hou, the same as 猴. 猴 means monkey. 毕, sounds Bi while 屈sounds Pi, but meant butt. Thus, the word play 候毕, 猴屁, Hou Bi (Pi), monkey's butt.

Chapter 203: Rage For The Damsel

Zhang Yang ignored him completely and turned to Yu Li. "Teacher Yu! Let's go!"

Qian Hong Wen was immensely angered. He threw his arms across, grabbed Zhang Yang's shoulders, and turned him around forcefully. "What do you think you're doing?! Leave the woman behind!"

A few days back, Qian Hong Wen was in the campus to meet up with his uncle. Coincidentally, he saw Yu Li when she was bending over to pick up the books that she had accidentally dropped. That moment, he saw her plump little butt plastered against the fabric of her skirt. The perfect peach-like contour was so vividly pressed out, that he could see a hint of butt-cleavage between the two bumps. A boiling wave of lust surged out and he hated the fact that he could not just rush in to grab those perfect melons! All he wanted to do was to thrust himself between that perfectly formed gap! When Yu Li straightened up, he saw her face, which was as beautiful as a super star's! The lust in him rose up like bile and he could not just let her go!

Qian Hong Wen knew that Hou Bi Hua (Monkey Butt) was working hard for a promotion! So, Qian Hong Wen used that to bait the man, hinting that all he wanted was to get her into his lap. If he could do it, promotion would be in hand. Without any further thought, Monkey Butt accepted the offer!

The plan was laid out smoothly. The little sheep was about to land into the mouth of the wolf, when someone unexpectedly

appeared to interrupt. Like having cold water poured over his head, how could Qian Hong Wen remain calm! As a Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief, he was still a Deputy Chief of a governmental institution! If he wanted to get down with a woman, why would he need to behave! If he wanted his bed warm, hundreds of women would be jumping onto his bed for him!

Zhang Yang frowned furiously. "Let go!"

Yu Li was the woman he had secretly been in love with ever since he had entered university. Even though time had been cruel to him and made him forget about his youthful love, he could never allow a woman he knew to be harassed right in front of his face! Rage, anger, righteousness, you name it, he had them all!

As a man of rank, it had become a habit for a person such as Qian Hong Wen to look down on a nobody like Zhang Yang. He proudly bellowed. "Boy! Do you know who I am?"

That cliché...it was like almost every single villain only spoke that same utterance every time they were challenged.

Zhang Yang scoffed. "What do I care? If you don't let go, you'll be sorry about what happens next!"

All the commotion had brought the attention of Fatty Han and the rest of his ex-classmates. Everyone came out of the room, peeking at the situation only to see Zhang Yang and the obese middle-aged man having a war with words. Zhang Yang is such a stud! He could even seduce a woman while on a toilet break! But...is he starting a fight?

With a strong brotherly love, Fatty Han immediately let Wu Hai Li go. How could he allow this fight to go on without him! He walked up with large steps and bellowed. "What's up! You wanna fight?"

His nostril was practically flaring with potent rage. Even though he was no high-ranking officer in this province, the current province leader Yang Bao Kun was an old friend back in university. He relied on this special relation to do whatever he wanted, as he saw fit. This fat f*ck definitely looked like a street thug in a glance. Was he seeking trouble; a common street thug, picking a fight with a government officer out of all things!

"Bastard! I am Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen! Try and touch me if you dare!" Qian Hong Wen decided to puff his chest to let those two oblivious brats to understand who they are dealing with!

Like a astrophysics trying to explain the theory of space time to a 5 year old, Fatty Han was rather confused about that long title. Fatty Han mind was only filled with girls, woman, ladies, and fights. In his perspective, government officers were either governors, mayors, city leaders, or district leaders. As for chief of departments...the only department chief he knew was the Safety Department Chief at a Transport company that he used to work at. With that in mind, Fatty Han thought that his middle-aged man must be out of his mind. Deputy Chief?! Huh!

Fatty Han crossed his hands.

So what if you have a few underlings? You think I'm afraid? Call them if you want. I'll fight all day!

Zhang Yang grew impatient. He glanced down to where Qian Hong Wen was grabbing his hands and said with a serious tone. "3 seconds. If you don't let go, you'll regret it dearly."

"What are you pulling at?" Annoyed, Qian Hong Wen raise his hand to slap Zhang Yang.

WHAM!

Zhang Yang lifted his leg and delivered a strong kick. Qian Hong Wen cried out suddenly with colors drained from his face. He trembled a little as he staggered a few steps back. His throat quivered a little before a loud "ARGH" was released from his wide, open mouth.

"Eww..." The hallway was suddenly filled with the smell of alcohol. Everyone instinctively pinched their noses.

"Y-You! What have you done! You actually hit an officer in the open! Revolt! Rebel!" Monkey Butt quickly took out his phone and dialed 110. He had not dared call the cops for fearing that it might tarnish Qian Hong Wen's reputation! He was a government officer, and being seen in an entertainment center, a Karaoke

establishment would be rather embarrassing for him. But, now that an officer had been struck down, he had to do something, or earn Qian Hong Wen's fury.

Monkey Butt was categorized under the education department, and since his university was under the private sector, not even a City level officer could touch him, much less a Provincial officer. Technically, he should not be afraid of Qian Hong Wen. Still, he is the nephew of the university president, he could easily ask his sister to say a word or two when her husband is sleeping next to her. If things get any worse, he might not be able to work in any department at all!

That was from the perspective of the "bad guys". Everyone else had their own thoughts about Zhang Yang striking the selfproclaimed government officer.

Wang Hai and Liu Qi Ming were just regular, everyday chaps. They were stunned and immediately begun trembling in fear. Zhang Yang might have gotten them involved in trouble, dragging them down the sea along with him. Zhao Kang Ming was beyond glee. He knew that once Zhang Yang had offended a Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief, he would not be able to walk free after this event!

Zhao Hui Shan was also happy that she had made the right decision to dump him back then. If she had followed him closely, a man who knows no danger, who acts all high and mighty and gets into a huge messes like the one that had just happened in front of them, she would have had to watch over her shoulder fearfully, till the end of her life! Li Ru on the other hand, was brimming with

joy! She was able to see the wild, fierce Zhang Yang in action again. Her desire for him had doubled! She had decided to invest a little more money to keep him for her own!

Yan Zhi Ru was rather shocked at his action. Once again, she clicked her tongue out of habit. She thought that since she had publicly announced of her father's position, he intended to borrow her strength and influential power to act how he want. Still, he was still an acquaintance. As such, she would be willing to help out a hand. Still, she wanted to make sure that she could properly control Zhang Yang. If he had tasted the power, he might abuse it!

The truth? Zhang Yang dared to kicked down Qian Hong Wen because he was borrowing someone else's strength and influential power. The target was not Yang Zhi Xian, but his own "girlfriend", Sun Xin Yu! She was the real god here. Since he had that power right in his pocket, why not use them? Zhang Yang was not that kind of man who would rely on his own strength to enact justice. Why do something when you can let someone else do it for you?

Qian Hong Wen was drunk and wanted to rape a helpless woman, this kind information would definitely be fuel to the icy flame of Sun Xin Yu! Her kicks would definitely be stronger and harder than his!

"Teacher Yu! Please get up! I'll send you home!" Zhang Yang supported Yu Li on his shoulder and begun to leave.

"Don't you move!" Monkey Butt had just ended the call. He did not dare to stand right in front of Zhang Yang, fearing that he would end up the same way as Qian Hong Wen. However, the Karaoke center security guards was alert. One by one, they rushed over.

Monkey Butt started to shoat while pointing his fingers at Zhang Yang. "Don't let them go! That man beat Chief Qian up!"

The guards had no idea who Chief Qian was, but they did know that "Chief", meant something. They quickly blocked Zhang Yang front moving further. Be it a minor brawl or random fights, it was their duty to detain the people involved and let the police take care of the rest.

Qian Hong Wen coughed heavily for a while and got up after a huge struggle. He pointed his trembling fingers at Zhang Yang, his voice shaking. "You f*cking bastard! I'll mess you up real good!"

Zhang Yang turned around and smiled. "You must have many colleagues in work. Be wary that you might be called in for an afternoon tea by the Disciplinary Committee!"

All government officer would be scared of the Disciplinary Committee!

Annoyed, Qian Hong Wen screamed. "Who you think you are? You think you can call up to a Disciplinary Committee to check on me? Is your father a City Chief? A Province Chief? Hmph! I'll let you sit and rot in jail for the next 10 days! Or even a month! I'll arrange a very nice spot you! People would be able to f*ck your bare naked *ss all day!"

Yang Zhi Xian heard what he said and frowned angrily. She was familiar with such people. One of them was her father's old classmate back when her father was in university. Back when he came to her house as a guest, he treated her father with respect, to the point where she thought that he was very kind and friendly without any trace of anger nor savagery! But lo and behold, once the tables are turned, she could not believe that he could be so rude and violent!

Even though she was a girl, having experience of dealing with politics since she was young, she gained a strong understanding on the political world. She knew that this kind of people would only be up to no good. Whenever a big case came up, her father would definitely be involved. A leader would lose his credibility because of a single misjudge!

No, she can not allow this man to continue his act of horror!

Fatty Han rolled up his sleeves and asked Zhang Yang. "Little Yang. This man mouth is spouting something smelly. I can't bear to smell it anymore. Should I help you close his mouth up?"

Zhang Yang smiled lightly and said, "There's no need to soil your hands on a rabid dog."

A Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief was insulted as a rabid dog? If Zhao Kang Ming and the rest of his friend were shocked beyond belief, what would Qian Hong Wen himself feel? Zhang Yang must be mad beyond reason! He is crazy beyond anyone's comprehension! He must be crazy!

How could you fight with a Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief? That man could easily blow you off with a simple fart! You think you're all strong and invincible just because you can fight? What's the use of the police force then?!

"Fatty! Let's go!" said Zhang Yang. He needed Fatty Han to drive Yu Li back home.

"Don't you dare move!" said the Karaoke guards. If this case escalated to a serious level, the guards might be in serious trouble if they let Zhang Yang leave the scene.

Qian Hong Wen had steam coming out from his ears and nose. He was the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief! How could he take a beating in a public just like that! If the word got out, he would be shamed! When he saw many guards surrounding Zhang Yang, he gathered the courage and walked up front boldly. He gripped his fist tightly and thrust a haymaker to the back of Zhang Yang's head.

Now, Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were excellent fighting partners. Even though Zhang Yang was facing the guards, Fatty Han was covering his back out of habit. This fighting stance was formed after years of fighting together in the streets! Now that he saw the sneaky Qian Hong We about to land a hit to Zhang Yang, Fatty Han immediately threw a punch to meet with his fist.

"ARGH..." Qian Hong Wen backed away in a flash. His hand was flung backwards. Blood started to ooze out from his hands; and his

face was cringing in pain.

Blood! There's blood!

Once the guard saw that happening, how could they let them go! Zhang Yang and the fat guy had completely ignored the guards and assaulted the government officer! In an instant, the group of guards rushed towards Zhang Yang, raising their batons to hit Zhang Yang, to try and stop the two "suspects", Zhang Yang and Fatty Han.

Seeing that he was about to be attacked, he could not just let them do so, and in a quick flash and a blur, Zhang Yang beat them all into a pulp.

During the commotion, Zhou Kang Ming and the rest of his friend were dragged into the mess. The guards had mistakenly assumed that they were with Zhang Yang and beat them up with their batons, leaving them wailing in pain. Since Fatty Han was a little annoyed at Zhou Kang Ming earlier, he had even "accidentally" threw a few punches to leave a mark on his face. Zhang Yang himself had purposely led the guards, one by one towards Zhou Kang Ming, letting the bastard have a taste of the fight. However, that bastard had even shoved Zhao Hui Shan in front of himself and cowered behind her.

Know that hammer of justice does not discriminate genders! In the midst of the huge commotion, who would have the time to pull their punches if a beautiful girl got involved in the fight? Furthermore, since the guards were "bullied" by Fatty Hand and Zhang Yang so badly, they took their chance to have their "revenge" at the poor, wailing little Zhou Kang Ming. Target the weak ones first, in a fight. This was the perfect example. However, the true victim here was Zhao Hui Shan, her hair tugged at so roughly that her scream was so loud that people might have thought that she was actually giving birth. Her chest and *ss had marks; perhaps a few of those guards might had taken the opportunity to molest her.

Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han were unmatched in fist fights. They could face more than 10 guards and still remained unfazed. The alcohol in them made their punches a little more sluggish than usual. But, after trading a few blows, they grew stronger, faster! In turn, they had managed to beat them all with only a little effort. Qian Hong Wen and the Monkey Butt were not out of the fight, their faces and noses clearly bruised badly for taking innumerable hits in the commotion.

Wee Woo Wee Woo!

The siren of the police was heard outside of the establishment just when the fight was about to reach its conclusion. After a few more punches were thrown, a squad of policemen came up the building and surrounded everyone. "Face the wall! Face and wall and kneel down!"

Being used to these kind of situation, both Fatty Han and Zhang Yang quickly headed to a corner and complied. After all, those policemen were holding electric batons! If they were to get stung by those contraptions, it would be stinging for a few days!

Qian Hong Wen, however, refused to comply! He was the officer

in this province! A leader, technically! These police officers are all under his rank! They were practically his subordinates! If he listened to them and kneel down, how could he still face the public after being humiliated so extensively! Furthermore, he was the victim here! Fatty Han's punch had knocked out two of his front teeth! If he did not at least beat them with a punch or two, he would not be able to sleep comfortably tonight!

The policemen walked closer and when they saw this one man still rearing for a fight, they zapped him with the electric baton and sent the man down to his knees.

"GRAaa.Aaah..argh...ah.." The poor man was zapped badly before he could no longer remain standing, where he laid on the ground twitching with the remaining electric current in his system.

"Wait! He's the.. GRAHHahhh...ah...." The poor Monkey Butt was already kneeling down when he quickly jumped to his feet to reveal Qian Hong Wei's identity. But the policemen did not know that and thought that he was somewhat resisting arrest. They zapped him as well and left him shaking in pain.

Both Zhang Yang and Fatty Han saw what had happened and giggled quietly.

"Take them all back to the station!" cried one of the policemen. The number of participants in this fight was quite large. It could even consider to be a mass brawl. The leading policeman raised his hand and gave the command. The other policemen nodded their head and took them all into the police car.

One by one, they were led into the back seat of the police car, with men and women in separated vehicle. Zhou Kang Ming stared begrudgingly at Zhang Yang with a right eye. His left eye was completely swollen shut. He screamed at Zhang Yang angrily. "Look what you have done to us all!"

Liu Qi Ming was also one of the unlucky one, He had only wanted to get into a good relation with Fatty Han, he had never though that he might got involve in a fight, much less being dragged to the police station! If he was charged in participating in a street fight... he did not dare think any further. His face went pale and he started to sob uncontrollably.

Fatty Han heard the sob and scolded the poor little boy. "What are you crying for?! Have you never been to the police station?"

"Keep your mouth shut!" screamed the driver through the barbed net between the passenger and the driver. "Shut the f*ck up!"

Zhou Kang Ming froze in his seat and did not even dare make squeak of a mouse. Still, his rage had not been extinguished. He stared angrily at Zhang Yang and silently swore that he will accuse him as much as he could when the police question them.

Wee woo wee woo. The siren of the police car echoed as they reached the police station. Since the number of suspects was just too great, the car was driven into the station, stopping right in front of the building.

"Get out! Get your lazy bums out of the car now!" said the policeman as he dragged them all out like ducks out of their cages.

As they walked into the building, a man dressed in a casual clothing, looking to be around the age of 30, ran up to them and greeted the front most policeman.

"Are these the people that had cause the commotion at Dream City?"

"Yes, Secretary Lee!" said the policeman. The person that addressed him was the Secretary of the Chief of the Public Security Bureau. He could not afford to make a mistake.

Secretary Lee quickly search through the crowd, screaming, "Chief Qian! Chief Qian!"

"I'm here! I'm here!" cried Qian Hong Wei with his trembling lips. The poor man had zapped with the electric baton, and he could still feel the numbing sensation all over his body. The man could not even speak properly.

Secretary Lee quickly headed toward Qian Hong Wei and said sternly. "Officer Bai, this man is the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen! Look at him! Look at how much he was mistreated! These psychotic mad men had betrayed the country and dared to even strike a member of the government! We have to punish these rogues severely with extreme prejudice!"

The policeman called Bai was stunned. He had never known that he had arrested the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen! Oh god! He did see one of his subordinate using the electric baton to attack the man! If the department finds out what had happened, he would be partially responsible for it!

Zhou Kang Ming was completely dumbfounded. His heart racing madly. Psychotic? Betray the country? Rogues?! If he was really charged with those accusation, he would not even die in peace! He quickly jumped in horror and screamed at the top of his lungs. "I'M INNOCENT! INNOCENT, I TELL YOU! IT WAS ALL ZHANG YANG AND HAN GUANG! IT WAS THE TWO OF THEM THAT STARTED THE FIGHT! I'M INNOCENT! INNOCENT!"

Chapter 204: Gu Jun Stance

Being told that they were culprits, betrayers of the nation, and even tagged as a psychotic madmen. They had been seriously being dragged into the fire pit. But they had done nothing! Literally nothing! If this turns out any worse than they can imagine, what would happen to them? With that negative thoughts circling in their heads, Liu Qi Ming and the rest of the "victims" screamed for justice.

On the other hands, Secretary Lee was annoyed at their cries. "The police will not simply wrong an innocent man! On the other hands, we will not let a criminal run free! So, what are you screaming for? We will get down to the bottom of this! Don't think that you can just get away by simple screaming like a little wimp!"

Zhou Kang Ming faced turned as bitter as a bitter gourd. With nothing else that they could do, they resort to only curse the man at their side. It was all Zhang Yang's fault to begin with! It was all because of his inconsiderate actions that had led them down to this path!

Even Zhao Hui Shan, who was envious of Li Ru's inherited wealth and Yang Zhi Xian's family background, knew that she had to do something about this matter by seeking help from one of them. This concerned his boyfriend's and her own future as well! She could not just allow this to go on without any intervention. It might jeopardize the one-sided relationship between her and Zhou Kang Ming! She turned to Yang Zhi Xian and asked, "Zhi Xian, say something! I know you can do something about this!"

Only when she mentioned Yang Zhi Xian's name, the rest only recalled that she was the beloved daughter of the Province Leader of Cang Lang! What could Qian Hong Wei do as a mere Deputy Chief of a Department? The other person was of much higher rank! The pathetic guys quickly surrounded Yang Zhi Xian and begged her!

Because Yang Zhi Xian had been hiding behind the crowd, Qian Hong Wei had never managed to catch a glimpse of her, until Zhao Kang Ming and the rest were screaming out her name and graveling at her feet. Qian Hong Wei heart sank. This time, it might be more troublesome than it could really be. Why was this young lady among the crowd? Why was she involved? If she did give in to their pleas and helped the youngsters, it might really be the end of Qian Hong Wei!

When a person with only one rank higher could easily step on his subordinates, how much would he be trampled on when he was 3 times lower than this girl's father?! Now, a large majority of any Department Deputy Chiefs would never ever reach the height of being the Head of a Department in their life time! A Provincial officer, much less so! In the governmental ranking world, a Provincial ranking officer was far, far stronger than a mere Department Chief! The difference in authority would be heaven and earth!

Even though Qian Hong Wen was Yang Zhi Xian's senior in both age and position, Yang Zhi Xian's father was at an even higher position. At least he still had some manners in him! He proactively greeted the girl with a rather pitiful smile that beckoned a punch, "Ah! It's Zhi Xian!"

Yang Zhi Xian smiled, but it was so rigid and robotic and anyone knows it was just an obligatory respond. "Uncle Qian."

As a secretary, he was a rather sensitive to his surroundings and was very competent in his work. He quickly rushed to Qian Hong Wen and whispered into this ears, "Chief Qian, who is this woman?"

"Her father is the Cang Lang Province Leader!"

Secretary Lee sucked in a deep breath. He knew that this was completely out of his league. Even his own Ma Wu Shi Bureau Chief was just a Department Chief. He quickly switched his voice tone and spoke stoically. "I'm afraid that his matter is much complicated than it has to be. The police would require much more information from all sides to solve this case!"

Yang Zhi Xian peeked at Zhang Yang and was offended at his aloofness. He did not even open his mouth to ask for her help!

I'm helping you as a ex-classmate! You could at least show some appreciation to me! What am I? Your nanny? Such insolence!

Still, her face remained completely unfazed, revealing no emotions!

"I can testify. The one that took part in the fight was only him and him. The rest of the people here were completely innocent!" said Yang Zhi Xian and she pointed at Zhang Yang and Fatty Han, indicating the true culprit.

Qian Hong Wen was both surprised and happy. He had initially thought that the girl was with Zhang Yang and Fatty Han. He had originally let go of the intention to get back at Zhang Yang since his reputation and fame was far more important than a little fight. However, that all changed when he heard what Yang Zhi Xian had just said. It was obvious that she had never had the intention to protect Zhang Yang and Fatty Han.

If that was the case, Qian Hong Wei might still have a chance to have his revenge against Zhang Yang!

Secretary Lee was a smart lad; he could easily understand what Yang Zhi Xian meant when she said that. He gestured a wave with his hands and called the police officer. "Officer Bai, take these two to the interrogation room and INTERROGATE them nicely!" Secretary Lee purposely emphasize the word.

Fatty Han was getting worried. Even though he had no clue about who being the higher rank, he could see that this Secretary Lee and the Deputy Chief Qian were both afraid of Yang Zhi Xian.

Damn girl! We were classmates! Why did you ignore us!

Yang Zhi Xian purposely stared at Zhang Yang, to give him a last minute window to beg for her help!

Zhang Yang was thinking of completely another thing. He was

snickering. If they were caught and placed in another police station, he might have been a little worried. But here, this place... This was where Sun Xin Yu goes to work! What there is to be afraid off? He could easily call on his "girlfriend" and ask for her help!

Officer Bai pulled Fatty Han and Zhang Yang into the station. Along the way, a middle-aged man appeared to be in the way. Both of his hands were behind him; his completely stoic stance and a stern face was familiar.

When the officers around saw him, they stood still and raised their hand to salute. "Chief Gu"

That man was the Bureau's Deputy Chief, Gu Jun.

Even since the incident involving Zhang Yang and the robbery case, Gu Jun had been rather outstanding. His reputation had been severely affected by the public "humiliation" from Sun Xin Yu. He took the chance to compete with the other two Deputy Chief and had managed to obtain credit for a number of contributions. It was not to the point where he could rival the actual Chief of the Bureau, but he did act more often and was not passive as he was last time.

The man nodded. A man of his rank could not simply react casually to others, lest it might tamper with his reputation and respect as a leader. He walked further with his hands behind his arm crossed behind him.

Officer Bai relaxed and pushed Zhang Yang. "Move!"

Zhao Kang Ming was completely delighted. Now that he was off the hook, he begin to have his own thoughts in his head.

I might had taken a few punches but now that things had gone this way, you f*ckers will have it worse! When a police resorts to violence, they can be worse than an actual street thug!

Back in the car, Li Ru had already glued her phone to her ear, calling here and there, trying to find a connection that might save Zhang Yang. If Zhang Yang was dragged in the interrogation room, every minute that pass in the room would mean a minute of torture! Li Ru could not help but feel distressed about it, stomping the ground in frustration.

"Wait!" cried Gu Jun when he had only walked a few steps forward. He turned around and observe Zhang Yang closely and was shocked, and a little happy to recognized him. "Y-You! You're Zhang Yang!"

Zhang Yang smiled casually. "Good day to you Chief Gu!"

Gu Jun had been grieving in regret when he had missed the chance to get closer to Sun Xin Yu. She was practically a god in the Bureau! But he had let her roam about right under his nose! He regretted that he did not care about the girl before the incident! If he had just had a normal conversation with Sun Xin Yu every now and then, who knew where he would be this day!

The worst thing was that when Sun Xin Yu was in trouble, he

remained at the sidelines, doing nothing. He could have taken the chance to get close to the woman and get into her good side. But, all he did was literally nothing. Fearing that the woman might hold a grudge against the man, he did not partake any action to subdue the woman. He was scared that he might make things worse.

That all changed when Zhang Yang appeared like a life line in a pinch! However, he was still a government servant! What shame does he have to incur to himself to ask an officer of the law to kiss a civilian's butt!

But, now that an opportunity had revealed himself, he could use his power to get him out of this little boy's trouble. Who knew, Zhang Yang might feel a little gratitude to him and might allow him to take the chance to ask him for a favor form Sun Xin Yu!

As the train of thought railing in his head, Gu Jun had steeled his decision to help and asked. "What offense did he commit?"

"Violence against an officer!" Secretary Lee quickly answered before any other officer could. By the looks of it, he knew that Gu Jun was doing something to help Zhang Yang. Fearing the latter, he quickly revealed the highest offense. "Chief Gu, this man is the Cang Lang Province Government Publication Department Deputy Chief Qian Hong Wen! He was assaulted, by THIS guy!"

Gu Jun sucked in a long breath. Damn! Birds of the same feather, flock together, but not the other way round. Back then Sun Xin Yu punched the son in front of the chief; and here Zhang Yang is, punching the Deputy Chief! Technically, Qian Hong Wen and Gu

Jun were just about the same level in rank!

Zhang Yang finally opened his mouth to defend himself. He pointed at Yu Li who was sitting in the bench and said, "That lady there is my university lecturer! I spotted her being chased by a pervert in the Karaoke center. As a lawful citizen, I had to prevent a crime from happening and ask the man to stop his indecent acts. But, instead, the man cried out, saying that he was a government officer and wanted me to leave him alone! Back then, I was thinking, a government officer should be the one serving its citizens! How could this perverted, rampaging thug be a government servant! I was angry and kicked him! I was enacting justice!"

When Qian Hong Wen was insulted with pervert and thug, he face turned pale and all he could say in return was only, "Y-You! Y-You!"

Gu Jun was laughing inside. He thought that Zhang Yang might not be as reckless as he thought he would be. As long as he relied on the "lawful citizen, protecting the law" card, he might be at the right side of the law even if things got a little messy! Of course, without anyone supporting his back, he would never gain the higher ground, no matter how reasonable his excuse was. But, this man had someone behind him!

When the image of Sun Xin Yu was pictured in his mind, Gu Jun felt a sudden chill flowing down his spine. Fear gripped his mind! This young lady was the gods among gods, why would she land a job in this poor, mortal realm! Ever since the incident, the entire station had been rendered cold and filled with fear whenever Sun

Xin Yu appeared. Everyone was so afraid that their actions might offend the godly Sun Xin Yu!

Gu Jun coughed lightly and turned to Qian Hong Wen. "Chief Qian. I'd say, it would be rather embarrassing to you if this matter got out to the public. How about we come to a truce? As the saying goes, treat a big problem as a small one; a small problem as none!"

Qian Hong Wen got angry. No matter how he listened to his word, he could not miss the tone in his voice and the word that he used to call him! Embarrassing!? What is he trying to do? Was he trying to provoke Qian Hong Wen? So what if he had been with women? Who would not be at his own age?!

Being a high-ranking government servant for many years, who had indulged in all the luxuries and pleasure that it could offer! By the looks of it, Qian Hong Wen understood that Gu Jan had decided to side with Zhang Yang. Qian Hong Wen was cursing Gu Jun in his heart, he had the rage, but no way of venting it! Gu Jun was at about the same rank as him, but he was from another province! He could not exert his authority here!

On the other side, Yang Zhi Xian nodded her head. She finally understood what had happened. No wonder Zhang Yang had never made a move to ask for her help! He had a trump card since the beginning! He was relying on the Public Security Bureau Deputy Chief! There is a saying, that hatred was born from love. Yang Zhi Xian was never in love with Zhang Yang to begin with, but since she had a strong egoistic behavior, she was offended by Zhang Yang's act of not replying on her!

Right there and then, she walked up, feeling unsatisfied with the outcome and said, "Deputy Chief Gu! The person had committed a crime against a government officer! How could you say something like that!"

Gu Jun glance swiftly at Yang Zhi Xian and felt a little uncomfortable.

Little brat, who do think you are?

Secretary Lee quickly explained. "Chief Gu, this person is the daughter of the Cang Lang Province Leader!"

Gu Jun was shocked beyond words. No wonder she dared to walked into the conversation like that. She was the child of another powerful leader! However, Gu Jun smiled. Normally, a province leader would easily shock the life out of him, but Sun Xin Yu had powers beyond measure.

She could easily pick up the phone and call up the City Secretary! So what, if your father is the Cang Lang Province leader, if any leader of any province walked into the station right now, Gu Jun dared to have a quarrel with him!

All in all, the more hits he took on, the better favor he could get from Zhang Yang!

To climb the ladder of promotion, you must stand with the person at the highest ladder!

Chapter 205: Till He Suffers

Gu Jun steeled his will, putting up a stoic stature and stated clearly. "Public Security Bureau is a place where justice is enacted! We will only accept facts and evidence and not favors!"

After Gu Jun's short speech, everyone felt conflicted!

Gu Jan intended to protect Zhang Yang. That had been clearly established. But why?

Who is Zhang Yang and what was driving Gu Jun to offend a Province Leader's daughter to take over the case boldly!? He should have known that her father was the provincial leader, a position much higher and more powerful than Gu Jun by several levels!

Yang Zhi Xian was shocked at his "answer". She had never thought that Gu Ju would still be headstrong and resist to stop helping Zhang Yang. What's done is done. Even though she was rather arrogant and headstrong herself, her sense towards political behavior was strong. She knew something was wrong but could not put a finger on it. Could it be, that Zhang Yang had a hidden background that no one else but Gu Jun knew about? Was that the reason why Gu Jun would not even fear a provincial leader?

She waved her hands and gestured to Secretary Lee to come to her.

Secretary Lee saw her call and ran over rather lavishly. "Miss

Yang Zhi Xian pointed at Zhang Yang and whispered. "What relationship does that man have with your deputy chief?"

Secretary Lee scratched his chin and shook his head, "I'm not sure about that miss. But wait, let me go ask around!"

He left the group and went into the station and started to gather information about Zhang Yang. She was but the daughter of the province leader, one of the people that everyone would want to have a good relationship with.

No sooner, Secretary Lee came back with a rather shocked expression and sneaked towards Yang Zhi Xian and whispered back. "I'm afraid this is rather complicated Miss Yang. That man is not just any simple man. Not long ago, do you remember about an armed robbery case that happened around this area?"

He then explicitly explained the event that had transpired to Yang Zhi Xian, down to the detail where Ma Wu Shi was belittled by Sun Xin Yu in front of everyone.

Before Yang Zhi Xian could finish listening, she covered her mouth. No wonder this man dared to be such a ruffian! He had such a strong back supporting him! His relations were so strong and vast that he could reach the City Secretary himself! That's just the tip of the iceberg!

She was selfish and egoistic, that she realized herself. But she wanted to climb the ladder of ranks as well! In an instant, she knew what she had to do. She realized the immense value that Zhang Yang had with him. No wonder even the deputy chief Gu Ju would want to join hands with Zhang Yang!

Yang Zhi Xian changed her attitude a 180 degrees. "Gu Jun, my father once said to me, as a government servant, he or she must serve the people as their highest priority! As for the black sheep in the office, I'll say, wouldn't it be for the best if we get rid of the root?"

His head completely drained of blood, Qian Hong Wen went so pale that people might mistaken his face for a piece of poorly drawn sketch on a piece of paper.

What the hell is this blood b*tch was thinking!? Is she trying to make him suffer till the end?! Black sheep? Root of the mess? If he was really going to wear that insult, securing his current position would be a problem, much less hoping for any promotions in the future!

Gu Jun scoffed and nodded his head. He now understands that the girl must have known something about Zhang Yang. He had only wanted to protect Zhang Yang, but now he had gained support from the daughter of the province leader! With lesser obstacles in his path, he could now give a better impression to Zhang Yang and gain his favor!

He raised his hand and waved. "The office will now take over and handle the case. We will now interrogate everyone and reveal the

Raging with anger, Qian Hong Wen bellowed. "Y-You! Y-You can't interrogate me! I'm a government official!"

Gu Jun swiftly glanced at him and replied while looking in to the distance. "This is but a normal case of street fights and attempted rape. You're here as a criminal suspect. We're not going to charge you with any political offense! That would require further investigation by the Bureau!"

Qian Hong Wen wanted to open his mouth to scream, but he was quickly dragged into the station by a larger police officer.

Zhou Kang Ming and the rest of them dropped their jaws. What the hell happened? How could the bold, arrogant Chief Qian be dragged away in an instant! And then there's Zhang Yang. What is he? Who is he? What made him so special that even the Deputy Chief of the Public Security Bureau would risk protecting him?

Circling about the same questions over and over again, the rest of them felt like they had not known Zhang Yang at all! He was shrouded in mystery! After the whole ordeal was almost over, they had finally realized that the real man, the real boss was Zhang Yang! Being quiet and all after being detained, he was the wolf hiding in a sheep's skin! Everyone had been blinded by their greed! How could they not know sooner?! Now, they are doomed for sure! They had been vigorously trying their best to draw a clear line between them and Zhang Yang, to make sure the police do not group them up with him. But lo and behold, Zhang Yang had emerged triumphant! Now that it has come to this, how could they

beg him for help! He would not even glance at them! But, worse, if he wanted revenge...Zhou Kang Ming and the rest could not bear to think of the consequences of their actions...everyone was a pale as ghost.

On one note, Zhao Hui Shan felt devastated. She did not know what to think now! Did she, perhaps, make the wrong choice after all? That question was now planted in her brain, echoing endlessly as she could not stop thinking about it!

Secretary Lee was smarter. For a while now, he knew that things had gotten out of hands. He retreated secretly and called Ma Wu Shi, telling him everything and had just happened in the station without leaving a single detail untold. Ma Wu Shi had clocked out long ago, but when he heard his secretary report, he had only given him one order. "Let the office handle it!"

The office...handle...it...

• • •

Zhang Yang was the first one to have his testimony recorded. He then explained everything that had happened in the scene down to each detail. Yu Li had drank a cup of hot tea earlier and regained a some of her senses. She was the first person that was directly related to the incident. Monkey Butt was rather weak-willed. After being threatened by the police, he gave in and exposed his plans about how he and Qian Hong Wei wanted to do Yu Li in the Karaoke center. Moreover, he even exposed his past crimes of luring female students in for sex!

This time, it was most certain that Monkey Butt would not escape his fate being jailed. However, Qian Hong Wen was rather hard to deal with. The police alone could not interrogate a Deputy Chief. They would need the appropriate authoritative figure to do so!

Yang Zhi Xian made a quick phone call and after a very short period of time, Leader Yang, the provincial leader of the Cang Lang province had personally called Gu Jun to make a statement. "This nation will not allow a rotten criminal to sit among the government position!"

That statement was a hint for Gu Jun to collect enough evidence. The Cang Lang Provincial office would always conduct their own investigation and find all the criminal acts that Qian Hong Wei had committed in the past!

Suffice to say, Qian Hong Wei is doomed!

Qian Hong Wei could have never foreseen this event. There was a saying, if you do not secure your footing, you'll fall into the frozen lake! Yang Zhi Xian was the one that had caused the domino effect that led all the way to how Qian Hong Wei fell. At first, she had stated her intention to help Zhang Yang, which led to Gu Jan arresting him. Yang Zhi Xiang had also advised her father, Yang Bao Kun to discard the rotten apples in the basket. Since this man would only develop more problem for Yang Bao Kun, he had to be removed; if he could not be a useful ally, he is a useless trash!

Now that Gu Jun had things cleared out with Qian Hong Wei, he could still leave a good impression on Zhang Yang. That's two birds with one stone! How could he not be happy?

After the messy ordeal, everyone, be it Yang Zhi Xian or his exclassmates, had a different opinion on Zhang Yang. Right now, Zhang Yang was the best among them and they should have treated him better. Zhou Kang Ming was practically slapping himself in the face, crying as he said a dozen 'sorries' for looking down on Zhang Yang. He pleaded to have a little mercy and forget about him. All that, while wiping away his snort and tears. The last thing he could do was to kneel down and kiss his boots. Fatty Han was so delighted at the sight of Zhao Kang Ming that he was laughing all the way out of the station.

Zhao Hui Shan saw how his boyfriend was behaving and felt utterly disgusted. Then, she remembered back at the fight in the Karaoke center, where he had pushed her in front of himself to be his shield. She felt an even greater disgust at his cowardice.

Being a policeman for several years, Gu Jun had good insight with people, and he noticed how Zhang Yang and Zhou Kang Ming were not seeing eye to eye, quietly noting a reminder for himself. He should find leverage on Zhou Kang Ming, and take 'good care' of him, and kept this matter secret from Zhang Yang. He would leave a subtle hint to Zhou Kang Ming, never to mess with Zhang Yang or he will pay it dearly. That way, he could still do something for Zhang Yang and remain unaffected.

After the recording of their testimony, Gu Jun pulled Zhang Yang alone to have a friendly chat. He expressed his utmost sincere

intention to deepen their relationship and to be friends. He then let them all go home and even gave them advice to rest early.

On his way out of the Bureau, he noticed Yu Li wobbling unsteadily and said to Fatty Han. "Fatty! You go on. I'll send Teacher Yu back home."

Fatty Han cracked a perverted smirk and walked away from Zhang Yang. "Sure!" he gave a thumbs up gesture and leaved them alone. At least, Fatty Han could have some alone time with Wu Hai Li.

"Teacher Yu, I'm here to send you back!" said Zhang Yang. He then proceeded to support her out of the station. On the road side, Zhang Yang hailed a cab and the two of them disappeared into the night.

"I have never though that Zhang Yang could have such deep connections!" said Liu Qi Ming in awe. Since the group of exclassmates were sent here with the police car, they had to take a cab to get back to the Karaoke center and drive their own cars back home.

Liu Qi Ming thought of Fatty Han and viewed him with respect. He came to a conclusion by himself that Fatty Han must have had help from Zhang Yang by pulling some strings here and there. It was the only explanation on how a guy with poor education, who only knew how to fight for living, could earn such a massive fortune in such a short time!

In truth, he was right, though it all happened in the game.

"Fatty, what sort of person Zhang Yang is?" said Wu Hai Li curiously while she was in Fatty Han's embrace.

"What do you mean by that?" replied Fatty Han.

"You know what I mean!"

Fatty Han knew what she meant. But, to describe Zhang Yang properly would be a challenge. Was he normal? He was normal. He was as normal as the random person you see in the streets. But he was not dumb. He will not reveal how a brother helped him to earn that surreal amount of gold. He purposely scoffed and said, "My boy Yang is rather strong! He has more than 10,000 underlings!" He then proceeded to use in-game context to tell her about Zhang Yang.

But, if you do not explain properly, how would the girl know about Zhang Yang playing a game! When other heard about having 10,000 underlings, they would certainly give you the same shocked looks on their faces. How could a person manage 10,000 subordinates? If it was a company, how large would the company be then? If he was a government official, which department could fit in 10,000 officers? Could it be special forces?

There could be a possibility, since the man could fight like a MMA fighter! He must have been scouted by a leader and was chosen to join! Damn! If he had more than 10,000 subordinates under his command, what rank would he be then? Instructor? If

he was an instructor, then he would be at the rank of a City Leader!

As confusing as it may, the guesses they made only grew wilder. Everyone thought that they had Zhang Yang figured out and were shocked at their own conclusions. How could Zhang Yang be a government official at such young age?

• • •

After drinking some hot tea back at the station, she did sober up a little. However, the alcohol was still affecting her. Bobbing her head left and right in the car, she could not endure it any longer and rested her head on Zhang Yang arm.

Zhang Yang had a strong muscle and thick skin, he did not mind about it one bit. On the contrary, he was afraid that his roughness might hurt her delicate skin. He opened his arm and let the woman rest on his chest.

"What a lovely couple!" said the 40-year-old cab driver as he peeked through the rear mirror.

Zhang Yang only smiled at the driver without saying a word. Since both Yu Li and Zhang Yang did not meet that very often, let misunderstandings be misunderstandings.

The cab driver was rather chirpy; he had been having idle conversation with Zhang Yang every once in a while. Yu Li, disturbed by their talks, woke up groggily and finally managed to state her home address. After 20 minutes, the cab arrived at an old housing area and stopped in front of an old apartment which looked like it was around 20 to 30 years old.

Zhang Yang paid the driver and helped Yu Li out of the car. He lifted his head up to see the apartment had 5 floors.

"Teacher Yu, which floor are you living in?"

Being out in the night, the cold wind blew her face, bringing her back to her senses. "Four...no...three...wait..fourth floor!"

Zhang Yang frowned. He pushed himself and supported Yu Li to climb up all the way to the fourth floor. Luckily, after struggling to find her keys, she managed to unlock the right door after all. He was afraid that they might have been trying to open the wrong house door. She opened the old wooden door and brought Zhang Yang into an old 60 to 70 meter square apartment.

"S-Sit..." said Yu Li bashfully. Whether it was the alcohol in her, or the fact that she was seen by one of her ex-student being in such a mess, who knew? She brewed some tea and served it to Zhang Yang, while she went back to the kitchen to drink some vinegar, fully sobering herself up.

Zhang Yang looked left and right, observing her living area and asked. "Teacher Yu, didn't you once say that you're living with your mother?"

The little small apartment had only one room, one living room, and a toilet. The bedroom door was wide open. The bed looked rather neat and tidy, as if no one had been sleeping on it for a while.

Yu Li came out of the kitchen. Solemn and dread filled her face as she said, "My mother is in the hospital!"

Chapter 206: Please Take Me In!

Zhang Yang quickly apologized and said, "I'm sorry, Miss Yu! Is she okay? It's not serious, right?"

Yu Li sat opposite Zhang Yang and her facial expression turned even gloomier as she said, "It's uremia, she needs kidney transplant!"

Zhang Yang was shocked as kidney transplants were costly, major surgeries. Besides, it was not easy to look for matching kidneys so he asked her that.

Yu Li shook her head anxiously and replied, "They found nothing yet!"

Zhang Yang let out a sigh as he could not do anything about it. After drinking tea, he stood up and said, "Miss Yu, it's getting late, I've got to go and you should also get some rest!"

Zhang Yang went to the door. His fingers were about to touch the door handle when Yu Li suddenly uttered, "Zhang Yang, please take me in!"

Zhang Yang staggered and nearly did a somersault! What exactly is going on today? All sorts of strange things were happening to him! He turned over and he saw Yu Li's face flushed with heat but unusually staunch. However, the dithering in her eyes revealed her wild feelings at that moment.

"Miss Yu, what difficulties did you encounter? Please tell me, if I can help, I will help you!"

"Wuu wuu wuu" Yu Li started to cry suddenly. She cried in misery, unable to produce any further words.

It was not good for Zhang Yang to go, so he decided to return to his seat and asked, "Miss Yu, do you have enough funds for the surgery?" he guessed as he thought of Yu Li's situation in his previous life.

"My dad... is a compulsive gambler!" Yu Li cried for a while before she started opening up, "He owed -- still owes a pile of debt and he has fled with all sorts of people on his tail! My mum pays for my school fees and my dad's debts, she has been working hard her entire life, too hard! Yet, she found out out that she has uremia a few days ago! I just started to work for less than two years, furthermore, we used up all the home savings to pay off debts, even selling the house that we used to live in but we still do not have enough money! Zhang Yang, do you know how miserable I feel! Sometimes I really want to end my life there and then, and I would be free of all these worries!"

The story was very old-fashioned but it was still a tragedy no matter what!

Anyhow, Zhang Yang would never turn away without helping Yu Li so he said, "Miss Yu, do not worry! If it's money, I can pay for your mother's treatment first!"

Yu Li continued on with her rambling, her eyes unfocused, "A bestie, from my former university, told me that it is easy for a woman to earn money, especially if they had good looks. All they have to do is to spread their legs open! She even introduced me to one of the hotels in Lin Hai City. You can earn a few thousand dollars a night there!"

Her face was usually flushed due to the alcohol.

Lin Hai City? That's right. Zhang Yang had one-night stand with Yu Li in Tian Lun Pavilion Grand Hotel at Lin Hai City during that time, in his previous life. He let out a sigh, "Miss Yu, you are drunk!"

"Ke ke ke!" Yu Li laughed madly and said, "I'm not drunk, I'm wide awake! You think I wasn't aware? Every time I went to class, you boys were always staring at my chest and looking at my buttocks. I clearly knew what was in your minds!"

She staggered to her feet, walked unsteadily and said, "Do you dare say that you won't want to sleep on me?"

Men had a tendency to act crazily when drunk but women doing the same were on an entirely different level!

Zhang Yang felt a twinge of guilt when he met her eyes. Because in his "memory", he really did sleep with her! The memories of her luscious and charming body were as vivid as day, down to her irresistible moans! Zhang Yang gulped.

"Zhang Yang! Zhang Yang!" Yu Li grabbed one of Zhang Yang's wrists, "I really have no choice! More than 2,000,000 dollars is needed for a kidney and surgical fees, there's no way I can afford that! Besides selling my body, I really don't know what else there is to do! But if possible, I'd rather have you than be ruined by hundreds of strangers! I know you are rich, you can pay for 2,000,000 dollars easily. I know, because I helped you sell those potions two months ago! I have nothing but this body, please, take me in!"

Zhang Yang frantically said, "Miss Yu, I can lend you the money, just stop mentioning your bod -- selling your body anymore, please!"

"But, the follow-up treatment costs that would be a bottomless pit! Zhang Yang, I'm just a normal teacher, how could I possibly pay you back?" Yu Li shook her head, "Selling my body is still easier, I just have to open my legs and get pinned down by others for a while. It won't kill me, right?"

She had lost her balance, as she fell sideways onto the couch, her eyes in hazy drunkenness.

These words would only show themselves in her intoxicated state. This strong, stubborn woman would never mention something like selling her body to anyone but secretly wipe off her tears and face her problems alone.

If it was not Zhang Yang accidentally getting involved tonight, it was probably difficult for Yu Li to escape her dark fate. After going through the ordeal in the hands of that corrupt official, in addition to the urgent need for money, Yu Li was probably pushed over the brink, having lost her chastity, and had decided to venture into the red light district.

Both of Yu Li's hands held onto the sofa and she crawled to Zhang Yang's side. She gazed at Zhang Yang with her seductive eyes, laughing incorrigibly and teased, "Little pervert, I know you liked me! Every time you attended my classes, you were trying to strip me with your eyes! Come on, I'm yours now, do whatever you wanted to me!"

Zhang Yang admitted that he definitely had to crush on Yu Li when he was studying at university. As a developed youth with a normal man's mind and the exuberant energy of youth, every time Yu Li taught in the class, inevitably, Zhang Yang would end up fantasizing about her! However, this matter was "five years ago" to him, and he had almost forgotten about it!

He stepped back a little as he said, "Miss Yu, it's true, I used to like you! But now I have someone else who I really like!"

"Oh!" Yu Li nodded her head with uninterested facial expression and said, "It is okay, I'm not going to marry you anyway! I just want to be your lover... five years, let me be your lover for five years, as long as you can help me pay the medical fees for my mum, I will not ask for anything else!"

Zhang Yang reached out to stroke her silky hair and said, "Miss Yu, if you do it like this, you are betraying your love! Have you thought about your boyfriend?" all the boys in their class knew that Yu Li had been in a relationship with her boyfriend for two to three years, which in an extent that they were going to marry. The news had hurt so many boys, making them insomniac and listless for the next few days!

"Him?" Yu Li started laughing hollowly once again while her facial expression was a mix between crying and laughing, "Once I found out my mum's disease, I quickly looked for him to solve the problem together! Guess what he did? Not only did he not offer to help in any way, he wanted to break up with me! He even wanted me to sleep with him to compensate for his years of disbursement!"

F*ck, such a jerk!

"But you still have to marry, sooner or later. Do you want to keep the memory of someone's mistress for a lifetime?"

"My mum worked so hard to raise me up. I'm willing to die for her!"

Bang!

These words were just like a boom exploding next to Zhang Yang's ears.

This is because the night on the night Lin Yu rejected the

elopement with Zhang Yang, she had said the same thing!

Zhang Yang's heart was greatly disturbed as he could not help it but recall the fateful night after after hearing what Yu Li said.

Yu Li is selling her body because of her mother! In his previous life, she had sold her body to many guys, but in this life, she seemed to have another choice, to just sell her body to Zhang Yang alone! Still, no matter what, the fate of Yu Li selling her body seems unchanged!

But what's different here?

Lin Yu rejected Zhang Yang because of her mother's wishes and had chosen to marry Liu Wei, a man she who she did not love at all! Wasn't that is the same as selling her body? The only difference was that she used the marriage as the best packaging to whitewash her betrayal of love!

From Lin Yu and Yu Li's point of views, they were right to save their mothers' life out of filial piety! But from Zhang Yang's point of view, Lin Yu undoubtedly betrayed love and betrayed Zhang Yang!

In this life, Zhang Yang had the advantage of being reborn and it shouldn't be difficult for him to earn hundred of millions of dollars in assets and surpass Liu Wei! But if there was another guy with an equal amount of fortune, Lin Yu's mother would still force her to marry the other guy instead of Zhang Yang. Wouldn't Zhang Yang have to die and be reborn once again?

What if another guy with trillions of dollars in assets showed up?

There was no end in sight!

In his previous life, Lin Yu had abandoned him!

Zhang Yang unconsciously leaned against the couch, he was struck by a massive headache, like a few hundred pounds of weight had been placed on his head.

After the rebirth, he had been busy using the '5-years review' of the game to earn money. As long as he had spare time every day, he would continuously recall the contents of the game and dungeon strategies, leaving him no time to think about anything else!

Now, Zhang Yang had finally come to realize the truth and faced a problem that he had refused to face in his previous life, did Lin Yu really loved him?

He had put in so much effort, was it all for naught?

Zhang Yang took a deep breath and thought in his mind, "Lin Yu should have loved me, but it was far from my imagination! In her world, love was not all. She is the child of a rich and big family, she was brought up with the idea that benefiting her family came above all other ideas. So, when there is conflict between love and family, she chooses... family!"

But if it was Sun Xin Yu, according to her temper, if the family forced her to marry a man she did not like, she would either shoot the hapless man dead, or take her own life. She would never compromise! This woman would be so committed to her ideals that, no amount of difficulty or danger would stop her!

Zhang Yang did not know why Sun Xin Yu popped up in his mind, suddenly, but he realized that it was a rather fond thought at that too. He suddenly found himself thinking of Han Ying Xue. Han Ying Xue...she may be such a tricky person, but Zhang Yang believed that she would definitely fight for her love to the bitter end as well!

Lin Yu was a dutiful daughter. But in love, she was a loser!

Suddenly, his enthusiasm to meet Lin Yu once again died off. On the contrary, he even felt a trace of fear, always recalling Lin Yu's cruel rejection on that night. Would it all be fine? Would it be the same with him and Lin Yu again?

Absolutely not!

The moment Lin Yu decided to marry Liu Wei, his impression on her had already dropped, whether he liked it or not, and it would only continue to crack further!

Zhang Yang felt extremely resentful and said, "Miss Yu, is there any liquor?"

Yu Li thought for a while, shook her head and said, "No... but wait!" She walked unsteadily to a side of a cabinet, took out a bottle of soaked red bayberry and said, "Soaked red bayberry wine, do you consider that liquor?"

Zhou Su natives used white wine, soaked in red bayberry to cure diarrhea and abdominal pains. It is really effective and potent for that purpose.

"Yes, it is!" Zhang Yang just wanted to drink at this time, not caring about the quality of wine anymore!

Zhang Yang finished off the tea in his glass with a single gulp. He poured all the tea leaves in his glass into the ashtray and then filled up his glass with wine and started drinking the wine silently.

Yu Li watched him for a while, before also taking a glass and pouring herself some of the wine.

Drinking solves all worries!

In Zhang Yang's memory, Lin Yu's smile started to fade, slowly being replaced by a sense of betrayal and sorrow.

Zhang Yang knew that he had no right to blame Lin Yu, but he was also being hurt, his heart was covered in wounds. The degree of being hurt was much stronger than the pain he felt on the day Lin Yu rejected eloping with him!

In his life, he had only been hurt to such an extent for three times.

The first time was when he was seven years old, and received news that his parents had died in a plane crash. He had cried alone all day long in his parent's room.

The second time was when Liu Wei had sent a girl to become Zhang Yang's lover. She soon stole all the stuff in Clear Water's warehouse and left him a video to tell him the truth. Zhang Yang had put in a lot of effort in that relationship, and it had left him depressed for months.

Now, he was experiencing such pain for the third time!

Even though he had crippling wounds inflicted on him when in a fight, he could just grit his teeth and endure the pain! But the wounds in his heart were not as easily healed. Sometimes when he thought of that fraud who was the cause of all his pain, Luo Xin Yan, his heart would still ache.

Liu Wei!

Zhang Yang was at a loss as he did not know what to do, his eyes were wet with tears. Hatred had the same intensity as love. People would feel hurt by it and it gave a pain that was hard to forget! Even it was not not for Lin Yu, but for revenge on Liu Wei who wanted to kill Zhang Yang in his previous life, Zhang Yang would definitely hunt Liu Wei down!

Having found a solution to his anger, he started drinking without holding anything back! Life could not move on without a direction, so his new resolution would be to surpass Liu Wei!

Zhang Yang unconsciously drank more and more, starting to get intoxicated. He even laughed along with Yu Li for no reason, clinking with her glass, exchanging slurred words that both of them could not hear, yet it somehow made them laugh even more. Eventually, they finished up the whole bottle of red bayberry wine!

Both of them finished up at least a gallon of wine, and very soon, both of them were punch-drunk. Zhang Yang was so disoriented that he went into the bedroom, took off his clothes and went to bed naked -- a habit he practiced at home!

He woke up once in the middle of the night, feeling thirsty. He tried to get up from bed to get himself a drink. But the moment he lifted his upper body off the bed, he would get overwhelmed by dizziness, and could only fall back to the bed. In his half-awake stupor, he felt somebody lying next to him.

"Fatty sh*t, go back to your dog house, I'm not gay!" Zhang Yang pulled the bed sheets to himself and kicked the person next to him off the bed. He occupied the whole bed and slept like a pig.

Chapter 207: Sleeping On The Wrong Bed

Headaches are never pleasant!

Zhang Yang finally woke up, but his whole body was stiff like a plank of wood. It was as if he had fought hundreds of people and took such a beating that he could not even feel his body. His head felt like it had been split open from the inside, like firecrackers continuously exploding in his head. He opened his eyes a little but quickly snapped them shut due to the dazzling sunlight.

Damn, how much did I drunk?

Zhang Yang could only lie there unmovingly, at the whims of his catatonic body.

Damn it, how did I end up drinking so much, yesterday? This is self-torture, I have to stop doing this!

By the way... How did I get home yesterday? Zhang Yang's mind suddenly popped up a question and the memory flashed back immediately. Last night, he was attending a classmate reunion, and then they went to karaoke. After that, he met Yu Li who was nearly violated by others, he had a fight with them and then he beat down a group of karaoke's guards then all of them went to the public security. Next, Zhang Yang sent Yu Li home...

How come there was no memory after sending Yu Li home?

He actually did not have any idea what happened after that, so how did he actually get home?

Pa!

Just as Zhang Yang was wondering, a hand was suddenly placed on his chest. His eyes burst wide open. The dazzling sunlight struck him in its full force, but he was too bewildered to care about it, as he squinted, his eyes finally focused on a person sleeping next to him. It wasn't Fatty Han. It was quite the opposite -- a sexy woman with long hair, a voluptuous body shape, clad only in a cotton t-shirt and T-back undergarment, she was Yu Li!

He himself was buck naked, and his left hand was beneath Yu Li's neck where it had reached her front, grabbing hold of her ample, firm bosom.

No way!

Could it be the same as it was in his previous life, did they have drunken sex?

Zhang Yang gazed at his manhood that would stand at attention every morning, trying to see any indicator if it got some action last night. But he had drank too much last night, his whole body was numb including that member!

Did they do anything last night?

What shocked Zhang Yang was that he did not feel any guilt whatsoever! Lin Yu... Zhang Yang was speechless as he did not know if he still loved her, as his new perspective on her betrayal had hurt Zhang Yang's soul badly. Zhang Yang did not really know how he felt towards her right now.

"Em, my head hurts!" Yu Li groaned, her long eyelashes fluttered a little and she slowly opened up her eyes but the dazzling sunlight immediately forced her eyes shut. She twisted her snake-like body and nuzzled up even closer to Zhang Yang's body, mumbling sleepily, "Fei Fei, when did you come back?"

Zhang Yang was frozen in fear, his mind racing for a way out!

Yu Li slapped Zhang Yang's erect manhood, which twanged like a radio antenna. She even reached out and touched it, murmuring, "Fei Fei, what did you bring to bed? So hard and long, ke ke, just like a real man's! Little brat, don't tell me....you went ahead and bought that thing?"

She reluctantly raised her body off the bed, turning to look at Zhang Yang through her messy bangs.

Eh, since when did Fei Fei go for plastic surgery?

Wait, no! That face was so familiar. It was her ex-student, Zhang Yang!

Yu Li was so shocked that her fingers that were wrapped around

the meat pole squeezed, hard!

"Ah!"

Both of their voices were raised at the same time, one in shock, the other in pain!

"You... you..." Yu Li was scared, her face turned pale, "Hooligan, beast, jerk!" she started tearing up.

Zhang Yang tried to ignore the pain in his lower region and rushed at Yu Li. Throwing himself onto Yu Li, he reached out to cover her mouth because she looked like she was about to run away and call for help! Zhang Yang put on his most urgent expression and asked, "Miss Yu, please try to recall!"

Yesterday... a series of scenes flashed back in Yu Li's mind. First, she was invited to karaoke, where she was forced to drink a lot of alcohol. In her drunken state, she somehow noticed Hou Bi Hua and that fatty Qian's pervert gazes, so she struggled to escape from the room. After that, she met her ex-student, Zhang Yang. Afterwards...

All the memories flashed back in Yu Li's mind, included her shamelessly asking Zhang Yang to take her in. She remembered the both of them getting wasted, but she had no idea how she ended up in the bed with him.

When Zhang Yang saw Yu Li slowly calming down, he let out a

sigh and said, "I'm going to let go now, you won't scream, right?"

Yu Li blinked her eyes repeatedly in pointed fashion, Zhang Yan removed his hand, and the both of them stared at each other in awkward silence.

"Zhang Yang..." a few seconds later, Yu Li said, "I'm serious about what I mentioned last night! If I had not been drunk, I would not have dared mention it all. I know that it is shameless but I do not care about my self-esteem any longer! I'll be your lover if you support me financially!"

"Miss Yu, don't be like this. I will give you money to cure your mother's disease, no returns, for real!" Zhang Yang said sincerely.

Yu Li smiled a little, getting more comfortable with the topic, "I'm not somebody important in your life, how could I just take your money without any return? This is a debt that I can never pay off in my lifetime. I don't know anything else, I'm going crazy here! Take my body, this the only thing that I can offer!"

It had always been the bad guy forcing the beauty to sleep with him, why was the situation now reversed? A devil spoke within Zhang Yang's mind, "Stupid fellow, what are you waiting for, accept the deal! Didn't you want her so badly when you were studying in university? The opportunity is in front of you right now, you can do whatever you want to her!"

However, because Zhang Yang liked Yu Li. He genuinely did. There's no way he'll toy with her in such manner!

Besides, his soul had been continuously hurt by <u>Luo Xin Yan</u> and Lin Yu. At least for now, he definitely did want to be in a relationship with any woman.

He shook his head and said, "Could not it be considered as me being concerned?"

"If you did not use that thing beneath your body to touch me, perhaps I would still believe you!" Yu Li said coolly.

Zhang Yang's face went deep crimson, to his own surprise. His meat pole that had been gripped hard by Yu Li was starting to rise to the occasion again. Before this, in his attempt to stop her from screaming, he had pinned her plump and fascinating body with his little accomplice standing upright against Yu Li's smooth belly.

This time Zhang Yang had nowhere to run! His own body had betrayed him!

"This is accidental!" Zhang Yang explained, never actually expecting Yu Li to trust him.

"Then everything here is accidental?" Yu Li, revealing her mature side, openly said, "To successfully sleep with your ex-teacher, don't boys dream of that all the time? Otherwise, why are there so many scandals involving teachers and students all the time?"

Zhang Yang was stunned and speechless, he was deep in thought

and asked, "Did we do anything last night?" This is very important as it would break him to know that something happened between them under drunken conditions. Yu Li was someone he liked, and he did not want to put her through this.

"What do you mean?" Yu Li asked him back.

"It is like... you know right?"

"I don't know!"

'' · · ·

"Yes, we did something last night!" Yu Li suddenly answered.

Out of the blue, Zhang Yang was astonished as he actually did it with Yu Li under the influence of alcohol! He glanced at the messy bed sheet and said, "We did not do anything last night! There are no bloodstains on the bed!"

Yu Li was astounded and asked, "You think I'm a virgin?"

"You said yesterday, your boyfriend wanted to do it with you, as compensation for his loss! It's like a god damned geisha offering! This showed that the two of you have not done it before!"

"He was not my first boyfriend!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and an idea came up to his mind, "Since she would only accept my help on condition that I take her in as a lover, I'll just go ahead and let her do it! If it is Sun Xin Yu, I would have been afraid of her taking the gun and forcing me to bed, but Yu Li has no gun, what's there to fear! What the heck, I wanted to do good, how could it end up like this? Besides, what am I actually so afraid of, it's not like I have never slept with any woman before in previous life!"

"All right, we did not do anything last night, I'm still a virgin. So you should be satisfied with it now, right? Don't men feel proud when they pop a girl's cherry??" Yu Li was staring at the ceiling, speaking in a monotone of a person who has given up hope, "Five years, I will give you five years of youth and beauty. That should be able to pay off my debt to you!"

"Miss Yu..."

"That's not enough? Let me count it out for you, my bestie said, according to my beauty, I could sell at least 2,000 dollars a night. To cure my mum's disease completely, I'd need about 3,000,000 dollars. So, you have to sleep with me 1,500 times for a fair trade, I wouldn't lose much!"

"Yu Li!" Zhang Yang couldn't bear it any longer and raise his voice in anger, "You freaking stop insulting yourself! I don't want to talk to you about selling your body or pure soul or any of that bullsh*t! If you feel miserable then you should cry it out, but stop saying such things!"

Yu Li astounded and looked at Zhang Yang, her tears filled up her

eyes and she yelled, "What woman wants to be a b*tch? I can't think of anything else other than selling my body! I'm just a normal woman, I am not a strong woman, other than teaching, I don't know how to earn more money! Of course! Of course I want my self-esteem, but if I have to do it this way, there's no point caring about my dignity! Even if I insist on having a clear conscience, I'm still a b*tch who's selling her body!"

Both of them suddenly became silent.

"Ka!"

The sound of unlocking came from the outside, and a woman walked in. She closed the door shut, leaving her shoes at door. She called out, "Yu Li, you're such a lazy bum, you're going to be late! Look at the time!"

She was taking off her clothes as she walked towards the bedroom saying, "Night shifts are the worst! Sigh, why am I still not married to a good husband yet? I'll happily be a housewife!"

She pushed the unlatched bedroom's door, having most of her clothes stripped off. All she had left on was a red T-bag undergarment. She had taken off her bra and was holding it in her hands. When she headed up, she was shocked as she saw Yu Li and a naked man on the bed!

"Ah!" the girl screamed immediately and quickly grabbed the bed sheet close by to cover up her body.

"Ei, it's you!" In her shock, she somehow recognized Zhang Yang and cried out.

Zhang Yang had a new headache to deal with now! She was the person he saved during the bank robbery, Yan Fei Fei!

Luo Xin Yan: She will be appearing in the far future.

Chapter 208: Lovelorn?

Relatively speaking, Zhang Yang was even more ashamed of his nakedness. Now TWO ladies have seen all of him. He grabbed a pillow and covered his lower body and saying with forced casualness, "Oh, you and Miss Yu staying together!"

"Miss Yu?" Yan Fei Fei was greatly surprised. She pointed at Yu Li and Zhang Yang and said, "You guys are teacher-student lovers!" Her finger went lower and, she immediately screamed, "That's my pillow. Damn it, that's my favourite pillow!"

"Fei Fei, get out!" Yu Li said.

Yan Fei Fei quickly nodded her head and hurriedly escaped from bedroom where she locked herself in bathroom.

"Put on your clothes!" Yu Li picked up the clothes from each corner that scattered over the floor. She even generously helped Zhang Yang into his clothes.

A surge of warmth emerged across Zhang Yang's mind. He had never felt at "home" like this before. Since his parents had died, he never had such an experience before.

"You know Fei Fei?" Yu Li simply asked while she was helping Zhang Yang button up his shirt.

"I think I do!"

Zhang Yang had just started to tell the story concerning the bank robbery incident, when Yu Li suddenly interrupted, "Oh! You are that great life saver and millionaire dude that she talks about all the time!"

"What?"

"Fei Fei is my high school classmate and she is from an ordinary family. She has a brother, but she was urged out of the house once her brother got married. Coincidentally, I sold my house, so both of us rented a house and are staying together. She has always had a dream to get married to a millionaire husband. Ever since she saw your bank savings, she had been obsessed about you! Let's not mention that you even saved her in more ways than one!"

Yu Li patted Zhang Yang's chest as she smiled and said, "Okay, done!"

Zhang Yang could not help but frown as the current problem had not yet been resolved and yet another one was coming! He quickly said, "Miss Yu, I'll head back first! When I log on to the game, I will transfer the money to your account! By the way, my money is invested in something now and my current cash flow isn't quite there yet, so I need about three to four days to raise 2,000,000 dollars!"

"I got it!"

"... I'm leaving!"

"Wait a minute. I will try my best to be your lover!" Yu Li suddenly grabbed Zhang Yang, she stood on her toes and kissed his lips with her cheeks blushed, "Do not be so good to me, otherwise, I won't be satisfied as a lover alone!"

• • •

It was really inexplicable. Zhang Yang grabbed a cab and went back to his house. The headache from his hangover was still there, so he simply went back to sleep until 2.00 PM in the afternoon. After waking up, he ate his lunch then he logged on to the game.

"Ha ha ha, Little Yang, your physical fitness is so poor! Last night I 'did' it five times continuously and one night's rest was enough! Little brat, you should train your endurance up!" Fatty Han immediately turned on voice messenger, "By the way, who was that pretty woman last night? How come I've never seen her before? Oh, is she your university schoolmate?"

This fatty sh*t did not hear Zhang Yang calling her Miss Yu last night? Whatever, it was better if he knew nothing. Otherwise, Fatty Han would tease him endlessly! Zhang Yang said, "If you say so.."

"Hey, Little Yang, we are brothers, you can't be hiding anything from me!"

"You better figure out a solution for Wu Hai Li and Yun Yun, it's never easy handling two relationships at once!" Zhang Yang

immediately changed the topic.

"Nah, that's easy, Wu Hai Li just loves money. I will fight for more equipment and sell them all and she'll be mine!" Fatty Han laughed with glee, pretending to know more than he was letting on and said, "Little Yang, Wu Hai Li wasn't that upright disciplinary committee member with justice written all over her face we thought we knew. When she's in bed, you have no idea how much of a freak she is, she nearly drained all my energy last night!"

"... Fatty sh*t, if you continue this, you're going to die on the bed one day!"

"Bullsh*t, at least 90% of deaths occur on the bed anyway! By the way, I forgot to mention, someone will come to you later!"

"Who?"

"Li Ru, that buxom ooh lala beauty!"

"Damn it, did you tell her my ID?"

"I'm so sorry, Little Yang. You know I'm weak against women, that evil woman squeezed her chest in front of me, even calling me 'brother fatty' with her sweet voice, then I revealed your ID! I wanted to reveal more info but that evil woman already ran off, she really made me mad!"

[&]quot;F*ck you, fatty sh*t!"

"Little Yang, she's a really beautiful girl. I really don't understand why you keep on rejecting her! We are wolves, why are you still pretending to be a sheep?! She passed my Q.C. you can go ahead and f*ck her!"

"F*ck her my *ss!"

"Bullsh*t. If I had a sister, I would have already married her to you and gotten myself a nephew by now!

Zhang Yang could only frown at the increasingly ridiculous statements.

"Ah, that evil woman just logged on the game. I'll leave you two alone!" Fatty Han immediately ended the voice chat.

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again while he was rushing to Auction House. It had become part of his routine by now. This was because every there and now, good stuff would pop up in the Auction House, be it items sold by those players who did not understand the equipment or items' value, or players who were feeling generous for some reason. So whoever gets lucky would get such prices from Auction House!

'Ding! Player Button-Free Lass sent you a friend request. Will you accept it?'

That's correct, she was Li Ru! This is because she told Zhang

Yang her IGN yesterday.

Since his identity had already been revealed by Fatty Han, it was hard for him to refuse Li Ru's request! So Zhang Yang selected "Accept". After a while, the voice messenger request rang.

"Sh*ty Zhang Yang. You are Lone Desert Smoke's guild master and you told me that you didn't have the authority to invite players!" once the voice messenger turned on, Li Ru started scolding Zhang Yang.

"Wey wey, how come I cannot hear the sound? Wey wey, are you still there?"

"Ha Ha!" Li Ru smiled slyly and said, "Alright, alright, stop pretending, I'll stop blaming you, okay? Guild master, please invite me to your guild. At most, tell me about the unspoken rules!"

"I'll have to warn you, you can't simply flirt around in our guild or cause any other disturbances!"

"Cheh, you think I'm that much of a skank? Don't worry, I only have eyes for you!" Li Ru laughed proudly, "Currently, I only have two targets. The first is to join Lone Desert Smoke. En, I'm almost there! The second is to seduce a guy named Zhang Yang and f*ck him. Both targets would be achieved with a nod from your head!"

Was this woman suitable to join Lone Desert Smoke? Zhang Yang felt that she would be a better fit in Crimson Rage as that bunch of

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again as he sent a guild invitation to Li Ru. Instantly, an announcement popped up in guild channel notifying that a new member has joined the guild. As Hundred Shots prohibited the members from chatting in the guild channel, the announcement of Li Ru joining the guild was very eye-catching.

"Hello everyone, I'm Button-free Lass, this is my first time joining such a big family, please take of me in the future!" Li Ru spoke in guild channel.

"Chatting is prohibited in guild channel. Because you just joined the guild and do not know about our guild rules, I will not deduct your guild's contribution points this time. Please take note!" Hundred Shots immediately responded to Li Ru's message in guild channel. Currently, besides eating and sleeping, Hundred Shots was using all his energy in managing the guild, and he worked so conscientiously that his fame in guild was just slightly lower than Zhang Yang.

Li Ru was shocked and quickly sent a message to Zhang Yang, "Why is this person so fierce? It's forbidden to even send messages in guild?!"

Zhang Yang laughed and explained, "There are a lot of members in the guild, if everyone sends messages, the guild channel will be a total mess. Just in case there is any emergency situation, everyone would not notice it the first time! Thus, that is why we have such a rule!"

"Oh!" Li Ru had finally understood and said, "That's good, it feels like a big corporate! Guilds that are messy and noisy all day long would not be effective in combat!"

Both of them chatted for a little while more before Li Ru decided to go for training as she was just Level 37. In order to match the level of the members in guild, Li Ru needed to train day and night for a long time!

Zhang Yang searched around in the Auction house and did not find any good stuff. He decided to leave the Auction House and head for his guild shop.

Zhang Yang had been busy fighting for [Fire Resistance Potion] recipe on previous days and he was not free to auction those Yellow-Gold equipment he looted from seizing fortress. Since he was free now, he decided to auction all of them.

Zhang Yang used the name of Little Merchandize Shop to make an announcement, "Dear friends, the merchandize shop has three pieces of Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment, and all of them will be auctioned tomorrow at 7.00 PM! The equipment includes one weapon and two armors. Take note that they are not just any ordinary Yellow-Gold equipment but parts of the second set equipment! They can be mixed with Gray-Silver, Green-Copper and Black-Steel for set equipment effects! These two armors for set equipment are Cryomancer and Sniper's boots while the weapon is a one-handed sword. For interested parties, please do not forget the time, the auction will be started tomorrow at 7.00PM!"

Once the announcement was made, all the players in White Jade Castle were excited, even the players from Violet Star City, Emerald City and the rest of seven main cities got wind of the announcement. Cryomancers and Snipers all over were even more excited to join the auction! The highest grade of set equipment from dungeons was only Gray-Silver, so anyone equipped with Yellow-Gold set equipment would be one cut above all others! The Level 60 Yellow-Gold one-handed sword also brought the attention of Bandits, Guardians and Defenders!

After this auction, the reputation of Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop was surely going to increase even further and bring in more cash!

Zhang Yang checked the current level of guild members. Except for the eight people in his gang, the current highest level was 49 which was only one step away from Level 50! At least two or three days would be needed to gather a 20-man exploration team.

In the evening, Zhang Yang led the team to fight against the Castle.

All the while, Lin Yu was on his mind -- and not in the good way. Along the journey of fighting the Castle, he was silent and did not talk much but released his anger on the monsters.

"Pervert fatty, what's wrong with noob tank?" Little brat asked with curiosity.

Fatty Han thought in deep and very hard then he answered, "I

don't know!"

"He was still fine yesterday. It must be due to the classmate reunion that you attended!" Han Ying Xue interrupted.

"Ah! I figured it out!" Fatty Han patted his thigh, "Little Yang must be lovelorn!"

Qiang!

Sun Xin Yu glared at Fatty Han as she tightened her grip on her daggers, prepared to interrogate Fatty Han for more information if necessary.

Chapter 209: Poisonous Fireland

Fortunately for Fatty Han, he continued to explain, unaware of the danger he was in moments ago, "The girl brother Yang fell in love with in high school is about to marry to someone else in this coming May! Would anyone feel good about this?"

Sun Xin Yu relaxed and sheathed her daggers.

Wei Yan Er was curiously agitated, so she tried to pry for more, "Fatty, please be more specific about it!"

Daffodil Daydream had also become mightily curious, and she begged for more information, "Say it! Say it!"

"Fatty, stop saying sh*t!" Zhang Yang hacked a monster to death and turned to Fatty Han to issue a warning.

Fatty Han threw both of his hands up, pretending to be helpless and said, "Little Yang, you know that my will is weak, especially against these sex bombs right here!"

"F*ck!" but after giving it some thought, Zhang Yang realized that Fatty Han did not know anything that he should not know, so he just left him be.

Fatty Han smiled broadly and told the gang about what that had transpired during the night of the gathering. Coming out from his mouth, it was natural that he turned Zhou Kang Ming even more insidious in his story, using money to lure Zhao Hui Shan step after step closer into his arms, implicitly trying to humiliate Zhang Yang by the table, completely shaping the two into the image of a pair of adulterers, describing the guy as the Xi Men Qing and the girl as Pan Jin Lian.

Zhang Yang felt more uneasy as he listened further, if he's describing them as Xi Men Qing and Pan Jin Lian, wouldn't he be the <u>Wu Da Lang</u> in the story?

"Wah! That's just so disgusting!" Wei Yan Er immediately soared with a sense of justice, "If I'd known about this earlier, I would have gone there and given that shameless pair of adults some serious slapping!"

"Zhan Yu, how pitiful!" passionate Daffodil Daydream was already wiping her tears, her eyes red and puffy.

"Wu Da --- erm, brother Zhan Yu, the world is full of colorful flowers, there's no need to shower your love on one flower only! Look at our small party, full of ladies as pretty as flowers and jades, why would you reject what is near at hand and seek so far away instead!" Endless Starlight spoke his voice out without fearing death.

This bunch of people! Zhang Yang let out a breath of sigh, "I'm not broken-hearted, alright! My relationship with her was like hundreds of years ago, please stop making assumptions about my past!"

"No can do!" Wei Yan Er pulled up her sleeves relentlessly and said, "There is only one person in the world can bully noob tank, only me! Hmph! Xi Men Qing and Pan Jin Lian, just wait till I turn up to them and tear down their house!"

As it seemed, the little girl was really into her character!

Han Ying Xue laughed and made a proposal, "Silly Yu, if there is another classmate gathering around, I shall go and make a good impression of you! Just give me a hundred and eighty pieces of Gray-Silver equipment and I shall allow you to pretend to be my boyfriend for the night!"

"That is not the righteous path, my sister!" Wei Yan Er gave a few taps on Zhang Yang's shoulder and said, "We are out here to mix into society, and the number one rule we always put in our heart is to have loyalty. Noob tank, I will help you!"

Zhang Yang stared at Han Ying Xue incredulously and asked, ""Young and Dangerous"?"

"Sigh, I have absolutely no idea on where she downloaded it from!" Han Ying Xue sighed in surrender.

After clearing up the dungeon, the party was for everyone to have their own free time.

Zhang Yang went back to the Little Merchandize Shop. Excited by his previous announcement on the Yellow-Gold auction, the shop was crowded with people, making the whole atmosphere very lively! He pulled up the sales record to see, and he was instantly stunned by what he saw, his profit margin had actually reached up to 400,000 gold coins!

He could not believe his own eyes at first, but as he thought about it, he realized: Currently, the eight main cities in China region have all been connected, players can travel to any one of the main cities by the Teleportation Points, and the cost for traveling between these cities was free! Therefore, when players knew that the Little Merchandize Shop was in possession of level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment pieces, players from other main cities will deliberately crowd up the little shop. Once it's crowded, there will always be people making purchases, one purchase after another, raising the number of sales in the shop.

It was the only private property in the entirety of China, if not globally. To add on to the history of The Little Merchandize Shop also auctioning out a guild upgrade order, the level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment pieces only made it even more popular. With such success in raising the shop's popularity, it would not be that surprising if the business of the shop wasn't good!

Exchanging the 270,000 gold pieces earned from yesterday and 400,000 gold pieces earned from today into cash, with the addition of Zhang Yang's savings of 700,000 in his account, there should be around 3,000,000 in total. With this amount of money transferred to Yu Li's account, it should already be enough for her to treat her mother.

In just awhile, Yu Li messaged back with four words, saying that,

"Money has been received!"

She did not express any gratitude, it was most probably because she felt like she was trading her own body for the money. It was a business transaction, nothing else. She would not owe Zhang Yang anything else.

The night of the following day, the Little Merchandize Shop begun its second, highly popular auction, pushing 3 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment onto the table. It was already very rare to see players with a full set of level 40 Gray-Silver equipment. With players knowing that there would be a sale on level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment, and armor set pieces to add on to that, the shop was instantly clogged up to capacity!

Zhang Yang had no choice but to implement a measure, 500,000 gold pieces had to be handed over as deposit upon entering the shop, eliminating a large number of players who went there as bystanders. Players would be able to reclaim their deposits when they leave, or they can also place bids by using the deposits as part of the payment.

After half an hour of auctioning, all three pieces of Yellow-Gold pieces had been purchased. Among the pieces, the [Spiritual Boots] was auctioned out at the high price of 760,000 gold pieces, while the [Hunt of the Sniping Giant] was auctioned at a more inferior price of 480,000 gold pieces! The weapon, being the most valuable of all pieces as always, was auctioned out at the extreme price of 970,000 gold pieces!

"It seems that Spellcasters tend to be richer!" Zhang Yang sighed.

The profit of 2,000,000 gold pieces was equally divided among the eight party members, with each person getting their cut of 250,000 gold pieces. The profit was so handsome that Fatty Han and the others were smiling to the point that their eyes were narrowed into a straight line! The remaining 210,000 gold pieces were kept in the guild's account to carry out some regular expenses.

Another two days had passed, the Lone Desert Smoke had finally obtained a total of 20 level 50 players. Zhang Yang put Endless Starlight and Hundred Shots in charge of the parties, first off to clear the normal mode and the hard mode of the Poison Fireland. The first reason was to accumulate equipment, and the second reason was to familiarize themselves with the patterns and skills of the boss, building a firm ground for them in exploring the Death Mode of the dungeon.

Meanwhile, Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream departed for the Centaur's Palace. It was still alright to forego the other bosses, but Zac is a level 50 Yellow-Gold boss, they wouldn't miss it at any chance they got whenever it respawned! Following the advancement of their levels and equipment, they were strong enough to completely crush the monsters and the bosses of the Centaur's Palace. Previously, it took them about five to 6 days to complete the dungeon, but now, one night was all it took for them to handle everything.

Lone Desert Smoke spent only half a day to reclaim the dungeon in Normal Mode, while Hard Mode took two days. Even then, they had to rely on Zhang Yang to provide [Fire resistance Potions] before they managed to slaughter the final boss Roshan - Copper Hammer.

Within these two days, as the large guilds sent their main forces to the Poison Fireland, the cost for [Iron Ores], [Iron Bars] and [Solid Iron Bars] were rising quietly without alerting anyone. The [Iron bar]s, initially sold for the price of 2 gold pieces per set was not questioned by anyone, so they slowly increased the price to 6 gold pieces per set. Even so, the iron bars were in such short supply that even the auction house ran out of [Iron Bar]s!

Every crooked profiteer had already gotten the news that players had to pay a [Solid Iron Bar] to the NPC stationed by the entrance of the dungeon in exchange for an immunity against the erosion effect of the poison fire! Ever since then, they had been mining competitively for [Iron Ore], [Iron Bars] and [Solid Iron Bars], waiting for more people to reach level 50, where they planned to further increase the price of iron bars.

Although the iron ores were the most common mineral raw materials, but they simply could not accommodate the sheer numbers of miners. Furthermore, only regions of level 30 or below will produce an infinite supply of the ore. A sophisticated miner can mine up to 80-100 pieces of iron ores in an hour, but if the same region is full of miners competing for ores, their yield would be greatly diminished.

Although the number of miners knew about the appreciateing price of the iron bars, ores could only refresh by so much in a day, so they quickly reached maximum output, which wasn't enough!

The demand was lower than the supply!

Therefore, although the mainstream players were still around level 45 or so, the crazy season of [Solid Iron Bar] sales had already begun! After all, they would be needing 100 [Iron Bar]s to craft one [Solid Iron Bar]!

It was definitely exceeded Zhang Yang's expectation, as he believed that one Solid iron bar could only be sold at 5 gold pieces each. But, judging from the currently increasing price of the item, many Solid iron bars were quickly sold at 20 gold each, which got him sighing with mixed feelings.

It was also true, the price of 5 gold pieces for each, that was the price quotation in his previous life, and it was about two and a half years after the open server!

Zhang Yang no longer hesitated, immediately commanding Natalia to begin selling solid iron bars. He didn't want to be too greedy, and decided to follow mainstream price of 12 gold coins. That would suffice.

In just two days, the Little Merchandize Shop had sold a total of 130,000 solid iron bars. The number of sales for the first day was 50,000, while the number had increased up to 80,000 on the second day. The total profit was 1,300,000 gold pieces for the Little Merchandize Shop --- excluding the auctioning of the Guild Upgrade Order and some Yellow-Gold equipment which were special occasions, this profit of 1,300,000 gold pieces were totally belonged to Zhang Yang alone!

Instantly exchanging the gold pieces to some cash, the numerical value in Zhang Yang's saving account was increased from a pitiful 7,000 dollars to 3,000,000, and then to a total of 6,900,000 -- it was just like riding a roller coaster!

Following the uninterrupted sales of the [Solid Iron Bar], the space of the warehouse was slowly cleared out, allowing Zhang Yang to store more of the [Fire Resistance Potion].

On the night of 15th October, Zhang Yang selected 20 players according to the suitability of their professions, before leading the party over to the Poison Fireland dungeon.

'Ding! You have entered Poison Fireland (Hardcore Mode)!'

Stepping over the entrance of the dungeon, a land of red flames appeared right in front of everyone. Every then and now, larva would spring up from the ground, spitting terrifying beams of light into the sky. The whole space was enshrouded in red mist, giving them poor visibility.

At the entrance, stood a stout, 1 meter tall Dwarf whose beard flowed freely to his chest, with braided long hair. The name: 'Dwarven Prophet Ankla - The Ale' hovered right above his head.

[Ankla - The Ale] (Normal, Humanoid creature)

Level: 1

HP: 50

Defense: 10

A yellow named NPC, a non-aggressive type.

"Hey there, travelers, what are you guys up to? Passing this area full of fire and poison? Oh god, how can there be such stupid people in the world, to actually traverse this land, do you want to return to the embrace of the great god Titan in such a hurry? "Ankla immediately starting whining strangely after seeing everyone in sight.

"How many times have these brains of yours been stomped on by donkeys, in order to attain this level of stupidity? Even the most stupid Tupala Beast is so much brighter than you are!" Ankla was spraying his saliva like twinkling stars at everyone, with both of his hands on his hips, in a 'know-it-all' posture.

Endless Starlight and the others had completed the Normal Mode and the Hard Mode, so they were expecting some rather mean words from this NPC, and took it in stride. But Wei Yan Er is like a firecracker, once lit, guaranteed to explode! Instantly, she was provoked, and she took out her axe and snarled at that NPC, "Stinky shorty, I shall smash you flat with my axe if you insist on speaking like that!" Ankla instantly exploded in anger, pointing his finger at Wei Yan Er's nose, shouting, "Little b*tch! How dare you show such disrespect towards the great Ankla?"

Seeing how furious the little girl was as she shouted back at him, Zhang Yang smiled lightly and informed her, "Little girl, if I were you, I wouldn't touch this NPC!"

Wei Yan Er curled up her lips in a battle-like snarl before saying, "What is there to be afraid of? It's just a level 1 shorty!" Although she spoke in that manner, she slung her axe over her back anyway.

On such a rare occasion was she wiling enough to calm down at Zhang Yang's advice, but Ankla was not willing to let it go just like that, and with a loud 'Pui!', he spat on the little girl's shoe.

"Argh --- you short piece of shit! I'm mad now!" How could Wei Yan Er endure such a humiliation? So she pulled out her axe from her back and cleaved the NPC into two.

'Pak!'

The level 1 NPC only had 50 health points, with just a gentle touch, he fell straight down to the ground. Wei Yan Er was full of herself as she said, "Noob tank, this stinky NPC was nothing after all, slaughtered like a ---"

Boom!

A huge claw suddenly descended from the sky, flattening the little girl's body with a damage value of '-100,000', and she was reduced to a flattened corpse, half sunken in the ground.

The body of Ankla had disappeared completely, replaced by a gigantic dragon. Its whole body was covered in deep blue scales, looking just like a gigantic lizard with a pair of wings. The gang that stood in front of the dragon were completely dwarfed by its size.

[Deez Twork the Blue Dragon] (Ethereal boss, Dragon type)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

"So, your brain was really damaged by the kicks of donkeys, to actually dare to attack the great blue dragon!" The blue dragon shook it's head, with an expression saying 'This person is stupid beyond cure'.

Shoof, a blue light flashed, this gigantic dragon had returned back into a dwarf.

Han Ying Xue quickly rescued Wei Yan Er. She got up, with tears

in her eyes, "Stinky noob tank, why didn't you warn me about his ability to transform!"

"I did not even have to chance to say it before you already started swinging your weapon at him!" Zhang Yang was trying to resist himself from laughing.

Wei Yan Er stood at one side, pouting as she stared relentlessly at Ankla, but her face suddenly lit up and she made a suggestion, "If we kill him, then the will be drops of Ethereal equipment?!"

Zhang Yang burst into laughter and replied, "Didn't you see the attack that got you with '100,000' damage? Do you really think we can kill them?"

Wei Yan Er sighed in despair, went to one side and started drawing circles in the ground while cursing the gigantic dragon that disguised itself as a dwarf.

Actually, even if players managed to take down an NPC, there would be no spoils, whatsoever. In his previous life, some Level 150+ players had traveled all the way back to take down this blue dragon, but they did not even get a single fart! Still, it wasn't like he could tell her that.

Zhang Yang went up to Ankla and asked, "O great Blue Dragon, may I consult your great wisdom for ways to aid us across this vast land of poison fire?"

Ankla raised his frowned face and spoke in pride, "It is indeed your luck to come across me! It's such a coincidence that I have some of these potions, they can aid on protecting you from the corrosion of the poison fire damage!"

"However, you'll need to hand over some [Solid Iron Bar] for them!" the gigantic dragon, disguised as a dwarf expressed a face of greed as he spoke.

Zhang Yang turned around and smiled, then he said, "The dragon race is definitely very fond of glittering shinny things. They're stingy, the attitude in which there is only taking and no giving is quite similar to two certain members of our party, stingy and petty!"

Wei Yan Er was instantly provoked, putting herself in the shoe that fit, snapping at Zhang Yang with rage, "Noob tank, who are you talking about!"

Everyone traded a solid iron bar to Ankla respectively while the dwarf buffed them in turn, having collected the solid iron bar from each of them.

[Ankla's Blessing]: Allows you to resist against the corrosion of poison fire, the effect will remain even after death, last for 5 hours.

Xi Men Qing - describing a man in 'The Reincarnation of Golden Lotus' who is lustful and rich, used money to sleep with another man's wife (Pan Jin Lian).

Pan Jin Lian - describing a woman in 'The Reincarnation of Golden Lotus' who is full of lust and unfaithful. Wife of Wu Da Lang.

Wu Da Lang - describing a man in 'The Reincarnation of Golden Lotus' who is betrayed by his wife (Pan Jin Lian) while he was working hard to earn money out there.

Young and Dangerous - A 1996, notoriously popular, crime-action-thriller film in Hong Kong.

Chapter 210: Connecting The Six Cities

"Forward!" Zhang Yang gave the command to push forward after every single one of the party members had been buffed.

Pong! Pong! Pong!

Approximately 10 meters away from where they stood, the thick mist dispersed and there came a humanoid stone giant, as tall as 10-meter tall, maybe taller, deep crimson in color. Every step it took rocked the ground with tremors.

[Poison Fire Giant] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 54

Hp: 1,000,000

Defense: 600

"Charge!" Zhang Yang shouted with a loud voice, pulling out his axe and used to shoulder-check the monster.

"Ao---" the Poison Fire Giant roared in rage, swinging it's giant fists at Zhang Yang.

With one slap across him, it only took away 1/6 of Zhang Yang's health points, it was not even worth mentioning! One must know that Zhang Yang's current Defense value had reached 420, with a damage absorption of 600 points! This was why the basic damage of the monster had been brought down from approximately 4,000 damage to 2,000 damage!

The party members ganged up on the monster, and standing in a circle, one after another they unleashed their attacks on the Poison Fire Giant.

The Poison Fire Giant had only one skill with group knockdown effect, followed closely by a burning shock wave which dealt 4000 damage points to all targets within a 20 meter radius. However, with Zhang Yang's "Vitality aura" in effect, even the player with lowest HP exceeded 4,000 HP, and it was absolutely unnecessary to worry about anyone dying.

The total damage per second of the whole party reached a total of 200,000 damage, it took less than a minute to destroy the Poison Fire Giant with 1,000,000 health points. Swiftly chiseled away, the monster exploded and dropped a few pieces of rock fragments and a piece of crimson red crystal.

Zhang Yang widened his eyes, instantly picking up that piece of crimson red crystal from the ground.

[Fire Crystal Substance] (Special Item)

Use: Divides 1 piece of Fire Crystal Substance into 10 pieces of Fire Crystal Shards.

Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue stared to each other and exchanging sinister smiles.

As the party proceeded forward, they slaughtered another four Poison Fire Giants. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were actually beginning to compete with Zhang Yang for the Fire Crystal Substance. These Fire Crystal Substance did not fall every time, but the drop rate was quite high nevertheless, and out of five monsters, 4 pieces of Fire Crystal Substance will drop. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had managed to snatch one for themselves each.

These two girls immediately smiled proudly. They had no idea what these Fire Crystal Substances were for, but bring out such a face from Zhang Yang, these crystal substances must be very valuable!

The geometry of the Poison Fireland was like the long twisting body of a snake, which shaped into a spiral, with seven bosses on a total of three layers. The first layer had four bosses, while the second layer only had two bosses, leaving the third and final layer with the final boss, Roshan - Copper Hammer. The backstory of the dungeon was that a small number of the dwarves, defectors from their own race after snatching up the sacred relics of their kind, ended up offering themselves to the demonic side, becoming

their fangs and claws.

It didn't take long for Zhang Yang and the gang to reach the entrance to the spiral structure. It was just like a snake's mouth, with two Poison Fire Giants guarding the entrance, while the two sides of the road were lined with boiling of lava, the heat causing flames to lick the edges. If players fall into that area, they will suffer a fire damage of 5000 in every second! Furthermore, the two end points of the snake's body was very far apart, it was at least hundreds of meters apart. To swim across the lava and skip the dungeons straight up to the boss seemed to be impossible at that stage.

The party unleashed their power and slaughtered the two monsters in no time. In just half an hour, they had already sighted the first boss in front of them, with dozens of [Fire Crystal Substances] in their backpacks at that point.

As Zhang Yang and the other main members of his party had equipped themselves with few pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment. Despite this being Death Mode, their equipment was turning it into a cake walk.

Other players had been carefully picked from the core level of the guild's combat power, with good combat awareness, and most importantly, cooperation and ability to react to orders. Furthermore, these players had went through the Normal Mode and Hard Mode of this dungeon, having a certain level of understanding towards the bosses, their skills and their habits. The whole journey was like crushing dried branches and sticks all along, in just a short period of time, they had already slaughtered

the first to the sixth boss, pummeling them down to the ground!

The first and the second bosses dropped only profession-specific weapons, and starting form the third boss, armor-set equipment pieces were among the loots. Zhang Yang had already lost his interest on the Gray-Silver equipment, however, he was the only Guardian in the whole party, and it was contrary to what that was expected, the third, fifth, and sixth boss only dropped the Guardian's Furious Set equipment pieces, therefore, he could only take that which was given freely!

After they were done with the sixth boss, Zhang Yang and the gang were annihilated three times in total, which was remarkable, considering the Death Mode difficulty. But the monsters were too many in their numbers, most of their time was spent on clearing out the monsters in the area. Sensing morning approaching, Zhang Yang announced that the activity for today had come to an end, and they would continue by 7.pm on the next day.

Back to the main city, Zhang Yang went offline immediately and slept through the night.

The next morning, Zhang Yang went to the Identifier and identified the three pieces of Gray-Silver equipment, [Furious Helmet], [Furious Metallic Gloves], and [Furious Metallic Boots], and had all of them all of them socketed with [Level 2 Vitality Gemstone]s. His health points had reached the amount of 13,510 (with Vitality Aura)!

The players in the China region were doing pretty well. Their progress on the Death Mode of the Poison Fireland was at 5/7,

while Imperial Sky, Crimson Rage, Radiance and the other guilds with top strength had reached the progression of 6/7, competing hand in hand with the Lone Desert Smoke. All of them carried the possibility of leaping through the dragon's gate, becoming the first guild in the China region to complete 7/7, securing the First Clear of the dungeon!

Throughout the entire day, Fatty Han had been very anxious over it, apprehensive about the sudden moment when someone else triggers the First Clear announcement.

Seeing Zhang Yang was crafting potions leisurely, Fatty Han could not hold it in anymore, so he asked, "Brother Yang, how could you not feel anxious at all? This will be the First Clear of the dungeon, and everyone is just one boss away from it, that title must not be snatched by others!"

Zhang Yang without even look up, said, "Does being anxious make a difference?"

Fatty Han immediately rolled both of his eyes, and then he said, "So after half of the day, it's just like the ancient proverb, the emperor is not worried, but the eunuchs are worried to death!"

"Haha, those were all your own words!"

"F*ck off, I wake up everyday with a boner pointing up to the stars! Eunuch your ass!"

Fortunately for him, after the whole day, there was no sign of any server announcement on the world channel, and Fatty Han finally loosened up with a sigh of relief, and he began to push Zhang Yang to assemble the party members since it was 7.pm.

But Zhang Yang was pulled by Wei Yan Er over to identify her equipment, you keep what you sow, that is the basic principle of Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue, and to be able to spend others' money without spending a dime of their own would be even better! Of course, these two ladies were standard swindlers of friends and associates, they would not give a damn to regular people.

In Wei Yan Er's words, "Noob tank, I come to you because I have a good opinion of you!"

Fine, after spending money, he still needed to thank people with screenshots!

Later at 7.pm, with Fatty Han gazing looking out for new players so intently that his eyes were bloodshot, the land-reclaim party had been assembled, and was speeding to the Tukula Fortress by 'plane'.

Zhang Yang has privilege of the City Order to teleport to the city, so naturally he did not have to walk all the way together with the gang, and he used that little time to craft a few sets of [Fire Resistance Potion]. After Han Ying Xue and the others arrived at the Tukula Fortress, only did he teleport himself to the chamber of the fortress' owner, entering the dungeon with everyone.

20-player dungeons initially required 3 days to refresh, therefore, the gang only needed to look for Ankla to trade for one of his buffs before they could travel across the boundless plain land directly to where the sixth boss was located, and clear the remaining last group of monsters before they could face the final boss, Roshan - Copper Hammer.

"Little sis, have you forgotten to activate your "Strength Aura!" Zhang Yang reminded her.

"Oh!" Wei Yan Er quickly waved both of her hands, and a stream of golden light channeled down through her body, stretching out by a radius of 30-meters, and as the light faded slowly, everyone was instantly boosted with a 2% increase in strength value.

"Noob tank, when can we acquire gemstones for upgrading aura skills?"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought before answering, "Open world bosses with the grade of Gray-Silver or above have the tendency to drop [Aura Stone]s, when Poison Fireland is cleared, we shall begin our sweep on the open world bosses!"

"That's great!" Wei Yan Er nodded her head like there was no tomorrow.

"Oh yea, silly Yu, so what's the deal with the battle mounting system?" Han Ying Xue asked the question out of the sudden.

"Yea, after the battle to secure the fortress, I was too tired and directly logged out, I wanted to ask that too!" Endless Starlight asked as well.

Zhang Yang frowned and asked them back, "You guys did not check on the official website by yourselves?"

The gang were shaking their heads left and right in silence, until Hundred Shots smiled and said, "It's still the best to hear if from you, it save us the trouble of looking for it!"

"What the f*ck, you lazy bunch of lazy people!" Zhang Yang shook his head non-stop, then he said, "The battle mount system is good stuff! Our personal mounts that were purchased from the NPC, are called regular mounts, or non-combat mounts. While on our mounts, we cannot execute any attacks or perform any movement that causes damage. In order to engage in battle, we must put aside our mount first!"

Han Ying Xue immediately understood, and she said, "Then, Battle Mount allows players to sit on their mounts during battle?"

"That's the gist of it, but those mounts will be much stronger!" Zhang Yang reorganized the images in his head and said, "Players get to sit on their mounts with Battle Mount System, where not only they can attack with them, they would also share health points with their mounts! Those mounts will also have their own attack values, just like the pets of the Hunter!"

"Wow, noob tank, why didn't you say it out earlier? If every one

of us are here with our mounts, we can sweep and conquer this dungeon already!" Wei Yan Er excitedly grumbled.

Zhang Yang shook his head again, and said, "Firstly, Battle Mount are not Hunter's pets, they are not allowed to be summoned in certain areas, making them utterly useless. For example, dungeons, arenas, indoors. Secondly, Battle Mount are not tigers or lions that can be tamed to become your mount so easily. Only beasts that are labeled as 'Rare' can be captured with [Sealing Reins] that will be purchasable from shops! Once the sealing is successful, then only will the beasts become your Battle Mounts!"

He paused, suddenly thinking about that red dragon pet that Hundred Shots was bound to acquire in the future -- could it be a very uncommon 'Rare' dragon race? Right after Hundred Shots got that dragon mount, countless other Hunter class players tried they best to subdue a dragon as their pets. But, none ever succeeded! Even if the success rate was as low as it gets, there should have been a chance when there were so many Hunters trying their luck. Unless, it was something that can never be subdued with the Hunter's "Beast Taming"!

If that is the real case, then everyone would have a chance to get a dragon pet! However, non-Hunter profession players can only use them as their Battle Mount!

"When players are in the condition of riding a mount, the health points of the player and the mount will stack together. Furthermore, the mount will have it's very own skills. The type of skills would, of course, depend on the monster it was tamed from! Let's take Thunderous Light Leopard as an example, it can spew out a ranged attack taking the form of a laser-like beam of plasma from afar. It should retain that skill after becoming a mount!"

Chapter 211: Roshan - Copper Hammer

"That means, that everyone can have a little pets just like the Hunters?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and explained further, "Mounts have many limitations, they can only bring out their functions when players are riding on them, once dismounted, the mount will disappear immediately, unlike the precious pets of the Hunters which can continue attacking separately together with their owner! Only Hunters can treat their mounts as their pets and use them!"

"Wah, that is also good enough, noob tank, let's go catch some Battle Mounts tomorrow!" Wei Yan Er was happy for a moment, because she is a mount-freak, even if the mount did not have any special abilities, she would still do everything possible to collect them. Let's not forget that the Battle Mount can actually increase maximum health points, consequently increasing the battle power of the player!

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Little girl, do you really think that capturing a Battle Mount is a fun thing to do? First off, the word 'Rare' is already a big headache for you! Who wouldn't want a Battle Mount, when you encounter one, surely the first thing to do is to immediately take out the [Sealing Lease] to capture it, everything else is based on luck!"

"Hehe, my luck has always been great!" Wei Yan Er revealed her teeth with a smile, "Just wait and see, noob tank, I shall come back here and capture that bad-*ss dragon by the entrance of this dungeon, then I shall come back and send you to your demise with one stomp!"

"Silly little girl, all Battle Mounts that can be captured start at level o, you can save your breath!" Zhang Yang immediately shattered the beautiful dream of Wei Yan Er.

Hundred Shots quickly asked Zhang Yang, "Then, can we level up a Battle Mount?"

"Yes!" Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, "Just like the pets of the Hunter class, they can be leveled up as long as they are gaining experience points. Furthermore, the amount of experience points required for the mount to level up is much lesser compared to the amount of experience points required for players to level up. However, the level of the mount cannot exceed the level of the player, just like a Hunter's pet."

The gang did not have much knowledge about the Battle Mount since the beginning, so they were easily moved by what he heard, and one of the healer knights named Nine Days of Thunder asked, "Guildmaster, would the capturing of a mount end in failure?"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "It would, and the number of failure in capturing the mount is limited! Any mount that is available for capturing are green-named monsters, but, after 10 times of failures in capturing it, the monster will become a rednamed monster, and by then, it will become impossible to seal the monster, ever again!"

"Uh, hello, ladies and gentleman, are we here to slaughter the boss or to capture mounts? Hustle up! Don't the others snatch the First Clear of the dungeon!" the only thing that Fatty Han was obsessed at the moment was the First Clear of the dungeon.

"Oh yea ---" Hundred Shots tapped his forehead and said, "Zhan Yu, there was a representative from an advertisement firm named 'Far Ocean Electronics' who contacted me, expressing their interest to sponsor our guild. All we need to do is when we acquire the First Clear for a dungeon, we register our party name after 'Far Ocean Electronics - Lone Desert Smoke' on the First Clear List. There will be a reward of 300,000 cash for every First Clear title we acquire, and a reward of 100,000 cash for every time we get ourselves onto the Time Attack List!"

"Holy molly, have you agreed on it already? That's is a sky-high kind of a great news indeed!" Fatty Han was moved instantly, shaking Hundred Shots's by the shoulders.

Hundred Shots shook his head and said, "This kind of decision should be made by Zhan Yu of course!"

Zhang Yang had passed over the responsibility on the administrative matters to him, that was a kind of trust, allowing him to make his own decisions. Facing such big deal of a decision making, of course would be natural to let the Guildmaster decide.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "They are really stingy on it, planning to handle us with 300,000?"

Fatty Han immediately slapped his head, that was true to the core, each of they were already earning 1,000,000 or even more just by dividing the earnings from their equipment sales! Acquiring a First Clear title for a reward of 300,000 cash might sound appealing, but even with only 10 players in one party, each of them would only receive 30,000 cash! Furthermore, according to the conventional design of the game, there's a 10 level-limit compatibility for each dungeon, and it requires 7 days to level up once after achieving level 50 -- it would probably require approximately 2 months to acquire one First Clear Title of a dungeon. Therefore, players could only rely on the Time Attack Dungeons to earn cash on regular basis.

But the Time Attack of the dungeons were also limited in terms of the shortest time made possible with the shortest route taken, the fastest kills, the right party arrangement, and with so many guilds competing, each guild would only have their chances to go for it by three or four times at most. So, players should be thankful if they could even earn an amount of 10,000 or 20,000 a month.

For regular players, earning 10,000 or 20,000 was considered pretty good. But Fatty Han and the gang had been so well fed that their appetite would not be so easily satiated. Such a small amount of money would no longer matter in their eyes!

Han Ying Xue widened her eyes a little and said, "Rich water should not be let out of one's own fields, please allow us to be the sponsor for the guild then!"

"You girls?" Hundred Shots stared at Han Ying Xue, having some confusion over what she just said.

Han Ying Xue smiled lightly and said, "Yan Er's dad has a company of their own, I own some of the stocks, and this game, 'God's Miracle' is famously blooming nowadays, it'll be great advertising for the company!"

"Cousin, you don't have to be modest, you already own 55% of the company shares, that's actually more than my dad's!" Wei Yan Er immediately said, "Noob tank, aren't you heartbroken now? Aiyo, I will give my cousin sister to you, you won't have to ask for any sponsorship money!"

"Hahaha!" the gang laughed, as Sun Xin Yu flashed her stare of death across the room.

"You little brat, in order to save a little bit of money, you dare to sell me out?" Han Ying Xue gave a glance at Wei Yan Er, but Wei Yan Er did not give a damn and responded with a funny face. "Work is work, private matters are private matters, not gonna get these two mixed up! So this is how it is going to be, I will arrange for a representative of my company's advertisement department to contact you!"

"Alright! Just look for Hundred Shots, after you are done with the negotiations, just inform me!"

"Hey guys, are we going to beat the boss or not?" Fatty Han had tears streaming down his face now.

As the party members chatted while pushing forwards deeper

into the dungeon, another half an hour passed, all spent on clearing out the monsters in the area. Finally, they stood in front of the last boss. The boss stage was vast, like a shopping plaza, and the boss was standing right in the middle of it all, with no monsters in the surroundings, at all.

[Roshan - Copper Hammer, King of the Flaming Dwarf] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 58

Hp: 5,000,000

Defense: 600

The boss was wearing extremely thick armor, with a large axe held in his right hand, his skin the colour of crimson red. Standing in the boiling mist, he looked like a burning flame.

"Just like the other two modes, the boss has no other differences other than the damage increased!" Zhang Yang had also revised on the battle tactics with the gang first hand, as Han Ying Xue and some members had not cleared this dungeon before, "Among the skills of this boss, the most lethal one is his forced-teleportation! It will randomly teleport four players 100 meters away from the boss, afflicting each of the players with a negative effect 'Chain of Burning Flame'!"

"Players who carry the 'Chain of Burning Flame' will inflict a DPS of 2,000 fire damage to each other if they are within 30 meters from each other. So, the trick is this, the 4 players that are effect by the 'Chain of Burning Flame' must head out in different directions until they are at safe distance before they are burned to crisps!"

Zhang Yang looked at the gang and said, "This is the time to test our mutual understanding and our teamwork, if two or three people run towards the same direction, who should be the one to concede? One must react and decide in an instant to run elsewhere! Take note that this is Hardcore Mode, if you have 5 seconds to react in Hard Mode, you only have 3 seconds to react here!"

"Oh, silly Yu, no wonder you wanted the recipe for Fire Resistance Potion, now I see what it could be used for!" Han Ying Xue suddenly understood, instantly rolled her eyes back at Zhang Yang, "You stingy little piece, now you are going to earn another big roll of cash!"

Zhang Yang smiled lightly, then he said, "Once we are opened up to the boss, just drink the Fire Resistance Potion to prevent any complication later! Fire Resistance Potions can decrease the damage received by 600 points of damage, it can greatly increase the margin of error!"

To beat this boss, Fire Resistance Potions were not a compulsory to have, but with no doubt, having Fire Resistance Potions will obviously decrease the difficulty in engaging the boss.

"Other than the 'Chain of Burning Flame', the other difficult

situation the boss will create for us starts when the boss uses "Destructive smash" on the tanks, decreasing 50% of the healing effect on them. Of course, I will do my best to block, and the priest has to reserve their "Holy shield". Wait for the moment where I receive "Destructive smash" from the boss before casting the shield on me, because the shield absorbs damage instead of heals, so there shouldn't be any influence on this!"

Zhang Yang clapped his hands a few times and said, "Alright, there's no point repeating my instructions a thousand times or ten thousand times, it will be clearer once we try this out in practice, drink the potions up and let's charge forward!"

He took out a bottle of the Fire Resistance Potion, with a gulp, he emptied the whole bottle before pulling out his axe, charging swiftly towards the boss with huge steps.

"Who are you people, how dare you to trespass my land of the flaming dwarfs? It doesn't matter, all I have to do is to annihilate all of you!" Roshan swung an axe that was three times his height, coming forward to meet the charging players, "I am Roshan, the King of the Flaming Dwarves, remember my name, for this name belongs to the one who will send all of you to see the Lord of Hades!"

"You're full of hot air!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue at him.

Zhang Yang used "Charge", and with a whoosh, he crashed into the boss, waving his battle axe and ferociously hacking away at anywhere and anything. Wei Yan Er was not willing to be left behind, following with an immediate "Charge", swinging her giant axe, slicing and dicing as well.

'-5,48o!'

With a swing of the axe from the boss, Zhang Yang received a huge amount of damage, only a boss dealing 8,000 or more damage could have done that much! Fortunately, Roshan is categorized as a Berserker type, his attack rate was not that frequent, and it takes about three seconds for him to deliver one attack. With four healers in the party, they can leisurely heal Zhang Yang's health bar back to full in no time.

"Burning Flame, aid me in burning these nincompoops into crusty crisps!" the battle had just begun for awhile, when Roshan let our a roar, raising the axe in his hand up high. Four chains formed from the burning flame of his axe, where they split and hit Endless Starlight, Defiant Monk, Sky Burial and Lady Baidu. In a flash, the four players immediately disappeared from where they stood, reappearing 100 meters away from the boss, seven o'clock from his direction.

Bam!

Four stream of lights explosively rose upward, flashing right above the four players respectively, dealing a series of damages ranging from '-1,400' to '-1,050'. Because Endless Starlight is a Defender, naturally possessing a passive 75% spell damage

reduction, he sustained the least damage among the four.

"Run! Quickly!"

The four players quickly began their running, but only Sky Burial ran towards the west, the other three were all running towards the same direction.

"What the fart! Defiant Monk, Lady Baidu, stop sticking my ass! Change your course of direction now, I don't want to die because of you two!" Endless Starlight was shouting in a loud voice while gulping down a bottle of red potion, "Sun of a..., Lady Baidu, do you like my ass that much? Turn around! Turn around!"

'-1,400!'

'-1,400!'

'-1,050!'

The damage value consecutively appearing right above the heads of the three players as they tried to pull themselves apart. However, Lady Baidu had the lowest gear in term of grades having just a little over 5,000 health points. Although she did drink a bottle of red potion, she could only hold on for another tick of explosive damage. Five seconds later, her health points were all burned off, and she skidded face first across the floor, having died mid-stride.

As Lady Baidu died, Endless Starlight was no longer in danger, he crowed in joy and said, "I have tons of health points, if you follow me again the next time around, I'm not going anywhere, others will only be burned to death if they don't get away from me!"

Rich water should not be let out of one's own fields - Benefits should always be kept for one's own people.

Chapter 212: Silky Soft Bra

"For f*ck's sake man, you are one shameless brat, isn't that an act of pushing people forward to be the victim instead?" Fatty Han was conflicted with mixed feelings, laughing and berating him at the same time.

Within such a short period of time, one player had been lost, with the remaining three players waiting out for the duration of 'Chain of Burning Flame' to expire, before they headed back to the party and did what they were supposed to do.

Zhang Yang then informed, "Fatty, Hunters have it easiest when it comes to escaping the effect of 'Chain of Burning Flame', one "Tumble" would do the trick. You'll end up 10 meters away from the others!"

"Oh yea, I actually forgot to use "Tumble!" Defiant Monk gave himself a strong slap to his forehead, with a face that looked like he just woke up from a dream.

It was just a mere 30 seconds before Roshan activated the second 'Chain of Burning Flame', randomly picking four targets and teleporting them to a spot 100 meters away. This time, they appeared at the 12 o'clock direction.

The healers had it tough. It was like playing a game of tag, having no clue which of the four burning members should they heal first. As the teleportation location was completely random, it was not possible for them to make any arrangements in advance to where the four targeted players would be teleported to in order to heal their health points back. The best they could do was to heal whoever they could.

Compared to the first teleportation, this time, it was handled much better --- or should we say that they were much luckier, the four players had already picked four different directions in the beginning, although they were not running outwards at in an even petal of four, with the support of the Fire Resistance Potion and the usage of red potions, everyone managed to hold on until they were out of the 30-meters distance from each other, none of them was killed.

Although the boss has a "Destructive smash" that decreases healing effect, it did nothing against Zhang Yang and Han Ying Er, both already possessing a few pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, basically toying with the boss. Without posing too much of a threat, the only difficult thing was to handle the roll-calls by the boss!

On the third roll-call, another player was killed.

On the forth roll-call, most unfortunately, the four hapless players started running in the same direction, and realizing their mistake, turned around at the same time, turning again.... This went on for a while with everyone constantly running alongside each other. In the end, all of them died except for one. That player survived because of their long health bar, if not for anything else.

On the fifth roll-call, none of them died.

On the sixth...

After experiencing 11 roll-calls, a total of nine members of the party had been killed, while the boss still remained with 38% of health points. It didn't affect their performance all too much as the deceased members of the party were not the main force of Zhang Yang's eight core members of the party, there was still hope to turn the table around!

"How was it? I was right, am I? One shall not die with a long health bar!" Endless Starlight was considered to be the lucky doll among the unlucky ones, a total of 11 roll-calls were made by the boss, and Endless Starlight was selected for six of them. With his longer health bar, the other three players were all blown to death, and he managed survive in a most disapproving manner!

"Get lost, what use is there for you to survive without even contributing a tiny bit of damage!" Hundred Shots, clearly disgusted, had a guttural quality to his voice.

"Burning flame, incinerate them all!" Roshan raised his axe again, activating his 12th roll-call with his skill; targeting Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, Fantasy Sweetheart and Defiant Monk!

Initially, the party had 4 healers. One had been killed in a previous roll-call. With the current roll-call, two strong priests, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart had been picked. In an instant, the party was left with only one Holy Knight -- Half Gram Not Two Yuan -- to heal Zhang Yang. Of all times, Zhang Yang had

to be carrying the negative effect of "Destructive smash" at that moment!

This was probably the gravest situation they've been in since the beginning of the battle.

Zhang Yang quickly summoned his servant Clear Lotus and activated the "Substitute" skill, instantly acquiring a 5-second invincibility, nullifying all the negative effects he had on him. By doing so, he allowed the Holy Knight Half Gram Not Two Yuan to heal him without interruption while waiting for Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart to return.

Furthermore, once the selected players were teleported, they started running around like headless flies.

Han Ying Xue never had any sense of direction to begin with. She activated shield around herself, healed herself, then she literally shut her eyes and ran forward without looking to see if there was anyone in front of her. As a result, Defiant Monk was forced into a rather tragic situation -- he had already used "Tumble" to create distance from the others the moment he was teleported. Wei Yan Er and Fantasy Sweetheart were already running in different directions, but Han Ying Xue quickly caught up to Defiant Monk with her powerful legs.

Defiant Monk suddenly panicked, as he quickly yelled with his top voice, "Vice Guildmaster, you are running at the wrong direction! Turn around! Turn!"

Han Ying Xue heeded his screams and did turn around, except that it was a 360 degree turn, resulting in her continued rampage towards Defiant Monk!

Although the Fire Resistance Potion reduces a lot of damages, it only managed to increase the running time from 3 seconds to 5 seconds. Although Defiant Monk had already gulped down a red potion, with an additional "Healing" from Han Ying Xue, he wasn't able to keep Han Ying Xue from burning his ass, so he ended up being blasted to death!

"Hahaha!" Wei Yan Er laughed with her hands pressed against her stomach, and she said, "Cousin sis, you are really mean, it was already bad enough to blow others up, and you even healed him, prolonging his suffering! I can't stop laughing! You'll be the death of me! You're a secret operative mole embedded within my army! I shall destroy you on behalf of the moon!"

Zhang Yang could only bitterly smile at her understandably bad sense of direction. He said, "Witchy Snow, the next time you get selected again, just stand there and don't run, heal yourself from where you are standing!"

Han Ying Xue smiled with guilt and said, "I am so sorry, Defiant Monk!"

"It's... It's alright!" Defiant Monk resignedly accepted his unfortunate fate.

"If I were to die beneath a peony flower, I would still be charming

as a ghost. Queen Snow, you can blow me, blow me to death, I don't mind!" Endless Starlight was shouting like an anthomaniac.

"Tsk tsk tsk, Starlight, pretty Snow is brother Yang's type, you should just go to the shade!"

If they had come without any Fire Resistance Potions, the whole party might have been totally annihilated by now. Never underestimate a potion that only increase the survival time of the players by a mere two seconds, because players in 'God's Miracle' can reach up to the speed of 10 meters per second with their full power while running. The game had turned everyone into an Olympic sprinter. Two seconds would allow players to run another 20 meters, and if four players can run in the direction of four axis, they can definitely escape the burn in no time!

It could still be done without the Fire Resistance potion, but it will require absolute understanding among each other and perfect teamwork! With the [Fire Resistance Potion], there is no doubt that it will greatly decrease the difficulty, allowing a much wider margin of error, making the boss much easier to take on!

30%, 20%, 10%!

Two more members were killed afterwards, and the party had successfully pushed the health bar of the boss down below 10%.

"You despicable insects, to be able push me this far! Curse you, I shall teach you all, the terror of provoking a Dwarf King!" Roshan gave out a roar that shook the heavens, raising up both of his

hands and lifting the axe up high, his entire body was instantly pulsating beneath a bloody red halo.

'Ding! Roshan has awoken the ancient power of the kings, damage dealt increase by 50%!'

"Son of a sniper! The boss is entering berserk mode!" Fatty Han was shouting frantically.

"That's strange, in Normal Mode and Hard Mode, the boss did no such thing!" Hundred Shots scratched his head, having trouble understanding the situation, as the parties that cleared the Normal Mode and Hard Mode of this dungeon were led by himself and Endless Starlight.

"That is why this is called Hardcore Mode!" Zhang Yang replied him.

'-8,534!'

After entering berserk mode, Roshan's attack was increased significantly, his basic attack was elevated to a total attack of 12,000, and only the guild's top tanker could hold on! That tanker was Zhang Yang!

"Speed-kill!"

After the boss entered berserk mode, there was no way to kite and tank the boss, with a single attack surpassing 8,000, and the

inconsistent use of "Destructive smash" that reduced healing effects, Zhang Yang could still buy time using his emergency skills, but even he wouldn't last indefinitely. The only way left was to speed-kill the boss!

"Burning flame, incinerate these pests!" once again, Roshan did a roll-call and did his teleportation hocus pocus.

Immediately, Sun Xin Yu, Half Gram Not Two Yuan, Hundred Shots and Fantasy Sweetheart were teleported 100 meters way from the boss at a 3 o'clock direction.

Pak!

As the sparks of fire flared out, all four of them began to receive damages of '-2400'. With the boss in berserk mode, the damage inflicted by the 'Chain of Burning Flame' effect had also been increased by 50%!

With a swift activation of his "Tumble", Hundred Shots quickly blasted 10 meters away, where he continued running, turning around to take a peek to find that no one else was following him. Half Gram Not Two Yuan was all alone in one direction, but Sun Xin Yu and Fantasy Sweetheart were heading towards the same direction.

"Stay where you are, heal yourself!" Sun Xin Yu commanded Fantasy Sweetheart in her cold and icy voice.

The ice queen had a very oppressing aura, therefore, the busty Fantasy Sweetheart who had large, watery eyes immediately stopped and nodded. The abrupt halt jolted her pair of excellent boobies up and down, and they jiggled without any signs of pausing at all. She quickly activated a shield around herself, casting a strong healing skill.

Sun Xin Yu had a total of 7,300 health points, so by theory, she could withstand 3 hits of the 'Chain of Burning Flame'. However, she had ran towards the same direction as Fantasy Sweetheart and wasted a bit of time, so she had already being burned three times, leaving her with only 100 points health points remaining!

Even if she drank a [level 2 Healing Potion], it would only heal her by 1,000 health points, which was not enough to counter the damage of one explosive attack!

Pak!

Just as the forth explosion happened, Sun Xin Yu waved her right hand and suddenly, her entire body vanished into thin air, before she reappeared again in an instant. She continued to run like hell, rushing to gain 30 meters of distance away from Fantasy Sweetheart!

"Beautiful!" Zhang Yang was watching all events that unfolded, and when he saw that last particular scene, he could not help himself but to applaud her! Just now, Sun Xin Yu had used her skill -- "Vanish", to gain a single <u>frame</u> of invincibility. It had such a narrow window of opportunity that it was just enough to avoid the blast damage. It was definitely a performance only masters of

masters could pull off!

To use the split-second short of invincibility when activating Vanish in order to avoid damage required precise control -- down to the last milisecond at the moment when the explosion happens! Even if it was Zhang Yang, he could not have done it so perfectly!

She would indeed be the number one of the top 10 thieves in the China region. There was no doubt about it now. Just witnessing what she just did, was eyes-dropping!

Other than Zhang Yang, the others also started applauding her, that evasion was just too incredible!

```
5%, 4%, 3%!
```

Roshan was once again ready to do another roll-call, but his health bar was already coming to an end. Even with four players dead, it would not change the fate of Roshan was at death's door!

```
2%, 1%!
```

"No--- No! I cannot die, I am the King of the Flaming Dwarfs, I shall snatch all the sacred relics back and conquer the entire Dwarf race, I am... Un..defea..table...!" Pam, Roshan did an odd pirouette as he spun around, the axe falling heavily onto the ground. His fat, short body soon followed, causing a tremor as it hit the ground.

As the blood flowed across the ground, the blood eerily formed a

magic circle, emitting some dark lights.

"Haha! We did it!"

Zhang Yang had not expected this to go so smoothly, even with the Fire Resistance Potion, he had never expected them so succeed at their single attempt.

'Ding! You and your party have acquired the First Clear title for The Poison Fireland Dungeon (Death Mode), as the leader, please insert your party's name to be published on the list of the Death Mode's First Clear title, for the world to behold and sing praises!"

Zhang Yang suddenly thought of it, so he asked Han Ying Xue, "So how about it, do we put your company's name this time? The next time we acquire another First Clear title will be one or two months later!"

Han Ying Xue pondered briefly upon it and said, "Alright, you can use 'Silky Soft Bra, giving you the most personal care! Lone Desert Smoke' as the party's name!"

Zhang Yang blinked dumbly for a second before saying weakly, "Hello, you did not mention that your company sells bras!"

Han Ying Xue gave him a backward eye-roll and said, "You did not ask, I did not tell!"

"Can't we just put 'Silky Soft Company' or 'Silky Soft

"There won't be any point, then!" Han Ying Xue was speaking in a serious manner, "Silly Yu, you are too chauvinistic, what is wrong with the name Silky Soft Bra, it's not like they are naughty or perverted words! Are you filling it in or not, I am about to get mad!"

Fatty Han was excited, written all over his face, and he said, "Pretty Snow, your company produces bra, there should be a large number underwear models, right?"

"Of course, every single product of our company is worn by models, to be made into albums and the brochures for the products!"

Fatty Han rubbed both of his hands together and said, "So when are you bringing me for a tour over the changing room... erm, to your company to have a look!"

"Sign me up, sign me up too!" Endless Starlight quickly saw the opportunity and reacted.

Daffodil Daydream spoke out and said, "Sister Snow, the Silky Soft Bra Holdings is one of the top three bra distributor in the whole China, my thesis actually used your company's sales data. That is one big company with billions in annual revenue! I happen to be wearing a Silky Soft bra myself!"

Zhang Yang could not help but laughed, "Silly girl, you told me that you possess 55% of the company shares, that means you earn at least 500 million per year, right?"

Everyone was staggered, as they tried to comprehend Han Ying Xue's wealth. Endless Starlight tried to squeeze his pitiful face and said, "Queen Snow, please take me in!"

"Hello, Silly Yu, are you going to fill it in for real or not!" Han Ying Xue put her hands on her waist and started to raise her tone.

"Yes... This would suffice right!" Zhang Yang let out a sigh, if he had known about it a little earlier, he would not have asked. It would be awesome, when the server announcements begin to pop up in red.

After keying 'Silky Soft Bra, giving you the best personal care! Lone Desert Smoke' in the column, Zhang Yang gave a sigh, and confirmed the party name entry with the server. The server announcement began to make the announcement in red on the big screen.

'Server Announcement: Silky Soft Bra, giving you the best personal care! Lone Desert Smoke has successfully acquired the First Clear title for the Poison Fireland (Death Mode), their great deeds will be published on the list of the Death Mode First Clear title (China Region). Please cheer for them!'

Zhang Yang did not even wait to read the following announcements. God damn it, this time, Lone Desert Smoke was

about to make every single male player in the guild blush; they might even be called the Bra guild for the rest of their days!

I shall destroy you on behalf of the moon - A reference from Sailormoon, original dialog is 'I shall punish you on behalf of the moon'.

If I should die beneath a peony flower, I will still be charming as a ghost - it means the person is willing to die for beautiful women.

Frame - In video games, a frame is a term used to address a moment so brief, that it can only be measured roughly in terms of Frames-per-second - the rate at which a screen refreshes.

Chapter 213: Queen Of Medusa

Soon after the public announcement of the Server Announcement, Zhang Yang received the congratulatory messages from Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman, Crimson Fire and the others. Of course, fun being poked at that advertisement was inevitable. He almost logged out of the game to escape the ridicule.

As most bosses only dropped Gray-Silver equipment, Wei Yan Er had lost her interest in the victory loots, irresponsibly pushing the job of picking everything up to Zhang Yang.

Roshan had dropped a total of five pieces of Gray-Silver equipment. Among the five, four were all armor-set equipment, being the chest plates that belonged to Berserkers, Bandits, Pyromancers and Beastmasters. So, Zhang Yang decided to auction them out one, using the guild's points as currency.

The last piece of the Gray-Silver equipment was a spellcaster's cape.

```
[Fire Cape] (Gray-Silver, Cape)
```

Vitality: +17

Intelligence: +17

Equip: Increases 10 points of spell damage.

<Unidentified>

Level required: 50

As the majority of players protested on the unidentified property of the equipment, the allocation of equipment became chaotic as they became ridiculously high in demand. As Dream Technology was under a lot of pressure, they had made some subtle changes to the <Unidentified> trait a few days back.

Without a proper identification of the equipment, players could still see it's special effects, but all attributes will be reduced by 30%, and these reduced attributes would be restored only after identification is done.

After a long auction that had the same few names increasing the bid, the equipment was finally claimed by Daffodil Daydream who instantly swapped it with her current equipped one.

"Noob tank, we are done with the dungeon, let's go capture ourselves some Battle Mounts!" Wei Yan Er, being the standard hot-head, immediately made to run to the dungeon's entrance.

"Silly little girl, don't run off just yet!" Zhang Yang quickly pulled her back, and said, "There's a hidden boss that has yet to be taken down!"

"A hidden boss?" everyone was curious. Ever since the first dungeon, they had never come across any other dungeons with hidden bosses. They had almost forgotten about the existence of such things!

"Where? Where is it?" Wei Yan Er quickly regained her interest. Accessories like Rings and Necklace are harder to find, and the accessories she had on her were all level 30, better replacements were long overdue.

Zhang Yang pointed at the magic circle that had been formed in the blood of the fallen boss, "Step on it!"

Everyone followed his words and stepped onto the magic circle. Immediately, a stream of dark light shot upwards, the players that stepped onto the magic circle vanished one after another.

Zhang Yang was the last to step onto the magic circle. As the dark light engulfed over him, he instantly appeared in an unfamiliar place, beside Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang.

The place was dark and gloomy, with way to tell whether it's day or night, with the only source of dark light illuminating on one of the corners of the area. About 50 meters away in front of them, there was a beautiful face paired with a sexy bust, but it's lower body was made up by a tail of a snake. It held a longbow in its hands, constantly screaming in a high pitch.

Her upper body was extremely erotic, it was tremendously curvy, and at times she arched her back, or gyrated her body in a very

seductive manner. However, her hair was made out of hissing gray little snakes, each having a pair of cold eyes that gleamed in the dark. By gazing at them, one would feel goosebumps running up their spine. The snake body itself was extremely long, if it was measured from one end to the other, it would have been at least 10 meters long!

She had been tied down by three burning red chains of light. Two of them had been crisscrossed over her voluptuous chest, squeezing out the two large mounds, making them stand out vulgarly!

At the other end of the three burning light chains, three dwarfs -their red skins indicating their Flame Dwarf heritage -- were keeping the snake-lady restrained. The strange thing was that, all three of them had green names, meaning that players cannot attack them.

"This is the most authentic BDSM I've ever seen..."

"Man, that's heavy stuff. Good taste!"

Fatty Han and Endless Starlight were murmuring to each other, their eyes transfixed on the boobs that jerked about violently.

The gang selected the tied up beauty and read her information.

[Aigawa, The sealed Queen of Medusa] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 59

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 600

The three dwarfs were named Margeryashe, Lingamant and Bassan. All of them were level 55 elites, with 180,000 HP and 300 defense points.

"Who are you people, how did you find this place?" The three dwarfs spotted the intrusion of Zhang Yang and the gang into the area. The one in the middle of them, Lingamant spoke in a strong, demanding voice.

Zhang Yang showed a adventurer's salute to the dwarves and said, "My respected fellow dwarves, we are adventurer from White Jade Castle, here to slay these foul demons!"

"Pui! Just you?" the dwarf standing on the left, Margeryashe spoke in contempt.

The dwarf standing on the right, Bassan, however, said, "They managed to enter this area, it only means that they had defeated Roshan. Only his blood can activate the seal and open the magic portal!"

"You people defeated Roshan?" Margeryashe revealed a shocked expression, "I guess I must have underestimated you all!"

It was quite obvious that Margeryashe had the most authority in the area. After a light wave of one of his hands, the other two dwarfs immediately went silent, and he spoke unhindered, "To pursue absolute power, we surrendered ourselves to the demons. In the beginning, our strengths did indeed increase, but our souls were beginning to warp into something else. Our beliefs in the great Gods of Titan were quickly shaken! Us three chiefs discovered the conspiracy of the demons. It turns out that they wanted to imprison our souls and make us their slaves in absolution!"

"However... We discovered their plans a little too late, too many of our kind had already been driven to madness because of the twisted power! Three of us tried everything we could and everything we knew just to seal this demoness that lured us into our downfall! But, she is simply too powerful, we have been forced to remain here with her, tying her down with our own lifeforce!"

Margeryashe sighed again and said, "Perhaps, your arrival is in the arrangement of the Gods of Titan himself. We have held her as long as we have been able to. Our lifeforce is at its end, and when that happens, this demon shall be free to enslave our kind completely!"

"Travelers, if you are ready, please inform us! We will let loose the seal and try to oppress some of her power, perhaps it would be enough to you in destroying this demon!" Having said that, the three dwarfs now gazed at Zhang Yang with their starry eyes, waiting for Zhang Yang and the gang to sound the charge to begin the attack.

"How do we fight this?" Han Ying Xue and the gang turned their sights towards Zhang Yang.

"This battle will stay in the vicinity of the three dwarfs. They will suppress the boss' true power. As long as they do not die, the damage of the boss will not be anything too outrageous! However, once all three NPCs are dead, the attacks of the boss will have an aftereffect, AND an AoE, inflicting an additional 6,000 shadow damage to any and all targets within a 50 meters radius from the boss! If that happens, unless the boss is close to death, it'll be the end for us all!"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and added, "This boss will only target the NPCs. I know what you are thinking, but we cannot heal them. If the battle is prolonged excessively, the NPCs will definitely die one after another! This battle only focuses on our damage output. Either we kill the boss, or the boss kills all the NPCs and annihilates all of us in a single second!"

"No tactics involved, just pure damage output, if the party damage output reaches the requirement, then we will succeed, if not, we shall be stuck here!"

Zhang Yang smile and said, "There is a higher difficulty available in this boss fight. We can choose not seek help from the NPCs, and if the boss is taken down without their aid, we will get an extra achievement.

Fatty Han quickly said, "Well, honestly, we should just get rid of the boss, that will be enough!"

"After engaging for five seconds, everyone must drink a [Power Potion], and unleash all your strongest skills, all out!" Zhang Yang pulled out his battle axe and said, "I shall signal NPCs to lift the seal, so everyone, get ready to fight!"

He made another salute at the three dwarfs and said, "Respected dwarven chiefs, please lift the seal, let us join forces to eliminate this demon once and for all!"

"Adventurers of the White Jade Castle, we acknowledge, and return your respect in equal share! Prepare yourselves, we are about to lift the seal. The demon will be awakened ... this is your only chance, we no longer have the power to seal her again!" Lingamant spoke gravely.

"Let's begin!" The three dwarfs raised their hands into the sky at the same exact moment, chanting a dwarven spell. Magic lines appeared on the heads of the three dwarfs at the same time, the duration of the chanting was 30 seconds in total.

"Argh---" the boss Aigawa was screaming loudly, and hissed, "The trinity of fools, you are never going to imprison me! I am the great general of the Demon Lord Rogueler, he is second to none, I shall tear your bodies into pieces, one piece after another!"

Zhang Yang swiftly went up to the side of the boss. The seal was

not yet lifted, so both parties could not start attacking yet.

"Everyone! In position!"

Melee professions immediately circled around the boss, waiting for the seal to be broken.

25, 20, 15...

"The power of the seal is weakening!" all of the snakes on Aigawa's head were twitching in excitement, as monstrous aura accumulated around her, "I can feel it, the powers that keep me here are growing weak! At last, freedom! Hahaha, I am going to kill you all!"

4, 3, 2, 1!

<Blood Rage>! +30 Rage.

Gong! Gong! Gong!

The three chains of light began to shatter. The cracks started from the dwarves' end, and ring by ring, they shattered one by one in the direction of the boss. As the last chain ring shattered, Aigawa raised her snake body up, raising herself to a height of 3 meters!

'-3,037!' <Horizontal Sweep>.

Aigawa had already raised herself upon her tail up to 7 or 8 meters high, and as the attack landed, she let out a roar of rage, letting loose an arrow at Zhang Yang. "Humans, elves, dwarves, beasts, all here, just in time for me to kill you all. You shall all be blood sacrifice for my freedom!"

<Cripple Defense>! <Cripple Defense>! <Cripple Defense>!

"Attack, full power!" Zhang Yang shouted at the top of his lungs, with Weu Yan Er aiding him with mutual understanding, helped him place another two layers of <Cripple Defense>, completing the stack.

Everyone knew that time was of the essence, not a millisecond could be wasted. They gulped down their Power Potions and began their attacks with heavy skills that required long cooldowns, and began their onslaught.

30 seconds later, Aigawa suddenly turned away from Zhang Yang, aiming her bow Lingamant and firing at him instead.

Foof! Foof!

The basic attack of the boss had reached a high value of 9,000 points, and Lingamant only had 300 points of defense. Every arrow that Aigawa released at the dwarven chief would deal a damage of 8,000+. In just 20 seconds, she had already taken down approximately 90,000 of Lingamant's health points. Only then did she regain her aggro system and got back to attacking Zhang Yang.

"Witchy Snow, Fantasy, you two can stop healing, just focus on attacking the boss! Two Holy Knights healing me is more than enough, a little more damage from you guys would also help!" Zhang Yang roared.

Holy Knights are good at healing single targets. Even though the equipment of the two Holy Knights were far inferior than Han Ying Xue's equipment, having two of them heal Zhang Yang was sufficient, as long as Han Ying Xue paid enough attention to cast the occasional <Regeneration> and <Shield> on him.

Chapter 214: Destructive Power

Who among the party had the best equipment? No, not Zhang Yang! It's Han Ying Xue!

Her staff, accessory, boots, rings and armlet were all Yellow-Gold tiered! That's five of them! Their attributes stacking up, her magic attack exceeded 1,800. It was a pity that her offensive skill, <Punishment Ray> was not a very high-damaging skill. However, she could still deal around 2,700 damage over two seconds. Her DPS was around 1,300 which could be compared to Sun Xin Yu or other offensive class characters. All things considered, her attack was rather impressive.

That wasn't all, after activating the skill of <Magician's Brooch>, she would gain an additional 700 magic attack. If she takes another bottle of [Power Potion], she could raise her damage to an extreme level for a brief period!

The boss attacking pattern was quite predictable. After attacking Zhang Yang for 30 seconds, she would clear her aggro and randomly attack an NPC for 20 seconds for around 90,000 HP worth of damage. She would easily kill off an NPC in two turns. Theoretically, after the sixth turn, the boss will kill all the NPCs and become much stronger than before!

This meant that the party would have to remove all 8,000,000 HP of the boss in just 300 seconds! The required party total DPS had to be at least 26,667 to achieve that!

That was an impossible task! The team had defeated 7 bosses yesterday and hauled a bunch of Gray-Silver equipment, increasing their attack power by a level after Level 50. However, that only increased their overall damage from 20,000 to 27,000! Equipment upgrades alone proved to be insufficient!

A better way to increase the overall damaging power is to rely on the fighting capability of the players themselves! For example, to maximize his damage power, Zhang Yang has loosely arranged a sequence of which skill to use after the other, and to repeat the cycle depending on the cool down. The skill cycle would depend on the usage of Rage, Stamina, Focus, or MP of the player class needs.

The battle progressed on without much difficulties. As per usual, Zhang Yang tanked the boss, while the rest of the squad executed their roles from the rear. The boss would occasionally clear her aggro and pick an NPC to attack. That in turn, saved some MP for the healers!

After 100 seconds, Lingamant was the first NPC to die, while the boss had lost only 30% HP.

200 seconds later, Margeryashe died and the boss had lost 60% HP.

After fighting for a while, Han Ying felt something was off and called Zhang Yang. "Dummy. If this continues on like this, I'm afraid that we won't be able to kill the boss!" She was not wrong. Each time one NPC fell, the team should have reduced at least 33% of the boss HP.

"Just give it all you got! This first attempt is a good opportunity to gauge the party's total DPS!" Zhang Yang smiled without any trace of worry.

300 seconds later, the last NPC, Bassan fell defeated after being pierced with an arrow through his chest.

"Hahaha! I can feel it! The last chain has been unshackled! There's nothing to hold me back now! I...I...I AM THE QUEEN OF MEDUSA! THE STRONGEST FIGHTER OF LORD ROUGELIER!" A sudden dark light erupted from Aigawa. The ray spread across the field like dark clouds before an imminent storm!

The boss still had over 10% HP left, which was more than a value of 800,000!

Now that her attacks have gained a 6,000 splash effect, Aigawa could easily kill the entire party in two randomly placed arrows!

<Vanguard Aggression>! <Shield Wall>!

Zhang Yang quickly activated two skills and protected the entire party with a light barrier. This boss fight does not even require strategic movements in the battle. As long as the fighters positioned themselves conventionally; with ranged attackers attacking from the rear of the tank, and melee attackers attacking the back of the boss, no one would need to move around when the battle starts! Since everyone was already in place, Zhang Yang's <Vanguard Aggression> could easily protect everyone.

'-2,832!'

'-1,800!'

With <Vanguard Aggression> and <Shield Wall> both activated at the same time, Zhang Yang's damage reduction rate was at 60%. Even though the boss arrow attacks had a 6,000 damage splash effect, it would only cause over 1,800 shadow damage to Zhang Yang, while the rest of the party only received 600 damage.

After 10 seconds, <Vanguard Aggression> ended and the boss still had 7% HP.

<Rearm>!

<Vanguard Aggression> and <Shield Wall> were activated again, buying them another 10 seconds!

6%, 5%, 4%!

10 seconds ended!

Aigawa let out a deafening shriek and shot an arrow towards Zhang Yang. The attack landed on him and a darkened shockwave was emitted from him, striking everyone else. The damage text, '-6,000!' popped up all over the place. Those who had less than 6,000 HP were instantly killed.

In the just two seconds, Aigawa shot another arrow which caused another blast of waves, causing another 6,000 damage to everyone. The sudden drop of HP was too much for any healer, including Han Ying Xue to keep up with. In the blink of an eye, everyone else besides Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight was removed from the battle.

If only the boss had been left with 24,000 HP instead of 240,000 HP, Zhang Yang would have considered staying on to finish the fight, but now that it had come to this, he knew that it was impossible. Activating <Shadow of the Void>, Zhang Yang withdrew from the battle.

"Hey! F*ck! Boss! Did you just give up and run away!?" Endless Starlight screamed as he activated <Sacred Protection>, gaining a five second window of invincibility. He continued to swing at the boss, one hammer blow at a time since he had no way of leaving battle mode.

Pak!

After 5 seconds of wailing pathetically, he fell defeated -- with honor -- in his own words.

As the battle ended, the three dwarves respawned and the boss went back to being restrained by the magical chains, with full HP.

"Noob tank! What sort of act was that! Pui! You've lost my respect! How could you not have the spirit of unitiy?!" cried Wei

Yan Er.

If he had not left the battle forcefully, instead continuing to fight on, that would not have been unity, it would have been stupidity at its best! Zhang Yang laughed at her comment and replied, "Little brat. You're not mad because I quit fighting in the middle of the battle. You're mad because I did not die! Most of all, you're mad because I was able to save some gold coins from repairs! Isn't that right!"

"Nyeeheheh.." Wei Yan Wei laughed sheepishly.

"Zhan Yu, we're severely lacking in firepower!" said Hundred Shots worriedly.

Fantasy Sweetheart solemnly mumbled. "It's my fault. If only I could be as strong as Sister Snow, I wouldn't have dragged the team down! Please! Replace me with someone else!"

According to the damage statistic, Han Ying Xue was ranked seventh while Fantasy Sweetheart was ranked at the lowest 18th place.

Fatty Han walked towards her and patted her shoulder consolingly. "Take it easy, Sweetheart. You're a healer! Why are you comparing your attack power with someone else? Even if we brought another player in, I'd rather swap out Endless Starlight! He's a useless tank! Look at him, he didn't get a chance to tank the boss! He's a huge *ss leecher!"

Endless Starlight was clearly embarrassed. He fired back, "Fatty bro...How about I let you do something about it? Don't be aiming at my one weakness!"

"BLEH..." Everyone stuck out their tongues and expressed their disgust.

"Haha...still, Dummy, we're severely lacking in attack power. What do we do now?" asked Han Ying Xue as she frowned over the matter.

Zhang Yang smiled. "That was just our first try. I needed to gauge how strong was our team's DPS! That is why I did not use my trump card!" he took out the [Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)] and posted it on the party channel.

Even though Lone Desert Smoke had dominated the Cave of Bones map boss, the respawn and drop rate was rather low. Zhang Yang was running low on scrolls. Since he had also used some scrolls in the Expedition war, he only had 7 pieces remaining.

The scroll could increase their offensive power by 5%. It wasn't much, and if the party's firepower was beyond helping, there would be no point wasting the scroll. But, the party firepower was much better than Zhang Yang had expected. They could at least last until the boss had over 4% HP left. If everyone gained a 5% increase bonus, victory would be quite definite!

"Oh! Right! Haha! I've completely forgotten about that thing!" Hundred Shots laughed and face-palmed himself.

With renewed hope, the party quickly respawned and rushed back to the fight. They were already thinking of the rewards.

After 10 minutes, everyone revived and regrouped with Zhang Yang.

"Heal yourselves up. I want everyone to perform just like we did in the previous round. Put everything you have into attacking! Maximize your damage! Remember, the scroll effect will only last for one minute. Fighting the boss could take up to six minutes! We have only one shot at this! Now, if you think that the scroll is going to guarantee a win, then you're dead wrong!" said Zhang Yang sternly. "Your attacks have to be fast and strong. Only then, will the scroll's potential be brought up!"

"Noob tank! We're ready! Let's fight!" said Wei Yan Er hurriedly.

Zhang Yang looked at the little girl with widened eyes.

He coughed and cried, "Those who wants to fight immediately, please rise your hands!"

Suush! Suush! Other then Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Daffodil Daydream, everyone else in the party raised their hands up.

Zhang Yang sighed and shook his head with disappointment. "Looks like we only have 4 smart players in this party."

Everyone turned and exchange a look with each other. They did not understand what was happening.

"Daffodil Daydream, please enlighten our friends here!" said Zhang Yang as he gestured to her.

Daffodil Daydream smiled and said, "Zhan Yu's <Rearm> has a 30 minutes cool down duration. If we start the fight now, he could only use <Vanguard Aggression> and <Shield Wall> once! We will be losing that extra 10 seconds of window for attacking!"

"F*ck! How could I miss that!" said Fatty Han as he face-palmed himself hard in the forehead.

"It's fine. It's great news for us all that you're now aware of your own stupidity!" said Han Ying Xue. "Look! Our little Drizzler is still in shock! Her eyes are still wide open!"

"AH. ARGH! AHHHH! Han Ying Xue! You're calling me stupid again, aren't you! That's it! I'm cutting all ties with you!" cried Wei Yan Er angrily.

The tension dispersed in the air as everyone started to laugh.

After 10 minutes, there was only around 5 minutes left on his <Rearm> cool down timer. He would activate it at the exact moment when the last NPC falls. Zhang Yang signaled everyone to get into their positions before starting fight by talking to the three

NPCs. The 30 second countdown timer started.

3...2...1...Start!

Both Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er worked together to inflict 5 layers of <Cripple Defense>. Swiftly, Zhang Yang slung the shield over his back and took out the [Magic Scroll: Rising Morale (Level 1)]. A golden light enveloped his body and spread to everyone.

'Ding! You have gained the effect <Rising Morale> (Level 1). All attacks and healing effects have been increased by 5%! Last for 60 seconds!'

Rampage: Start!

100 seconds into the fight, the first NPC. Margeryashe fell. The boss had lost 31% HP.

200 seconds into the fight, the second NPC, Bassan fell. The boss had lost 63% HP.

300 seconds into the fight, the last NPC, Lingamant fell. The boss had only 5.5% HP left!

<Vanguard Aggression>! <Shield Wall>!

10 seconds passed; Aigawa had only 2.4% HP left!

<Rearm>! <Vanguard Aggression>! <Shield Wall>!

2%...1%...0%!

"ARGHH!" Aigawa released a deafening scream and twitched violently in her death throes. Her lower half snake body convulsed as her snake hair flailed about like a headbanger. After a few seconds of struggling and the obligatory boss' ending line, she falls down dead.

Chapter 215: Solid Blockade

"Haha! We did it! We did it!"

Everyone cheered. It was not the toughest boss they've ever encountered. However, it was definitely the most epic fight they have ever been in. Attack! Attack! And more attack! Everyone had pushed themselves past their limits to achieve the highest damage output they had ever achieved.

This battle had helped the party understand their own classes better, gaining innate knowledge about cycling their skills. They had also gained further understanding on the concept of cost, be it Rage, Mana, Focus, or Stamina. In a way, this had been a very different form of training to help them strengthen their characters' class basics.

"WOOOOOAHHH! Let me pick the loots! Let me! ME!ME!ME!ME!" screamed the little girl as she skipped her way to the boss' coprse. Those who were already familiar with the little girl's behavior made way for her, while the rest who were joining Wei Yan Er for the first time were taken aback and mesmerized by her cuteness.

"Eh? This one is interesting!" the little girl posted an item description in the party channel.

[Eye of Medusa] (Consumable)

Use: Unleashed the ominous stare of Medusa. Cause a target to be petrified. Removes all buffs and debuffs on the target. Prevents the target from moving or performing any actions for five seconds. The target will not receive any damage for the entire effect's duration. Players and monsters above Level 60 will have a resistance against the skill and have a lowered success rate. Cool down time: 2 minutes

Remaining uses: 3/3

Level Requirement: 50

"What is this thing?" asked Endless Starlight. "In PK or monster grinding, freezing a target is nice and all since we can smack it senseless. But since the target is petrified and will not take any damage to begin with, what sort of usage can this item do? Wouldn't it be rather contradicting?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "This is indeed a good item. If it wasn't limited by levels, it would have been better!"

"Why is that?"

Other than Sun Xin Yu alone, the rest of the party expressed their curiosity. Everyone was looking at him with questioning eyes.

"In a solo fight, it doesn't do much. However, during a group fight, you can use this item on an enemy healer and focus on the other target! They would not receive healing for five seconds! How cool is that?! I'll give you another example. If your own ally is about to be killed by a boss, or a monster or another player for that matter, you can use the item on the dying ally and grant him a five second invincibility window!"

"OOooh!"

Everyone nodded, satisfied with his explanation.

Zhang Yang boldly took the item for himself and left the other items out for grabs.

The boss had dropped a total of 4 Gray-Silver equipment. Among the loots, two of them were rings, the other two being necklaces.

One of the necklaces had defensive-oriented attributes. However, as Zhang Yang was already wearing a Level 50 Yellow-Gold necklace, he dismissively passed it over to Endless Starlight. The boy took the item, despite having the lowest guild contribution points, smiling so earnestly that his eyes were completely shut. He thanked Zhang Yang repeatedly.

After all the loots had been distributed, everyone tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and went back to White Jade Castleto complete their Level 50 class quests. Zhang Yang went to his Little Merchandize Shop. Now that he had obtained the First Clear Achievement, there was no reason to withhold the sales of the Fire Resisting Potion! After carrying out the two highly-regarded auctions, the Little Merchandize Shop had greatly risen in

popularity. He placed the potions at the most visible spot in the shop instead of the storage; where people would have to go through the hassle of tying in the keywords into the search box to search for the item. He believed that the potion would quickly be a hit.

However, there were only a handful of Level 50 players at the moment. The sales of the Fire Resisting Potions should be limited for now. It should see improvements as soon as more players reach Level 50 and begin their own raids on the Poison Fireland. Even though it was not really required to defeat the boss, it was still a means in making battles slightly easier. How could that not be a hit among players? Even if the potion costs a small sum of gold coins, it was better to defeat the boss altogether, instead of dying and retrying several times over, which will, assuming the players die in the process, incurring higher costs in repair fees? It would also be an absolute waste of time! If you put those two options on the scale, people would definitely pick the easier path.

The [Solid Iron Plate] was a really good investment. They were like real-life gold bars! Even the players who have not reached Level 50 were already stocking up on them now to save them the trouble of competitively purchasing them in the future. Because of that, the price of each [Solid Iron Plate] remained steadily at 12 gold coins each. It still had the potential to reach a higher price!

Because of the sales from the [Solid Iron Plate], the profits gained today had surpassed 1,500,000 gold coins! That staggering number truly shocked Zhang Yang!

Nodding approvingly to himself, Zhang Yang then summoned his

[Skeletal War horse] and rode to the Warrior's Home, in search of Ani, the Warrior Class Instructor. As expected, Ani was still as sexy as ever, and as always, surrounded by a number of losers who wouldn't take their eyes off her huge rack and slender waist. It couldn't be helped. Her outfit was rather revealing, after all. Zhang Yang dismounted and sent his horse back into his inventory. Ani broke into a proud, approving grin, nodding repeatedly when she saw Zhang Yang approaching her. "You, you, specimen of a warrior! Well done! I heard about what you had did! It's truly a miracle I must say. You truly have my respect now! Not only did you vanquish Roshan – Copper Hammer, the leader of the rebellion against the Union, you also defeated the evil demon Aigawa! Good job!"

Zhang Yang smiled earnestly. "It's all because of your teaching and guidance, that I am here today."

Ani puffed up with pride when Zhang Yang said that and flung her golden hair back joyfully. "Zhan Yu, you are now qualified to be a true warrior! For now, I want you to follow my lead. I will bestow upon you the title of the true warrior!"

She reached both of hands out, and placed her palms on Zhang Yang chest. "O Lord, Brave and Mighty God of War. I pray to thee, today, a warrior has been born to serve thy...Zhan Yu! Don't just stand there, do what I'm doing!"

Zhang Yang frowned, slightly annoyed. Who the hell designed this script! He had to touch an NPC's honkers! What a pervert! Horny *sshole!

No matter how much Zhang Yang tried to refuse, Ani continued to insist. It seems that the system would not proceed if Zhang Yang does not to follow the NPC's instructions. Reluctantly, Zhang Yang reached out with his hands and placed them over the twin domes.

Boing

As expected from a western female model, huge and bouncy! HUMOUNGOUS! FIRM! AND BOUNCY!

This game is just too realistic! It wasn't just from the aesthetics, but the feeling, the sensation itself was almost the same as a real woman's...

"F*ck me!" The usual campers who spent all day ogling at Ani were shocked. Their eyes almost popped as they saw Zhang Yang laying his palms over her huge assets! It's just sooooooo out of this world!

After a long speech about justice, power, and some warrior related stuff, Ani retracted her hands and said, "Congratulation Zhan Yu, you're now officially a loyal believer in the god or war! And...please remove your hands from my chest."

"Urgh!" Zhang Yang immediately shrunk his hands back.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Level 50 Class Quest. Obtained 100,000 Experience Points! Quest Difficulty: A. Completion of Hidden Difficulty. Final Score: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have learned a new skill: Warrior's Will!'

'Ding! You have gained an item: Solid Blockade!'

[Warrior's Will] (Level 1): Removes all debuffs on one's self and causes the next use of {Destructive Smash} to land as a critical strike. The effect will last for the next 8 seconds or until {Destructive Smash} is used.

Cool down time: 10 minutes.

At Level 50, all class will receive an anti-status affecting skill. However, Zhang Yang was a little disappointed. the skill reward was the same as it was in his previous life, when he had only obtained an "Average" score.

Looks like the reward was based on the item instead.

[Solid Blockade] (Yellow-Gold, Shield)

Defense: +800

Vitality: +400

{Level 2 Socket}

Equip Effect: Absorbs 300 damage every time you receive an attack.

Equip Effect: Restores 100 HP after every successful {Block}.

Level Requirement: 50

OP!

Zhang Yang was delighted. In his previous life, he had only completed the Level 50 class quest by defeating Roshan in Hard Mode. After completing the quest, the reward was the same skill and a Green-Copper tier shield. This time, the rewards were clearly different compared to before! It's a Yellow-Gold tier got crying out loud!

He quickly headed over to the Gem Shop to look for a suitable Gem Stone.

Right after he left Ani alone to do his thing, the horny players around Ani were magnetized to her, their arms reaching out. Approaching closer and closer, drips of saliva could be seen dripping on the floor beneath them.

"I've always wanted to touch them!"

"Back then, if you even lay a finger on her, she will kill you and send you to prison! It seems like there's a bug in the system! Aww yiss! Time to touch until I die!"

"Oh man...those honkers! Those humongo-bongo! Here I come!"

WHAM! BAM! SLAM!

Ani spun around on the spot and killed everyone with a {Tornado Sweep}. What's worse, after the player revive, they were automatically sent to prison. When a player is harassed, they would need to submit a complaint to the relevant figures to bring in the convict. But an NPC is part of the system itself. Without any word or warning, the NPC will first hack and slash, after that it's catch and stash!

In the prison, those perverted players exchanged baffled looks... How did he do it?

Zhang Yang socketed a [Level 2 Vitality Gem Stone] into his shield. He then swapped it out with the new one, boosting his maximum HP to a whopping 17,040 HP! (Vitality Aura applied) (Author's Note: Unless specified, all HP mentioned from hereon will include the Vitality Aura bonus)

Where would the limits of his tanking be?

Other Level 50 tanks would have, at most, a complete set of Level

40 Gray-Silver equipment. Perhaps their equipment would all be socketed with [Level 1 Vitality Gem Stone]s. If they had invested all five SP gained during their leveling up, they would have, at most, 10,000 HP!

Needless to say, such is the difference between Gray-Silver and Yellow-Gold equipment. Besides, only Level 50 equipment and higher will have Level 2 Sockets. With his current equipment, he can easily raid Poison Fireland without breaking a sweat.

Zhang Yang had an extra SP to spend, which he had received as a reward from the First Clear Achievement of the Poison Fireland. Currently, he had maximized {Block} at Level 10. {Shield Wall} was at Level 6. Now that he had gained a new skill - {Warrior's Will}, Zhang Yang was torn between them. Should he try to maximize {Shield Wall} level first or acquire {Warrior's Will}?

{Warrior's Will} can remove all debuffs and create a sure-hit critical strike for {Destructive Smash}! It was both a strong attack and defensive skill! If he raised it to Level 10, the skill cool down time will be reduced to only one minute! It would be OP beyond OP, especially in PK battles! This skill is just too important to ignore!

"Argh. What the heck. I'll invest in {Warrior's Will} first, since the professional league is going to start soon. A anti-status affect skill, and a really hard hit is most important! If I had invested in {Shield Wall} first, even at Level 10, the cool down time is only at two minutes and 30 seconds! {Warrior's Will} would be far more useful!"

Now then he had steeled his decision, Zhang Yang went ahead and invested the one SP he had on {Warrior's Will}.

Zhang Yang checked the time. It was close to 10pm. By the looks of it, he would not even be able to grind his level properly. Zhang Yang decided instead to craft a few more [Fire Resisting Potion]s and place them all into the warehouse. Even though the current demand for [Fire Resisting Potion] was not high, the sales will definitely increase soon after! In about a week's time, a majority of the players will reach Level 50. By then, they would need to defeat Roshan, be it for farming set equipment or to complete their class quest!

Zhang Yang continued to craft more potions and logged out at around 11pm.

After the night had passed, Zhang Yang went out and did his routine training. Just as he came back home, Zhang Yang received a call. It was Zhao Hui Shan.

"Z-Zhang Yang sob sob" Zhang Yang could hear crying from the other side of the line. "We're sorry. We're stupid. We're blind! We should not have tried to belittle you! Please! Please forgive us and stop torturing us!"

Zhang Yang was stunned. What the hell did I do? Annoyed, Zhang Yang frowned and said, "What are you talking about?"

"sob sob, Kang Ming's father's factory...the..the d-distributors have all stopped buying their product! And...and Kang Ming was

caught by the police! They are charging him for drug possession and distribution! Zhang Yang! I know that we're at fault! But please! Plse! For my sake! Think of me when we were dating back then! Please stop torturing us!"

Zhao Hui Shan was worried. For the past three days, Zhou Kang Ming had been "invited" to the police station for questioning. On the other side of things, her boyfriend's family business wasn't looking too good. The products that they had produced were piling up into a mountain! IF they could not even sell a single one of them...her mother-in-law will treat her like a black sheep, only good at drawing bad luck for her husband. The eye rolls would never stop whenever the mother-in-law met her. Her mother-in-law will soon try to have her leave Zhou Kang Ming, in order to end the misfortune that she's bringing.

Zhao Hui Shan had thought about it and eventually, she realized that these series of unfortunate events occurred after the night they met Zhang Yang and discovered that he harbored a lot of power in secret. She came to a conclusion that it was all Zhang Yang's doing. She had been reluctant about it but after some time, she dug out the told student journal and searched for Zhang Yang's house telephone number to call him.

However, Zhang Yang himself had nothing to do with the events that occurred to Zhao Hui Shan, Zhao Kang Ming and his father. "Zhao Hui Shan, I'm not that narrow-minded and I don't any grudges against you. The truth is, I did nothing. You're barking up the wrong tree. Good day to you."

Ka chack!

Zhang Yang hung up and logged back into the game. Zhang Yang opened the Friend List and found only Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue online. A sudden thought came into his mind and he added them both into his party.

"Little girl, did you do something to the guys who had been troubling me?"

"Ah! Busted!" said Wei Yan Er without denying it. In fact, she was happy to admit that it was her doing. "How about it? I'm rather strong you know! Now, do you see this lady in a new light?"

Comparing Silky Soft Holdings with Zhao Kang Ming's business was like trying to compare a little ant to an army of giants! Zhao Kang Ming could not even try to put up any level of resistance.

Zhang Yang shook his head. Her had never even thought of Zhou Kang Ming or Zhao Hui Shan as an enemy. They were not even worth his thoughts! However, Fatty Han must have been overly dramatic about his situation to Wei Yan Er and angered her so. He only laughed and said, "Yea. You're full of righteousness!" Seeing how Zhao Kang Ming had become, Zhang Yang was not even bothered to advice Wei Yan Er to stop her doing.

"Ehehehe! That, I am!" Wei Yan Er nodded happily. "Noob tank! When are we going to hunt for Battle Mounts?"

"Things can be given, yet not to be sought. Fortune it be if attained. Destiny it be if not!" Zhang Yang shook his head

explaining.

"Hey! Speak plainly!"

"You stupid little girl! Why don't you let him do the catching for you! You can save some money on the [Sealing Rein]s" said Han Ying Xue quietly.

[Sealing Rein]s were expensive. They cost 100 gold coins apiece! Wei Yan Er's eyes glinted a little and said, "Ahhh! Now then, Noob tank! Go and catch me one!"

"Snowy B*tch! What are you trying to do huh!? Besides, I can't help you catch one. Anything I successfully seal would be bound to me!" Zhang Yang explained roughly. "Little brat. Did you skip school again?"

"My cousin sister...she. Erhm...Her period arrived on time. She's feeling a little feverish. So, I had to take a holiday and take care of her! Ai ya...It can't be helped. I mean, I really wanted to go to school today..." said the little girl proudly, as she put on a melodramatic show.

"YOU DAMN BRAT! How could you say something like that in the open!" Han Ying Xue screamed. She was red in the face, a mixture of rage and embarrassment. In a flash, her character vanished and Wei Yan Er's character soon followed, even as she blinked in surprise at the spot where Han Ying Xue was standing at moments ago. She was probably getting a scolding, or perhaps even a beating from Han Ying Xue. Zhang Yang could not help but laugh at their comical acts. He then used the city Teleportation Circle and went to Tukula Fortress. After going up his [Skeletal War Horse], Zhang Yang rode off with a kick.

Chapter 216: A Call From The Princess

Zhang Yang rode through the Frozen Sky Wasteland, the Necrotic Wastelands, and finally reached the eerie Flatlands of the Passings. Here, all year long, in fact, for as long as it had existed, thick mist covered the entire field. It was like a layer of dense clouds had descended from the high heavens and blanketed the entire flatlands. The problem was that sunlight was extremely scarce. Dark and gloomy, the entire area was littered with the deceased of many races.

There were corpses of Human, Elf, Dwarf, Beastman, and even monsters of various sizes. Apparently, many years back, a war between the Union and the Demons had taken place on this very field. The remains of those who fell in battle were buried deep underground. With the cumulative anger and vengeance left around, the place was corrupted, spawning endless number of spectres to forever roam in this wasteland.

Zhang Yang was here to complete a hidden quest. In his previous life, one of his old friends had spoke to him about the quest briefly. Zhang Yang only knew that the quest can only be triggered somewhere in the Twilight Hills. But he was still clueless about how and where exactly in the map can he trigger it.

The Level 50+ maps are not within the city's jurisdiction, and thus, they do not have a specific Teleportation Point that players can use to travel around. As such, players would have to depend on their mounts to travel from map to map. Zhang Yang had traveled from Frozen Sky Wasteland all the way to the Necrotic Wastelands. His trip had taken a total of three hours!

For that reason, once a new Territory spawns, and Teleportation Points become accessible to the players, the owner of the Territory can set a toll fee and gain a massive fortune from this little business!

• • •

Zhang Yang spent another 30 minutes and found Twilight Hills. This little hill was only a few hundred meters tall. However, the long stretch of the mountains went on for quite a distance. On top of the hill were tombstones that were covered in snow. Most of the tombstones were eroded, Zhang Yang could not make out the engravings on their surfaces. As he continued looking, he noticed that most of the tombstones were not in their respective places. Some of them were lopsided, while others had completely fallen down. There were holes everywhere, clearly indicating that many graves were no longer occupied. In fact, the area was densely populated with spectres, making "oooo, arghhh, and urghhh" moans as they wandered aimlessly.

Spectres can be categorized into two tiers. The lower tiers are the weaker ones and had been revived by the vengeful sentiments of their past life. The only reason as to why they have been revived is to kill. A good example of lesser spectres are Skeletal Soldier and Zombies. High Leveled spectres had a distinctive feature that separated them from the others. They had the same level of intelligence as they had before they died. Some even retained their original memories!

All of the spectres in Twilight Hills are all lower leveled spectres,

Skeletal Soldiers. However, even though they are considered as lesser spectres, it does not mean that they are low in level!

[Twilight Skeletal Warrior] (Normal, Spectre)

Level: 54

HP: 5.400

Defense: 50

Can these sluggish monsters possibly deal any damage to me?

Zhang Yang thought to himself and smirked.

"Ride like the wind, Boney M!" Zhang Yang pulled the reins and the skeletal horse neighed as loudly as a passing train. Both of them charged into the group of monsters.

"Groowl!" The Skeletal Warriors responded as they saw Zhang Yang approaching them at high speed. They opened their jaws in a voiceless warcry and swung their swords at Zhang Yang. Riding the horse, Zhang Yang dodged the attacks easily and the monster started to chase after him.

He began to attract the attention of more and more monsters,

only stopping to turn around when he estimated that he had kited at least 30 monsters. Zhang Yang unsummoned his mount and got ready.

```
{Blood Rage}! +30 Rage
{Charge}!
```

Zhang Yang slid across the field and charged into one of the incoming monsters.

```
{Horizontal Sweep}!
```

Zhang Yang's attack struck them all at once, dealing an average amount of 3,300 damage to the horde of monsters around him. There were even some hits that registered as Critical Strikes killing some monsters instantly.

The monsters retaliated. However...

```
'-o!' '-o!' '-o!' '-o!' '-o!'
```

None of the attacks could deal any damage to Zhang Yang. The Level 54 Normal monster had little more than 1,000 physical attack, which meant that, even if their attack could break through his defense without being nullified, the value that did get through was so low that it would be completely absorbed by the equipment's damage absorption passive skill!

They are...too weak!

{Thunder Strike}!

Wham!

A chain of '-480!' damage texts flew across everywhere. As the monsters staggered from the blow, Zhang Yang quickly turned around and continued running around, forming a long line of monsters that followed him doggedly. Zhang Yang kited as many monster as he could and used {Horizontal Sweep} every 10 seconds and {Thunder Strike} every eight seconds. {Blast Wave} was used every 30 seconds to wipe the monsters out whenever their numbers grew sufficient.

'Ding! You have killed Twilight Skeletal Warrior. Obtained 5,400 Experience Points!'

'Ding! You have killed Twilight Skeletal Warrior. Obtained 5,400 Experience Points!'

'Ding! You have killed Twilight Skeletal Warrior. Obtained 5,400 Experience Points!'

• • •

The system notification rang in his ears continuously as he killed

the monsters. The amount of experience points he gained was rather abundant and he smiled in satisfaction. If he could train like this alone for a few days, his level would quickly exceed even Han Ying Xue's and he would be the highest leveled player in the China server!

In one clean sweep, Zhang Yang had cleared all the monsters within a few hundred meters around him. Zhang Yang went around and slowly picked up the loots on the ground. In 'God's Miracle', the gold coin drops that was produced in the game was very limited, and when they did, the amount would be negligible. Even when a monster is at Level 54, it would drop only 50 copper coins. If he had to pick them up one at a time, he had to spend an eternity, only earning some pocket money. Zhang Yang was doing this only because he suspected that the hidden quest might have something to do with the monsters' drops. It was a tedious waste of time!

Going through a few hundred monster copses for their loots would take a lot of time as well! Zhang Yang had spent close to 10 minutes inspecting the corpses for loots. Other than [Cloths], there were other ETC items such as [Weathered Thick Bone] and [Broken Helmet]; none of them worth anything!

Zhang Yang rode on his horse again and begun to kite the monsters all over again. The second wave of monsters yielded loots that were just as poor. By the third wave however, a beautiful stone that shone gold, similar to Yellow-Gold equipment, was on the ground.

Description: You can feel a faint magical power from within this weird stone. It's extremely weak! Perhaps you can feel a stronger power if you gather more of these stones!

Use: Combines 12 [Weird Stone] into one [Magical Communication Stone].

"Hmm. Is this what I'm looking for?" Zhang Yang murmured. He kept the glowing stone in his inventory and continue farming.

After killing waves and waves of monsters, Zhang Yang slowly accumulated the [Weird Stone]s. From just one, to three pieces, eventually he gathered 11 pieces in total.

'Ding! You have obtained [Weird Stone]!'

Zhang Yang had long since lost count on how many waves he had to go through before the 12th stone finally appeared.

He took the stones out and placed them together.

FUUSH!

Together, the 12 stones began to glow intensely; Zhang Yang had to look away for a second. The stones fumble around for a little wild, slowly piecing themselves together to form a larger...stone.

"What was I thinking? What else could have happened? A king kong appearing from within the stone?"

Zhang Yang picked up the stone and checked its properties.

[Magical Communication Stone] (Quest Item)

Use: Use the stone to reveal a hidden message! Hurry! Someone might need your help!

Zhang Yang placed his palm onto the stone and a gold light beam out from it. Close to where Zhang Yang standing, the beam of light projected a life-sized image of a beautiful girl. She had a blond hair and ruby-red eyes. She was dressed in a flamboyant royal gown which stood out in the desolate background. Somehow, the dress looked like it was perfect for her instead of the other way around.

[Projection of Princess Serena] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Defense: 0

"Princess Serena?" Zhang Yang took a step back in shock. Isn't she the only remaining legitimate heiress of White Jade's royal family? The future queen of White Jade?

"Warrior! I need your help! The King of White Jade needs your help!" said Serena. Her voice shook as she pleaded desperately, her face lined with worry.

Zhang Yang saluted and said, "Princess, I'm yours to command!"

"Warrior, I'm trapped in the deepest part of the Tomb of the Gray Shadow. Please! Make your way there! Be careful, there is an incredibly powerful Necromancer guarding the place! You must make preparations for this raid!" said Serena. The edges of the projection started to crack. The cracks grew and spread quickly. It looked like the projection would shatter into pieces anytime soon.

"Princess!"

"Argh! I-I can't maintain this form any longer! The power of the soul is getting weaker by the minute! Warrior! Please help me! I...I-I...h-hold...m-muc...lon...ger." Her cracking voice dimmed and the projection blew up, pieces of it flying everywhere, like an explosive mirror.

'Ding! You have accepted the quest: A Call from the Princess!'

[A Call from the Princess] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Warrior! Head to the Tomb of the Gray Shadow to search for Princess Serena! She needs your help!

Progress: Find Princess Serena 0/1

"Isn't the princess living in White Jade Castle? How did she end up all the way there? For worse, she's now trapped there! How could White Jade Castle remain quiet about this? They should have dispatched the entire army to search for her! She is the only heiress to the throne!" Zhang Yang cursed. But now that he had accepted the quest, might as well get on with it.

He circled the area for a while and found an entrance to a cave. After clearing a few waves of monsters outside the cave, he entered it alone.

'Ding! You have entered the Tomb of the Gray Shadow!'

Zhang Yang opened the world map and examined the map he was in. The entire structure of the tomb was like a spider's web. There were many tunnels that broke off into other tunnels! This cave was simply too complicated!

"Die!" a voice was heard and Zhang Yang saw a glint of an axe approaching. Zhang Yang dodged it. The attacker was a skeleton with a few broken pieces of metal armor hanging onto its body.

Emerald flame burned within its eye sockets.

[Tomb Guardian] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 55

HP: 55,000

Defense: 300

'-763!'

Another attack came and Zhang Yang deliberately let it land. He wanted to assess this monster's strength. The result was rather pleasing! The Tomb Guardian did around 3,000 of basic attacking damage. Zhang Yang had 920 Defense, 900 passive damage absorption, and a 20% passive damage reduction, which reduced the attack down to less than 800 damage.

'-1,643!'

Now that Zhang Yang had a good gauge of its strength, he began striking back.

{Block}! +30 Rage

'-355!' {Block} reflect damage.

Zhang Yang used {Warrior's Will}! The next {Destructive Smash} will be a critical hit!

'-7,012!'

The hard blow immediately removed 13% of the monster's HP!

This is truly OP! A controlled critical strike such as this, dealing 7,000 damage, would easily kill 90% of the current players!

Even though the Tomb Guardian was a Level 55, Elite tier monster, his 55,000 HP was no challenge to Zhang Yang. In just half a minute, Zhang Yang had turned the monster into a pile of brittle bones, losing only around 6,000 HP in the process.

Among the loots, there was a Green-Copper tier Shield. Zhang Yang quickly picked the item up and examined it.

[Malevolent Shield] (Green-Copper, Shield)

Defense: +250

Vitality: +150

Level Requirement: 50

Malevolent Set (1/4):

{Malevolent Necklace}

{Malevolent Cape}

{ Malevolent Sword}

Malevolent Shield

Two Equipped: Have a 50% chance to {Curse} the target every time you receive an attack. Reduces 1% of target's attacking power. Maximum 5 stacks can be applied.

Four Equipped: 50% chance to reduce the target's Defense on every successful hit. Target takes 1% more damage from everything. Maximum 5 stacks can be applied.

Chapter 217: Grinding

The set equipment was very good! But...it's a shame that its tier was unexpectedly low. Zhang Yang could not give up his Yellow-Gold equipment for a Green-Copper set. It was also a shame that the seconds equipment-effect was strong, but only if the condition to activate it was swapped with the first equipment-effect. He could just equip the necklace and cape and be able to stack the increase damage/reduce armor effect! It would be almost similar to the [Magic Scroll: Rising Morale] (Level 1)!

What a shame...argh! What a shame! Only Guardians and Defenders could use Shields!

Zhang Yang had no interest in Green-Coppers, but the majority of the players would be fighting for it. In fact, Green-Copper is the most common equipment tier that everyone is wearing. He and his bunch of "elite" friends are a totally different story. If he could farm all four pieces of the set, he can definitely sell them in a bundle at an incredible price! Four separate set-equipment parts, or one complete set as a whole! The difference was obvious!

A sign from the gods of prosperity has appeared!

Zhang Yang spirit lifted and marched onwards.

The monsters inside the tomb were numerous. Every few ten meters, he would encounter one monster. On average, Zhang Yang would deplete his HP after fighting three monsters. He had to frequently stop and heal himself with health recovering snacks or

Other teams might need to raid the tomb with a three-man party. One tank, one healer, and one attacker. However, since Zhang Yang's damage reduction skills were just too strong, paired up with his overwhelming attacking capabilities, he could easily hack his way in without the need for a healer. But, if he did have a healer with him, he would not have needed to sit down and heal, greatly increasing his efficiency.

The tunnels in the tomb were poorly lit by torches that hung from the wall every 10 meters. The light was so dim that it barely illuminated the passageway. At least, he wouldn't be bumping into walls.

Since the first elite monster had already dropped a Malevolent set equipment, it was no indicator of the drop rate being any good. In fact, Zhang Yang had killed more than a hundred monsters before managing to find the second equipment of the Malevolent set. Malevolent Necklace.

"Fortune does come and go easily huh..." Zhang Yang sighed and kept the necklace in his inventory.

30 minutes...one hour...two hours...

After the third hour, Zhang Yang had collected a total of two complete Malevolent sets. There was still a surplus of two extra necklace and one extra Malevolent Sword. By then, Zhang Yang had reached Level 55 and had made it close to the center of the

entire tomb.

The area here was a normal sized tomb hall, around the size of 50 square meters. There were two floors, with entrances to the lower floor at both sides of the dark hall. The upper floor was smaller in size. It was about a quarter the size of the lower floor. In the center of the lower floor was a stone table. A woman lay on it there. That woman was the same woman as the one Zhang Yang had seen in the projection, she was Serena!

Zhang Yang cautiously observed from afar and found that she just lay there, motionless. Her eyes were shut tight. Her chest... was not moving! She's not breathing! Is she dead?

Standing close to the stone table was a figure in black hood. The person was completely covered from the head to toe, its identity impossible to surmise. Since the figure was facing Serena, Zhang Yang could not see anything, he could not even figure out its gender, much less its race. Zhang Yang could only see that the figure was rather thin and small. In its right hand, it held a magic staff that was much taller than it was. On the top of the staff was a fist sized skull, with glowing emerald fires burning in its eye sockets.

[Necromancer Sigma] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 58

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 600

"Only 2,000,000?" Zhang Yang mused. "This place is small and cramped. It could only accommodate a small number of players. Could it be a specialized five-man party raid? Maybe I can beat the boss by myself?"

Hesitating a little, Zhang Yang finally decided. "Might as well give it a shot. If I die, I'd only have to pay for repairs! If I can't defeat it, I'll just call the Snow B*tch to join me! I hope I can defeat it alone. Calling her to join me would take another three to four hours...the monsters outside would have respawned and I'll have to kill them all over again...how troublesome."

He drew his battle axe and readied his shield. He walked into the lower floor and rushed towards the stone table.

Sigma spun around to the sound of his footsteps. When it faced Zhang Yang, Zhang Yang could then see its true form. It was a skeletal magician -- a lich, staring at him through eye sockets filled with bright emerald flames!

"The Living?! How could you enter this place!" Sigma pointed its staff towards Zhang Yang and start chanting a spell. A progress bar appeared on its head. After three seconds, a black light beamed out from its skeletal staff and shot towards Zhang Yang.

'Ding! Sigma has used {Shadow Arrow}!'

'-3,900[']

Damn!

Zhang Yang was shocked. How would he fight the boss alone this way! Still, now that it has come to this, it's best to carry on. At least he'll get a good grasp on the boss' mechanics. When he returns with Han Ying Xue, they would be better prepared.

{Cripple Defense}, {Destructive Smash}, {Horizontal Sweep}... Zhang Yang unleashed everything he got. The stronger his attacks, the longer he could last in the fight. That way, he could at least try to decrease the boss' HP as much as possible and understand the boss better.

Sigma continued using {Shadow Arrow}. At one point, when the boss' chanting was about to finish, Zhang Yang struck the boss with a {Crash Magic}.

'Ding! Sigma's {Shadow Arrow} has been interrupted!'

It worked! The boss' casting was interrupted!

Moreover, the boss was {Silent} for three seconds! During that time, the boss had to resort to physical attack! It raised its fists and legs to attack Zhang Yang.

```
{Block}!
```

With the shield skill in effect, Zhang Yang recovered 100 HP.

'o!'

Sigma landed another fist on Zhang Yang, but, as a Spellcaster type monster, its attacks cannot penetrate Zhang Yang defenses with its attacks, even as a boss!

After the short three second {Silence} ended, the boss start to use {Shadow Arrow} again.

{Blast Wave}!

A blast of compressed air hammered through Sigma. The attack failed to stun Sigma but the spell was successfully interrupted again!

Zhang Yang then recalled the first patch of the game. Status affect skills would not be effective on boss type monsters, but they had a chance to interrupt spellcasting progress bars!

{Blast Wave}'s stunning effect was useless against the boss, but it did stop the boss from finishing its spell. The boss quickly started over again and cast {Shadow Arrow}. Zhang Yang regret his actions. He should have known better. He should have waited for the boss to almost complete the spell before using {Blast Wave}!

'-3,909!'

'3,882!'

When the boss' third {Shadow Arrow} was being chanted, Zhang Yang's {Crash Magic} skill had just finished its cool down and was ready to be used. However, he waited. Just as the boss was about to finish its spell casting, Zhang Yang bashed the monster with his shield.

'Ding! Sigma's {Shadow Arrow} was interrupted!'

Restart the cycle!

Zhang Yang calculated. On average, he will receive the boss' attack twice every 12 seconds. {Blast Wave} could only provide him three seconds of peace every 20 seconds!

Zhang Yang summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] and activated {Merlinda's Shadow}, and started to attack like a madman.

Sadly, the [Servant: Clear Lotus] could not level up. It had remained at level 36. Since the level gap was too large, her attacks were like a cat trying to attack an elephant! It was too low to even be considered to be an attack at all! However, as small as it could be, even water could erode a mountain over time! Moreover, she had her {Substitute} ability!

When {Merlinda's Shadow} had ended, Zhang Yang activated one skill at a time, starting with {Substitute}, {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's heal}. He lasted until the boss had a little more than 130,000 HP left. By then, his HP was almost depleted. He quickly used {Shadow of the Void} and fled the battle. He quickly ran over to the upper level and healed himself with a few consumables.

Without the main target, the boss had turned to Clear Lotus and had killed her off easily with two to three attacks. The poor [Servant] turned into a puff of smoke at death, leaving literally nothing at her demise.

"This boss is lame! {Shadow Arrow} and nothing else! Doesn't he have anything else to use besides that?"

"Sigh...what a waste. If I called that b*tching woman, we might need only 15 minutes to settle this boss. Hmmm?"

Zhang Yang noticed something was odd. To his shock, he noticed that the boss was not recovered its HP even after Zhang Yang had left the battle.

In 'God' Miracle', once bosses withdrew from the battle, they will instantly recover their full HP. It wasn't that bad for open world bosses. On average, an open-world boss will recover 1% of its HP every second. At most, it will take 100 seconds to fully recover its HP.

The strange thing was that, Sigma was not even recovering HP like how an open world boss does. Its HP bar was not even moving an inch!

Spectre!

Zhang Yang eyes glinted. Spectre are not living beings. That was why these monsters did not have any innate regenerative abilities. They had to rely on consuming the dead corpses of other being to recover. Normally, the battle will end with the player killing the boss, or the boss killing the players. Situations that involved players fleeing with their lives were rare!

Normally, when the players or Hunters with pets get killed, spectres will use the {Consume Coprse} skill to recover the HP in non-combat mode, healing them by 10% HP every two seconds. They could fully recover their HP in just 20 seconds!

However, Zhang Yang was alone, and he used {Shadow of the Void} to left the battle. Sigma could not find any dead bodies to feed on. That was why its HP remained frozen in place!

On the other hand, Zhang Yang can easily heal his HP with [Bandage] and health recovering snacks. Zhang Yang smiled to himself, as long as he can rely on {Shadow of the Void} every time he needed healing, he can slowly chip off the boss' long HP at leisure.

When he had fully recovered, Zhang Yang rushed into the fight again and did further damage. When the time came, he used {Rearm}, which in turn allowed {Shadow of the Void} to aid his escape again!

10 minutes later, {Shadow of the Void} was ready to use, Zhang Yang entered the fight again!

20 minutes...

30 minutes...

After the battle dragged on for 2 hours, Zhang Yang managed to successfully kill the boss by using {Shadow of the Void} for a total of 16 times! {Rearm} definitely played a role as well, saving more time.

'Dnig! You have killed Necromancer Sigma, Obtained 20,000,000 Experience Points!'

Thud!

The boss falls defeated, breaking into pieces of broken bones, dropping seven to eights battle loots.

"Holy f*cking moly! Finally ended!" Zhang Yang screamed out in relief. In truth, the actual battle time had only taken 17 to 18 minutes, the rest of the time was wasted in waiting for his {Shadow of the Void} to finish its cool down!

Chapter 218: A Change In The Royal Lineage

"Noob tank! My cousin sister and I found ourselves a Gray-Silver boss! Both of us alone killed it! Nyeheheheh! Do you know what that means? We don't need you no more! NYAHAHAH!" Wei Yan Er cute laughed blasted through the voice messenger.

Ever since the appearance of the Yellow-Gold bosses, almost all Gray-Silver bosses had become weak in comparison. Actually, it was more like them retaining the same level of difficulty, only that the players have grown much stronger! The two ladies finally knew how it felt like to stand out in the crowd. As Zhang Yang was taking his time with Sigma; Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue had somehow discovered that they could defeat a Gray-Silver boss without the need of a tank!

They would never had stood a chance if they had tried this when they were Level 30.

Even so, for Wei Yan Er, a Berserker to able to "tank" a Gray-Silver boss and survive the battle, it was most likely due of Han Ying Xue's incredible, massive support!

Zhang Yang smirked. "Haha! What a shame! I just defeated a Gray-Silver boss! ALL.BY.MY.SELF!"

"Nyeeh~ Liar, liar, pants on fire~" Wei Yan Er jeered rhythmically.

"When I said I defeated a Gray-Silver boss, you just copied me and

said the same thing! When I said we killed the boss with two players, you said you defeat it alone! Hmph! You have no shame! Noob tank! What a thick-skin bas-HEY! HAN YING XUE! HOW DARE YOU! You actually left the party and picked up all the money! I'M BREAKING UP WITH YOU! NYAAAA!"

Beep

The call ended abruptly. Perhaps Wei Yan Er was going to quarrel with her cousin sister. Again.

Zhang Yang laughed at their expense.

After having laughed enough, Zhang Yang walked over to the boss' corpse to claim his prize. Among the loots, three were Gray-Silver tier, four were Green-Copper tier, and only one of them was worth using.

[Roar of the Dead] (Gray-Silver, Ring)

Vitality: +17

Strength: +17

Equip Effect: Absorbs 21 damage on every attack received.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 50

Since the revision of the Unidentified attribute, Unidentified equipment will have their properties reduced by 20 levels. His current ring, [Honor of the Fallen Warrior], adds only 20 Vitality and 15 Strength, it's no weaker than the [Roar of the Dead].

However, the latter was still a defensive equipment. Zhang Yang decided to opt for [Roar of the Dead] and equipped it.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: A Call from the Princess! Obtained 200,000 Experience Points!'

The moment Zhang Yang approached the stone table, the system notification popped up and rang in his ears.

"Was that it?" Zhang Yang waited for a follow-up quest to appear but after waiting for a while, nothing happened. Before this, when Zhang Yang was talking to Princess Serena's projection, she had been rather frantic. It is impossible for the questline to be completed just like that! The only way left for Zhang Yang to trigger the next quest was to find a way to wake Serene up from her slumber.

"Wakey Wakey!"

. . .

"Rise and shine sleepy head!"
...

"OMG! A SUPER HANDSOME PRINCE JUST WALKED PASS BY!"

•••

Nothing. Not even a jerk. Perhaps Zhang Yang had to resort to a more physical approach.

Zhang Yang grabbed her by the shoulders and shook her entire body violently.

No response. He was getting frustrated.

SLAP! BREAST GRAB! BUTT SLAP! ARMPIT SMOTHER!

Nothing. Zhang Yang had grown tired. He sat down by the stone table and begun to ponder. "I've tried everything possible method! Could it be...mouth to mouth resuscitation? Nah...that couldn't be..."

However, this was a fantasy world, a world filed with magic and dragons soaring in the skies! It had possibly drawn some inspiration from fairy tales. There were dragons, witches, and ... perhaps sleeping beauties? Zhang Yang could not wrap his head

around that idea. No matter how degenerative the developers might be, they would not possibly get a player to kiss a dead person!

To kiss a dead person...as if she was alive...that was just...

Zhang Yang hesitated for another minute before he finally caved in. He walked up to her and bent down, closing the distance between his face and hers.

Finally...*kiss*

Zhang Yang planted his thick, rough lips onto her soft, supple red lips.

SHRIIING!

Rainbow-colored lights radiated from her body. They swirled in a vortex above her, coming together to, coming together to form a giant crown of gold. The crown then grew smaller and smaller until it became just the right size, coming to rest on the princess' head.

The light faded and a translucent figure emerged out from the princess' body. The figure got up and stood directly in front of Zhang Yang, glowing as she stood, she shared the exact appearance of the currently sleeping Princess Serena. It was another projection of Princess Serena.

Damn, my kiss actually worked! Am I a prince now?!

That being said, what if Serena was not a princess, but instead, a prince? Would the system have wanted Zhang Yang to kiss...relief suddenly replaced his feelings of repulsion at what he just had to do.

The projection hovered a little and when she opened her eyes. When she saw Zhang Yang, she smiled. "Warrior! You came!"

However, that jubilant expression was quickly replaced with a worried look, as if she was carried the weight of the world.

"Princess! What happened to you? Weren't you in God's City!?" Zhang Yang asked.

God's City is the name of White Jade Castle that every citizen knew it by. In the game, every major city was the Capital of their respective Kingdom.

Serena frowned worriedly. Her elegant features faded away, replaced by intense lines of stress and worry. "Three years ago, I was leading the Expedition Army to attack the Tukula Fortress. Just as the attack was about to start, I received a message from one of my soldiers, saying that the Madala Centaurs were willing to form an alliance with the White Jade Castle. With two forces as strong as such, we could perhaps stand a chance at defeating Tukula Fortress! After much consideration, I had accepted their offer and had ordered one of my dragon riders to send me over the Fortress to met up with the Centaurs!"

Her calmness was quickly replaced with an intense anger. Even when she was in her projection form, the anger was so intense that she emitted a strong aura, Zhang Yang could felt it in his bones. No wonder there was a saying, that a King's Wrath will cloud the sky and rivers will flow with blood!

"I never had thought that it was all a trap set by the Spectres! When I arrived at negotiation location, the spectres had set up an ambush there and we fought hard and long. However, I was eventually caught. They did not kill me but held me here as a prisoner. They had locked me down and stole half of my soul. To my horror, they had used my soul to make a high-ranking spectre that looks exactly like me! The imposter has already infiltrated the Kingdom of White Jade! That spectre will probably want to take the throne and dominate the humans in my place!"

She calmed her rage and looked at Zhang Yang stoically. "Warrior, could you help me escape this place to save the kingdom and kill the enemy?"

"My Princess, I am at your disposal! Command me!" Zhang Yang gave an adventurer's salute.

"You have my greatest appreciation, adventurer!" Serene was satisfied. "Now that I have lost half of my soul, I can only communicate via projections. The [Communication Stone] that you picked up was made by me. I had used a portion of my remaining magic to cast a spell on the monsters that roam this place! Sadly, the magic will not last for long as no container can truly hold magic. I have waited for three years for you!"

"You have to find my other half of the soul in order to save me! However, since I am trapped in this place, you will need to create a soul container to bring back my other half!"

Serena continued. "To create this container, you will need three rare materials. You will have to kill three extremely strong beings in order to obtained that materials! Warrior, do you have what it takes to get them?"

"Princess, trust this one, for he is strong!" said Zhang Yang with a smile.

Serena nodded and said, "I trust you, warrior! In that case, bring me a piece of [Molten Core of the Flame King], a piece of [Root of the Demonic Treant King] and the [Heart of the Winter Bear King]. I will use my remaining magic to turn them into a soul container!"

'Ding! Serena has a quest for you: A Soul Container. Will you accept it? This quest is linked to the main story quest. Complete the quest to receive a luxurious reward!'

Damn! Which dumb f*ck took the quest, saying that it was a hidden quest!

Hidden quests and main story quests were completely different! Main story quests are easy to trigger, but they are really difficult! However, the rewards given are extremely luxurious! Mainly, the main story quest will be the main trigger that will push the game content forward! For example, patches in the future will depend on

the progression of the main story quest, "Invasion of the Spectre patch", "Demon Descend patch", and "Deep Sea Invasion patch" all relied on the progress of the main story quest!

Zhang Yang swiftly accepted the quest and said, "Princess! I will return victorious!"

"So be it! But you must hurry! My power is constantly being weakened by the seal! I cannot remain awake for too long! I will be dragged back into my sleep!" Just when she had finished her speech, her projection started to flicker rapidly. After a few seconds, her projection started to form cracks and shattered into tiny magical particles.

Zhang Yang opened the quest log and examined the three quest items needed.

[A Soul Container] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: The Kingdom of White Jade is in peril! You must make haste and collect all three rare materials in order for Princess Serena to create the soul container and be released from her restraints! You can find the Flame King in the Fiery Sacrificial Altar in the Burning Flatlands. The Demonic Treant King can be found in the Swamp of the Ancient Moss in the Valley of High Tree. The Winter Bear King can be found in the deepest part of the Cave of Winter's Wind, beneath Snowy Peak Hills in the Frozen Sky Wasteland. Note, these monsters are extremely strong and powerful! Please recruit more friends together to fight!

Quest Duration: 7 days

Quest Recipient Limit: 1 player

Player Gender: Male

Progress: Molten Core of the Flame King 0/1 Root of the Demonic Treant King 0/1 Heart of the Winter Bear King 0/1

Quest difficulty level was S ranked. Which meant that he would need to kill a super strong boss! After Level 50, only the Yellow-Gold Tiered bosses would prove to be a real challenge for top players like him!

That's three Yellow-Gold tier bosses!

To at on to that, the quest had a time limit! Zhang Yang cursed. A Yellow-Gold bosses would have a seven day respawn period, which meant that if the players failed to kill the boss and died fighting any of the three bosses, the quest will automatically fail!

What sort of set up was that! It literally gives no chances to players at all!

Zhang Yang frantically opened his friend list and recruited Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots, and Daffodil Daydream.

Sun Xin Yu, Fatty Han, and Endless Starlight were not logged in, he was short in manpower that he needed urgently. He quickly contacted Snow Seeker and asked for a favor.

"Guild master Zhan Yu! How nice of you to call me!" Snow Seeker accepted the call and talked to Zhang Yang with a normal and casual tone, unlike her usual stern and stoic volume.

Zhang Yang laughed a little and answered. "The last time, you had requested my help to kill the Mountain Giant, now, I'd like to ask the same of you. I need your help to kill several bosses!"

"Are they Gray-Silver?"

"Yellow-Gold!"

"Alright! How many my members you need? 1,000? 2,000?" Snow Seeker voice trembled with excitement.

Zhang Yang frowned. What sort of guild required that many players to sortie against a boss? If he had that many players from Crimson Rage taking off with him, members from his own guild would be "informed"! Open-world boss' strongest and deadliest feature was their strong AoE attack skill. That was why, there were many bosses out there that did not need many players participating. In fact, numbers would be useless if the bosses could easily kill everyone in a snap of their eyes. Counter-intuitively, the success of the boss fight would be higher only when a small group of elite players fight it.

There are some bosses that draw strength from the numbers sent against it. The more you have, the stronger I become! For example, the Demon Boss Kazak. Every player in its aggro target will cause him to gain a 10% attack bonus. If several thousand players joined hands to fight the boss, the boss will gain such ridiculous amount of power and kill everyone like weeds in the garden. The boss can cast one {Shadow Arrow} for every single player in his range and exterminate everyone in his sight.

"I don't need that many! Just two! I need a healer and an attacker!" The only people whose strength Zhang Yang did acknowledge were Snow Seeker and Perfumed Water.

Snow Seeker would become one of the Top 10 Spellcasters in China! Her ability was unrivaled.

Perfumed Water was quite the ruffian, but her healing ability was commendable. Her equipment, control, understanding, and situational awareness was good, even if she was far behind Han Ying Xue. However, she was still one of the best healers that Zhang Yang had ever encountered.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, do you, perhaps, have an eye for our fair little Perfumed Water? Do you want me to set something up?" Said Snow Seeker playfully.

"Guild master Snow Seeker, you are too curious for your own good!"

Zhang Yang invited Perfumed Water and Snow Seeker into his

party and announced, "Please gather at the Tukula Fortress!"

Currently, Winter Bear King was the closest to him.

"Noob tank! What are we going? What are we doing? Why must we go?" being the impatient little girl, Wei Yan Er bombarded questions in the party channel.

"Can you just be quiet for like...10 seconds? Sigh...We are going to kill a boss. A Yellow-Gold boss!"

"WOAH!" Everyone gasped in surprise. Everyone got excited, especially those who already had Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment in their inventory. To complete their sets, they would need to fight Level 60+ Yellow-Gold boss! At least, they could collect a complete set of Level 60 set equipment before they reach the required level itself.

Zhang Yang tore a [Teleportation Scroll] and flew back to White Jade City. He cleared his inventory and placed the two completed set-equipment into the Little Merchandize Shop, selling them as single packages at the price of 100,000 gold coins each! He then had the [Roar of the Dead] identified and equipped it. Upon identification, the properties of the ring had increased to 25 Vitality and 25 Strength. The damage absorption rate was increased to 30 damage.

After "cleaning" up his inventory, Zhang Yang then used the teleportation point in the main city and travelled to the Tukula Fortress. While waiting for Zhang Yang to arrive, the party had

spent their time grinding in the nearby Frozen Sky Wasteland. Everyone took less than 10 minutes or so to gathered together.

"Stupid Yu, where is the boss?"

Everyone knew the value of an open-world boss since they were so sparse in both numbers and encounters! The map of the game was just too large for them! But once a boss is located, it would be dominated by strong guilds. Because of that, many guilds will butt heads due to the contest for claim over the boss as "property". They would be willing to wage wars with each other, lasting until new patches are released, or until the late-stages of the game, all because of a single boss.

Zhang Yang pointed West and said, "Snowy Peak!"

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes instantly. "Sigh...Do you even know how big is Snowy Peak!?"

Zhang Yang laughed at her reaction. In agitation, Han Ying Xue was stomping her feet, sending waves of tremors across her breasts, sending them jiggling about like a pudding being served. Zhang Yang could not help but stare at them and said absent-mindedly, "Yeah...they are big..."

"PERVERT!" All the female players in the party cried out loud together.

"Let's go then! I just received a quest to kill three bosses. The

description was really vague. They only mentioned the general locations instead of the specific points!" said Zhang Yang, not intending to hide anything from them.

Snow Seeker twitched, her eyes glinted when she heard Zhang Yang mentioning the word "quest".

"The quest needed you to kill three Yellow-Gold boss? It must be a really rewarding quest! Guild master Zhan Yu, do you mind sharing the quest?"

Zhang Yang shook his head. "It can't be shared."

The quest only limited player participation number to one. That is why he could not share the quest with anyone else. Now that he thought about it., Serena could only be awakened by a kiss in the lips. If a bunch of rotten, perverted players took part in the quest, how would a princess like her maintain her honor! Who know what kind of dirty, indecent stuff would they do to her? That was, if the player accepting the quest was male. What if the player had been female? Would the princess be...

Perhaps, that would not be the case at all. The developers would not be that sexist. The quest could have been turned into a prince in other major cities needing a kiss from a female player instead! In that case, female players would have their chance to give their first kisses to a handsome young prince!

Chapter 219: The Gold-Eared Bear King's Little Cub

"Find the cave!" cried Zhang Yang when the party arrived at Snowy Peak. "The boss is inside a cave called the Cave of the Winter's Wind!"

The group split up and searched for the cave. Everyone agreed to regroup when any one of them finds it.

There was this particularly stupid idiot who had no sense of direction, yet had some ironic luck. She managed to be the first one who stumbled across the cave.

"I found it!" Han Ying Xue had managed to find the cave after 20 minutes, and happily announced her discovery in the party channel.

Everyone hurriedly converged to where Han Ying Xue was and saw a deep, large cave entrance, As the party was about to enter the cave, a sudden breeze blew by, carrying an intense, rotten smell, causing extreme disgust to those who caught whiff of it.

"BLEH! What is that smell! It smells like rotten eggs wrapped in stinky old stockings!" Wei Yan Er cried out as she squeezed her nose shut.

Zhang Yang laughed at her and said, "Why didn't you take your Smell Setting down a notch?"

"Eh? You can do that?" said Wei Yan Er, surprised. She quickly asked for details, and after a series of messy, unnecessary rants, she closed the window and was delighted. However, her cute, contented little smile quickly disappeared. "Yeah! I'm d—BLEH! What the hell! Why did it turn worse?!"

"You dumb little girl! The system's default setting was at 50%, You didn't turn it up all the way to 100% did you?" Zhang Yang did a facepalm.

Wei Yan Er replied with a quick "Oh!" and adjusted the setting again. This time, she laughed and said, "Oh wow! I can't smell anything now! Hehehe!"

In truth, she was not the only one was not aware of the Smell Settings. Everyone started to search through their setting windows and adjusted the setting to prevent the extreme odor from being too disruptive.

Zhang Yang explained. "There are other settings besides smell. You can also adjust Touch, Taste, and Sound! Touch sensitivity is disabled by default so that you would not feel any pain when you receive an attack. However, to be a professional, it's best to increase the Touch sensitivity by just a little to increase your response rate! Too high however, and it will be too much to handle, affecting your overall performance! As for Taste, it's best to leave it disabled. Drinking potions will not trigger your taste buds at all, or else, you will taste the utter bitterness of it. But, for instance, if you want to prevent yourself from drinking too many potions, you can adjust it to your own preference!"

These settings were rather plain and dull. Players who were the types to research prod around every aspect of a game would meddle with such settings. A majority of the players would not even take note of such settings.

After everyone had adjusted their own settings, Zhang Yang nodded approvingly and said, "Let's go!"

Zhang Yang led the way, entering the cave first.

The cave was rather large. At a fixed interval, they would encounter a glowing stone stuck on the ceiling of the cave, illuminating the pathway. However, the light was dim, unable to fully illuminate the entire pathway. Like a poor streetlight in a dark alley, those little glowing stones were the only sources of light in the entire cave. However, as it was, even on the darkest of nights, the stars will shine upon earth. The light from the glowing stones was enough to allow the players to see where they were going.

"GROWLL!" A deep, loud growl of a beast could be heard. Suddenly, a large White Bear jumped out from the darkness and attacked the foremost player, who happened to be Zhang Yang. The bear used {Charge} and stunned Zhang Yang. As he swayed helplessly on his spot, the monster swung a massive paw and attacked.

Level: 58

HP: 58,000

Defense: 300

Hundred Shots and Zhang Yang original gang were very proactive. Even when Zhang Yang was stunned, they did not wait for him and immediately started their attack.

The bear growl and shifted its aggro to Wei Yan Er. Now that the bear had just attacked, it had to wait for another two seconds before it could attack again.

The stun effect lasted for one a second. Zhang Yang immediately cast {Provoke} when he recovered. He activated {Blood Rage} at the same time and slashed the boss. He immediately followed up with {Destructive Smash}.

'-1,634!'

'3.573!'

As the aggro on Zhang Yang stabilized, everyone flawlessly synced with his rhythm and killed the monster without breaking a sweat. The team's firepower was so strong that it would not have

made a difference if no one was tanking, the monster would not have survived for more than 10 seconds. How could it kill anyone in that short amount of time?

Snow Seeker was rather impressed and said, "Guild master Zhan Yu, I'm really impressed with your teamwork. No wonder you guys could easily take down dungeon after dungeon, claiming First Clear Achievements!"

Wei Yan Er snickered and said, "Sister Seeker! Actually, it's all because of me! I'm the strongest attacker in this team!"

"Little girl, do you not know shame or humility?!

"Hmph!" Wei Yan Er shrugged. "Humility is nothing but a lack of self-esteem. There is no reason for me to be humble in the first place! I'm merely stating the truth!"

Everyone laughed and the girls giggled. The little girl was always the clown of the party, bringing laughter and joy to them.

One of the ETC drops of the Winter's White Bear was a piece of [Bear's Tail], which could be sold for at least 10 silver coins. However little it was, Han Ying Xue still insisted on keeping the item since they could be stacked up to 200 pieces!

The team proceeded on forward, killing more bears as they proceed. When the 14th monster was killed, it finally dropped something useful.

[Frost Bear Coat] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor) Defense: +6 Vitality: +60 Equip Effect: Increases 100 Frost Resistance. Level Requirement: 50 Bear Coat Set (1/5): {Bear Helm} {Bear Coat} {Bear Glove} {Bear Leg Guard} {Bear Boots} Three Equip Effect: Increases all attack by 5%.

"Are resistance based equipment for Thieves and Hunters?" Everyone was curious. "Field monsters drop set equipment as well?"

Zhang Yang answered. "In the future, there will be all kinds of set equipment with all sort of effects! This one here specializes in elemental resistance. If you were to wear this and fight a Cryomancer, that player would be annoyed to the high heavens!"

After asking around for a brief period, Zhang Yang called out, "If no one wants it, I'm going to keep it!' Zhang Yang took the item and kept it. However insignificant it seemed, it was still a set equipment! There are crazy collectors around who would pay a nice sum of coins just for novelty!

"Hey! I haven't said anything yet! I want it! I want it!" Perfumed Water cried out suddenly. Snow Seeker was rather shy and had remained silent since she was rather well-mannered.

"Moving on!" said Zhang Yang, ignoring Perfumed Water.

"GRAHH! I'm pissed! Just you wait, Zhan Yu! I'll show you how frightening I can be later!" cried Perfumed Water.

The party moved on and killed more and more bears. There were more bears in the cave! Perfumed Water was a Priest class, but she had chosen Leather Work as her profession. Whenever a monster was dead, Perfumed Water would pester Zhang Yang to quickly loot all the items and let her use them for her Leather Work.

That had led the miserly sisters to admire her work. Pieces of Bear Skins were rather valuable!

Even though the team's firepower was so strong that they could kill a bear in no time, they had spent more than two hours roaming around the cave, because of its sheer size! There seemed to be no end to it!

FUSH!

Out of the sudden, a ball of white fur appeared out of a corner. The team was ready to attack but stopped when they saw that it was only a mini size white cub. It was only the size of a small puppy. White fur covered its entire body. It had a golden sparkle on each of its ear and eyes that were big and round. When the bear saw Zhang Yang and his "monstrous" friends, it was so shocked that it lost balance, sitting on its bottom with its eyes growing even bigger in surprise. It was so cute to look at!

"WAA! It's so adorable!" cried the girls in his team. Everyone was caught up by its natural cuteness.

"Bear bear is so cute! KYAH! It's so fluffy! It's so fluffy I'm gonna die!" cried Wei Yan Er as she cuddled the little critter.

"That's...that's a rare monster!" Zhang Yang eyes glinted and he pulled the little bear away from Wei Yan Er.

Everyone's face sharpened into seriousness as they quickly looked up the little bear's properties.

[Golden-Eared Bear King's Cub] (Rare Yellow-Golden Battle Mount, Beast)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Note: Can be sealed.

"Battle mount!" Everyone was both surprised and happy simultaneously. Everyone quickly took out their [Sealing Leash].

"Wait!!!!!" Zhang Yang screamed.

"We have only 10 tries to seal the beast! Let's talk about this first!"

With only one cub and many players around, the important way to solve it is to find a neutral stance! Everyone wants the battle mount! But only one of them could own it. So, how do they "divide" it?

"One by one! We'll take turns!" said Zhang Yang.

"In that case, who shall be the first?" asked Snow Seeker. Sealing can only be done, one player at a time. Only when the said player had failed, others can target the beast for sealing. Now that they had a total of seven players, if they all failed the first round, who would be the next three after that? In that case, how do they properly sort this out?

Zhang Yang stopped to think for a while.

"Let's roll for the turn. Whoever rolls the largest number shall be the first to seal. From there, we will follow the rolls and go by descending order. If all of us fail, then we shall roll again, and only the three largest rolls shall be able to take the last three chances!"

Everyone nodded in agreement and felt like it was the best method. Since it was fully based on luck, no feelings will be hurt.

"In that case, shall we roll? One roll each! If anyone rolls again, the smallest number shall be used!" said Zhang Yang. Roll-the-dice system was a special command that was always available in the game. It's not solely used to roll for equipment or items. Player often use the rolling system to place bets.

Everyone rolled and the best of them was Han Ying Xue, the manifestation of lady luck herself. She had rolled a hundred points

and was automatically the first in place to attempt sealing. In second place, Snow Seeker rolled 92 points, followed by Hundred Shots at 88 points. The fourth place was Daffodil Daydream at 79 points, Wei Yan Er was the fifth at 77 points, Zhang Yang, sixth place at 55 points and Perfumed Water was the last at 42 points.

"Come here little one! Obey me and I will treat you better that my little cousin sister! I'll raise you well and treat you amazing snacks! I'll even help you find the most beautiful female bear!" said Han Ying Xue as she petted the little white fur ball. Han Ying Xue took the chance to throw the [Sealing Leash] towards the little bear. The [Leash] had an auto-targeting system. It landed on the little white bear's head with extreme accuracy. A golden light formed, connecting both Han Ying Xue and the little bear. A long progress bar appeared on Han Ying Xue's head and fill up extremely slowly.

3%,9%, 17%...

Wei Yan Er was squatting by the side, drawing a circle on the ground while cursing endlessly. "Fail! You shall fail! Fail! FAIL!"

Pak!

When the progress bar reached 43%, the Leash on the little bear's head broke and a system notification popped up, indicating that she had failed. The little bear looked up at Han Ying Xue and lifted one of its hind paw to scratch its face. It continued to display its natural cuteness.

"HAHAHAHA!" Wei Yan Er jumped in joy while clapping her

hands happily.

Following next was Snow Seeker.

"Fail! Don't hate me, sister, but I hope you fail! PLeash fail!" Wei Yan Er continued to curse.

Pak! Snow Seeker's attempt was worse. She failed at 31%.

Hundred Shots tried to seal. He failed at 22%.

"NYAHAHAH! I'm invincible now! No one can stop me! Suck it!" cried Wei Yan Er as she laughed proudly.

Daffodil Daydream went on and started her attempt. Sadly, she failed at 3%. Wei Yan Er did not even manage to start cursing. This little brat was like a cursed charm, bringing on misfortune! She thought to herself, perhaps her curses were so strong that she did not even need to act!

"Finally! It's this lady's turn now!" said Wei Yan Er as she took out her [Sealing Leash] and used it on the little bear.

1%, 2%, 3%...95%, 96%, 97%!

Seeing her own progress bar about to complete, her smile grew larger and larger, in accordance to the progress bar itself. When the progress bar had reached 99%, the smile on her face was so large that it could have reached her ears!

Pak! Failed at 99%!

Chapter 220: Winter's Wind Bear King

"Find the cave!" cried Zhang Yang when the party arrived at Snowy Peak. "The boss is inside a cave called the Cave of the Winter's Wind!"

The group split up and searched for the cave. Everyone agreed to regroup when any one of them finds it.

There was this particularly stupid idiot who had no sense of direction, yet had some ironic luck. She managed to be the first one who stumbled across the cave.

"I found it!" Han Ying Xue had managed to find the cave after 20 minutes, and happily announced her discovery in the party channel.

Everyone hurriedly converged to where Han Ying Xue was and saw a deep, large cave entrance, As the party was about to enter the cave, a sudden breeze blew by, carrying an intense, rotten smell, causing extreme disgust to those who caught whiff of it.

"BLEH! What is that smell! It smells like rotten eggs wrapped in stinky old stockings!" Wei Yan Er cried out as she squeezed her nose shut.

Zhang Yang laughed at her and said, "Why didn't you take your Smell Setting down a notch?"

"Eh? You can do that?" said Wei Yan Er, surprised. She quickly asked for details, and after a series of messy, unnecessary rants, she closed the window and was delighted. However, her cute, contented little smile quickly disappeared. "Yeah! I'm d—BLEH! What the hell! Why did it turn worse?!"

"You dumb little girl! The system's default setting was at 50%, You didn't turn it up all the way to 100% did you?" Zhang Yang did a facepalm.

Wei Yan Er replied with a quick "Oh!" and adjusted the setting again. This time, she laughed and said, "Oh wow! I can't smell anything now! Hehehe!"

In truth, she was not the only one was not aware of the Smell Settings. Everyone started to search through their setting windows and adjusted the setting to prevent the extreme odor from being too disruptive.

Zhang Yang explained. "There are other settings besides smell. You can also adjust Touch, Taste, and Sound! Touch sensitivity is disabled by default so that you would not feel any pain when you receive an attack. However, to be a professional, it's best to increase the Touch sensitivity by just a little to increase your response rate! Too high however, and it will be too much to handle, affecting your overall performance! As for Taste, it's best to leave it disabled. Drinking potions will not trigger your taste buds at all, or else, you will taste the utter bitterness of it. But, for instance, if you want to prevent yourself from drinking too many potions, you can adjust it to your own preference!"

These settings were rather plain and dull. Players who were the types to research prod around every aspect of a game would meddle with such settings. A majority of the players would not even take note of such settings.

After everyone had adjusted their own settings, Zhang Yang nodded approvingly and said, "Let's go!"

Zhang Yang led the way, entering the cave first.

The cave was rather large. At a fixed interval, they would encounter a glowing stone stuck on the ceiling of the cave, illuminating the pathway. However, the light was dim, unable to fully illuminate the entire pathway. Like a poor streetlight in a dark alley, those little glowing stones were the only sources of light in the entire cave. However, as it was, even on the darkest of nights, the stars will shine upon earth. The light from the glowing stones was enough to allow the players to see where they were going.

"GROWLL!" A deep, loud growl of a beast could be heard. Suddenly, a large White Bear jumped out from the darkness and attacked the foremost player, who happened to be Zhang Yang. The bear used {Charge} and stunned Zhang Yang. As he swayed helplessly on his spot, the monster swung a massive paw and attacked.

[Winter's White Bear] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 58

HP: 58,000

Defense: 300

Hundred Shots and Zhang Yang original gang were very proactive. Even when Zhang Yang was stunned, they did not wait for him and immediately started their attack.

The bear growl and shifted its aggro to Wei Yan Er. Now that the bear had just attacked, it had to wait for another two seconds before it could attack again.

The stun effect lasted for one a second. Zhang Yang immediately cast {Provoke} when he recovered. He activated {Blood Rage} at the same time and slashed the boss. He immediately followed up with {Destructive Smash}.

'-1,634!'

'3.573!'

As the aggro on Zhang Yang stabilized, everyone flawlessly synced with his rhythm and killed the monster without breaking a sweat. The team's firepower was so strong that it would not have made a difference if no one was tanking, the monster would not have survived for more than 10 seconds. How could it kill anyone

in that short amount of time?

Snow Seeker was rather impressed and said, "Guild master Zhan Yu, I'm really impressed with your teamwork. No wonder you guys could easily take down dungeon after dungeon, claiming First Clear Achievements!"

Wei Yan Er snickered and said, "Sister Seeker! Actually, it's all because of me! I'm the strongest attacker in this team!"

"Little girl, do you not know shame or humility?!

"Hmph!" Wei Yan Er shrugged. "Humility is nothing but a lack of self-esteem. There is no reason for me to be humble in the first place! I'm merely stating the truth!"

Everyone laughed and the girls giggled. The little girl was always the clown of the party, bringing laughter and joy to them.

One of the ETC drops of the Winter's White Bear was a piece of [Bear's Tail], which could be sold for at least 10 silver coins. However little it was, Han Ying Xue still insisted on keeping the item since they could be stacked up to 200 pieces!

The team proceeded on forward, killing more bears as they proceed. When the 14th monster was killed, it finally dropped something useful.

[Frost Bear Coat] (Green-Copper, Leather Armor) Defense: +6 Vitality: +60 Equip Effect: Increases 100 Frost Resistance. Level Requirement: 50 Bear Coat Set (1/5): {Bear Helm} {Bear Coat} {Bear Glove} {Bear Leg Guard} {Bear Boots} Three Equip Effect: Increases all attack by 5%. Five Equip Effect: Increases Frost Resistance by 300. "Are resistance based equipment for Thieves and Hunters?" Everyone was curious. "Field monsters drop set equipment as well?"

Zhang Yang answered. "In the future, there will be all kinds of set equipment with all sort of effects! This one here specializes in elemental resistance. If you were to wear this and fight a Cryomancer, that player would be annoyed to the high heavens!"

After asking around for a brief period, Zhang Yang called out, "If no one wants it, I'm going to keep it!' Zhang Yang took the item and kept it. However insignificant it seemed, it was still a set equipment! There are crazy collectors around who would pay a nice sum of coins just for novelty!

"Hey! I haven't said anything yet! I want it! I want it!" Perfumed Water cried out suddenly. Snow Seeker was rather shy and had remained silent since she was rather well-mannered.

"Moving on!" said Zhang Yang, ignoring Perfumed Water.

"GRAHH! I'm pissed! Just you wait, Zhan Yu! I'll show you how frightening I can be later!" cried Perfumed Water.

The party moved on and killed more and more bears. There were more bears in the cave! Perfumed Water was a Priest class, but she had chosen Leather Work as her profession. Whenever a monster was dead, Perfumed Water would pester Zhang Yang to quickly loot all the items and let her use them for her Leather Work.

That had led the miserly sisters to admire her work. Pieces of Bear Skins were rather valuable!

Even though the team's firepower was so strong that they could kill a bear in no time, they had spent more than two hours roaming around the cave, because of its sheer size! There seemed to be no end to it!

FUSH!

Out of the sudden, a ball of white fur appeared out of a corner. The team was ready to attack but stopped when they saw that it was only a mini size white cub. It was only the size of a small puppy. White fur covered its entire body. It had a golden sparkle on each of its ear and eyes that were big and round. When the bear saw Zhang Yang and his "monstrous" friends, it was so shocked that it lost balance, sitting on its bottom with its eyes growing even bigger in surprise. It was so cute to look at!

"WAA! It's so adorable!" cried the girls in his team. Everyone was caught up by its natural cuteness.

"Bear bear is so cute! KYAH! It's so fluffy! It's so fluffy I'm gonna die!" cried Wei Yan Er as she cuddled the little critter.

"That's...that's a rare monster!" Zhang Yang eyes glinted and he pulled the little bear away from Wei Yan Er.

Everyone's face sharpened into seriousness as they quickly looked up the little bear's properties.

[Golden-Eared Bear King's Cub] (Rare Yellow-Golden Battle Mount, Beast)

Level: 0

HP: 50

Note: Can be sealed.

"Battle mount!" Everyone was both surprised and happy simultaneously. Everyone quickly took out their [Sealing Leash].

"Wait!!!!!" Zhang Yang screamed.

"We have only 10 tries to seal the beast! Let's talk about this first!"

With only one cub and many players around, the important way to solve it is to find a neutral stance! Everyone wants the battle mount! But only one of them could own it. So, how do they "divide" it?

"One by one! We'll take turns!" said Zhang Yang.

"In that case, who shall be the first?" asked Snow Seeker. Sealing can only be done, one player at a time. Only when the said player had failed, others can target the beast for sealing. Now that they had a total of seven players, if they all failed the first round, who would be the next three after that? In that case, how do they properly sort this out?

Zhang Yang stopped to think for a while.

"Let's roll for the turn. Whoever rolls the largest number shall be the first to seal. From there, we will follow the rolls and go by descending order. If all of us fail, then we shall roll again, and only the three largest rolls shall be able to take the last three chances!"

Everyone nodded in agreement and felt like it was the best method. Since it was fully based on luck, no feelings will be hurt.

"In that case, shall we roll? One roll each! If anyone rolls again, the smallest number shall be used!" said Zhang Yang. Roll-the-dice system was a special command that was always available in the game. It's not solely used to roll for equipment or items. Player often use the rolling system to place bets.

Everyone rolled and the best of them was Han Ying Xue, the manifestation of lady luck herself. She had rolled a hundred points and was automatically the first in place to attempt sealing. In second place, Snow Seeker rolled 92 points, followed by Hundred Shots at 88 points. The fourth place was Daffodil Daydream at 79 points, Wei Yan Er was the fifth at 77 points, Zhang Yang, sixth

place at 55 points and Perfumed Water was the last at 42 points.

"Come here little one! Obey me and I will treat you better that my little cousin sister! I'll raise you well and treat you amazing snacks! I'll even help you find the most beautiful female bear!" said Han Ying Xue as she petted the little white fur ball. Han Ying Xue took the chance to throw the [Sealing Leash] towards the little bear. The [Leash] had an auto-targeting system. It landed on the little white bear's head with extreme accuracy. A golden light formed, connecting both Han Ying Xue and the little bear. A long progress bar appeared on Han Ying Xue's head and fill up extremely slowly.

```
3%,9%, 17%...
```

Wei Yan Er was squatting by the side, drawing a circle on the ground while cursing endlessly. "Fail! You shall fail! Fail! FAIL!"

Pak!

When the progress bar reached 43%, the Leash on the little bear's head broke and a system notification popped up, indicating that she had failed. The little bear looked up at Han Ying Xue and lifted one of its hind paw to scratch its face. It continued to display its natural cuteness.

"HAHAHAHA!" Wei Yan Er jumped in joy while clapping her hands happily.

Following next was Snow Seeker.

"Fail! Don't hate me, sister, but I hope you fail! PLeash fail!" Wei Yan Er continued to curse.

Pak! Snow Seeker's attempt was worse. She failed at 31%.

Hundred Shots tried to seal. He failed at 22%.

"NYAHAHAH! I'm invincible now! No one can stop me! Suck it!" cried Wei Yan Er as she laughed proudly.

Daffodil Daydream went on and started her attempt. Sadly, she failed at 3%. Wei Yan Er did not even manage to start cursing. This little brat was like a cursed charm, bringing on misfortune! She thought to herself, perhaps her curses were so strong that she did not even need to act!

"Finally! It's this lady's turn now!" said Wei Yan Er as she took out her [Sealing Leash] and used it on the little bear.

1%, 2%, 3%...95%, 96%, 97%!

Seeing her own progress bar about to complete, her smile grew larger and larger, in accordance to the progress bar itself. When the progress bar had reached 99%, the smile on her face was so large that it could have reached her ears!

Pak! Failed at 99%!

What a tragedy! It was supposed to be a celebration!

The overly large smile on her face was quickly replaced with a depressing pout. She widened her eyes, and puff her cheeks, looking at Zhang Yang with her best imitation of a puppy's eyes.

"Don't. Just don't. You know I'm not going to give it to you." Zhang Yang instantly rejected her before she could speak. He knew that this little girl wanted him to give up his turn for her.

"UWAAA..." Wei Yan Er ran away to a corner and sobbed. Perhaps she had really learned her lesson. Perhaps her curse was so powerful that it rebounded back on her?

Zhang Yang walked up to the little bear and threw his leash towards it.

"Yee..." the little bear squeaked, sticking out its pink little tongue. Its cute little round eyes were hypnotizing! Now that's what actual puppy eyes look like!

1%..3%...5%...

"Fail! I curse you to fail! Wee wang wang wee wang wang! Fail!" It seems that the little girl had not truly learned her lesson. With everything she got, she concentrated hard and drew some shapes in the air, probably meant to curse him.

60%...70%...80%!

Wei Yan Er grew scared and quickly jumped to her cousin sister. "Sis! Quickly, work together with me! Join forces with me to cast the Ultimate Destruction Godly Curse of the Nine Suns and Moons!"

Zhang Yang twitched his eye brows and frowned. "What sort of movie is she watching now?"

During a Sealing process, a character is not allowed to perform any action. Chatting is allowed though.

Han Ying Xue crossed her arms and looked away. "Curse of the White Pearl!"

90%, 95%, 99%!

"Fail! ABCDE, Failure shall befall upon thee! Come on! Fail already!" screamed the little girl as the progress bar was close to completion.

100%!

'Ding! You have successfully sealed the Bear King's Cub, turning it into your Battle Mount!'

'Ding! This is your first time obtaining a Battle mount. The

tutorial will now commence. The Battle Mount cannot be mounted before reaching Level 30. You can only summon the Battle Mount as a pet. It will follow the master in battle and gain Experience Points to level up! When the Battle Mount reaches Level 30, it can no longer be used as a pet, but as a mount! The mount can be used in battle and gain more Experience Points through a shared system! You can revisit this tutorial through the Control Menu at anytime.'

'Ding! You have obtained an achievement: Battle Companion!'

A new leash appeared in Zhang Yang inventory. It shared an almost similar look as the [Leash of the Skeletal War Horse].

[Leash of the Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Use: Summons or unleashes a mountable and battle-ready Gold-Eared Bear King. If your mount falls in battle, it can only be re-summoned after 10 minutes. You can only summon one Battle Mount at a time.

Casting Duration: Two seconds.

Level Requirement: 30

Bounded.

Zhang Yang immediately summoned the little critter and two seconds later, the mini-sized white bear appeared beside Zhang Yang. It brushed its body against Zhang Yang feet and when Zhang Yang ignored it, the little bear stood up on its rear legs to bite Zhang Yang's pants with its undeveloped teeth. It was just drop-dead cute.

"Aww...So cute!" Pretty much all the female players in the team were crowded around the little white bear, petting its head.

The Level o bear rolled over, exposing its bare belly, allowing the girls to rub its belly to their content. It waved its paws, as if it was inviting the girls to rub it.

Wei Yan Er shed crocodile tears. "Wuuu...Noob tank! You better reimburse me with one bear as well! Wuuu, bear bear! Wuuu!"

"Fine...fine...just keep quiet. I'll find another bear whenever I'm free!"

The party went on forward, killing so many elite monsters that they had lost count of them. The party spent another 30 minutes and had finally arrived at the deepest part of the cave! The little bear had absorbed half of Zhang Yang Experience Points, which was directly deducted from Zhang Yang's own intake of experience points. However, because of that, the little bear had been able to level up as a fast pace. By then, the little bear had reached Level 27 and had grown so large that it was already the size of a young calf. Both of its HP and attack power had increased exponentially.

However, it still had no skills of its own to use. It was a little disappointing due to the Yellow-Gold title that it had. Perhaps it will gain a skill or two when it reaches higher levels.

[Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Level: 27

HP: 5,880

Attack Power: 808 – 1,008 (Attack Interval: Three Seconds,

DPS: 303)

OP!

As expected from a Yellow-Gold pet mount. It had almost 6,000 HP at only Level 27! It was a pity that the little bear could not be summoned as a pet after Level 30; It would not be able to contribute to the party's DPS after that.

'Little Whitey! I'm sorry, you're no longer cute when you're that big! I'm not going to pet you anymore!" Wei Yan Er was saying such things to make herself feel better, however, she was not being truthful at all. In fact, she was still a little jealous of Zhang Yang.

Everyone laughed.

The deepest part of the cave was a large cavern. The ceiling of the cavern was at least a hundred meters high, perhaps even higher! There were many ice spikes of many shapes and sizes forming on top of the ceiling. Some were long and thin, while others were sharp and rather thick!

Beautiful, yet extremely dangerous at the same time! Nature was truly the best architect there is! In the deepest part of the cavern was a sleeping giant white-fur bear. It was probably several meters long. If the bear stood up on its rear legs, it would definitely be as tall as a house!

Snore Snore*

The bear was obviously sleeping soundly, snoring so loud that it echoed through the hollow cave like thunder!

[Winter's Wind Bear King] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 60

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,200

"I have completely no idea what skills this boss has. Anyhow, let's just give it a shot!" said Zhang Yang. He unsummoned the little bear since the Battle Mount would not be able to provide any DPS in this battle. In fact, it would only be a hindrance, requiring Han Ying Xue to heal it.

As for the experience gained later from killing the boss, Zhang Yang could easily grind some monsters later on.

"Fight!" Zhang Yang took out his axe and rushed towards the snoring Bear King.

The boss was still snoring soundly when Zhang Yang was already close to it.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang rushed in and landed a good hit on the boss.

Awoken from its sleep, the Bear King growl thunderously. It lifted its massive claw to slash Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang quickly stacked as much {Cripple Defense} as fast as he could. The boss' 1,200 Defense value was just too ridiculous for the others to handle. That skill was a top priority to be used for the other attacking team mates to attack to their fullest.

The Bear King stomped the ground hard and released a grayishsilver ray of light from its feet. The light spread out in all directions, as widely as 50 meters!

'Ding! You have gained the {Frost Bite} Aura. Receiving 200 Frost damage every second!'

"Heh. The boss damaging aura effect is quite weak!" Everyone agreed.

In truth, the aura effect was weak. Compared to a healer, healing 200 HP is nothing.

Zhang Yang frowned. He did not believe that a Yellow-Gold boss would be that weak. There had to be more to this; it was not just a random monster that was just created to die!

After a short period of time into the battle, the Bear King flung itself onto Zhang Yang and bit him. Since {Block} was still on cool down, Zhang Yang could not dodge the attack no matter how athletic he was. The skill seemed to be unavoidable, unlike the normal claw attack which could be easily dodged by moving his body. Unable to dodge the attack, Zhang Yang's blood splattered on the ice.

'Ding! You have received the effect {Bleeding}. Receiving 3,000 {Bleeding} damage every three seconds!'

Luckily, even though {Bleeding} damage ignores defense, Zhang Yang had a passive 930 damage absorption skill. After applying the 20% damage reduction passive, and another 930 damage absorption passive, the remaining damage Zhang Yang would sustain was 1,470! That had only added 490 DPS from the boss, which was not that big of a deal.

'-5,543!'

Still, the boss' physical attack was strong! With a swing of its gigantic claw, it could easily remove one quarter of Zhang Yang maximum HP! Now that Zhang Yang had Perfume Water in his party, paired with Han Ying Xue, Zhang Yang had two supersupporters healing him together, eliminating the would-be threat. While doing so, the healers would only need to maintain the {Regeneration} effect on the rest of the party members to completely safeguard them from the {Frost Bite} aura. If the battle continued on as such a pace, only time alone would keep the Bear King from falling.

However, when the Bear King was at 90% HP...

"GROWL!" The Winter's Wind Bear King bellowed a thunderous roar! The roar was so loud that parts of the cavern were crumbling from the sheer power of the sound wave. The others could not help but to cover their ears as the volume was too much for them to handle.

'Ding! You have received the effect {Deafening Roar} (Stack 1). All attacks received will increase by 1%. All attack and healing will be reduced by 1%. Last for 30 seconds!'

Just after three seconds!

'Ding! You have received the effect {Deafening Roar} (Stack 2). All attacks received will increase by 2%. All attack and healing will be reduced by 2%. Last for 30 seconds!'

If the boss continued to fight like this, repeating the same skill every three seconds, in just 30 seconds, the boss would easily apply 10 stacks of {Deafening Roar}! The stress level of the healers would be increased! Not only would the party's DPS decrease and receive even more damage from the boss, the healer's healing power would also drop by 10%!

Zhang Yang called out. "Perfumed! I need to you slowly back away! Report to me when the skill {Deafening Roar} is out of bounds!"

This time, Perfumed Water knew better than to argue with Zhang Yang. She slowly walked backwards, stopping every three seconds. She continued on until she was around 50 meters away from the boss. She shouted, "Zhan Yu! Here!"

Zhang Yang nodded in acknowledgment. "Stand there, and don't move! All ranged units, move 30 meters away to your maximum effective range and attack from there! Perfumed Water, you're to heal all ranged team members! Snow b*tch! Just focus on healing me and the little brat!"

Everyone nodded and followed Zhang Yang's commands without

any objection.

Perfumed Water had taken up to 15 stacks of {Deafening Roar} and had her healing power diminished significantly. She needed to heal five members. Under the effects of the Deafening roar, her healing was not holding up as well as she thought it would be! On the other hand, Han Ying Xue had already been inflicted with 30 stacks of {Deafening Roar}, but was still in control of her actions and rhythm!

90 seconds later, the debuffs on Perfumed Water had expired while the others had already taken up to 30 stacks of the debuff each, having their attack drastically lowered, while receiving an incredible amount of damage.

"Snow b*tch! Switch with Perfumed Water! The rest of you, if you have any debuff clearing skills, use them immediately! If you don't have any, withdraw by 50 meters! Come back and fight after 30 seconds when the debuffs are cleared out!" cried Zhang Yang in a commanding tone.

Wei Yan Er used {Warrior's Will} and removed the {Deafening Roar} on her, restoring her to original power!

The other two Spellcasters used {Ice Barrier} on themselves, encasing their characters in a large block of ice to remove their debuffs. On the other hand, Priest and Hunter had learned their anti status affecting skills, however, their own skills were not strong enough to remove the debuff. Hunter Shots could only use {Tumble} to leave the battle and hasten his withdraw. Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water quickly switched places. The one closer

to the boss was tasked to take care of Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er while the one who outside of the boss' effective range was set to heal the rest of the ranged characters.

Chapter 221: Super-Powered Pet Mount

Zhang Yang kept his {Warrior's Will} in reserve, instead of using it immediately. While the others could easily run out of the effective range, Zhang Yang had to remain tanking the boss! It was his job to begin with! Thus, by logic, the long he delayed his {Warrior's Will}, the longer he will survive in battle!

Two minutes in!

Zhang Yang now had 40 stacks of {Deafening Roar}! His attack power was decreased by 40%. The damage he was taking had also increased by the same amount! Each time the boss smacked his *ss, Zhang Yang would take more than 8,000 damage!

"Zhan Yu! I can't heal you fast enough! You have too many debuffs on you! Do something about it!" 30 seconds ago, Perfumed Water and Han Ying Xue had swapped places. In that short amount of time, Zhang Yang had already gained 10 more stacks of the unfavorable effect, causing Perfumed Water to receive the baton from Han Ying Xue for an uphill battle.

Zhang Yang nodded, acknowledging her complaint. It's about time to do something.

{Warrior's Will}!

Woosh! Like pressing select all + delete, all 40 stacks of {Deafening Roar} on Zhang Yang's character was removed!

Han Ying Xue was taking a break about 50 meters away from the boss. She did some mental calculations and frowned. "Hey! Dummy Yu! I don't think you have enough time to kill the boss! Even if you used {Rearm} and {Warrior's Will} again, it will only give you another four minutes!"

The party's total DPS was at around 10,000. However, with {Deafening Roar}'s effect of reducing their attack power, and the 30 seconds time that they need to "rest" on the sidelines would mean that their DPS rate had plummeted to 6,500. They would need at least 12 minutes to kill the boss with his 5,000,000 HP!

Zhang Yang had {Rearm} ready and waiting. It could provide them an additional four minutes. But, what about the remaining eight minutes?

Zhang Yang smirked. "Relax, I have a secret plan!"

Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes.

Four minutes up!

{Deafening Roar} had reached 40 stacks again!

"Hey! Do something, Stupid Yu! Don't blame me if you're dead!" screamed Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang holstered his battle axe on his waist and took out the [Eye of Medusa] from his inventory in a flash. He tossed the item to Wei Yan Er who had just come back from her "rest".

"Use it on me!"

Wei Yan Er was glued on her feet like a statue, stunned. "Huh? Why?"

Han Ying Xue gasped and cried. "Genius!"

"Tch! Stupid little girl! Just do as I say and use the bloody thing on me!"

"Hmph! You don't have to yell at me!" Wei Yan Er pointed the object at Zhang Yang and pushed the button to activate its effect.

Pew!

A dark light shot out of the [Eye of Medusa] and shone on Zhang Yang. Cracks could be heard as Zhang Yang was gradually turned into stone! Before the transformation was completed, Zhang Yang took the opportunity to raise his battle axe dramatically in a heroic stance, much like Freddie Mercury did.

'Ding! You have received the effect {Stone Petrification}. Lasts for 5 seconds!'

Immune!

Immune!

Immune!

For those five seconds, be it from the boss' claws, bites, aura effect, Zhang Yang was left completely unscathed. In fact, {Deafening Roar} and the aura effect on Zhang Yang were removed as well.

Han Ying Xue laughed cheerfully and said, "The [Eye of Medusa] can be used three times. If you used {Substitute}, {Warrior's Will} and {Rearm} all again, you can drag the time to 14 minutes!"

"You're not as dumb as you look huh!" Zhang Yang complimented her and added one more sentence. "Too bad, you're only as smart as Captain Obvious!"

"Hey! What are you saying?! Aren't you being a little arrogant?! Hmph! Shameless prick!" Perfumed Water threw a little insult.

Zhang Yang smirked. "What? You don't like it? Suck it up!"

"What!? You think I wouldn't dare to suck!?" Perfumed Water refused to back down in a fight.

Zhang Yang smirked changed into an uncontrollable laugh. He

stopped trying to come up with any witty come back. If Fatty Han had been present at the scene, he would said something that would leave them no turning back. Being the person who understood Zhang Yang the most, he would have already guessed why Zhang Yang was laughing at the word "suck"!

Perfumed Water was a bold girl. She had been hanging out with her own woman's gang, how could she not being influence by them! Very much well aware of the context of what she had said, she quickly piped down and calmed herself before teasing Zhang Yang. "I'll have you know that I been sucking on dozens of sausages and wieners every day or two. I couldn't help when I accidentally "bite" them down. Could it be that it will hurt when I do so...?"

Heh.

That joke was a little too cold for Zhang Yang; it sent a zap of chill down his spine, all the way down to his knees.

Oblivious and innocent as a child, the little girl thought that she had found Zhang Yang's one weakness and laughed hysterically. "Noob tank! Haha! I see that you're afraid of getting bitten! Hehehel! NYAHAHAHAHA! If you dare to bully me again! I'll bite you too!"

"Yan Er! Stop!" Han Ying Xue stopped her younger cousin from embarrassing the both of them any further. It's fine if she did not get its meaning, having heard it only once. But when Perfume Water had been saying it in such a suggestive way, for so many times, there was no way that a girl at her age would not

understand the underlying meaning!

• • •

Six minutes in, [Eye of Medusa] was used twice.

Eight minutes in, [Eye of Medusa] was used for the third time. At the last charge, the little gem-like, round, crystal eye ball-looking thing shattered into very fine dust, and dispersed into the air.

"Sigh...what a shame there's only one of that toy." said Zhang Yang with a heavy heart.

"It's just some random, fairy-dust trinket. We can always find more of those!" said Wei Yan Er flippantly.

Zhang Yang frowned and stared at her as if she had said something rather offensive. In truth, Zhang Yang was not offended, but he was rather disgruntled at her comment. She does not know that true value of the [Eye of Medusa]. Before Level 60, [Eye of Medusa] was truly as useful as a time machine. Thus, the drop was rate was so pathetic that you would better of trying your luck at winning the lottery. The only reason Zhang Yang could get his hands on the item was because Zhang Yang had 9 Luck points and it was also the boss's first kill.

Wei Yan Er saw how Zhang Yang was staring at her and self-consciously looked away. "Stupid! Idiot! Dummy! Noob tank! If you want to insult me! Just say the word! Don't stare me with those

pitiful eyes! I'll bite your little head of! I'll bite it! I swear I'd do it! BITE BITE YOUR LITTLE HEAD OFF!"

Zhang Yang twitched, his previous expression completely vanishing. Wei Yan Er's cousin sister was red in embarrassment.

10 minutes in, Zhang Yang summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] and used {Substitute} and shifted all 40 stacks of {Deafening Roar} to the servant.

12 minutes in, {Warrior's Will} cool down complete!

14 minutes in, {Rearm} was used, and {Warrior's Will} was immediately activated.

The boss had a little over 5% HP left. With victory in close sight, everyone cheered.

"Almost there!"

3%, 2%, 1%!

"Ouuu..." The Bear King wailed and dropped dead. Its massive body was clearly heavy, its fall sending tremors all over the cavern and even managing to send a few stalactites dropping down from the ceiling.

"YAASHH! Equipment! Equipment!" cried Perfumed Water as she

rushed forward to grab the loots. However, when she tried to pick them up, none of the items were going into her inventory. She turned around with tears in her eyes. "Wuuu...Leader Distribution mode huh..."

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Water lady, move! This super star will do the picking!"

Angry and abashed, Perfumed Water grit her teeth at Zhang Yang cried, "You stinky little scoundrel! Piss me off and I'll sneak into your house and bite your tiny little s*ht off!"

"Right...right. Move, shoo shoo!" Zhang Yang nodded his head and gestured her to move aside like a dog. He then picked up the [Heart of the Winter Bear King] and proceeded with the rest of the loots.

There were a total of six Yellow-Gold equipment, with four of them being Level 60 set-equipment. The four set items were the Berserker's specialized Helmet, Pyromancer's specialized Armlet, Beastmaster's specialized Boots, and the Cryomancer's specialized Leg Guard. The items were all distributed based on their classes, Wei Yan Er got hers, as did Daffodil Daydream, Hundred Shots, and Snow Seeker.

Snow Seeker had only one Level 60 Yellow-Gold to wear and now that she had gained the Leg Guards, she was very pleased. Her radiant, cheerful smile was so refreshing. She was clearly happy to have accepted Zhang Yang's invitation. The remaining two were random Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipments. A cape and an accessory.

[Bear Skin Cape] (Yellow-Gold, Cape)

Vitality: +42

Intelligence: +42

Equip Effect: Increase 41 Magic Attack.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

Before identifying an item, the item properties will only have 70% of its original properties in effect. Only after paying a sum of coins, would the properties of the item gain an additional 40% boost!

Every magic user in the party was so riled up by the cape that they pushed Zhang Yang to quickly decide on who gets the cape.

Zhang Yang scratched his head, thinking of a way. "Let's go with this. Each magic type, Spellcaster and Priest alike will role a number. Who had the biggest roll will received the item. However, the winner will pay 3,000 gold coins to all the losers as consolation prize!"

"Ok!"

Han Ying Xue and the rest of the girls rolled. As lucky as she has always been, Han Ying Xue scored 97 points, winning the roll! She snickered happily as she took the cape and placed in her inventory. She looked at Zhang Yang and winked at him seductively. "Honey dear, care to pay my debts to the other ladies?"

F*ck! That's 3,000 gold coins!

Zhang Yang sighed regrettably. If he had known Han Ying Xue would be the winner, he would not have suggested the gold coin consolation prize in the beginning. Knowing the miserly sisters, they would curse him daily if he had forced them to pay the consolation prize money!

"You're a real devil -- no, THE devil, aren't you!" Zhang Yang stared angrily at Han Ying Xue. However, there was nothing that he could do. He took out 3,000 gold coins and divided it for the other three girls.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er giggled happily.

[Arcane Deflector] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Equip Effect: Creates a 3% chance to deflect and cause any magic spell to {Miss}.

Level Requirement: 60

Percentage based damage nullification equipment were extremely rare. This was to prevent low-level equipment from being so strong that high-leveled armors would become unnecessary. If they had been even slightly more common, a tank could wear a set of 50% damage nullification equipment, lasting him for the next 30 to 40 levels!

This piece of accessory would still remain relevant up to Level 100 or even Level 200, as the percentage rate will always remain the same!

"Haha! A tank class item! I'll take it then!" said Zhang Yang as he took the item without anyone objecting.

The other seven to eight equipment were Level 60, Gray-Silver tiered. Even though they were not as strong and powerful as Yellow-Golds, they were still rather strong for their level. Each of them was distributed following their class requirement. There was only one leftover helmet that was designated for the Sacred Knight class. Since no one wanted the item, Zhang Yang took the item, planning to sell it in the Little Merchandize Shop.

The time was already past 9pm. With two more bosses to go, the nearest boss was the Magic Treant King, located at the Swamp of

the Ancient Moss. It was at least a two hour journey from where they were. Add in the fact that they would encounter several monsters and spend even more time searching for the boss, they could end up fighting past midnight if they were to start now!

Zhang Yang than decided. "Ok, let's call it a day for now. Tomorrow, we shall find and kill the seconds boss at 9am! Is there anyone who cannot make it?"

No one answered.

Zhang Yang turned to Wei Yan Er and frowned. "Are you planning to skip class again?"

Wei Yan Er scoffed and place both of her tiny little hands on her waist. "Who said I was planning to skip class?! It's not like I wanted to. I have to take care of the sick sister! Sigh! Which bloody idiot allowed that dummy to eat all that ice cream yesterday!"

"Yan Er. I see that you need some knocks on your head to behave properly huh!" Han Ying Xue came towards Wei Yan Er, cracking her knuckles angrily, looking rather intimidating. For a moment there, Zhang Yang could have sworn that he felt a sudden killing intent radiating from Han Ying Xue.

"Erhm..I erhm...I-I can e-explain! Wait! HELP! NOOB TANK! HELP ME!" Wei Yan Er wailed for a moment before her character disappeared from the game. After a brief second, Han Ying Xue's character disappeared as well. It seemed like both of them had logged off to settle their little game of chase.

"Guild master Zhan Yu. Farewell, I'll see you tomorrow at 9pm." Snow Seeker tore her [Teleportation Scroll] and waved goodbye to Zhang Yang.

Without saying a word, Perfumed Water stared at Zhang Yang and then slowly shifted her sight lower to his groins before tearing a [Teleportation Scroll] and vanished.

Zhang Yang teleported to the Tukula Fortress with the main city's Teleportation Point and came to the Wasteland. There, he summoned the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and started to raise his pet mount's level.

Since the pet mount is at low level, the experience points that it could leech from the monsters around was relatively high! Still, its level will always be lower than the players it belonged to. After 20 minutes of grinding, it reached level 30 with a flash of golden light. Immediately, it disappeared from Zhang Yang's side.

'Ding! Your Battle Mount [Gold Eared Bear King] has reached Level 30. It cannot be summoned as a pet. Please summon the Battle Mount again!'

Zhang Yang took out the leash and summoned the bear again. The progress bar appeared briefly and disappeared after a short two second casting time.

"GROWL!" The bear appeared majestically with a loud growl. A huge, white furred bear with golden tipped ears stood next to

Zhang Yang. Its massive size was approximately three-meter-long with four strong and tough limbs! Its body was completely covered in a thick, white fur with a pair of golden tipped ears. From the side, it looked very fierce and majestic.

[Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Level: 30

HP: 8,400

Focus: 100/100

Weapon Attack: 1,116 – 1,516 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds, DPS: 439)

Skill 1: [Shared Life] (Passive): Combines both the owner and the pet's HP as one.

Skill 2: [Wild Charge]: Rushes towards an enemy with great speed. Stuns the target for 1 second. Cool down time: 30 seconds. Effective Distance: 2 – 10 meters. Cost: 20 Focus.

After Level 30, this white bear had gained two additional skills. The {Shared Life} could only be applied when Zhang Yang mount the beast. The {Wild Charge} was a good replacement for his own {Charge} since he cannot use the skill while riding a mount. The

Bear King might be just Level 30, but as a Yellow-Gold Battle Mount, it already had vast HP and attack, and it's only natural for it to grow far stronger in the future. It was probably as strong as an equivalently leveled Yellow-Gold equipped player!

After summoning, Zhang Yang quickly hopped on the beast. When a Battle Mount is summoned, it will disappear quickly after two seconds if nobody mounts it. Immediately after Zhang Yang got on the bear, the {Shared Life} skill was applied and he gained a huge boost in his HP, raising to a whopping 25,560 HP!

"This is awesome!" Zhang Yang exclaimed, feeling the controls extending to the bear itself. He felt like the bear was an extension of his body, finding that he could easily control its every move.

In his previous life, Zhang Yang had a pet mount which was a Violet-Platinum Thunder Hawk. It was a Flying Battle Mount too, at that! Based on the tier, Violet-Platinum was one tier higher than Yellow-Gold. However, when he was riding the Thunder Hawk, other pro players were riding Mythical tiered pet mounts! Some were even riding Ethereal tiered pet mounts! It could not be helped, Zhang Yang was a little too late in joining the game and had not been able to get his hands on rare items.

Still, his current Gold Eared Bear King Battle Mount, despite being only a Yellow-Gold tier, was, by far, the strongest Battle Mount that any player would have, at this stage of the game!

"Let's go, Whitey!" Zhang Yang named the mount and with a command in his mind, the Bear King growl and galloped towards a Snow Wolf.

```
Shosh!
```

```
{Wild Charge}!
```

The Snow Wolf was immediately stunned. Zhang Yang kept his hands to himself and allowed Whitey to attack on its own.

```
'-803!'
```

'-789![']

'-898!'

Even though the white bear's basic weapon attack was strong, the level gap between Whitey and the Snow Wolf was too far apart, and the damage had suffered a penalty. Luckily, the pet mount and the owner shared the same life bar, defense value, damage nullification skill and other passives. To attack the pet mount was like attacking the player itself. All attacks that the bear received was completed zero-ed! It could basically slowly kill the Level 55 Snow Wolf without Zhang Yang needing to do anything at all!

Chapter 222: Valley Of High Tree

After another two hours of mindless grinding, Zhang Yang's Pet Mount, Whitey had amassed a large amount of experience points and was already Level 40. It had gained much more HP, Weapon Attack, and Defense, along with another skill!

[Claw Attack]: Attacks the target with a beastly claw. Deals 100% melee damage.

Cool down time: One second.

Cost: 50 Focus.

After the Level 40 hard bracket, every level gained will be exponentially harder and tougher than before. Even if they were to fight any monsters beyond Level 50, they would take two to three days, killing monsters one at a time instead of nuking them with large scaled AoEs. Zhang Yang involuntary yawned and realized that it was already past 11pm. Stretching his arms, he then decided to return to White Jade Castle. Before calling it a day, he mounted Whitey and made his way to the Little Merchandize Shop. Along the way, many players were mesmerized by the majestic mount. One by one, they asked as Zhang Yang rode by.

"Brother! Where did you did you buy the mount?"

"Big Bro! Which shop did you buy the mount from?"

Arriving at the shop, Zhang Yang did a quick check on the shop accounting and made a few [Fire Resistance Potion] to be placed in the shop's storage before logging off to have his rest.

The next day, Zhang Yang logged in at 9am, after his routine breakfast and exercise.

This time, Fatty Han was present along with the crew members from yesterday. However, Sun Xin Yu and Endless Starlight were absent since the both of them needed to work during the day. Unfortunately, they would have to miss out on the second boss as they could only log in during the night. Everyone gathered together in the Tukula Fortress before taking off.

Before everyone else arrive, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were already in the Fortress waiting. Yesterday, both of the sisters logged off in the Bear King's Cave. To save time and money, they had unequipped all their equipment and waltzed towards some monsters, allowing themselves to be killed. They had revived and made their way towards the fortress after that. Little Wei Yan Er had been waiting for a while and got slightly agitated when Zhang Yang was late.

"Noob tank! Hurry up and get your *ss over! I wanna see little white white!"

Zhang Yang choked, laughing as he said, "Little white white is now Big Whitey!"

He then teleported to Tukula Fortress and summoned [Gold-Eared Bear King], riding it towards Wei Yan Er.

Observing the bear with great admiration, and a little jealousy, Wei Yan Er ruffled her tiny hands all over the massive bear's white fur. After she had her fun, she turned to Zhang Yang and said, "Hey, noob tank, when will another little whitey will spawn?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and shrugged. "I have no idea! Rare pet mounts and bosses are not the same. There're no fixed spawn times. However, one thing is for sure. The rarer it gets, the long it will take to respawn! Bear King is the Frozen Sky Wasteland's rarest monster. I predict that it might take one or two months to spawn a second one!"

Wei Yan Er puckered her lips and move her jaw side to side, displaying her discontentment. Suddenly, she bumped her fist against her palm and said, "Are there other Yellow-Gold pet mounts in other maps?"

Zhang Yang nodded. "Yes, there are. However, you must know. The higher the rarity, the harder it would be to seal it. If you want to have a higher success rate, you'll have to start pumping your Luck attribute!"

"Oh!" said Han Ying Xue. "No wonder you could seal the bear in one try! Now I understand that Luck could affect the success rate in sealing a pet mount!"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Having 9 luck points is really

something!"

"Noob tank! What are the current stats of Big Whitey?" Wei Yan Er asked Zhang Yang. While others could easily check on the beast's HP and Level, only the owner could access the Attack and skills. Zhang Yang posted the properties of the Bear King in the party channel.

```
[Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)
 Level: 40
 HP: 11,200
 Weapon Attack: 1,554, - 1,954 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds. DPS:
585)
 Skill 1: {Shared Life}
 Skill 2: {Wild Charge}
 Skill 3: {Claw Attack}
```

Everyone was stunned. They had long known that a Yellow-Gold Pet Mount is strong, but those numbers far exceed their own expectations!

"F*ck! Even the attack is much stronger than mine!" cried Fatty Han. "D*mn bro! How could you be that selfish! Why didn't you tell me that you were hunting for a pet mount!?"

"Hey hey! If you want to have a battle mount? Get in line! We're all waiting for our chance for it! In this case, you're the last in line! Hah!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Hah! It's the Final Countdown! Tu tu tu do!" Fatty Han joked.

Wei Yan Er raised an eye brow. "What was that?"

"Oh come on! Count down? How do you count downwards?"

"3?2?1?"

"Exactly! So which number did you said first?"

"The last one?"

"Exactly~" Fatty Han post a victory sign.

"Lame!" Everyone responded.

The team chit chatted for a little while, while waiting for everyone to gather.

"Onward! To the Swamp of the Ancient Moss!"

It took the entire team approximately two hours to reach the Swamp. They had to make their way through the Frozen Sky Wasteland and the Tirgua Mountains. Even though all of them knew that the Demonic Treant King was located in the Valley of High Tree, the mini-map around them was still covered in shadows. The system will not blatantly reveal the location of the boss to them. To locate it, they would have to search for it themselves. The team split up into several groups, repeating the same procedure as they did the previous day. Anyone who locates the boss will have to notify the entire party.

Lo and behold, history repeated itself as Han Ying Xue, the goddess of luck found the boss after not more than 10 minutes. She giggled as she announced, "It's here! I found it!"

Zhang Yang opened the world map and examines Han Ying Xue's location. He frowned. "I'd say, you were assigned to search the location in the direction of three o'clock. Do you realize where you are now? That's seven o'clock! Where are you trying to go? Timbuktu?"

Han Ying Xue scoffed. "I was the first one to find the boss, not to mention, saving everyone's precious time and effort! Now look at you, calling me stupid and calling me a directional idiot! Well, look at me, the world's dumbest girl with no sense of direction! Oh wait, I was the one who found the boss! The first one! You're calling me idiot!? Looks who the idiot now!"

After being yelled at, Zhang Yang felt a little guilty and remained quiet. The rest of the party felt the same way, having been called a directional idiot by an actual directional idiot! Everyone started to change their courses and headed towards Han Ying Xue.

The Swamp of the Ancient Moss truly lived up to its name. Every corner, every inch, every part of the swamp was covered in greens. Not the light green of plants you'd see in a rain forest. This green, would be the deep, dark green of mosses that you would normally find in a drain or an abandoned toilet wall. There were algae growing where there was water. The monsters in this map would also be found in real life swamps. There were crocodiles, frogs, giant crabs and other swamp dwellers. The Valley of High Tree, on the other hand, was jam-packed with trees that went up to several meters tall! They would easily dwarf any real buildings in the real world! In the center of the Valley was a huge clear lake, while the rest of the map was just normal terrain.

Controlled by Zhang Yang, the bear walked up with its gigantic, heavy foot steps forward, sinking its feet into the ground as it moved forward.

Suush!

A shadowy figure rushed towards Zhang Yang with a flash when he had set his foot into the Valley. With a quick command in his mind, the white bear dashed three to four meters towards the front.

Wham!

With a loud crash, the huge shadow stopped in its tracks. It turned out to be a huge rock, about the size of a sedan car. The rock was smashed into many tiny particles, scattering all over the place. 20 meters away from them, a treant was making its way towards them, lifting another huge rock. The treant was at least 10 meters tall. When the treat stood upright to face them, its massive size was large enough to block off the sunlight, casting a huge, long shadow over them.

[Demonic Treant] (Elite, Elemental Being)

Level: 58

HP: 58,000

Defense: 600

With another thought. Zhang Yang sent a command mentally and the bear growls as it rushed towards the treant.

{Wild Charge}!

The bear stomped the ground with great force and blasted itself towards the treant, raising its claws as it flew through the air.

'-876!' Normal Attack.

'-989!' {Claw Attack}.

Zhang Yang activated {Blood Rage} and started his attack.

'-1,482!' Normal Attack

'-3,356!' {Horizontal Sweep}.

A pet and its master, fighting alongside each other, dealt an instant 6,700+ damage to the monster in no time! Everyone could not help but gape at the sight of it! Everyone could only fantasize about having one at that point.

'-1,534![']

After receiving the attack, the treant monster returned fire, swinging a massive tree-arm and smashing Zhang Yang with it. Zhang Yang took damage, but having "morphed" together with his mount into one single unit, Zhang Yang had gained a huge HP boost, reaching 28,360 maximum HP! That puny, little hit was nothing but a tiny scratch on Zhang Yang.

"D*mn son! With that HP, you're just like a boss now!" screamed Fatty Han.

"Haha! That's right! We might even get some Yellow-Gold

equipment if we kill Zhan Yu!" said Perfumed Water rather passionately. "Hey Fatty bum! If you kill Zhan Yu and get me three to four Yellow-Gold equips, I'll give you a kiss myself, saving you the trouble of sending me those perverted messages!"

"Pui Do I look like someone who would go hoes before bros!?" Fatty Han crossed his arms confidently. However, it did not take him long before he was intrigued by her suggestion. "Make it at least three kisses and I'll consider it!'

Everyone was amused, laughing at their conversation. Even though the damned Fatty Han talks before thinking, he was an interesting fellow to be with. With him around, the atmosphere would never be dull.

As always, with the team attacking together ferociously, the treant did not last for long and was turned into a rotten old tree trunk.

Wei Yan Er went on ahead and picked up the loots. She was expecting some sort of equipment but only obtained three counts of [Thick Branch]. Annoyed at her loots, she pouted.

Fatty Han saw what she had obtained and made his usual joke. "Hehe. Thick eh...Hehehe...Thiccc...hehehe!"

Zhang Yang could see where his conversation was about to go and quickly interjected before Fatty Han could say anything else. "Fatty...can you just shut your mouth for three minutes? Three, god-d*mn-minutes!"

Fatty Han crossed his arms unwillingly and kept quiet. However, how could someone as perverted as him could let a chance like that slip by! In just four seconds, he opened his mouth and begun to start a conversation. "Yesterday, when I was out shopping with Yun Yun, we stopped at a grocery store. Yun Yun wanted to buy some cucumbers for the night and picked two rather large and rough cucumbers! I wonder what would she used them for..."

Han Ying Xue and the girls of the party started blushing. In unison, they screamed at Fatty Han, "Fatty Pig!" Only Wei Yan Er started at Fatty Han in confusion and said, "The rough ones aren't tasty you know! The rough ones are bitter!"

Fatty Han laughed extremely loudly, swiping a glance towards the ladies of the party. "Yun Yun bought those cucumbers are her beauty treatments! Hahahahaha! What are you girls blushing for, huh! Hehehehe, I must have struck the jackpot! Look what I found? Four perverted vixens! Now, who's the real pervert here huh!"

The four girls were rendered speechless. How could they not think of something indecent when he had to say it that way? Large and rough?! Any mature lady would quickly come to 'that' conclusion! If she was to use it for her face, why did he had to say it that way?

"Pervert! Fox! Pig! Bastard!" The ladies lashed out their insults and rolled their eyes.

The team proceeded on and not long after, another treant was found. It pulled itself out from the ground it was in and swung its arms around to attack the party. The team killed the treant and went on. As they chopped their way deeper into the Valley, they picked up a few Green-Copper tier equipment. Since they were not set-equipment like the ones found in the Winter's Wind Bear Cave, they were barely as valuable as set-equipment, and were given to Han Ying Xue to disassemble for profession experience.

"Noob tank, why are there no pet mounts here?" Wei Yan Er wouldn't stop pestering Zhang Yang, repeating the question again and again.

"Sigh...if pet mounts are so common and easy to find, they wouldn't be called rare pet mounts now, would they?" Zhang Yang would repeatedly answer her question with different variations of phrasing. Still, no matter how hard Zhang Yang tried to twist his words, the message would simply not get through to her.

The Valley was extremely large and wide. It was so wide that the party had to spend at least two hours to kill every elite treant monster in the Valley, before managing to get into the deepest part. However, their efforts remained unrewarded; where they stood in the deepest part of the Valley, with no boss-like monsters to be seen.

The good news was that after such a long and draggy spree of kills, Whitey had gained three levels.

[&]quot;Hey, Dummy. Where is the boss?"

Everyone had scanned the entire area but could not find anything resembling a monster.

Annoyed and frustrated, Zhang Yang scratched his head. "The quest said it would be here!"

"Could it be killed already?" asked Hundred Shots, hoping he was wrong.

"YAWWZAH!" Fatty Han screamed to the high heavens. "Something just poked my *sshole!"

Other than Zhang Yang, the rest of the party members had been on foot the whole time. Fatty Han had grown tired, and had sat down on a large popping root nearby. He had let out a sudden scream as his face twitched in a strange manner.

Chapter 223: Demonic Treant King

Everyone frowned with varying degrees, some twitching their eye brows, some baring their teeth in disgust, but one thing was for certain, they were all disgusted by Fatty Han.

"What's with that? I'm serious!" said Fatty Han like a wrongly accused housewife. He did make a rather pitiful expression before he got angry. "If you don't believe me, have a seat and try it!"

A sudden thought struck Zhang Yang. He looked at the tree that had "poked" Fatty Han's butt. He tilted his head upwards to look at the tree and manage to catch a glimpse of its peak. For a moment, he thought he had been mistaken but after a closer glimpse, he was sure that the silhouette carried a name tag! And the name tag said: Demonic Treant King!

The monster's name tag was in yellow, which means it is a neutral monster that will not attack unless provoked. This was why the group did not notice the monster since it had remained motionless, just like a real tree even when the group was standing right next to it.

[Demonic Treant King] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Being)

Level: 60

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,500

What thick defense! Even after a 50% armor reduction, it would still have 750 Defense value; enough to nullify 90% of the majority of players around!

Zhang Yang went back to the group and pointed at the boss saying, "This...is the boss I supposed."

"What?" Everyone was startled. Everyone went up closer to the "tree" and observed carefully before they accepted the impact of that revelation. While the others were nodding their heads, Fatty Han was sulking on one side, clenching his teeth angrily.

"What a perverted tree! It actually poked my butt hole! What a shameless bastard! Don't stop me! I'm going to have this tree have a taste of its own medicine!"

The rest of the team could not help drip cold sweat.

Riding the mount, Zhang Yang's HP had gained a massive boost. With a stronger commanding presence than ever, he commanded. "Get ready! We are going to start the boss fight soon!"

Without much delay, Zhang Yang took out his battle axe and laid the first strike on the boss, following closely with a {Blood Rage} and {Horizontal Sweep}! '-986!'

'-2,898!'

Facing a boss with 1,500 Defense, Zhang Yang's attack was greatly diminished even with his {Eagle Eye}. As for Whitey, its attack was only around 700, so low that it was completely negligible!

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The ground quaked violently as the boss begun to stir. The tremors were so strong that it was like an earthquake occurring. Cracks begun to form all around them as the boss "wiggled" itself out of the ground. Two long and extremely large tree trunks came out of the ground. To their horrors, those were its legs! Each of the legs were so large that each of them could be wider than a basketball court! But, if those were only the legs, how about its entire body? Standing at the bottom of it, Zhang Yang and his party were like ants in the face of a gigantic elephant!

Wham!

The Demonic Treant King stomped the ground, covering an area so wide that no one was able to dodge! In an instant, everyone received 9,000 damage. Even Wei Yan Er, who was positioned behind the boss took at least 6,000 damage. The attack did not kill Wei Yan Er, but, the rest of the party was killed instantly.

Zhang Yang had only received 5,534 damage, a small wound considering that he had close to 30,000 HP!

"D*mn! How are we supposed to fight this thing?"

Fatty Han and the rest had released their souls and had started to run back to their bodies, complaining as they did.

Zhang Yang had an idea and commanded Whitey to run back towards the lake in the center of the Valley. Even though the bear's movement speed was faster than average, it could not outrun the boss! With one stride of its long legs, it easily stomped the ground, the shockwave still reaching Zhang Yang.

'-5762!'

Luckily, Zhang Yang had already moved 60 to 70 meters away from its previous location. That attack did produce a shock wave but it was far enough to miss Wei Yan Er. She had been so apprehensive of the attack that she patted her own flat chest, sighing in relieve.

Wham! Slam!

The Treant King chased after Zhang Yang, managing to get a few hits in at the same time. When Zhang Yang' HP had reached below 10,000, he quickly activated {Berserker's Heal} and continued his way. Eventually, the boss' attack could not reach him since he was

riding the mount! The chase continued and the boss remained on Zhang Yang's trail, unable to attack.

Several moments later, Zhang Yang arrived at the giant lake. Riding the bear, Zhang Yang commanded Whitey to leap forward and into the lake. After a huge splash, the bear floated on the water surface, paddling constantly like a dog.

The Demonic Treant King had managed to caught up to Zhang Yang. He sighed a breath of relief. He feared that he might have lost the boss' aggro, his arduous journey to the lake for nothing. Within range, the boss lifted its leg and sent it towards Zhang Yang.

Woosh!

The massive stomp caused a gigantic wave that was at least 10 meters tall. Both Zhang Yang and Whitey was sent deep into the lake and after a while, they floated back up to the surface, taking only 734 damage.

Its massive attack was greatly reduced!

Just as planned!

Zhang Yang smirked. Bosses that relied on stomping attack will have its attack power reduced when dragged into water. In 'God's Miracle' there were many examples of using the surroundings to nerf the boss' attack. In his previous life, there was a guild that had

killed the undefeated Frost King Poseleus by kiting the boss towards the peak of the Angula Volcano. Using the hot environment to diminish the boss' Frost damage, the team had successfully killed Poseleus, and the news soon spread like wildfire!

This game was designed with realism in mind! Use your imagination to create endless possibilities!

{Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}!

Zhang Yang reduced the boss defense and called out to his team. "Once everyone is revived, get over to the lake! We'll kill the boss here!"

Wei Yan Er healed herself with [Bandage] and quickly head over to the lake.

"Little brat! Stay away from the boss! Wait for the rest of the team!" Before she could jump into the lake, Zhang Yang quickly stopped her. Even though the boss' attack had been reduced, it was still strong enough to kill a Berserker without the backing of a healer!

Soosh!

Another stomp landed and the lake had formed several more waves that rose up higher than any waves in the beach! Since the boss was just too ridiculously huge, it could easily stand on land and still managed to be in range to attack Zhang Yang. One strike

at a time, Zhang Yang could only hack at its root-like feet. Whitey was also attacking with its might.

Even in water, Zhang Yang was still taking around 700 damage. He was losing HP a lot more slower than before, but with no one around to heal him, he could not endure for long. Fearing that, he quickly cried out. "Hey! B*tchy Snow! Where are you guys?!"

"What's the hurry?! We have just been revived, let us eat up! Sure! I can come right now if you want me to! With zero MP, what you want me to heal you with!?" Han Ying Xue scoffed arrogantly.

Fatty Han giggled. "With your love!"

"F*ck! Don't waste time! Please hurry up! I'm dying here!" said Zhang Yang. Seeing that his HP was about to be depleted, Zhang Yang quickly activated {Shield Wall} and summoned {Merlinda's Shadow}.

Before he leveled up, he was much weaker. Back then, {Merlinda's Shadow} was so strong that it could over-heal Zhang Yang! Yet, right now, with that massive HP, {Merlinda's Shadow} could only heal roughly one third of Zhang Yang maximum HP! Sadly, things could not remain permanently strong! What was strong then would be weak now!

"Please hold on, Zhan Yu! We are coming now! Hold on!" At least Snow Seeker was courteous enough to say the words that Zhan Yang wanted to hear the most As the {Shield Wall}'s duration ended, the 10,000 HP that he had regained was quickly being hacked away. Zhang Yang quickly used {Rearm}, using {Berserker's Heal} again!

Finally, just as he had reached his limit, the team arrived out of the forest, riding their own mounts!

Splash! Splash! Splash!

Everyone jumped into the lake and Wei Yan Er swam towards the boss' back. Others swam behind Zhang Yang, engaging their own roles; healers prepared to heal and attackers ready to attack.

In the water, the boss' stomping attack power had been reduced by roughly a third. The resulting damage was around 3,000. Even though the number might seem powerful and devastating, a tank could take the damage head on without flinching. As long as Han Ying Xue or Perfumed Water could maintain {Regeneration} on Zhang Yang, they could leave him be and focus on healing the rest of the team! Priests are natural group or mass healers. Perfumed Water was the main healer in Crimson Rage. Not only were her equipment top-notch, her skills were no less impressive! She even had {Healing Rain} and {Mending Prayers}; two powerful mass healing skills!

With two of them, Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water working hand in hand, they easily managed the other seven players in the party, excluding Zhang yang. The battle was now shifting towards

.

Zhang Yang's side!

Wham!

The Demonic Treant King suddenly swung an arm made out of long tendrils, and whipped Zhang Yang, dealing more than 5,000 damage. The attack had also sent Zhang Yang and his bear flying out of the water, towards the other end of the lake, where they would land on hard ground!

'Ding! Demonic Treant King has used {Whip Attack}!'

Before Zhang Yang and Whitey was sent out of the water, Zhang Yang quickly grabbed on Whitey's neck tightly and quickly activated {Wild Charge} the moment their character leaves the water surface. In a flash, Whitey dashed forward, dragging Zhang Yang along on its back, before it slammed forcefully against the boss! Zhang Yang had jumped into the water right before the moment of impact.

The boss' {Whip Attack} was really fast and strong! However, the one at the receiving end of the attack had reacted even faster!

"Nice one!"

Everyone cheered. If Zhang Yang was really sent flying, he would received additional {Falling} damage if he collided with the ground. What's more, he would have been so forcefully displaced that the healers would be out of range. He would have been killed with just

two to three hits if the boss decided to turn around and stomp on his pathetic, little character.

Now that the dangerous moment had been dealt with, the team focused on attacking the boss. After all, solving sudden problems were no better than actually killing the boss.

After five stacks of {Cripple Defense}, Whitey's damage had increased by a level. Its average damage rose from 250 to 1000! That was almost four times stronger! Although other physical attack classes had increased attacks after the boss' defense was reduced, they attacks were still extremely weak due to the ridiculously high base defense of the boss! The only player in the party that truly received the full benefit of {Cripple Defense} was Daffodil Daydream. Being a Pyromancer, her fire elemental spells were extremely effective against woodland creatures like treant monsters! Having {Eagle Eye}, Zhang Yang would consistently maintain his average damage power. Snow Seeker was a Cryomancer, her ice-based damage was not effected; they were neither diminished nor boosted.

However, Daffodil Daydream's strong fire attacks were not enough to cover up for Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han's weakened attacks. All three of them had their attack reduced by 35% on average, causing the entire team's DPS to be lowered by a significant amount.

Chapter 224: Aura Stone

Demonic the Treant King used the {Swing} attack every 45 seconds, while {Wild Charge} only had a cool down time of 30 seconds which could totally negate the knockback effect of Demonic the Treant King's swing attack!

Bang! Bang! Bang!

Demonic the Treant King trampled on the lake, causing miniature tsunamis, and a lot of chaos as fishes and prawns were washed out, hitting the land around it.

90%, 80%, 70%... Everybody slowly reduced Demonic the Treant King's long HP.

Snow Seeker acclaimed, "Guild master Zhan Yu is so smart. If we did not use the lake's environment to weaken the Treant King's damage, we would not even stand a chance! the Treant King's damage is much higher than Mountain Giant, even if we had more people, this boss would just kill all of us instantly! If real world elements were not even considered, we would have to gather thousands of players above Level 50, or wait until we are at Level 70 with better equipment!"

Fatty Han immediately seized the credit and responded, "Guild master Snow Seeker, I am the one who brought little Yang into this game! All the tactics and skills you witness have been taught by yours truly!"

"... Fatty, you can exaggerate it even more?"

Fatty Han shamelessly said, "Guild master Snow Seeker, does Crimson Rage not invite male players?"

Perfumed Water could not hold back on retorting, "You must master the 'Sunflower Manual', and then undergo plastic surgery. Perhaps then, you can be invited into our guild!"

Fatty Han suddenly felt a chill creeping down his crotch. He bent his head down, looked and touched his crotch contentedly.

"Oy!" the girls protested when they saw Fatty Han doing so.

Fatty Han laughed out loud with pride, and sent a private message to Zhang Yang, "Little Yang, I just love teasing these little pretties! Unfortunately, all these girls are yours, I'd feel embarrassed to hit on them! By the way, let's go for a drink tonight!"

Zhang Yang felt cold sweat dripping down his head and replied, "If you want to take advantage of them, then just say it, don't come up with excuses!"

In this battle, the most taxed were the two healers as they need to constantly heal everyone HP. If they were a second too slow, someone could have been trampled to death by the Treant King. The rest of the people were quite relaxed, even drinking some lake water as they were graciously trampled till they hit the bottom of

the lake.

At one point, Fatty Han mentioned that something leaked out of him. Although he never specified on the details, everyone had a good guess and a few girls almost desperately ran to the lakeshore.

40%, 30%, 20%, 10%!

"Kong! Kong!" the Treant King roared madly, a blood-red halo flashing over its mottled bark. The huge the Treant King instantly turned into a crimson color!

'Ding! the Treant King has initiated {Sucker Punch}. All attack increased by 50%!'

"the Treant King's getting violent. Go ahead and use your long cooldown skills, we're going to need every bit of juice!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly.

Zhang Yang had kept his guard up, in case this open world boss went berserk, a typical trait of its kind. Prior to the battle, he had already told the gang to keep their long cooldown duration skills in reserve, only unleashing these skills when the boss became violent! Thus, everyone activated their respective skills and drank Power Potions, before starting to attack the Treant King with equal fervor.

The hardest hitter was Wei Yan Er, as her Level 50 class quest's reward was a Yellow-Gold two-handed axe. Her melee attack had

already reached 2,800, and after activating {Indiscriminate} and ingesting a Power Potion, her attacks went way overboard, even surpassing Zhang Yang's attacks!

{Indiscriminate}: All attacks have 90% chance to cause critical strike within 10 seconds. Can only affect targets with HP less than 20%. Cool down time: 10 minutes.

'-6,012! Normal attack. Critical strike.'

'-10,002! { Tornado Cleave}. Critical strike.'

Her critical strike exceeded ten thousand damage!

The little brat was giddy with excitement every time she slashed the Treant King. For this 10 minutes she was like a heavenly God as her critical strikes caused double damage. the Treant King's 750 Defense Value barely suppressed her base attacks, only allowing her critical attacks to be -- critically effective!

She left everyone speechless with her terrifying damage!

the Treant King's attack increasing by 50% nearly overwhelmed the healing rate of the two healers. Thus, Zhang Yang quickly used the {Vanguard's Aggression} protective barrier and {Shield Wall} at the same time.

Because everyone was using their long cooldown duration skills, they successfully reduced the Treant King;s HP by 200,000 points

within 10 seconds, leaving the Treant King with 300,000 HP! But the duration for their long cooldown duration skills was finished, so the team's attacks reverted back to how they were before.

The moment {Vanguard's Aggression} expired, everyone's HP bars went up and down like a roller coaster. The healers were playing a game of pong with the boss, and the balls were the HP bars of the team!

Zhang Yang made up his mind and decided, "Evil Snow, Perfumed Water, ignore Hundred Shots and Fatty, let them die! Focus your healing on the rest of the team, especially Daffodil Daydream, her flame element is key to the battle! Keep her alive at all costs!"

It was impossible to keep everyone alive, so it was best that they ensure the safety of the hardest hitters!

The moment Fatty Han heard Zhang Yang's command, he used {Fake Death} and lay down beneath the surface of the water!

Bang!

the Treant King stomped on the lake once again, and with a big splash, a '-4,434' damage text appeared above Fatty Han's head. The pitiful Fatty Han had been left with only one-third of his HP before activating {Fake Death}. There was no hope for survival. Instantly, Fatty Han's {Fake Death} became the real death!

"Damn, I already used {Fake Death}, the boss still trampled on me!" Fatty Han scolded angrily.

"Fatty sh*t, the Treant King has ranged attacks, it is useless to {Fake Death} within the Treant King's range attack!" Zhang Yang could not help but laughed.

On the other hand, Hundred Shots had tried to swim away from the Treant King's range attack but the speed of the player in the water was only 10 m/s. Hundred Shots was only able to swim about seven to eight meters away from the Treant King before he joined the perverted Fatty in death!

With the departure of the two hunters, Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water instantly had lightened loads, albeit it was still very stressful for them!

Zhang Yang threw {Sacrifice} on Daffodil Daydream without hesitation. At the same time, he also summoned [Servant: Clear Lotus] and activated {Substitute} to relieve the pressure.

250,000! 200,000! 150,000! 100,000!

the Treant King retained last traces of his HP. However, everyone's HP bars in the team were not faring any better. the Treant King gave the lake a huge stomp again, striking those close by, with Zhang Yang the only one left standing!

'Ding! Player Snow Seeker has died!'

30,000! 20,000!

'Ding! Player Drizzler has died!'

"Wu wu, cousin, why didn't you heal me?!"

10,000! 5,000! 1,000!

"Kong!" the Treant King suddenly flared-up with an earthshattering scream and its huge body crashed down, flattening countless of trees across the land -- the Treant King's body was at least a few hundred meters long!

"Hu!" the survivors let out a sigh of relief as they had been getting increasingly concerned. If the Treant King had an extra 300,000 to 500,000 HP, Zhang Yang and the gang would be the ones defeated!

"Save them first!" Zhang Yang told the two healers.

Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water immediately started to reviving the fallen. One minute later, all of them were sitting by the lakeside, eating health recovery food to recover their conditions.

Zhang Yang cancelled his mount summon, and ran to the side of

the Treant King's corpse to pick up the loot. Luckily, the loot dropped from the Treant King were clustered together in one corner. Imagine having to run a few hundred meters just to pick up the loot alongside that massive body.

The first item Zhang Yang picked up was the quest item, [Root of the Demonic the Treant King]. Zhang Yang placed it next to the [Heart of the Winter Bear King] in his inventory and looked for other items.

[Furious Metallic Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +101

Strength: +40

Dexterity: +40

Equipment: Absorbs 70 damage points each time you receive an attack.

{Unidentified}

Class Requirement: Guardian

Zhang Yang laughed happily and said, "Very good, the first equipment is mine, I'm such a 'Lucky Hand'!" he immediately threw the gloves into his inventory.

"F*ck, Little Yang, find me a few Hunter's set equipment with that 'Lucky Hand'!" Fatty Han said immediately.

"Ya, my gloves and boots as well!" Wei Yan Er also joined the conversation.

Zhang Yang coughed and said, "Write down your wishes on a paper and put it under your pillow on the 24th of December, I will be the Santa Claus who fulfills your wishes!"

Suddenly, everyone went silent but Fatty Han laughed mockingly and said, "Little Yang, if you are representing Santa Claus, does that leave you with nothing but 'balls'?"

"Get lost!" Zhang Yang shooed him away while the girls blushed, rolling their eyes pointedly at Fatty Han.

"Sigh, my only wish from Santa Claus is to have two girls at once when 'having some action'!" Fatty Han said it, surprisingly solemn. They had never seen the cheerful Fatty Han wearing such a sincere facial expression. It could only mean that this wish truly came from the depths of his heart, a wish that he would fight for, as his

lifetime goal!

Everyone started perspiring like waterfalls. They all had seen their fair share of perverts, but have never seen a pervert setting something so perverted as his goal in life!

Zhang Yang immediately continued picking up the loot, except his gloves which was the set equipment part, Treat King dropped another three Yellow-Gold equipment, none of them belonging to any set, which were the Priest's helmet, Priest's boots and Beastmaster's chestplate.

Because Han Ying Xue already had a Yellow-Gold helmet so this helmet went to Perfumed Water by default, while the boots went to Han Ying Xue. Everyone was happy with the distribution. Hundred Shots had taken a pair of boots yesterday, so the chestplate went to Fatty Han. It kept the entire party happy.

Zhang Yang touched the Treant King's corpse once again, his eyes suddenly shone, as he took out two stones, proclaiming, "Aura stones!"

Both of these stones were crystal clear and shone like two sapphires. They were magnificent.

None of the girls would turn away from shiny gemstones. Han Ying Xue and the rest of the girls surrounded the aura stone. Even the cool Snow Seeker was not an exception, and they started their girl chatter. The girls were overcome with excitement, chattering and laughing. Zhang Yang shook his head again and again as he said, "Come on girls, these are not gemstones, don't get so excited!"

[Beginner Aura Stone] (Consumable)

Use: Increases a level of aura skill that is less than Level 3.

Requirement: Possess an aura skill.

Everyone reached out for the stones, including those who did not possess any aura to speak of.

Zhang Yang was frowning and as he looked at Snow Seeker and Perfumed Water, before saying, "Both of you don't have auras, what are you going to do with this?"

Fatty Han immediately sided with Zhang Yang and added on, "That's right, these stones are not 'thick and long', and they are useless for the both of you!"

Bang bang! Pa pa! The girls got fed up, and they caught hold of Fatty Han, giving him some punches and kicks.

"Those who have aura skills, please roll the dice! Whoever gets the highest and second highest points, gets one stone each!" Zhang Yang made the decision as the party leader. Those people who had aura skill started to roll the dice immediately. As a result, Han Ying Xue, who was publicly known for having an affair with the system, rolled the highest point at 96 points while Zhang Yang rolled the second point at 92 points, so both of them got a stone each.

"What a lewd dog and lecherous vixen!" Fatty Han who was beaten, crossed both his hands behind his back and sighed like a noble person.

Zhang Yang opened his skill list and a few rows of skill immediately appeared as three-dimensional projections in front of him. Each skill description was engraved on a metal flatbed, and his fingers toggled and selected his {Vitality Aura} before using the [Aura Stone].

[Aura Stone] broke into small particles of light, as his {Vitality Aura}'s flatbed glowed blue.

[Vitality Aura] (Level 2): Increases the vitality of team mates within the effective range by 8%. Aura range: 30 meters radius round from the caster. The effect lasts until the death of the caster or until it automatically vanishes.

Han Ying Xue did not use [Aura Stone] immediately, but admired hers lovingly. She even teased Wei Yan Er about it, riling up the little brat.

After looting the two aura stones, the Treant King had no more

Yellow-Golds to offer, but seven pieces of Gray-Silver equipment. Zhang Yang handed two pieces over to Snow Seeker as reward for her help in defeating the Treant King.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, are we going to fight the third boss?" Snow Seeker was extremely satisfied as she and Perfumed Water had collected one piece of Level 60 Yellow-Gold set equipment over the past two days. They were really pleased.

Zhang Yang looked at the time and replied, "It is going to be 5.00 PM. Everybody should logout from the game take a break! Let's gather at 7.00 PM at Tukula Fortress, the last boss somewhere in that direction!"

All of them nodded their heads and tore their [Teleportation Scroll]s, returning to White Jade Castle. They also identified the equipment, and restocked their health replenishing supplies.

Zhang Yang also went to Item Identifier to identify his [Furious Metallic Gloves]!

[Furious Metallic Gloves] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +144

Strength: +58

Dexterity: +58

{Level 2 Socket}

Equipment: Absorbs 100 damage points each time you deal an attack.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 60

Currently, Zhang Yang had four pieces of the Level 60 Yellow-Gold set. If he could get the last piece of set equipment, the boots, from Lord of Flames, and then he would have successfully gathered a full set! Being the top Yellow-Gold set of equipment at Level 60, he would have gain the power to conquer the upcoming dungeon, "Thunderbolt Prison"!

Chapter 225: Imperial Sky

Everyone started to log in, one after another. At 7.00 PM, Sun Xin Yu and Endless Starlight finally joined the team. The ten of them immediately made their way to Tukula Fortress.

They travelled through Phil Forest and Xylor Wasteland, finally entering the Burning Flatlands after two hours.

Burning Flatlands. The name itself spoke volumes about the environment it carried, the ground was lined with cracks of hot lava, threatening to scorch the feet of those who stepped on its surface! It was a horrible environment, the few flora that did grow were those that had adapted to such conditions, such as [Flame Flower] and [Burning Grass], precious medicinal herbs.

Most of the monsters here were members of the fire and rock elements. There were Burning Imps and Red Fire Lizards dwelling beneath the magma, and they were above Level 50.

Because they had never explored the map before, everyone could only follow the old-fashioned method by splitting up and searching in groups.

Zhang Yang looked at Han Ying Xue and said, "If you are the first one who discover the Fiery Sacrificial Altar again, then I'll admit that you have a Godly sense of direction!"

The rest of the people nodded their heads continuously. As Han Ying Xue simply walked without any direction in mind but could somehow discover the right places, it had to be due to some divine intervention.

Zhang Yang opened the map, looking for the Fiery Sacrificial Altar at his own assigned area and paid attention to Han Ying Xue's location. Unsurprisingly, that fellow who had terrible sense of direction started to walk away from her assigned area, simply walking haphazardly, like a blind fly.

10 Minutes later, the little blinking dot on the map that represented Han Ying Xue stopped, and she said, "Ha ha ha, I'm the first to find it again!"

Drops of sweat formed on everyone else's heads.

Zhang Yang suddenly got an epiphany and said, "Negatives make a positive, perhaps she has just the right amount of negatives to end up as an exceptional positive!"

Fatty Han muttered, "The fellow who has such a terrible sense of direction actually entered an unexplored map and was able to find the right spot, is really impressive!" There was silence as nobody in the party understood what he meant.

All of them quickly converged towards Han Ying Xue's location.

This was a huge altar. It was like a really tall stack made up by building blocks, divided into upper, middle and lower layers, totaling up to several hundred meters! The altar was like a cone that had been cut into six pieces, with a piece removed from every alternate layer, having the remaining three pieces on top of each other. The top of the first layer's area was as big as the size of eight football fields; the top of the second layer's area was similar to the size of five football fields, and the top of the last layer's area was about the size of a single football field.

All around the altar and on the even surface of each layer, many people dressed in black priest robes paraded forth and back. There were men and women, carrying staffs. Obviously, they were magic-type monsters.

[Fanatic Flame Acolyte] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 58

HP: 58,000

Defense: 300

Zhang Yang leaned forward, patting Whitey on the head and said, "Go!"

Whitey advanced, using {Wild Charge} and dashed towards one of the nearest monsters. Zhang Yang used the momentum to swing his axe.

"Heresy!" the Fanatic Flame Acolyte immediately shouted loudly and pointed at Zhang Yang with his staff, starting to cast {Fireball}.

'{Crash Magic}!'

The Fanatic Flame Acolyte's casting bar was immediately interrupted. He swung his staff, knocking Zhang Yang off his mount and shouted, "Heathen, your fresh blood shall be used wash away the desecrated souls!"

Everyone swarmed the monster and continuously interrupted his casting bar. The pitiful Fanatic Flame Acolyte could not even cast a {Fireball} before being hacked to death!

"Bah, that guy was all but talk!" Fatty Han raised his fist, "If it wants to act like a boss boss, it's not supposed to pay lip service but to speak through its actions!"

"Well said, Fatty Bro!" the other member of perverted duo, Endless Starlight, immediately looked at Fatty Han admiringly.

These clowns!

The team continued moving on, killing all the way. Two hours later, they had almost reached the third level of the altar. The experience points for elite monsters were abundant as Whitey had also gained three levels, reaching Level 46. Every 10 levels the pet mount gained would only enhance its attribution once. Therefore, there was no difference from when Whitey was Level 40. However,

Whitey no longer suffered from the damage penalty that arose from level differences.

At this time, a bunch of people had walked through the entrance of altar. "Imperial Sky" was the title that hovered over the heads of these people.

These late birds saw that there were no monsters along the route to the altar. However, from far away, they saw monsters on both sides. One Sword Stroke squinted his eyes, raised his head and looked up at the huge and tall altar.

"Boss, are there anyone faster than us?" Mountain Cleaver looked at One Sword Stroke.

"How can it be? Boss had just accepted the quest to kill three bosses, could anyone really be faster than us?" Soul Striker exclaimed, looking incredulous.

One Sword Stroke stared at the altar and said, "If I'm not mistaken, Lone Desert Smoke has a party up there!"

Heartless Striker immediately slapped his thigh and said, "That's right, only they could compete with us, Imperial Sky! Boss, what should we do now?"

"We're going after them, of course!" One Sword Stroke said, with a determined look on his face, "I have long wanted to battle that Zhan Yu and see who the top tank in China server is!" "Ha ha, that'll be our boss!" Mountain Cleaver laughed out loud and said, "Boss has a Level 50 Yellow-Gold weapon, a full set of Level 50 Gray-Silver equipment and a Level 50 Gray-Silver shield, these equipment are definitely the best!"

"Exactly, Zhan Yu and his gang cleared Poison Fireland Hardcore mode a day before we did! But, Yellow-Gold equipment do not drop in dungeons!"

"Besides that, our boss also got a Gray-Silver pet mount yesterday, together they have 19,000 HP, and monstrous DPS. That Zhan Yu will not know what hit him!"

"Ha ha, we'll record a video of Zhan Yu getting beaten flat by our boss and put it on the official forum. That'll shut down the debate for good!"

One Sword Stroke was not prideful like his followers, even as he got his boots licked by them. However, a trace of price could be seen from his eyes. Most of the time however, he was known for being calm and despising sycophants. He nodded slowly and said, "Let's go!"

There were only 11 players in One Sword Stroke's team. It seems that One Sword Stroke was similar to Zhang Yang in the way that both of them preferred to bring a concentrated party of elite players only. All of them quickly followed the route that Zhang Yang had already cleared.

After another 10 minutes, Zhang Yang and his gang reached the third layer of the altar. In the middle of the altar, there was a huge creature of flames, it held a war hammer in its right hand, standing upright in an arrogant poise. The heat distorted the air around it!

This flame creature was surrounded in circular formation of 10 Flame Acolytes in half-kneeling positions. All of them were clearly worshiping the being.

[Lord of Flames Arcel] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Being)

Level: 60

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,200

There were so many Flame Acolytes between the gang and the Lord of Flames Arcel, that clearing the Acolytes was the first priority!

Just as Zhang Yang was about to command the gang to clear all the Flame Acolytes, he caught sight of 11 uninvited guests who were riding their mounts towards the top! Imperial Sky? Zhang Yang focused on those words, quickly scanning for the leading figure. As expected, he spotted One Sword Stroke. This was the top tank of China server in his previous life, always going around with a full set of equipment that practically blinded the eyes of those who beheld him. He was currently carrying a triangular shield on his back. The familiar shape of an axe hung around his waist, Zhang Yang recognized it at first glance, it was the same axe as his [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe]!

From what Zhang Yang surmised, it could only mean that One Sword Stroke must have cleared the Centaur's Castle as well and had a 99% chance of having {Blast Wave}!

Beneath One Sword Stroke was a blood-red dire wolf, as large as lion, and looking absolutely feral. It even howled at the sky from time to time, the fur on its back bristling as it did so. Compared to his rather docile-looking Whitey, that dire wolf definitely looked far more intimidating!

Zhang Yang tried to focus on the dire wolf. Because One Sword Stroke had his profile hidden, his pet mount could not be observed as well.

"Zhan Yu?" One Sword Stroke also quickly focused his sight on Zhang Yang. In Zhang Yang's team, two people carried shields but one had a MP bar while the other had a Rage bar, it was easy to tell them apart!

Zhang Yang who was riding Whitey, took a few steps forward and said, "One Sword Stroke?"

Both of them hid their profiles, but by instinct alone, both of them could pick out the other team's leader!

"Ha ha!" One Sword Stroke laughed happily and said, "How about we fight a battle?"

Zhang Yang also laughed and said, "The losing side, tear [Teleportation Scroll]s on the spot and leave right after resurrecting!"

One Sword Stroke answered without hesitation, "Deal!"

Nobody would just back down from a boss fight when faced with another party who had similar goals in mind. If the other team happened to kill the opposing team's tanks, that team would crippled beyond recovery! Being of similar mindset, they both would adopt the same tactics if it came to a head-on battle.

"Singles or gang fights?" Zhang Yang simply asked.

"Let's make it simple and direct, single combat! The winner and loser would be clear!" One Sword Stroke was confident that he was going to win the battle -- it was the right mindset for a professional player to have. If the player lacked confidence in himself, he did not deserve to be called a professional player.

"Okay!"

Just as Zhang Yang was about to charge forward with Whitey,

the cool Sun Xin Yu held him back and said, "Let me do this!" Her competitive spirit could be seen through her eyes, this lady simply will not deny herself and opportunity to pit her strength against professional players!

In his previous life, although Sun Xin Yu never joined any Professional League, she had assassinated numerous professional players in the China server! The Queen of the Shadow Dance title was obtained after she gained a notorious reputation as a slayer of Professional players!

In his previous life, Sun Xin Yu and One Sword Stroke had battled three times in total, Sun Xin Yu successfully killed One Sword Stroke twice without any hitch, having slight trouble the third time but emerging victorious, nevertheless! However, assassinations and duels were different. Assassination often begin with the victim being caught off-guard and being killed off before they could recover! But duels were completely different. Both parties would be prepared and fully buffed in a head-on battle!

Moreover, when a dual-wielding Thief meets a high defense and damage absorbing Guardian, the Thief would already be in an unfavorable situation! Besides, Zhang Yang suspected One Sword Stroke's mount was a battle mount, just like his!

Although Zhang Yang could not determine the grade of that battle mount, it would stack up the odds against Sun Xin Yu. She had less than a 1% chance of winning!

Chapter 226: Utterly Flattened

Usually, the losing side would simply have the experience bar of their current level emptied out. Experience points could be regained by killing more monsters! But since this challenge carried the cost of losing a Yellow-Gold boss AND a main quest, Zhang Yang could not afford to let Sun Xin Yu go wild.

Knowing her, if Zhang Yang directly told Sun Xin Yu something like, "You are not his opponent, off you go.", this block of ice that took human form would definitely lose her temper!

Zhang Yang got around it by saying, "How about we decide the winner by the best of three between three representatives from each side?"

One Sword Stroke thought for a while and replied, "Okay! As long as I get to fight you, Zhan Yu, regardless of the other two battles!"

"Alright!"

On another side, Mountain Cleaver immediately said, "Boss, Zhan Yu doesn't seem so sure of you. He is probably using the other two battles as a safety net!"

"He he!"

Imperial Sky's people laughed mockingly. Besides their professional bootlicking skills, they made a point to show that One

Sword Stroke constantly had their support! He was their pride and joy!

"Brother Zhan Yu, in order to ensure the fairness and to avoid the situation of sending ill-matching classes against each other, how about we send our fighters on the spot?" One Sword Stroke asked smiling slightly.

Zhang Yang nodded in agreement and then spoke in the party channel, "Ice cube, go for the first battle!"

Sun Xin Yu was slightly disgruntled as she actually wanted to fight One Sword Stroke. Zhang Yang wanted to prevent exactly that from happening! But she already said, "Let me do this". She was not the type to fall back from her words, according to her personality. However, she still glared at Zhang Yang angrily.

"Brother Zhan Yu, let's start this!"

Both parties sent a player out.

Eventually Lone Desert Smoke sent out Sun Xin Yu, while Imperial Sky sent out a Thief named Blooming Ichor.

Zhang Yang thought for a while, trying to recall Blooming Ichor's identity. In his previous life, he was the main Thief in "Sky and Ocean Electronics" a Professional League battle team that was led by One Sword Stroke. Although he was never mentioned in the list of the strongest Thieves in China server, he was still the main

Thief in "Sky and Ocean Electronics", the strongest battle team in the S-Class Professional League. He must not be underestimated!

Without wasting much time, both Thieves immediately used {Stealth}. The battlefield became deathly silent, the suspense almost suffocating! Battles between two Thieves usually played out in the form of a deadly hide-and-seek that could go on for half and hour, yet ending quickly within 10 seconds of action!

One minute, two minutes, five minutes, ten minutes, both of these Thieves had yet to show themselves yet, knowing the first one to slip up would mean instant death!

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Brother One Sword Stroke, let's get started with the second battle! I hope we learn much from each other!"

"Okay!"

"Noob tank, let me do this! Let me do this!"

"Little Yang, let me shoot them to death!"

"Guild master, let me do this!"

"Guild master Zhan Yu, let me do this!"

All of them wanted to join the battle!

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Evil Snow, you fight the second battle!"

Han Ying Xue was caught by surprise as she was definitely a lazy person. She had slowly edged away from the crowd, planning to spectate silently. The last thing she expected was Zhang Yang asking her to fight a battle! She quickly shook her head and said, "I'm just a healer, getting into a duel is none of my business!"

Zhang Yang laughed happily and said, "It's ok, ddin't you buy a {Putrefying Poison} skill book last few days ago? Just keep that DoT on your opponent, and keep refreshing it. All you have to do is to heal yourself in the meantime!"

It was really difficult to defeat Han Ying Xue with her current equipment unless the opponent struck really, really hard. Otherwise, with her immense healing capabilities, she would easily undo any damage she sustains! Of course, if she encountered {Destructive Smash}, she would be helpless! Obviously, the only Warrior in Imperial Sky's team -- One Sword Stroke could possibly possess such a skill. However, he would be fighting with Zhang Yang in the third battle so there was no way One Sword Stroke would be Han Ying Xue's opponent!

She may be a healer, but she was a super healer, and a super healer with super equipment would bulldoze over anyone else!

After discussing among themselves, both parties sent out a player from each party for the second battle.

Han Ying Xue versus Fire Fountain!

Fire Fountain was a Pyromancer. His equipment gleamed. Although he did not have a full set of set equipment, he had a Level 50 Gray-Silver staff on his hand. His magic attack had surpassed 1,300. He definitely had the best equipment there was!

However, they had not taken Han Ying Xue's equipment into consideration. It racked up her magic attack to 1,800, probably being the highest magic attack among all Spellcasters, globally!

The moment their fight commenced, Fire Fountain immediately activated {Heart of Flame} and rapidly started casting {Explosive Flame}!

{Heart of Flame}: Increases Fire spells' damage by 10%. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cool down time: 3 minutes.

{Explosive Flame}: Throws a huge fireball towards target and causes Fire damage equivalent to 300% of magic damage. Cast time: 2 seconds. Cool down time: 10 seconds. Distance: 30 meters.

While Han Ying Xue immediately activated her accessory, [Magician's Brooch] to boost her magic attack to 2,500 and casted {Putrefying Poison} on Fire Fountain.

{Putrefying Poison}: Putrefies enemy with the power of darkness and causes Dark Abyss damage equivalent to 200% of magic

damage within 15 seconds. This skill's effect cannot be stacked. Cool down time: 1 second. Distance: 30 meters.

After that, Han Ying Xue cast many healing skills on herself such as {Regeneration}, {Mending Prayers}, {Holy Shield} and {Brilliant Light}, where she completely ignored the existence of Fire Fountain. She did not even bother looking up at the fireballs that came flying at her face, she just kept on healing herself.

Fire Fountain nearly vomited blood to death as he watched Han Ying Xue! Fire Fountain was a professional player, Han Ying Xue should at least be fighting him with more finesse, such as constant movement, tactical distancing or interruption of his casting bar! She should at least use {Punishment Ray} on Fire Fountain! Yet, here she was casting healing spells on herself and buffing herself up before even paying attention to Fire Fountain, "fighting" as she would be a monster!

That's right, Han Ying Xue did not have any clue on PKing, but her healing was very potent. She did not have to do much except to heal herself as her opponent slowly nibbled away at her HP!

Two seconds later, a huge fireball flew from the tip of Fire Fountain's staff and struck Han Ying Xue!

'Damage absorb!'

That's right, {Holy Shield} simmered around Han Ying Xue. When she applied {Holy Shield} on herself, her 2,500 magic attack meant that she could absorb up to 5,000 damage points.

Thus, Fire Fountain needed another {Explosive Flame} to break through Han Ying Xue's {Holy Shield}!

Only now did Han Ying Xue realize that she could absorb damage with {Holy Shield}! She quickly changed her mind mid-heal and fired {Punishment Ray} at Fire Fountain.

Fire Fountain was even madder and thought to himself, "They sent such an idiot to fight me, are they looking down on me!?" He was embarrassed and furious.

```
'-1,005!'
```

The Han Ying Xue cast {Punishment Ray} on Fire Fountain, the first tick of {Putrefying Poison} occurred at the same time, taking at least 4,700 HP in total. He almost jumped out of his skin just then! His total HP was about 8,000. More than half of his HP had suddenly been hacked off, how could anyone remain composed after that?!

Oh my god, how much magic attack does this woman have, she's powerful!

^{&#}x27;-3,723!'

^{&#}x27;-2,012!'

At the same time, his {Fireball} struck Han Ying Xue and finally broke her {Holy Shield}, causing damage.

{Fireball}: Casts a fireball and causes Fire damage equivalent to 200% of magic damage to target. Cast time: 2 seconds. Distance: 30 meters.

'+5,034![']

{Mending Prayers} immediately activated and fully recovered Han Ying Xue's HP.

Damn!

The top Priest in Imperial Sky was also capable of casting {Mending Prayers}. Based on that, Fire Fountain knew that it healed by an equivalent of 200% of the caster's magic damage. This only meant that his opponent's magic attack was over 2,500, it was almost double his!

Fire Fountain immediately used {Ice Barrier} to dispel {Putrefying Poison}'s effect and tried to create distance between himself and the crazy healer. He teleported in a blink of eye and reappeared 100 meters further. He hastily tried applying {Bandage} on himself.

When Han Ying Xue saw Fire Fountain running away, she chased after him, in a rare show of effort. You would have a higher chance of being hit by a meteorite than witness her go crazy like that.

However, by the time she got within range, Fire Fountain was already almost done using his Bandage. On top of that, he had the time to glug down one health recovery potion and regenerate an additional 3,000 HP.

Han Ying Xue did not realize that Fire Fountain had already dispelled her {Putrefying Poison}. So, she stood at one spot and started casting {Punishment Ray} like a stationary turret.

Fire Fountain was much more experienced in player versus player combat than Han Ying Xue was, with a wave of his hand, a blast of fire instantly struck Han Ying Xue, causing 1,450 damage to her. After that, he immediately stepped backwards and tried to keep his distance from Han Ying Xue.

{Fire Blast}: Uses fire to launch a blast to the target and causes Fire damage equivalent to 100% of magic damage. Cast time: Instant. Cool down time: 8 seconds. Distance: 30 meters.

Han Ying Xue's casting bar for {Punishment Ray} was interrupted as he stepped out of her range

Han Ying Xue did not bother chasing after him and immediately starting casting healing spells to heal her own HP.

Fire Fountain quickly ran into the 30 meter attack range and started casting {Explosive Flame}!

If Han Ying Xue was more aware of the mechanics of the game,

she would just need to take a step backwards to interrupt his casting, as they were both exactly 30 meters apart! Instead, she went on healing herself. When she saw Fire Fountain entering her {Punishment Ray}'s attack range, she started casting just that.

Fire Fountain was already done casting {Explosive Flame} and fired a huge fireball. He immediately stepped backwards after that.

'-3,963!'

A huge bubble of damage text popped up over Han Ying Xue's head while her {Punishment Ray} casting bar was interrupted again. She quickly started casting her healing spells, {Mending Prayers}, {Holy Shield} and {Brilliant Light}.

Fire Fountain took a step forwards, used {Counter Magic} followed by {Fireball}!

{Counter Magic}: Immediately interrupts target's casting bar and renders target unable to cast related skills for the next 3 seconds. Cast time: Instant. Cool down time: 30 seconds. Distance: 30 meters.

Han Ying Xue's casting bar for {Brilliant Light} was interrupted. At the same time, all her spells in the Holy tree started cooling down for 3 seconds. Thus, the only spell she had left was {Putrefying Poison} as it was under Dark Abyss tree.

Now only did Han Ying Xue realize that Fire Fountain had

already dispelled her {Putrefying Poison} long ago. Since she could not cast any other spells other than {Putrefying Poison}, she went ahead and used it, out of a lack of choices rather than a calculated maneuver.

Two seconds later, Fire Fountain cast {Fireball} and hit Han Ying Xue.

'Damage absorb!'

'+3,602!'

{Holy Shield} absorbed {Fireball}'s damage while {Mending Prayers} regenerated Han Ying Xue's HP to full!

Fire Fountain was astounded, his powerful and long cool down skill {Heart of Flame} was used, {Counter Magic} and {Ice Barrier} which were vital skills have also been used were currently cooling down, yet Han Ying Xue's HP was full! On his end, he had 7,000HP left, and the DoT was already taking effect!

A dignified professional player was actually being forced against the ropes by a healer who had no clue about player combat!

Chapter 227: One Sword Stroke

Wei Yan Er was rolling on the floor, laughing. She was completely out of breath, and she leaned against Sun Xin Yu, clutching her stomach as she continued laughing silently, her mouth twitching wordlessly.

On the contrary, the people of Imperial Sky had turned as white as snow. Some of them looked as though they were about to get sick!

Fire Fountain was regarded as being second only to One Sword Stroke, a masterful player whose looks could be compared to the pretty boy, Blooming Ichor! Having brought in by One Sword Stroke to become an irreplaceable asset of the party, not only was he superb in managing his damage output, he shone best in PK battles!

But for such a superb player to die by the hands of of an idiotic healer who does nothing but heal herself while leaving all the work to {Putrefying Poison}? Anyone's pride would be ripped to shreds!

Fire Fountain was still struggling to stay alive, constantly moving around the area while manipulating the 30 meter range rule, but Han Ying Xue had already suffered once and had learned from it. Currently all she did was to refresh the {Putrefying Poison} DoT on her opponent while keeping her HP constantly refilled!

As the effect of the [Magician's Brooch] had already faded, Han Ying Xue reverted to her regular magic damage. The damage of {Putrefying Poison} which kicked in every three seconds had been reduced to 700 points, but 15 seconds was enough to inflict an approximate damage of 3600 on Fire Fountain.

{Putrefying Poison} kicked in once again. It didn't require any targeting at all on the part of the caster. Even if Fire Fountain ducked and roll, activated a 30 meter, or a 31 meter long ranged spell, nothing prevented the Poison from kicking in.

30 seconds later, the {Putrefying Poison} was triggered for one last time, causing a damage of '-752!', Fire Fountain's final humiliating struggle to keep his last drop health points came to an end, and he crumpled, dead on the ground. A pair of Gray-Silver gloves fell to the ground which was instantly picked up by a member of the Imperial Sky. Meanwhile, Han Ying Xue activated a {Brilliant Light}, her health back at its full state!

"Wow, cousin sister is mighty!" Wei Yan Er was still guffawing like a drunken old man.

Fatty Han and the rest were also showering her with endless praise. A healer killing anyone in battle was unheard of, and with full HP too, to add on to that.

Soul Striker of the Imperial Sky quickly revived Fire Fountain. Their party members were looking sickly, avoiding eye contact. Fire Fountain looked like one of the spectre-type monsters. He was dying for another round with Han Ying Xue. It had really been too embarrassing and depressing for him to lose like that!

Fire Fountain is a person who can accept failures, but to lose to Han Ying Xue in such manner, he wanted to bang his head against the wall just thinking of it!

But he also knew that even if he was given another chance, he would still be poisoned to death, it was inevitable as the difference in magic damage between the two of them was just too much. Furthermore, the opponent was a terrific healer, with loads of HP restoring skills! He could not help himself but to suspect, that even if both of them had the same magic damage output, would he stand a chance after all?

The second round had ended, but the two players from the first round were still playing hide and seek with each other!

One Sword Stroke stepped forward atop his Battle Wolf, and he said, "Brother Zhan Yu, let's get started!"

Zhang Yang laughed evenly, riding on his Whitey and said, "Bring it on, let us have a good fight!"

The fellow members of the Imperial Sky had their uttermost faith in One Sword Stroke at securing his win of this battle at the beginning, but after seeing Zhang Yang producing a mount of his own, they figured that the opposition also possessed a Battle Mount. It diminished their hopes, but One Sword Stroke was still their leader!

"It isn't capturing a Gray-Silver battle mount, Zhan Yu's Battle

Mount must be a Green-Copper grade, or even a Black-Steel! Can't you see how lethargic that white bear is? It's such a lazy animal!" the gang tried to comfort themselves, coming up with whatever reason they could come up with.

The two opponents locked eyes, sizing each other up. Nobody moved.

In a short period of 3 seconds, Zhang Yang initiated the first attack of the battle. Whitey let loose a loud roar, charging straight towards One Sword Stroke.

20 meters, 15 meters, 10 meters!

{Wild Charge}!

Whitey was charging like a stream of meteorite, rushing at the Battle Wolf at blinding speed!

In an instant, the body of the Battle Wolf suddenly flew into action. A miniature sonic boom formed as exploded off the ground at high speed, moving 3 meters to the side, evading the charge attack of Whitey!

"Impressive!" Zhang Yang was praising his opponent from the bottom of his heart. Although both of them did not have any knowledge on the attributes of their opposition's Battle Mounts, they were able to obtain certain extent of understanding by comparing the Battle Mounts to the monsters they were

apparently derived from. Therefore, One Sword Stroke had deduced that Whitey possessed some sort of {Charge} skill, and had used 'Agility of the Wild' to counter it.

[Agility of the Wild]: Increases movement speed by 50%, last for 5 seconds. Cool down time: 30 seconds. Consume: 20 focus points.

This was a universal skill, possessed by any wolf type, leopard type, tiger type and lion type monsters!

Both of them wielded their battle axes and charged forward!

Missed!

Missed!

Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke were both currently mounted, so they avoided each other's attack at a greatly increased speed! Normal attacks were easily telegraphed and anticipated. Zhang Yang for instance must pull his axe back before he can swing it out in an attack!

Weapons with a longer time interval of attacking will be far slower and cumbersome, as their wielders needed to gain inertia by swinging such weapons back before they could be swung towards the enemy! On the contrary, lighter and shorter weapons such as daggers can stab a person in the blink of an eye, without any warning signs!

An attack from a heavy weapon was easy to read, with the movements basically being exaggerated! For Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke, dodging enemy players' normal attacks were just a walk in the park!

Everything came down to their respective in-game skills now!

Skills had no signs that gave them away prior to activation, as long as all the criteria to activate a skill were ready, players could just activate them and use their skills. Speed, that was one of the many advantages of using a skill! Some Skills even have an auto targeting system, making it impossible for players to dodge even if they intended to!

{Blood Rage}!

Instantly boosted with 30 rage points, Zhang Yang now 36 rage points in total.

One Sword Stroke had realized that Zhang Yang was definitely a master level player, as evidenced by how he evaded his normal attack, so he too immediately activated his {Blood Rage}.

The two guild leaders were on a collision course once again.

{Block}! +30 Rage points.

{Block}! +30 Rage points.

'-o!'

'-o!'

With both of them activating {Block} at the same instant, they successfully defended themselves. The reflective damage from {Block} on the other hand, was like a gnat trying to penetrate their defenses! Both players made the decision not to activate {Shield Bash} as the damage would be negated nevertheless!

The sheer speed of their mounts had sent them on an impasse, and they broke off, heading in opposite directions!

What an opponent!

With both parties know that the other had {Block}, they used {Cripple Defense} which not only consumed a negligible amount of rage points and only had one second of cool down to trick their opponent into using {Block}.

Shoof, both of them circled around to face each other again, and similar to jousting knights, they charged at each other again.

{Blast Wave}!

{Blast Wave}!

The similarity of their tactics was eerie. Both of them had been sent into stunned states. As the moment passed however, Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke both used {Warrior's Will} to recover, and they once again charged towards each other.

'-4600!' Zhang Yang 's {Destructive Smash}, critical attack!

'-2040!' Zhang Yang's {Horizontal Sweep}!

'-3508!' One Sword Stroke's {Destructive Smash}, critical attack!

'-o!' One Sword Stroke's {Force Strike}!

The differences between skills and equipment of the two had been revealed immediately!

Zhang Yang had a defense of 920 and a damage absorption attribute of 930, while One Sword Stroke only had a Gray-Silver shield, a defense of 600 and a damage absorption attribute of 600! Furthermore, Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} to ignore another 300 defense!

One Sword Stroke was shocked! The superiority of his opponent's equipment had exceeded his expectations!

Turning their respective mounts around once again, they charged!

The bear and the wolf passed by each other, but there was something different happening this time round! Zhang Yang suddenly made a sharp U-turn, demonstrating masterful control of the bear, following the tail of One Sword Stroke!

How, how did he do that?

Spectators form both sides were all stunned speechless! Just like real life, when a large object carrying a lot of momentum is stopped abruptly, it must then pause to regain its balance before heading in another direction. However, Zhang Yang had immediately turned a complete 180 degrees, as smoothly as a water stream, it was almost magical to look at!

Zhang Yang smiled vaguely, that was a specially designed skill -- {Backspin Step} -- just for Battle Mounts. Simply put, it does magical things to his inertia! This is a skill that all ground-based Battle Mounts must learn. However, in his past life, players would only discover skill half a year from now on, eventually becoming a staple part of Battle Mounted combat!

Tailing the ass of One Sword Stroke, Zhang Yang immediately pulled out his axe and started swinging, while Whitey could only use one of its thick and sturdy paws to slash at the rear of the Battle Wolf's leg.

One Sword Stroke was racked between shock and intrigue at that moment, as he could not comprehend how Zhang Yang had managed to stick to his ass in such a manner! Still, there was a time and place for everything. All he could do was to focus on shaking Zhang Yang off his ass! But no matter where he turned, where he

feinted, he still could not get rid of Zhang Yang! During the entire time, his graciously offered back was being hacked at!

After being sliced and diced by Zhang Yang for over 20 seconds, the health points of One Sword Stroke had sharply decreased from 19,000 points to only 5000 points. Finally, his pet mount's {Agility of the Wild} had cooled down. He quickly activated it, and with a shoof, he finally managed to leap forward a great distance, getting away from Zhang Yang's tailgating!

```
{Wild Charge}!
```

10 meters away from One Sword Stroke, Whitey instantly caught up. Checkmate!

One Sword Stroke did not have eyes on the back of his head. Under normal circumstances, he could have evaded the charge. A sudden slam from a certain white bear stunned him for a full second.

```
{Shield Wall}!
{Berserker's Heal}!
'+4992!'
```

One Sword Stroke was finally forced to activate his life-saving skills, but the negative effect of the {Destructive Smash} had reduced his healing effect by 75%!

The members of Imperial Sky still harbored hope that their great leader would still best his counterpart. But as the battle progressed, their faces were ashen white. It wasn't a duel. It was a predator toying with its prey. Their glorious leader, One Sword Stroke was being toyed around like a cat playing around with a half-dead rat!

... this Zhan Yu, was the real deal! Their guildmaster, who could easily out maneuver them to their deaths without taking a single hit was actually tasting his own medicine now? This was really astonishing!

Slice and dice!

Zhang Yang did not hold back at all. He finished off his prey in no time at all.

The Battle Wolf wailed for a final moment, before instantly turning into a stream of blood-colored light which streamed into One Sword Stroke's backpack. One Sword Stroke himself crumpled to the ground with an audible 'Pak', and he stayed dead on the ground. A pair of silver boots popped out of his corpse, quietly lying right beside its dead owner.

Well, it cannot be helped. Zhang Yang possessed the experience in terms of controls, tactics and awareness that exceeded even the existence of the game. He had several years of headstart. Furthermore, his equipment and skills also outclassed his opponent's! If he did not manage to take out his opponent cleanly

and easily, he should be embarrassed of himself!

It was another loss!

The members of Imperial Sky were crestfallen. Now, they only could ask for Blooming Ichor to try bringing credit to them by scoring a point, in order to avoid scoring a 'duck egg' (zero) against three, losing in a manner they will not be able to accept!

However, even that was too much to ask for!

Suddenly!

The shadow of Blooming Ichor was suddenly revealed from his stealth state, but there was a bunch of stars spinning around above his head, it was a stun state after having been {Ambush}!

Sun Xin Yu had also revealed herself right after that, consecutively wielding her two daggers with murderous intent. She carved out petals of blood from Blooming Ichor's back. Right after {Ambush} ended, she activated {Kidney Shot} and continued to slice and dice without any signs of stopping!

The health bar plummeted straight down, and in just 10 seconds, Blooming Ichor lay dead!

At the same moment, Soul Striker had just resurrected One Sword Stroke! {Resurrection} had a 5 minute cool down, but they could only rely on other players with {Redemption} to rescue the

others.

Three battles, three loses!

The members of the Imperial Sky were putting up their dull face, as they did not foresee the out come, not at all! To loose in such a bad manner!

One Sword Stroke indeed possessed the characteristic of a leader of one of the strongest parties in China Region, as they would have been in another future! He smiled brightly and said, "Brother Zhan Yu certainly lives up to his reputation! I have learned much, I hope to learn more in the future! Let's move!"

He tore a teleportation scroll up in that instant, without any signs of sloppiness. He indeed possessed the aura of an Ace!

As the remaining members of the Imperial Sky tore up their teleportation scrolls one after another, they gazed determinedly upon Lone Desert Smoke. They will have their rematch soon!

Shoof shoof, as streams of white light passed through, members of the Imperial Sky were all teleported away from the scene.

"Cheh! So that's all they were capable of, daring to claim being the second strongest guild in China Region!" Fatty Han spoke in contempt. "That's right! Absolutely right!" Wei Yan Er nodded to express her agreement, "Noob tank is really a bad boy, not letting me join a fight when there is one!"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Fine, fine, you will be the first to go up front when there is a fight in the future!" Wei Yan Er was instantly appeared.

Looking at the spot where One Sword Stroke disappeared, Zhang Yang could not help but admire the man, as he thought to himself, One Sword Stroke had remained composed throughout the entire course of events, never revealing his thoughts or intentions. Although he had suffered a disastrous loss, but he had not been shaken by it, he was indeed a strong opponent!

What advantage Zhang Yang had over other players were his additional five years of experience and understanding towards the game. But with time set in motion, that difference will only grow shorter and shorter! Other players will quickly improve with time, while he was highly limited in his room for learning!

Sun Xin Yu walked back up to him, giving Zhang Yang a scornful stare.

Zhang Yang smiled a little and said, "No one is bothering us now, let's clean out the remaining monsters and get ready to battle the boss!"

The gang was divided into two teams. With Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight leading each of the teams respectively, they quickly rounded up the monsters from both sides, clearing out every single monster on the third floor of the altar. It was fortunate that the size of the altar was just like the size of a football. In just half an hour, the two teams had already met up with each other halfway through their routes. All that remained were the boss and 10 elite grade worshippers around it!

"Starlight, you shall be in charge of kiting those 10 elite monsters, will that be a problem for you?" Zhang Yang asked Endless Starlight.

"No problemo!" Endless Starlight answered, pounding his chest.

"Alright, when the battle begins, I will kite the boss, Starlight will lead the monsters away. After you guys take them out, come help me! Show him your worst!"

Chapter 228: Lord Of Flames Arcel

"Charge!"

Zhang Yang let Endless Starlight go ahead, allowing him to acquire the initial aggro of all monsters, giving him the opportunity to kite the elites away.

"Blasphemer, die!" The 10 Flame Acolytes stood up one after another, pointing their magic staff straight at Endless Starlight and began the chanting of their Fire Ball spells. Meanwhile, the boss swung his gigantic hammer at Endless Starlight.

{Sacred Protection}!

Endless Starlight quickly activated his 'Invincible' skill and rushed straight at the monsters, activating his {Devotion}. He began swinging his Battle Hammer around to begin kiting the monsters.

Zhang Yang went straight up with a {Wild Charge} to engage with the boss. By activating his {Blood Rage}, he instantly gained 30 points of rage points. With one normal slash, followed by a {Cripple Defense} and a {Horizontal Sweep}, he swiftly built up the aggro value.

Boom!

A stream of fire wave spewed out from the body of the Lord of

Flames Arcel. It spread outwards in all directions, and everyone was hit with a damage of '-1000', the radius of the effective range was at least 40 meters!

'Ding! Lord of Flames Arcel has unleashed {Flame Gush}!'

Zhang Yang quickly reacted and kited the boss to one side of the area, distancing themselves away from the gang.

Boom!

Another stream of fire wave gushed out from the body of the Lord of Flames Arcel. Because Zhang Yang had already moved a certain distance away from the gang, this time around, only Fatty Han, Daffodil Daydream and Perfumed Water were inflicted by the damage effect.

"Perfumed Water, come heal me, Witchy Snow, go heal Starlight!" Zhang Yang commanded. The focus fire of Fire Balls from 10 elite Flame Acolytes was really terrifying. Only a super healer like Han Ying Xue would be able to prevent the tank from turning into a crisp!

Sun Xin Yu and the others immediately activated their AOE attacks, trying their best to clear out all the Acolytes in the shortest possible period of time, with the intention to let Han Ying Xue get back to Zhang Yang as soon as possible.

Other than Snow Seeker and Perfumed Water, others had already

completed their respective level 50 profession quests with perfect scores, they were all equipped with Yellow-Gold weapons, while the tanks had been rewarded with Yellow-Gold shields. Therefore, the whole party dealt a ridiculous amount of damage, and within a minute, they had managed to take out all 10 elite Acolytes without a hitch!

The boss was slowly met with an increasing number of attackers as the party switched their sights on him.

"Damnit, the fire resistance of this boss is really high!" Daffodil Daydream attacked with {Explosive Flame}, a powerful attack that should be dealing 6000 damage, but on this target, that value had been halved, almost making her weep.

"You've had your fun with that gigantic tree in the afternoon, be thankful that you're not strengthening this firey creature, feeding it with more fire!"

However, in place of Daffodil Daydream's penalized attacks, Snow Seeker was dealing double her usual damage! Being an ice type caster, she was a hazard to beings of fire. Her damage already overtook Zhang Yang's damage, even while being supplemented by his Battle Mount!

"#!#\times = "" as the Lord of Flames Arcel spoke in a language that the human tongue could never replicate. Time and again, his gigantic hammer slammed down on Zhang Yang. The melee damage of the boss was not particularly high, only in the 7000 range. However, his attacks were accompanied by licks of flames, every attack taking away a total of 8000+ from Zhang Yang's

health points.

{Flame Gush} was being unleashed every single second, burning everyone up considerably. Other than Zhang Yang, every other player was constantly being struck with 1000 damage every second. Even though Han Ying Xue and Perfumed Water were super healers, they had their limits.

"Starlight, Daffodil! Remove yourselves from the AoE area of the boss, let's make it easier for our healers!" Zhang Yang improvised.

Although Endless Starlight and Daffodil Daydream were not willing to do so, they understood their shortcomings. A tank would be unable to dish out much damage anyway, while a Pyromancer wasn't much use against a Fire element boss.

With two players leaving the battle, the situation was momentarily stabilized as the healing efforts of the two ladies evened out with the damage.

After Zhang Yang had 'combined' with his mount, his health bar had gone straight up to 30,000. As a result, every attack of the boss only would slice away a quarter of his total health points! The more hitpoints a tank possessed, the larger the margin for error was for the healers!

Compared to the Demonic Treant King, the Lord of Flames Arcel was obviously much more easier to handle. All that they needed was a tank who can perpetually survive his onslaught, with enough healing.

80%, 60%, 40%... The health points of the boss slowly went down.

Fatty Han was so thankful for the simplicity of the battle, so he spoke up, "Finally, a boss that's not batshit insane!" He could still remember clearly how the Demonic Treant King had flattened his prostate figure back then in the lake!

"Yeah!" Likewise, as they were reminded about the Treant boss, everyone nodded to express their agreement.

Actually this boss was a pushover only due to the fact that these players had top-of-the-range equipment! If the tank was to wear slightly inferior equipment, the boss could have inflicted over 14,000 damage a hit, killing a player instantly!

30%, 20%, 10%!

It purely depended on the equipment when engaging this a boss that relied on sheer damage values such as Lord of Flames Arcel. As long as the equipment reaches the standard requirement, it would be easy battling this boss. On the contrary, the party will be annihilated repetitively if their equipment did not meet the standard requirement. There were no additional tactics required for this battle.

In less than 6 minutes, the large body mass of the boss crumbled to the ground, its flames extinguished. All that remained of it was a single, crimson sphere the size of a human head, which continued to burn weakly.

Zhang Yang swiftly jumped down from his mount to pick up that object. The moment he touched it, he was inflicted with 1000 damage consecutively.

[Molten Core of the Flame King] (Quest item)

Item description: Hot! Hot! Hot!

He quickly shoved the object into his backpack, and with this, the three main quest items were now gathered!

"Noob tank, hurry up, where are my boots!" Wei Yan Er ran up to, egging Zhang Yang to look at the loots.

As Zhang Yang looked through and picked up the loots, picking the Yellow-Gold equipment pieces first, before distributing them out to the others according to their professions.

Unfortunately, the last piece of his set -- [Furious Boots] -- did not appear.

Other than the four equipment set pieces, there were two more non set equipment pieces, a melee-damage output necklace and a tanker's ring. Zhang Yang took the [Ring of Raging Blaze]. Unfortunately, he must wait until he was level 60 before he can equip it.

After distributing all items, everyone transported themselves back to White Jade City. As it was already 12 a.m, they should have been sleeping by now!

They did not communicate throughout the night, and the next day in the morning after his training, Zhang Yang logged onto the game, bringing along the [Ring of Raging Blaze] to identify it.

[Ring of Raging Blaze]

Vitality: +50

Strength: +50

Equip: Absorbs 58 damage points when attacked.

Level required: 60

Before even he attempted to leave the shop, Wei Yan Er and Han YingXue had logged into the game as well, holding him down to ask him for another favor in identifying the equipment.

Furthermore, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream had also settled the sponsorship deal with Silky Soft Holdings: Every month, Silky Soft Holdings would provide Lone Desert Smoke with an amount of 1,000,000. Taking down a First Clear title for dungeons would reward each of the party member 100,000 dollars, clearing a Speed Challenge once earns every member of the party 10,000 dollars respectively.

Up to this point, Lone Desert Smoke had began transitioning into a semi-profession guild. Zhang Yang had reorganized the setting of the guild's membership levels, there are now three main levels in total.

The first level, comprised of the Guildmaster, the vice guildmaster and a few game-masters, they would all be paid with fixed salaries of 20,000.

The second level was made up of the core players of the guild, which were further divided into another five levels of classification, with their respective monthly salary ranging from 1000-10000 according to their level of classification. In addition, for players who had full-time jobs could still earn commissions ranging from 1000-3000 as long as they can complete a number of collection quests every month. The more you work for the guild, the more you earn from it.

The third level was made up of regular members of the guild. The players in this level of classification will not receive any salary or payment.

But as what Zhang Yang mentioned earlier on, as long as any

guild members contribute or perform outstandingly in dungeons, they would all have the opportunity to be promoted as one of the core players of the guild! Also, the core players cannot be slacking off. They could be demoted if their performance is ever lacking!

With solid cash rewards to instigate them, the members of the guild will surely be motivated to do their parts for the guild! In other semi-profession guilds, the sponsorship money would be divided among the game-masters, with only a small amount of money left for the lower ranked players. On the other hand, the benefits Zhang Yang provided to the game-masters weren't that high, most of the sponsorship money was being spent on the core players of the guild.

Such an unconventional system gained the favor of his core members, as they did not feel like they were being used as tools by the game-masters of the guild!

Over the time, the reputation of the Lone Desert Smoke had shot up by a lot. With such generous treatment given to their guild members, it drew quite a number of professional players to ally themselves into the guild! It was just a game anyway, if joining Lone Desert Smoke could earn them a stable salary, why not do it for fun then?

Zhang Yang had his merchandize shop to support him, by dividing the profit earned from selling equipment among party members, each of them earned tens of thousands of dollars on monthly basis. They barely needed to use the sponsorship money for themselves. Furthermore, after securing new territories in future, the teleportation gates under their control would grant

them fortune beyond any comprehension!

Having an additional five years of experience into the game, Zhang Yang had a vast headstart ahead of everyone else! By just investing a small part of his fortune, he had the loyalty of the entire guild secured! After capturing a territory, it was imperative for a guild to be of one heart, fueled by its members, united in a common goal. Such unity would lead a guild to greatness!

As the number of level 50 players were getting more and more day by day, the sales for the [Solid Iron Bar] had reached another level. The same could be said for the sales of his [Fire Resistance Potion]s. The revenue of the Little Merchandize Shop had reached a total of 1,700,000 gold pieces by yesterday!

Zhang Yang smiled contentedly as he used the [City Order] to teleport to Tukulo Fortress. He summoned Whitey and headed straight for the Flatlands of the Passing to complete Princess Serena's quest.

It was really inconvenient, not having a mount that could fly! He had to circle around mountains and hills, look for different routes to cross rivers.... More than two hours later, Zhang Yang had finally arrived at the Twilight Hills.

Two days had passed, all the monsters that were spread out everywhere over the hills and dales had all respawned. As Zhang Yang was in a hurry to turn in the quest, he simply rode through them all without stopping. Whenever the number of the monsters became too much for him to handle, he would activate his {Shadow of the Void} to escape battles.

After sitting down and having some snacks to replenish his health back to full state, Zhang Yang continued to charge forward like an unstoppable train. After waiting for his {Shadow of the Void} to cool down, he charged through and used it again whenever he deemed fit.

Having used up all his evasive skills, and being surrounded by monsters, he could only obediently kill the monsters before him to open up a path forward.

Still, the {Shadow of the Void} had helped Zhang Yang save about an hour and a half. Half an hour later, Zhang Yang arrived at the deepest coffin chamber of the tomb cave.

The miserable necromancer had not respawned yet, and the beautiful sleeping princess was still lying quietly on the platform made of stone, waiting for the Dragon Slayer to come to the rescue.

Chapter 229: Reclaiming The Throne!

After giving the princess a few gentle slaps, there was no response. No longer surprised, Zhang Yang let out a sigh, it looked like he had to deliver a 'True Love's Kiss' once again.

"Uh --- "

Serena uttered a low moan, as the mirage of hers once again projected out in the air, standing right before Zhang Yang. She looked at Zhang Yang and asked, "Warrior, why haven't you departed yet?"

Woman, you underestimated me far too much!

Zhang Yang took out the [Molten Core of the Flame King] and the other two quest items, placing them on the floor one after another and said, "My princess, I have already collected everything as you requested!"

Serena looked at all three of the quest items. Her face broke into a surprised smile. "Warrior, your bravery and your strength far exceeded my expectations! Thank you. With these ingredients, I can finally create a Soul Vessel!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Soul Vessel, acquired 200,000 experience points! Time to completion: 2 days, quest evaluation: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have acquired the reward: Furious Boots!'

Zhang Yang immediately looked into his backpack, all he could see was a pair of boots that shone gold, lying there quietly in one corner of his backpack!

[Furious Boots] (Yellow-Gold, armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +144

Strength: +58

Equip: Absorbs 116 damage when attacked.

Required Profession: Guardian

Required Level: 60

The set is complete! Zhang Yang was greatly pleased.

"Warrior, I shall being casting a spell to create the vessel, please protect me from every form of interruption!" Serena spoke rather sternly. Zhang Yang nodded and said, "My princess, you have nothing to worry about!"

The mirage of Serena opened up both of her hands and began chanting an agonizingly convoluted incantation. Shoof shoof shoof, streams of colorful lights were emitted from both of her hands. All three quest items began floating up one by one, circling around the mirage of Serena. They begin picking up speed, and soon they were a blur around her.

A very long magic progress bar appeared right on top of Serena's head. Zhang Yang estimated that it would probably take about 2 minutes for her to finish her incantation.

Although Serena had mentioned the possibility of being interrupted, the surroundings remained quiet and peaceful. There was not even a sign of any monsters spawning. Zhang Yang stood idly, as he got bored watching Serena trying to complete her spell.

Shoof! A bright flash of light beamed out, and gradually dimmed down. Serena had finally completed her creation. A small box the size of a palm appeared on the ground. The box was crimson in colour, composed of a material unlike any other. The surface of the box was lined with countless runes.

The mirage of Serena revealed her exhaustion, as she asked weakly, "Warrior, the vessel for the souls has been completed! The time is now, please bring it into the palace and slay the undead impostor, and activate the Soul Vessel to acquire the other half of

my soul! Then, you must bring the Soul Vessel back to me immediately. With a completed soul, I will have enough power to remove myself from the seal!"

'Ding! Princess Serena has given you a new quest: Retrieve the soul, do you accept? This quest will be linked to the main story's quest. Complete the main story quest to obtain a luxurious reward!'

Accept!

Still, running into the palace to kill the princess?

Zhang Yang could not help but feel a chill down his spine, knowing that the palace was filled with guards and magic casters crawling all over the place, all level 80 and above! For a little warrior like him who had yet to even achieve level 60, it would be like sending a goat into the lion's dent! Let's not talk about assassinating the princess first, getting through the first door of the palace was already a huge problem!

"My princess, the palace is strictly guarded, I am afraid that I cannot even get close to that imposter!" Zhang Yang believed that the game developers would not create an unbeatable quest, so he decided to pry.

Serena nodded her head and said, "Very good, you did not just recklessly charge into the palace without a plan! Bring this jade pendant along with you, it is a token of my authority, you should be able to enter the palace without facing any obstacles!" She pointed at a jade pendant that was very exquisitely crafted located around her waist, and said, "Also, remember this incantation. Use it to awaken the other half of my soul and aid you in slaying the undead!"

"An Tu Lama Ke Ni Da..." Serena began to read aloud an incantation that involved a lot of tongue twisters.

Zhang Yang repeatedly practiced the incantation aloud many times. It took a while before he got it memorized.

"Brave warrior, please act swiftly, the further we delay, the more damage that undead being would cause to the kingdom!" Right after Serena finished her sentence, her mirage flickered before shattering.

Zhang Yang took the jade pendant from the waist of Serena before tearing a teleportation scroll up.

He now had the symbol of her authority, he had an incantation up his sleeve, but who the heck would know how strong the imposter was! If she stalled him long enough, the guards would definitely come to tear him up into shreds!

He decided to gather more men, ready to charge in with a force of a thunderbolt to blow the imposter into pieces, before using the City Order of the Tukulo Fortress to shake off his pursuers and leisurely head straight for the Flatlands of the Passing to turn in the quest! After setting his mind onto it, Zhang Yang immediately contacted all players with the best equipment in the entire guild, commanding them to travel back to the city using teleportation scrolls and gather at the entrance of the palace.

"Noob tank, are we going to revolt with sticks in arms and slay the fatuous and self-indulgent ruler and then flee to Liangshan County?" Wei Yan Er was shouting in excitement.

Liangshan County (Chinese: 梁山县; pinyin: Liángshān Xiàn) is a county in Shandong province, China, where many individuals who revolted against their rulers and stayed hidden there for their own safety. The area is the setting for the classic novel the {{Water Margin}}

"... Little girl, you are changing your tastes again, watching {{Water Margin}} now I see!"

"I've long herad about the infamous Zhang Yu, spoken widely in hotels. But I see now that the person does not match the rumour, what a shame!" Wei Yan Er giggled, but she suddenly changed her gaze upon Zhang Yang and said, "Noob tank, you still haven't told us yet, are we going to slay the Emperor himself?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "Not the Emperor himself, but the princess herself!"

"Oh dear me, you really don't have a soft spot for fair ladies!" Han Ying Xue gave a straight sigh.

"That's right, instead of killing the princess, why not nab her and

make her your mistress of the fortress!"

Daffodil Daydream was much more serious and got down to business -- "Zhan Yu, the guards in the palace are all level 80 elites, they are so much more powerful than Yellow-Gold bosses that we faced recently. It will already be extremely difficult for us to break into the palace, let alone assassinate the princess!"

Zhang Yang smiled abd said, "Yes, under normal circumstances, it is impossible to break into the palace! Still, these are rather abnormal circumstances! This is actually a main quest that I received, we have a special item that would allow us to enter the palace and go straight for the princess!"

Just a while later, everyone in the party had finally gathered at the entrance of the palace.

"Let's go!" with Zhang Yang leading them on the front, the party moved forward.

"Hold it right there! This is a restricted area in the palace, civilians are forbidden from entering, remove yourselves at once!" The eight guards by the entrance of the palace instantly drew their blades, blazing with murderous aura. These guards were all level 80 elite grade units. Any one of them would wipe the floor with the entire party.

Zhang Yang took out the jade pendant that he had acquired from Serena and flashed it before him, speaking in an arrogant manner, "I am the leader of Princess Serena's spy squad, instructed by the princess herself to have an audience with her. You dare to deny me entry? Have you gotten tired of carrying your heads upon your shoulders?"

The face expressions of all eight guards suddenly changed, and they hastily stuttered, "Sir, please forgive us, we did not know of your identity, we apologize for any offense made! However, we have responsibilities as well, we must inspect the authenticity of the jade pendant!"

Zhang Yang handed the jade pendant over to the guards. After the eight guards had inspected it thoroughly, they respectfully returned it back to Zhang Yang and said, "Sir, we meant no offense!"

Wei Yan Er laughed out loud and said, "Noob tank, you really are good at acting!"

Zhang Yang waved his hand and said, "Move out!"

"Sir ---" suddenly, one of the guards stood up front and stopped them, and said, "I am afraid that entering the palace with this many people is not appropriate!"

"Hmph! This is the direct order of the princess, you dare to defy the authority of the princess herself?" Zhang Yang tried his best at earning an Oscar.

"We dare not! We dare not!" the eight guards bent over while

shaking their heads.

Zhang Yang then simply said, "One of you come forth, quickly bring us to the princess, now!"

"Yes sir! Yes!" the eight guards stared at each other, before one of them stepped out and led the gang forward.

"We actually managed to get everyone in?" Fatty Han whispered joyfully.

The gang followed the NPC moving forward, and as they were moving forward, they encountered many layers of security, but as long as Zhang Yang shoved Serena's jade pendant in their faces, they proceeded without any obstacle. After just a short while, the party had arrived at the deepest spot of the palace, at the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna.

This was the bedroom of Princess Serena, named after her nickname -- 'The Star and Lunar Princess'!

"You can return to your post now!" Zhang Yang waved his hand at the guard that led them here.

"Yes, sir!" that NPC immediately turned around and left.

The Royal Chamber of Star and Luna was styled in European inspired architecture, with 24 huge pillars supporting the whole large palace. Looking from afar, they could see a lady in a fancy

palace dress, sitting on a throne. The chamber was empty, with only a dozen guards guarding the entrance of the chamber.

"Who's there, who dares trespass the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna to disturb the princess, kneel on all fours now!" A general wearing a golden armor pulled out his sword and stopped Zhang Yang and the others by their way forward, standing in an imposing, powerful stance.

[Captain of the Guards, Rhodus Ryan] (Yellow-Gold leader, Humanoid Creature)

Level: 80

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Zhang Yang slammed the jade pendant which was given by Serena right onto the face of the captain and snarled angrily, "I am the princess's secret guard, who are you to be threatening me?"

The poor NPC was immediately shaken from head to toe. After measuring the pendant with his own eyes intently, he quickly returned the jade pendant back to Zhang Yang. He had his head bowed down, with both of his hands holding the pendant up to Zhang Yang, saying, "I was not aware of your identity, please

forgive me!"

"You and your men can remove yourselves away from here now, what I have to say are only for her ears!" Zhang Yang continued his ploy.

"Sir, I am afraid that does not go...according to procedures?" Rhodus Ryan had doubt on his face.

Zhang Yang immediately raged on and said, "You dare to defy the order of the princess?"

Rhodus Ryan turn his head towards Princess Serena who was sitting quietly in the sacred chamber, he revealed a fearful expression on his face. Ever since the princess had come back from her expedition three years ago, she had become a totally different person, known for striking her guards dead on a whim!

He instantly bent over and said, "As you wish, Sir!"

With a wave of his hand, Rhodus Ryan and his subordinates immediately retreated

And now, the only thing left was the final blow!

Chapter 230: The Princess And The Impostor

"Little Yang, you really know how to act it out!" Fatty Han laughed out loudly.

Zhang Yang was beside himself in nervous excitement, smiling himself silly. With a wave of his hand, he led the gang into the sacred chamber, facing the undead imposter of Princess Serena.

[Serena, Princess of the White Jade Kingdom] (Holy, Humanoid creature)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Phew! The gang took a deep breath in, a Holy grade boss, what is this madness? The highest grade of bosses in {{God's Miracle}} is the Celestial grade, the grade right below the Celestial grade is the Ascended grade, and the grade right below the Ascended grade is the Holy grade!

Following the Holy Grade in descending order were the Ethereal grade, Mythical grade, and Violet-Platinum grade before reaching

the Yellow-Gold grade! This was not just a difference of one or two levels, it was actually a tens-of-thousands-kilometers-long kind of difference!

The boss could probably wipe out their entire party without lifting a finger!

So how do they kill it?

"Who goes there? Who dares to trespass into my sacred chamber?" Serena was sitting high on her throne, one hand holding on her sweet cheek, staring at them scornfully with her Phoenix eyes, "Guards! Guards ---"

Zhang Yang stepped out, laughing boldly, as his gang lined up behind him. He said, "Undead scum, your play is over! Just show yourself already!"

With a slight change in her facial expression, Serena stood up abruptly from her throne, emitting such an oppressive aura that the gang had to take a few steps back. This was a special attribute; a 'pressurizing oppression' that only high graded bosses would possess.

"Puny creatures, you can actually see my true form?"

"An Tu Lama Ke Ni Da..." Zhang Yang began chanting the incantation that had been taught to him by Serena.

Boom!

An invisible shock wave gushed emanated from "Serena's" chest. Gong gong gong! Like pieces of tiles on that were giving way as they tried to contain an explosion from within, several pieces of....stuff, shot out of her body, clouding the air with dust!

"What, no --- what is this!" Serena's composure had broken for once, "I already sealed you, how can you be awake! No, go back in! Go back!"

The gang stared, bedazzled, as seven colors of lights protruded out of her body, forming a shape of a human, which slowly detached itself from the main body. A head, a neck, two hands, a waist, two legs! Instantly, a shadowy figure that looked exactly like Serena floated between Serena and party in mid-air.

At that moment, the name that had labeled Princess Serena's head begun to change.

[Witch Spectre Angelina] (Yellow-Gold leader, Undead)

Level: 68

HP: 20,000,000

Defense: 1200

The shadow figure that looked exactly the same as Serena had a name right above her head, 'Shadow of Serena's Soul'. She pointed at Angelina furiously, and spoke with royal authority, "How dare you, to actually imprison my soul! The prestige of royalty will not be desecrated by you!"

[Shadow of Serena's Soul] (Holy leader, Summon)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Obviously, the impostor had been classified as Holy, because she had Serena's Soul in her. The moment the soul was separated form her, Witch Spectre Angelina had been forced back into her original form!

"Hmph!" Witch Spectre Angelina remained confident. A greenish flame began to flash within both of her eyes, as she softly spoke, "My dear princess, please do not forget that your body is still sealed, even if you managed to resist my control at the moment, how long can you last? One minute...? 10 minutes?!"

"Long enough to slay you!" Shadow of Serena's Soul turned to

Zhang Yang and said, "My brave warriors, aid me in slaying this evil undead!"

Zhang Yang immediately wielded his Dragon Tooth Battle Axe and raised it up, bellowing, "Comrades, let's go!"

As Shadow of Serena's Soul lifted her right hand up, a huge long sword made of light congealed out of the void. She held the handle of the sword and swung towards the Witch Spectre Angelina. The sword of light tore through the air, making a series of sonic booms.

'-200,000!'

The attack of the Shadow of Serena's Soul was brutal as f*ck! One hit had already reached a damage of 200,000, it was simply horrifying!

The Witch Spectre Angelina roared with rage and said, "B*tch, I may not be able to kill you because I need your soul, but when I imprison you all over again, I shall torment your soul beyond your wildest imaginations!"

Shoof!

Zhang Yang had already {Charged} into the battle and had began hacking at Witch Spectre Angelina.

The boss had been set not to kill the Shadow of Serena's Soul, therefore, her aggro meter did take Shadow of Serena's Soul into account. With a single chop from his axe, her aggro had already switched to Zhang Yang. Producing a magical staff out of nowhere, the boss pointed the blackened end point of the staff at Zhang Yang. The skull that was on top of the staff was flashed a ghostly green, and an arrow of dark light shot out at him!

'-7021!'

Zhang Yang was immediately struck with a large amount of damage which appeared on top of his head!

It was fortunate for him that there were many healers on the party, one by one they started using all sorts of healing skills on Zhang Yang, swiftly healing him back to his full health. The offensive players took action, swarming the boss wildly.

For a level 68 Yellow-Gold boss, without talking about the boss's already insanely high defense and magic resistance, her level that was at least 10 levels higher than everyone around there had already penalized their damage. Initially they could have delivered an approximate damage of 6000, but now, it would be extremely good if they could achieve 2000!

It was fortunate that they had a super power damager. Without much effort, Serena's soul had already sliced off a sum of approximately 5,000,000 health points!

"Serena, you useless b*tch, I will definitely torment your soul until you no longer wish to exist!"

Witch Spectre Angelina could only receive the massive damage, unable to retaliate. She frequently screamed for the guards right outside the chamber so that they would come in to protect her and remove these so called 'traitors'!

"Speed kill! If the guards return, we are doomed!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly. Although they all knew the Witch Spectre Angelina was an imposter, the guards had no clue about that.

They would only see their princess being assaulted, and would chop her assailants to pieces before any words could be exchanged!

"{Holy Light}, {Cross Soul Slash}!" Shadow of Serena's Soul suddenly let out a noble cry. Using the light sword on her hands, she drew a cross-shaped light wave and sent it towards Angelina to slice her up.

```
'-2,050,000!'
```

'-1,890,000!'

"Son of the --! This damage value, it's just so freaking awesome!" Fatty Han clenched his butt cheeks.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Only NPC in battles can inflict such ridiculously high damage. Rest assured, players will never have to face such bosses!"

Even though the Cross Soul Slash had heavily damaged the boss,

the burden had proven too much for Serena's Soul. Her shadowy form was flickering continuously, it looked like she would shatter into pieces any time soon.

"{Shroud of the Undead}!" Angelina's health points had almost dropped lower than 50%. She opened her mouth wider than a human's biology would permit, and spat out a thick black mist towards her front, covering a conical area in front of her. As the black mist spread through the place, everyone was inflicted with varying amounts of damage. It did not make sense at first, but by observing the health points of the players, it was possible to know that the black mist caused all players to lose 1% of their respective health points.

At the same time, the health of the boss was also increasing gradually, 1% at a time!

10 seconds later, the black mist had finally vanished, and the health of the Witch Spectre Angelina had recovered from 51% back to 61%! Fortunately, the boss was still affected {Destructive Smash}. If it wasn't for that, she would have almost recovered her health back to full!

"{Holy Light}, {Cross Soul Slash}!" Shadow of Serena's Soul was attacking zealously, repeatedly using her powerful skills!

^{&#}x27;-2,040,000!'

^{&#}x27;-2,160,000!'

With every activation of the Cross Soul Slash, the Shadow of Serena's Soul would grow more faded -- it was unclear exactly how long more she could hold on!

"Speed kill! Speed kill!" Zhang Yang had kept an eye on the situation beyond the wall of the chamber all along, realizing that there was already a large number of guards hurrying over. They were responding to the blasted Spectre's distress calls!

"Muahaha!", the Witch Spectre Angelina gave out a bone-chilling laughter, "Such poor souls, I am an undead, protected by the army of the kingdom, while you --- you valiant fools will be executed one by one for trying to save your kingdom! Oh, the irony! No worries, after all of you are dead, I shall resurrect all of your corpses and make you all my most loyal subordinates, to serve the great Undead God!"

"Undead, if going all out would take off 20 years of my lifespan, I will still do it to eliminate you!" Shadow of Serena's Soul spoke in her noble, ethereal voice. With both hands, she raised her sword up above her head.

"This is..." Angelina revealed an expression full of fear, as she spoke in disbelief, "Sword of Life and Death! Impossible! Only the Ascended grade could wield such powerful techniques! You actually --- No! No!"

As she cringed back in fear, Shadow of Serena's Soul directed her sword at the spectre, creating at least thousands of her sword's shadows!

```
'-500,000!'
```

'-470,000!'

'-520,000!'

Each shadow of the sword would take away approximately 500,000 of Angelina's health points, leaving the boss's health point value to decrease steeply!

"Shroud of the Undead!" Witch Spectre Angelina shrieked frantically, spewing out another black mist. However, a mere recovery of 1% health points every second could not make up with the damages inflicted by the divine [Sword of Life and Death]!

```
30%, 20%, 10%, 0%!
```

It looked as if the Witch Spectre Angelina was almost instantly slayed by the Shadow of Serena's Soul. Even before {Shroud of the Undead} could fully take effect, she had already let out a cry and collapsed, lying in her own pool of blood.

"Little Yang, I felt that we were like side characters, they didn't even need us afterall!" Fatty Han shrugged.

"Who said that? At least we get some awesome equipment!" Zhang Yang smiled and pointed at the loots dropped by the boss.

Boom!

The Shadow of Serena's Soul suddenly shattered into pieces and gushed into the corpse of the Witch Spectre Angelina.

Zhang Yang quickly took out the Soul Vessel and followed the instructions that were taught by Serena, he began the incantation while facing towards the dead body of Angelina. A stream of seven-colour light went straight into the Soul Vessel!

'Ding! You have successfully retrieved Princess Serena's other half of her soul, the mission will commence into the next process!'

'Ding! As the king and the soldiers have not known about the impostor, you are now a traitor of White Jade Kingdom!'

'Ding! Your position as the owner of Tukulo Fortress has been forfeited by the king himself, all related rights and skills are revoked!'

'Ding! Your reputation in the White Jade Kingdom has descended to 'Hatred', all NPCs will see you as an enemy! You will not be able to buy any merchandize, repair any equipment, rent any flying Griffins from any NPC!'

'Ding! Your land property in the White Jade City has been temporary confiscated!'

'Ding! You cannot log off the game before your quest is completed, or else the quest will be judged as an automatic failure!'

'Ding! You must return with the Soul Vessel to Princess Serena in the Tomb of the Shadow Ash, or else, the quest will fail! If you are killed by a player, the Soul Vessel will be dropped, any players who acquire the Soul Vessel can take it to rescue Princess Serena and win a large number of rewards! Once the other player has completed the quest, you shall be labeled as a castaway and remain banished permanently from White Jade Kingdom!"

The continuous system alerts were presented in the form of text and voice. Zhang Yang blinked in a daze, his face slowly turning white!

Sun of the beach! The penalty for failing the quest can be so serious? This was indeed a god damned main quest, providing a large number of rewards, but the penalty could practically frighten players to death! Losing his City Order was fine, it's just a minor inconvenience concerning the City Teleportation system. But Little Merchandize Shop was the root of his income!

"You treacherous thief! Prepare to die!" The army of NPCs flocked into the chamber like a hive of bees, and the first person in front of them was the Captain of the Guards, Rhodus Ryan of the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna.

The NPCs had referred to him in the singular term. As he was the one who triggered the quest, they ignored his party members. After all, this was not reality, or else every single one of the involved players will be seen together as accomplices in a plot!

Being relieved of his title as the owner of the Tukulo Fortress, Zhang Yang had also lost the ability to teleport. His whole plan had been ruined! It was fortunate that he had already predicted those NPCs arriving, Zhang Yang had already passed the title of leader to Han Ying Xue, allowing her to distribute the loots.

"Witchy Snow, divide the loots as quickly as possible, and ignore the NPCs, they only want me! Time for me to go!" Zhang Yang literally spat his words at the party and began to make his exit.

"You traitor! I'll kill you!" Rhodus Ryan shouted with a loud voice, waving the blade in his hands at Zhang Yang.

Even if Zhang Yang was the best-equipped tank in the entire game at the moment, he wouldn't stand a chance against a level 80 Yellow-Gold boss. Using {Charge} to create distance from the boss, he immediately activated {Shadow of the Void} and began running like crazy.

His movement speed increased by 100%. 20 seconds was enough for Zhang Yang to remove himself from the sacred chamber, finding a safe corner to rest. He quickly took out the [Lease of the Gold-Eared Bear King] and summoned Whitey.

Two seconds after, Whitey materialized. Zhang Yang quickly mounted it, shouting out a command, "Whitey, let's cross <u>five</u> passes, slay six generals, and ride alone for thousands of miles!

Cross five passes slaying six generals, riding alone for thousands of miles: To overcome all sorts of difficulties along the way, referenced from the novel {{Romance of Three Kingdoms}}, the story of Guan Yu.

He rode on Whitey heading towards the exterior of the palace.

At that instant, word of the princess' assassination had to reached those NPCs, even though he saw their names in red. After they heard the shouting of the other guards pursuing from behind, only did they start giving chase.

Of course, the game had scripted the events in such manner. If that wasn't the case, if the main gate of the palace shuts, he will make himself an easy target. This mission would become impossible to be completed!

Running about wildly all along the way, Zhang Yang did not even dare look back, he went straight out of White Jade City.

For him to turn over the quest, Zhang Yang had to go through a number of maps, before he could leave Tukula Fortress and enter the Frozen Sky wasteland, then passing through the Necrotic Wastelands, and finally into the Flatlands of the Passing, find Princess Serena, turn in the quest and prove his innocence!

'Server Announcement: The princess of White Jade Caste was assassinated! The perpetrator is Player Zhan Yu! Under the command of the King, the player that kills Zhan Yu must present the killer's head to obtain these rewards: 3 Level ups, one Yellow-Gold Weapon, and the position of the Great General of the National Army! Position: XXXXXXX, YYYYYYY. An announcement

will be made every 10 minutes!'

Pak!

A piece of wanted poster appeared in the backpack of every player, with a picture of Zhang Yang's face on it!

Chapter 231: The Traitor Of The Kingdom

Zhang Yang was on the verge of spewing out a series of vulgarities!

Does this game want him to die that badly? It was enough, having to deal with every NPC that once considered him a friend, but now, actual, human players had been sent after him?

Level +3, a Yellow-Gold weapon, and the title of 'The Grant General-Protector of the Kingdom'! With such rewards, even Zhang Yang thought about killing himself and turning his own head over for the reward!

All players of the game would want to have higher levels, better equipment than everyone else. That was a given. However, the title was priceless! Levels and equipment can still be achieved by other means, but the title of 'The Grant General - Protector of the Kingdom' was one of a kind!

The Protector of the Kingdom, Grant General, it was truly impressive!

All the players in White Jade City had been riled up into a riot, as large guilds began formulating plans. The players in other seven main cities had also teleported over one after another, shouting slogans like 'Kill Zhan Yu, become Grant General'. In no time at all, entire armies had been formed in White Jade City.

"Hahaha." Wei Yan Er laughed gleefully at his expense. "Noob

tank, you have become a boss now, giving players who slay you experience points, loots and also a title! Why don't you let me chop off your dog head then? Better not to let one's own fertile water flow into the fields of others!"

"F*ck off, little girl, where's your loyalty?" Zhang Yang was speeding away on his bear as he cursed under his breath repeatedly.

"I would rather betray everyone, rather than have me betrayed by everyone else" Wei Yan Er spoke in the tone of an ancient conspirator.

"You've been watching {{Romance of the Three Kingdom}} these days?"

"How's your mother? How's your whole family?" Fatty Han immediately recalled a few lines, laughing at himself, before everyone else quickly shushed him up.

"Guildmaster, do you need us guild members to escort you?"

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "No need for that! It can be assumed that 80% of the players in China region are trying to pursue me. Even if the whole guild gets involved, there's no way we can stand up to them with numbers! Furthermore, we'll only end up as a bigger target, I'll use speed to handle this!"

"But the system will announce your coordinate once in every 10

minutes!"

"Not a problem, 10 minutes is a lifetime. They won't get a clear fix on my location!"

Zhang Yang continued riding Whitey into the forest. His high level reduced the chances of monsters being attracted to him.

"Guildmaster Zhan Yu, your quest definitely shook the heavens and the earth. China is all riled up thanks to you now! There's even a thread opened solely about your situation on the official forum website. They are guessing whether you can evade all the NPCs and players and succeed at the end of the day!"

Snow Seeker connected her voice communication device with Zhang Yang, a smile on her face.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "My luck has been always good!"

"Yeap, you definitely need that now!" Snow Seeker expressed her agreement. Needless to say, even the alliance of Lone Desert Smoke, Crimson Red and Lost Paradise had no chance of holding the entire region back. It would be just like a mantis trying to stop a chariot!

an ambitious attempt without a sense of one's pitiable limitations.

After thinking about it for a while, she asked, "So you cannot stay offline to go into hiding?"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "The quest will fail the moment I log off!"

Snow Seeker gave a gentle smile and said, "My members will not lay a head on you. However, if you ever feel that failure becomes likely, don't let the others earn the spoils, just prepare your neck for me when it comes to that!"

Not long after, Crimson Fire had also messaged Zhang Yang, almost echoing Snow Seeker's words.

What the f*ck, everyone was treating Zhang Yang as the meat of the <u>Tang Seng!</u>

a central character in the novel Journey to the West by Wu Cheng'en. The character is based on the historical Buddhist monk Xuanzang.

10 minutes after, the system had updated his coordinates.

"Hey Zhang Yang, you are really good at getting yourself deep into trouble, I think you really woke the whole of China up!" Li Rujiao could not stop laughing, "Bad boys are always more attractive, I really feel like giving you one bite! Hmm, it's getting so wet, I better change my panties!"

F*ck! Femme Fatale!

Most perturbed, he quickly cut off the communication with Li

Rujiao.

An hour after, Zhang Yang had arrived at the map of the level 30+ Wild Boar Ridge. Because he constantly changed direction every time his coordinates were announced by the system, nobody had found him yet!

However, it was clear to the more experienced players that he intended to leave the fortress!

The moment he step his foot out from the embouchure of the Wild Boar Ridge, Zhang Yang had finally met with his first ambush!

The Dominators!

By the embouchure, about 30 players were in a formation that faced the passageway. Humbly Gentleman himself stood right in front of them all. When he was Zhang Yang riding out atop his bear mount, he could not help himself but laughed loudly. "Zhan Yu, no matter how clever you are, you shall never escape the grip of my five fingers! There are only three ways to get out from the Wild Boar Ridge, and I have arranged people to set up ambushes on every route! But, I never expected my luck to be so good, for you to run into MY group!"

Most players would be chasing after him based on the announcements of his coordinates. However, more ingenious players would be able to intercept his routes, setting up ambushes in advance! Currently, the way to his front was blocked, and the

back... Zhang Yang dreaded even thinking about it, there would be tens of thousands, or even millions coming after him!

No time to waste! Must open up a bloody path to escape!

Zhang Yang scanned the members of the Dominators. He could not help but smile gently. Gulping down a [Fire Resistance Potion], he rode out towards his enemy on his mount and laughed, "Hypocrite, do you know what is a 'Pi Fu Han Da Shu (a tiny insect, trying to shake a mighty tree)'?"

Ridiculously overrating one's own strength

"Pi Fu Han Da Shu (Sweaty Skinned Uncle)?" Humbly Gentleman had limited vocabulary, instantly interpreting the wrong idea. Blood rushed up his face, and he raged, "What's wrong with me having sweaty skin, it's not like it's some chronic disease!"

"I'm just saying, don't be so overconfident of yourself!" Zhang Yang had already began his assault on The Dominators that were surrounding him. They struck back.

```
'-2,270!'
```

'-2,750!'

'-147!'

The attacks of the range professions reached Zhang Yang first. A

string of damage values popped up above his head. He currently had a defense of 920 points, 930 points of damage absorption. Melee professions who were equipped with Gray-Silver equipment could only inflict 150 points of damage at most. If the weapon in hand had a high attack speed, it might even end up doing no damage whatsoever!

Only the casters could hit him significantly harder. However, as he had drank a bottle of Fire Resistance Potion, the Pyromancers were also unable to land solid blows!

Such was the balance of the game!

Tank professions subdue Melee professions, Melee professions subdue the Spellcaster professions, while the Spellcaster professions subdue the Tank professions. Of course, that was the case between similarly equipped players of similar skills. For the current Zhang Yang, not only did he have vastly superior equipment, along with a powerful battle mount that granted him a vast amount of hit points. He was basically a boss monster compared to the 30 players.

The damagers of The Dominators were a total of 5 Cryomancers, 7 Pyromancers, 6 hunters, 9 thieves and 4 berserkers. The remaining 6 were healers. Without a tank --- during a PK, no player would be stupid enough to go up against a tank and accomplish nothing.

In a hurry to gather manpower, Humbly Gentleman was only able to scoop up about a hundred of his best players, but as they were required to block three different routes, each route was blocked with about 30+ players.

Zhang Yang had already summoned his Servant: Clear Lotus and Shadow of Merlinda as he charged forward. As he sustained {Concussion Shot} from the hunters which reduced in his movement speed, he immediately activated {Substitute}. Whitey regained speed once again, finally colliding into the crowd of players.

{Horizontal Sweep}!

Numbers up to 3,300 appeared on top of the attacked players at the same time, some of them struck with the horrifying critical damage of 6,700+! But, as these members were elites of The Dominators, they were decently equipped. Their health points surpassed 7,000, with some of the better ones having 8,000 health points. Zhang Yang could not instant-kill anyone, not even with his powerful critical strikes of {Horizontal Sweep}.

{Blast Wave}!

Another field of numbers -- 490+ -- appeared on top of the players in range!

"What the hell! How did he manage to attack on his mount?"

"No, something's not right! He can't have more than 20,000 HP! Our attacks had already inflicted more than 10,000 damage points, but still has more than half of his HP!"

"Sun of the beach, he must be hacking!"

Seeing Zhang Yang atop of Whitey, killing players in all four directions, the group of 30 were in disarray. Zhang Yang had hidden his personal character information from public. Although others could not see the specific amount of his health points, they could still predict an approximate value of his health points by looking at the fractional variations in his health bar, between the health lost and the health remaining!

The healers of The Dominators began to heal their comrades up, but Zhang Yang threw another {Horizontal Sweep} and a {Blast Wave} at the players around him. The healers were panicking, as they had no idea on which players to heal first, they could only focus their healing on the players with the least health points for a start!

Other than {Holy Shield}, {Regeneration}, and {Mending Prayers} which instantly activated, other healing spells required a short cast time!

Gold-Eared Bear King was currently at level 46. Surrounded by players who were around level 50 without much difference between their levels, his Yellow-Gold pet mount struck with deadly force, his damage fully unleashed. Under the control of Zhang Yang, a regular attack was thrown at a spellcaster who only had 800+ health points left. The poor spellcaster went straight down onto the ground, lying quietly.

Whitey had once again targeted another halfodead thief who was left with only 900+ health points. With a wave of its paw, a damage of '-1824' was inflicted upon the thief, leaving the player flat on the ground as well!

The duration of invincibility triggered from {Substitute} had passed. Zhang Yang began to see his health points dropping gradually. Well, at least there won't be a shortage of his rage points. His battle axe rose and fell again and again. {Destructive Smash}, {Force Strike}, and even {Cripple Defense} were all flung out like confetti, as he channeled all his attacks at the players who were left with the least health points, managing to kill off several players!

{Kidney Shot}, {Frost Ring}, all sorts of skills, one after another, hammered on him in return.

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang activated {Shield Wall}. With his vastly increased defense, high damage immunity, high health points, and high damage, he charged straight into the formation of The Dominators, hacking away along with Whitey!

Zhang Yang had managed to instantly-kill several spellcasters at the beginning, but these elites were not idiots. They scattered across the place, giving no opportunity for Zhang Yang to take them out in bunches. Thoom thoom thoom! In less than 10 seconds, the health points of Zhang Yang that started off close 30,000 had been reduced to the very bottom.

```
{Berserker's Heal}!
```

'+14300!'

As he had been hit with {Destructive Smash}, Zhang Yang had only managed to recover half of his health, but it was already enough for him to kill another one or two players!

Humbly Gentleman was enraged to the point of no return, he could not even imagine that the 30+ elite players he had gathered would be bested by Zhang Yang so easily! It was simply too humiliating! As his {Fire Ball} formed within his palms, he snarled, "Zhan Yu, I do not know whether you have accepted a quest or not, and if you did I will definitely not allow you to complete it! On the contrary, I will be using your head to acquire a title that would shake the world!"

Zhang Yang laughed loudly, charging towards Humbly Gentleman atop his mount, shouting, "Then I shall slay you first, hypocrite!"

Chapter 232: The Chase

```
{Rearm}!

{Warrior's Will}!

{Berserker's Heal}!
```

Zhang Yang removed all the debuffs that he had been bombarded with and recovered his full health.

With unrelenting force and will, Zhang Yang shoved his way towards Humbly Gentleman and slashed at him with extreme prejudice!

```
'Absorb!'
```

'-6,320!' {Destructive Smash}, Critical.

Humbly Gentleman had a maximum HP of 8,200. The first strike had been completely absorbed by a {Holy Shield} and was torn through like hot butter after deducting a mere 1,300 damage from {Destructive Smash}.

Not so invincible now huh?

```
'-1,623!'
```

'-1,892!'

Zhang Yang's axe and Whitey's claw struck him from both sides. Humbly Gentleman dropped dead. To add further insult, Whitey walked over Humbly Gentleman dead body. Talk about wild teabagging. He bent over and reached out his hand to pick up magic staff that was on the ground. He laughed triumphantly and kept it in his inventory.

Just as he was about to relax, he was hammered with attacks from all sides.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Many status effect skills blasted from all direction. Zhang Yang's HP was really dropping now!

Swiftly, Zhang Yang got off his mount and entered {Shadow of the Void}, disappearing from sight and fleeing as fast as he could. He found a huge boulder and hid himself behind it. After healing himself with a [Bandage], he summoned Whitey and furthered his distance from the danger zone.

His disappearance had left members of The Dominators truly flummoxed.

"Where did he go?"

"How could he disappear!? Bloody hell, he ain't no Thief. Was that a bloody Stealth technique?"

"What the father-f*cking-f*ck! This was exactly the same thing that happened during the Expedition war! Someone came and stole all of our loots, vanishing just like a thief!"

"Now that you mentioned it, yeah! D*amn!"

"Report his *ss! He must be using some kind of hacking software!"

"Shut up!" said Humbly Gentleman, his voice dripping with acid. He sounded like he was speaking in some foreign language, his voice thick with fury. "Get you lazy bums moving and revive me now! How can the whole lot of you let a single man escape, and still have the face to talk c*ck!"

He was clearly angry. How could he not be? With more than 30 members surrounding one man, not only did Zhang Yang manage to escape, he had even killed eight of them! If word got out, the guild will face massive humiliation!

"No one is allowed to speak of this! Or else, I'll kick you out of the guild!" Humbly Gentleman threatened the guild.

Everyone present nodded their head obediently. Their own reputations were at stake as well.

"Hey hypocrite, I took the liberty to record the fight just now.

When this is over, I'll post the recording on the forum and watch the fireworks! You're done for! Hahahaha!" Zhang Yang posted on the local channel.

Knowing that, Humbly Gentleman could do nothing.

Even after teasing the hypocrite, Zhang Yang was still as tense as ever. The tension he felt lingered on like an itch he could not reach. After all, there were many more smart players in the game. Even Humbly Gentleman, who he did not consider particularly intelligent, had managed to slow Zhang Yang, even if it ended as a critical failure. If that's the case, perhaps there could be more people will be blocking his path ahead! He had to make preparations if he wanted to get to his destination.

Humbly Gentleman failure was linked directly to a single flaw, he had underestimated Zhang Yang capabilities. He believed that he could kill Zhang Yang with only 30 players, but instead, he was killed instead. So far, Zhang Yang had only faced one guild. It was very likely that other guilds lay in wait ahead.

30 members would very likely be enough to kill Zhang Yang. Because The Dominators had been lacking in Spellcasters, and if they weren't, Zhang Yang would have been forced to use {Shadow of the Void} immediately!

He would not be so lucky the next time!

Zhang Yang did not dared to use the trails along the mountain since they were widely known and highly limited. He decided to make his way through the forest where others would need to bring a whole army to secure the parameter. Even that might not be enough to cover all the exits.

After settling on a plan, Zhang Yang stuck to his route and was met with a few obstacles. Along the way, he encountered a few small groups. In small numbers, Zhang Yang could easily hack his way through without much problem. He had to take detours and alternate routes when he saw larger groups ahead. It took him five hours to reach Tukula Fortress!

To enter any map beyond Level 50, all must past through the fortress. It is the only way!

However, Zhang Yang did not blatantly walk to the fortress. Instead, he hid in the nearby forest and slowly considered all possibilities. If he was the pursuer instead of the pursuant, he would intercept his quarry's path! In this case, the best waiting spot would be Tukula Fortress! Since there was only one way in and out, it was only inevitable that both parties would meet!

Now, the real question is, how does he infiltrate the place?

Zhang Yang frowned intensely. He had to make his decision in the next three minutes because the system will be announcing his position! According to his informant, there were already hundreds of thousands of hunting parties on his tail!

"Hey dummy, you must be at a loss now that you can't think of a way to get through the fortress now!" Han Ying Xue's voice

suddenly rang in the party channel. Along the way, Zhang Yang had explained his situation to everyone that he could not teleport directly to the fortress nor take the "plane".

Zhang Yang scoffed. "What's your genius plan then, B*tchy Snow?

"Hmph! To cause mass confusion!" Han Ying Xue smirked. "I've already informed everyone in the guild to head over to the fortress! I'll get everyone to rush into the fortress! You will take advantage of the situation and join the fray! With ten thousand players rushing into the tiny gate, I don't believe any pair of eyes could zero in on you out of the crowd!"

Zhang Yang scratched his chin and nodded. "Ok! In three minutes, I want you to gather anyone at the entrance of the fortress! Order everyone to ride on their [Storm and Gale Direwolves]!"

"Understood!"

Zhang Yang unsummoned the Gold-Eared Bear King and summoned the [Storm and Gale Direwolf]! It was a highly common mount that anyone in a level Two guild would be able to access. It would serve a good decoy. After two minutes, Zhang Yang rushed out of the forest to join the raging crowd. In just one minute, Zhang Yang had arrived at the entrance.

UAAAAAAAHHH!

A sea of players quickly swarmed up to surround him. Carrying the tag, "Lone Desert Smoke" above their heads, the players rode on their Direwolves to join Zhang Yang!

'Server Announcement: The princess of White Jade Caste was assassinated! The perpetrator is Player Zhan Yu! Under the command of the King, the player that kill Zhan Yu must present the killer's head to obtained the reward: Gained 3 Level, one Yellow-Gold Weapon, and the position of the Great General of the National Army! Position: XXXXXXX, YYYYYYY. An announcement will be made every 10 minutes!'

"Zhan Yu has arrived!"

"We're right at the coordinates!"

"F*ck! There're so many players down there! Which one is Zhan Yu!?"

"Sh*t! Hey! Spread out, stupid!"

Countless players had already gathered up at the fortress, but when the entire sea of Lone Desert Smoke members came swarming in, everyone was thrown into confusion.

Zhang Yang switched to the guild channel and announced, "Fellow members! Let's roll! We are heading outside the fortress!"

More than 13,000 players simultaneously changed their direction

and headed towards the outskirts of the fortress.

"Kill them all! Kill them all!"

Other players roared and started launching their attacks from above. Since they could not determine which one was Zhan Yu, they started peppering the mass of players with various AoE skills! Tukula Fortress was not a main city; therefore, PK was perfectly legal!

"Do no return fire! Maintain the formation and charge forward! Those who participate today will be awarded with 50 guild contribution points and 50 gold coins as compensation!" said Zhang Yang in the guild channel.

"Protect the guild master!"

"Move your *ss! Protect the guild master! Cover him! Keep him in the middle!"

"F*ck this sh*t! Even if I die 100 times, I'll make sure I deliver the guild master to the fortress!"

"What a bunch of f*ckers!"

All sort of spells covered the sky, from red fire balls to blue frost arrows, to actual physical arrows were raining down from above! Many players from Lone Desert Smoke had already been defeated. In fact, many of them had dropped their own equipment!

However, the attacks did not dampen their fighting spirit! None of them stopped nor withdrew! The entire army had a single goal in mind -- to get their guild master into the fortress at all costs!

"Block their path!" screamed the attackers from inside the fortress. Some of them even summon their mounts to Lone Desert Smoke from entering the fortress!

Wham! Bam! Clang! Bang!

Mounts collided with mounts and players were being dismounted to the left and right! In 'God' Miracle' if a collision occurred while mounted, the system will realistically throw a player off their mount of they were not properly holding on to it, canceling the mount.

Even though there were around 13,000 players from Lone Desert Smoke, the number of players in the fortress had exceeded a staggering number of 3,000,000! With that ridiculous number forming an impregnable defensive line, their formation was so long that it stretched out from the inside of the fortress to the outside of it! Together, they were an invincible force!

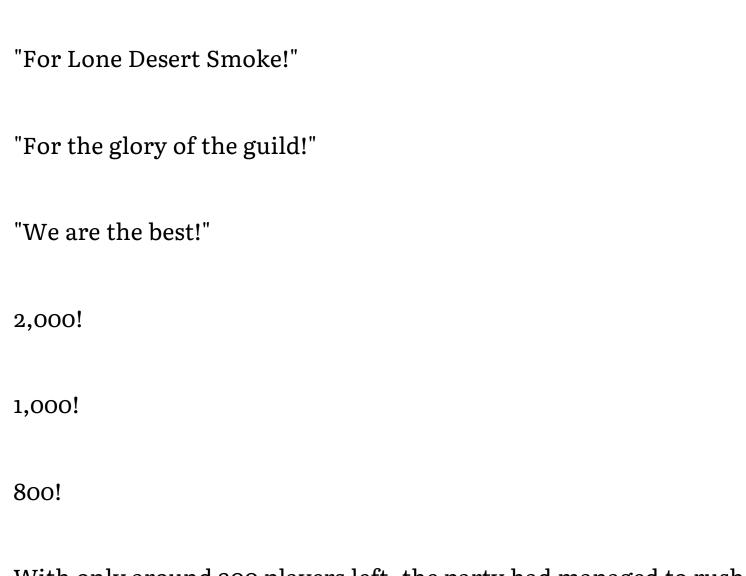
"Kill them all! Zhan Yu must be hiding in the center of the crowd!"

10,000! 7,000!, 3,000!

The number of surviving players were dropping like flies!

Equipment dropped everywhere like the littering left after a marathon! But, no one was willing to surrender! None of them! Not even a single member backed down from the rampage! Everyone only tightened up even more to protect their guild master as they rushed towards the fortress together! It was like an epic game of tower defense, with them being the monsters!

Someone even spiritedly said, "Everyday, the guild master was the one holding up his shield to protect us. At least, right now, we can do something in return and protect you instead!"



With only around 300 players left, the party had managed to rush through the exit of the fortress!

"Guild master! Please get going! We will remain here to protect you!"

"Guild master! Go now! We will be your shields!"

One by one, members of the guild screamed as they stopped following Zhan Yu and turned around to face the incoming players.

Zhang Yang nodded solemnly. He kicked his spurs and dashed forwards like a gush of wind.

From a far distance, Zhang Yang glanced back to see the remaining 300 players forming a neat formation, like a human blockade, blocking the players that were coming out of the fortress!

The army collided with the blockade. Clashes of sword and blasts of arcane magic could be heard. Members of Lone Desert Smoke were dropping like domino pieces, defiant till the end! Everyone had steeled their will and blades, determined to protect the formation!

Sun Xin Yu has fallen...Han Ying Xue has fallen...Hundred Shots has fallen...Endless Starlight has fallen...Daffodil Daydream has fallen...even Fatty Han has fallen...

"Uwa...Noob tank! I really want to cry!" said Wei Yan Er. In the beginning of the clash, she had swung her battle axe, ravaging through the mass and killing three players. However, she was quickly killed and even dropped a Gray-Silver Boots!

Zhang Yang sucked in a deep breath and gripped the leash tightly. "We will have our revenge."

With the countless number of pursuing players, no matter how strong Lone Desert Smoke was, numbers simply overwhelmed them! The ones who took the most advantage of the situation were the guilds that opposed Lone Desert Smoke the most, that is, The Dominators, Pride and Axe Gang.

If he himself had fallen by himself, so be it. But now all his other members had been involved, suffering losses as a result of protecting him! The other players had already crossed the line when they had publicly announced that they would kill all players from Lone Desert Smoke and take their dropped equipment! They had publicly marked everyone from Lone Desert Smoke! How could Zhang Yang still remain calm!

F*ck this sh*t! Just wait! When I get back, I'll kill all of you bastards and chase you out of White Jade Castle! I swear this, on my entire gaming career!

Seething with anger, Zhang Yang could only move forward, towards the Flatlands of the Passing.

He could now walk this path thanks to the sacrifice of his members! This toll was paid with the lives of all 13,242 members of Lone Desert Smoke! He had to complete the quest! He had to finish what he started! He had to, or else, the members would have died in vain!

Chapter 233: Mission Accomplished!

Thanks to the system announcing Zhang Yang position every 10 minutes, Zhang Yang had no chance of covering his trail! His pursuers followed him all the way through the Frozen Sky Wasteland, over the Land of Deteriorating Bones, and into the Flatlands of the Passing. After dying repeatedly for two to three times, they were unable to revive any further and hovered in their soul states nearby their bodies until it was safe to revive again.

Are they still behind me? Oh shit. They're still coming! Bloody persistent bastards!

Zhang Yang arrived at the Twilight Hills and turned around to observe his situation. All he saw was a swarm of players charging through the flatlands like a massive stampede!

"Hmph! I'll let the monsters here give you a sweet kiss!" Zhang Yang swapped his mount back to the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and quietly wait for the players to approach. Until the nearest players had entered the 100 meter range, Zhang Yang ran into the Tomb of the Shadow Ash.

CRAKAKALAKALAKALA!

A large group of Skeletal Warriors chased after Zhang Yang as the rushed past them, sending chills of fear down spines! Some players managed to break through.

Since the tomb was considered to be an indoor instance, Zhang

Yang's mount was canceled the moment he stepped into the tomb. Once he got on his feet, Zhang Yang activated {Charge} and clashed to the closest monster. Without turning around, he quickly rushed deeper into the tomb.

The entrance of the tomb was not that big. It was big for one person, at most allowing four to five players to enter at one time. However, when a large number of monsters were clustered at the entrance, the pursuing players had no choice but to kill the monsters in order to get inside. Luckily, the monster were only normal tiered, not a huge problem for most players. It did not take long for the players to kill all the monsters outside the entrance.

However, now that they had solved the monster problem, the next annoying obstacle was the size of the entrance. It was a bottle-neck, they entered the tomb slowly like tiny drainage hole in a huge bath tub! How long would it take for all of the water to be drained?

Zhang Yang did not waste his time, as he ran into the tomb like the wind, activating all his skill to survive. {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, {Merlinda's Shadow}, {Substitute}, and several other skills were used to make sure that the monsters do not kill him. Just as his HP was about to reach the bottom, he activated {Shadow of the Void} and ran in the alternate dimension, giving him a luxurious 20 seconds to move ahead unobstructed. When {Shadow of the Void} expired, Zhang Yang hides himself in a corner and ate recovery snacks. The chasing monsters that Zhang Yang had attracted had ran back to their original positions, like rumbling tides of waves!

His pursuers were not as lucky. The monsters were slaughtering them, leaving piles of dead players in their wake. The monsters inside the tomb were all elites, with attack power that were similar to players wearing a full set of Gray-Silver equipment. The sheer amount of monsters quickly picked off stragglers who strayed too far from formation.

Eventually, both sides had clogged up, fighting in the narrow pathway. Only five from each side could fight at a time, while the others waited behind, waving their weapons in anger. It was extremely slow progress.

Zhang Yang used {Rearm} and resetted all the skills' cool down. He then proceeded to run deeper into the tomb, using {Shadow of the Void} again to find a safe space to recover when he was close to death. Thanks to the geographical landscape of the tomb, the players behind were stuck for a good duration! Zhang Yang rested for only a brief second and drew in a deep, long breath. He got up, steeled himself, and began to run again.

Sadly, he was just one man. No matter how strong he was as an individual player, he could not outpace a group of players who were working together. When the players had cleared all the monsters that were blocking their path, they quickly caught up. More and more players entered the tomb, all searching every nick and corner of the tomb for Zhang Yang.

Even when Zhang Yang had been using the {Shadow of the Void} every 10 minutes, the distance between him and the chasing players behind was dwindling! In less than 30 minutes, Zhang Yang could already hear the sound of rumbling footsteps behind

"Keep going! Just a little bit more!" One of the players cried. Even though Zhang Yang had hidden his profile, they could easily recognize Zhang Yang since they were given the Wanted Notice that had a screen shot of his face on it! Furthermore, it did not matter if he hid his face, the chasing players would not stop at killing a thousand innocent players in order to get to him. They had even killed every player with hidden profiles just for good measure!

"Zhan Yu! Your life ends here! Let's see how long you can keep running!" seethed Floating Fire Ball through his teeth. Ever since his level had over taken by Fatty Han and the gang, Floating Fire Ball had a deep hatred for everyone from Lone Desert Smoke. Not long after, Zhang Yang had even KSed a boss and even killed him! He had to spend another large sum of gold coins to buy the equipment that had been dropped at his death! It's safe to say that his hatred was to deep it was down to his bones! Now that the opportunity had arisen, he had ordered the entire guild of Pride to guard the dead bodies of Lone Desert Smoke members, and take every equipment that the fallen members of Lone Desert Smoke. At the same time, he had dispatched a large group to chase after Zhang Yang, led by a team himself.

The rewards for killing Zhang Yang was three level ups!

To gain one level after Level 50 is as hard as it would take at least seven days! If he could kill Zhang Yang, he could save at least 21 days of time grinding! To him, a player who valued level values above all else, Floating Fire Ball was completely keen on beheading

Zhang Yang to obtain the reward!

As he ran, Zhang Yang turned his head around and spat, "Come and get me!"

He picked up his pace and ran deeper down the tomb. His fearless provocation was due to the fact that {Rearm} was almost ready to be used again!

Naturally, Floating Fire Ball went after him without second thought. Following closely behind him were many other members from Pride. Zhang Yang had a long trail of monsters that followed him closely. More than one of them were within striking range, slashing at his exposed back. The more monsters he kited, the lesser HP he would have left. Luckily, the monsters chasing after Zhang Yang effectively blocked Pride's line of sight, preventing Zhang Yang from receiving any status effect skills from Floating Fire Ball and his merry gang.

```
3...2...1...Ready!
{Rearm}!
{Shadow of the Void}!
```

Zhang Yang entered the alternate dimension, disappearing from the physical realm and shaking off the aggro from all the chasing monsters. Losing their targets, at least 40 monsters turned around and started attacking the players from Pride! "What the actual f*ck!?" Floating Fire Ball screamed. Just as victory was within grasp, Zhang Yang had slipped between his fingers!

Zhang Yang laughed as he ran away and entered the chamber of Princess Serene!

He quickly took out the Soul Container, placed it on Serena's chest, took a step back, and waited for the original princess to rise.

A brilliant rainbow light blasted out of the container and illuminated the entire room. A shadowy image of Princess Serena emerged out of the box and merged together with the physical body of Princess Serena.

SHOOOM!

Another bright light blasted out, as blinding as the sun itself, forced Zhang Yang to shield his eyes. The shadow and the body began to merge as the soul seeped into the body.

"I am the rightful princess of White Jade Castle! I am Serene-Andelor-Martain-Holy-Sanchest!" Serene opened her eyes and started hovering above stone table. Radiant light of heroic royalty pulsated around her out as she levitated across the table. She thrust out her right arm and a large sword materialized in her palm. Divine incarnate itself, the embodiment of power and grandeur stood before him.

[Serena, Princess of the White Jade Castle] (Holy, Humanoid)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

The title on her head disappeared just as fast as it appeared. After that, the light faded, and Serena was just the same as Zhang Yang, with no name tag on their heads. He could not even select her to observe her properties. Zhang Yang thought to himself, perhaps she have not regained her own name. Everyone in the kingdom believed that the princess had already been killed by Zhang Yang! Perhaps, the only way for her to get her name back was to return to White Jade Castle and prove that she was the one and only princess!

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Return the Soul. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

Was that it?

It be nice if the system would grant him a little more reward than just experience points, especially his shop!

"Warrior! You saved my life!" said Serena as she bowed a little. At least there was a gesture of appreciation. She was, at the very least, still a princess. "Now, follow me back to White Jade Castle! I will reward you properly for your efforts!"

'Ding! Serene has a quest for you: Return to White Jade Castle. Do you accept? This quest is linked to the main story quest. Complete the main story quest to obtain a luxurious reward!'

Now that the princess has shown her true self, it was time for Zhang Yang to clear his name! Zhang Yang accepted the quest hurriedly.

"Haha! Zhan Yu! It's dead end for you! I'd like to see how you escape this time!" Floating Fire Ball had managed to break through all odds and had arrived. His members had barricaded the doors to prevent Zhang Yang from escaping. Now that he had Zhang Yang caught like a fish out of water, he cracked a smile and laughed manically.

Level +3! Yellow-Gold equipment! Army General! Mine! All mine! Hahahaha!

He was so certain that victory was now is his hands!

Serena turned around to face Zhang Yang and frowned. "Who are these people?" quipped Serena as she pointed at Floating Fire Ball with her finger nonchalantly.

"A bunch of low-lives. They have been trying to kill me and nearly prevented me from delivering the soul container!" said Zhang Yang as he quickly framed all of Pride members. Even though Serena had her name completely hidden, but she was a Holy tiered boss. If any Pride member attacked her...

Serena was infuriated. If her soul container had not made it here, she would have still have been imprisoned, possibly locked away for good. This was downright betrayal!

"Kill them both!" cried Floating Fire Ball. He did not think that Serena was an NPC since she couldn't be identified. He had thought that she was just a player who had hidden her profile information. Without hesitation, he started attacking.

Pew pew! Boom boom! Shush shush!

In an instant, the light was blotted out by arrows, {Fireballs}, and {Frost Arrows}. They rained towards the Princess and Zhang Yang

"Such impudence!" Serena bellowed. She reached out her left arm and created a huge shield, protecting both Zhang Yang and her.

Pew pew pew!

All attacks landed on the shield, but they were completed absorbed without any trace.

"WTF? What is that skill!?"

"I remembered that a Priest's shield skill can only protect one person!"

"Even if that was a Priest skill, there's no way it could absorb that much damage!"

"Crap! Who the hell is this woman! She's even stronger than Zhan Yu!"

Voices started to be raised across the room.

"Those who raise their sword against the crown shall face death!" Serena was downright furious and swung the sword in her right hand. "Holy Light, Cross Soul Slash!"

Suush! Suush!

Two beams of light formed out of the sword, forming a cross that blasted through the players! The light sliced through them like lasers, splitting their bodies into pieces!

Instant kill!

Mass instant kill!

'Ding! You have committed a crime by attacking Princess Serena! You will be automatically teleported to the White Jade City Jail.

You will be jailed for one day. After the prison sentence, you will be unable to perform any transaction with all NPCs in White Jade Castle for three days! All repairs, item purchase transaction fee will be increased by 200% for 10 days!'

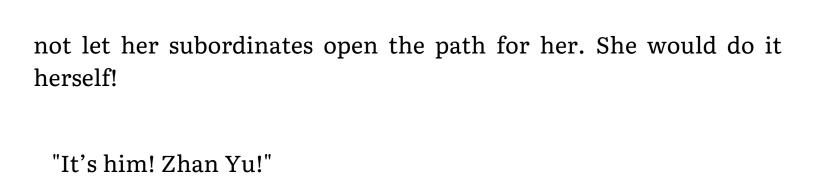
Not only were they completed massacred by the Princess herself, they were not criminals. When the players that were killed by Princess Serena received the system notification, they flabbergasted, their jaws flapping wide open.

What on earth is happening? Didn't Zhang Yang kill Princess Serena? Wasn't that why they were tasked to kill Zhang Yang in the first place? Why did the system indicate that they had attacked Princess Serena? If that woman was the Princess Serena, then who was the "Princess" who was supposedly killed?

Confused, frustrated, the players who were teleported to the jail could not spread the news about "not touching the woman beside Zhan Yu!".

According to the game system, players inside the jail would not have access to any kind of communication channel. They could not even send private messages! Being jailed in this game was just like being jailed in real life! If a player logged out during a prison sentence, the duration of the sentencing will pause, only resuming when the said player relogs. Players could not just leave their character "resting" for a whole night to pass the time.

"Let's go!" said Princess Serena boldly. She took the lead without waiting for Zhang Yang to respond. This was how a brave and heroic princess should behave, just like Princess Leia! She would



"Kill him!"

Just as Zhang Yang and the princess left the room, more players attacked them.

"Holy light, Cross Soul Slash!" Serena chanted two phrases, shooting two bright lights out, silencing the entire world!

The two of them proceeded on.

"There he is! Kill him!"

"Kill the f*cker!"

"Holy light, Cross Soul Slash!"

"Holy light, Cross Soul Slash!"

"Holy light..."

Walking casually behind Princess Serena, Zhang Yang could only hear nothing but her chanting and the screaming from the players.

Anyone who dared to strike them was blasted to hell! Smiling contentedly, Zhang Yang was greatly pleased.

Hah! You guys were having fun trying to kill me huh! Have a taste of your own medicine!

Any players killed by Princess Serena would be automatically sent to the jail. As such, it had created where more and more clueless players charging ahead with equally clueless players following closely behind! All of them would eventually fall victim to Serena's blade.

Serena progressed through the tomb rather fast. Even though there were many players and monsters alike, she cleared them all in just a flash of lights. They were practically moving, completely unhindered! By the time they had made it out of the tomb, they had only spent half an hour!

"Holy light, Cross Soul Slash!"

The blast of light slashed more players in half. After such a long time, the number of player who had managed to squeeze into the tomb were only slightly more than 10,000. There were even more players gathered outside of the tomb since they were shoving each other, trying to get in. With a swing of her sword, she forcefully blasted open a large pathway for them to proceed.

The players behind saw what happened and were stunned. Now that there was a chance for them to rush into the tomb, none of them dared to move a single step forward. Zhang Yang and Serena finally walked out of the tomb.

"Zhan Yu! It's him!"

"D*mn! How did he come out? What happened to the thousands of players who got inearlier? Did he kill them all?"

"Who is that woman there?"

"Don't matter! Just kill the target and take his head for the reward!"

More than 100,000 players started to scream and yell, charging bravely towards Zhang Yang.

"You would seek to slay the hero of the crown?! Such insolence shall not be tolerated!" Serena raised her beautiful eye brows and her sword materialized in her hands.

"Hahaha! Who is this woman. Look at her, putting up a brave act and all. How will the two of them take on 100,000 of us?"

"What a looker! Check out her tits yo! Aw yeah! And that ss! Hmm! Sht be perky as f*ck! That b*tch must be a sl*t! I'd tap that!"

"Eh? She looks western. Perhaps she's a transfer student studying in china!

"Who cares! Just kill the two of them!"

In an instant, the sky was covered with projectiles consisting of {Frost Arrow}, {Fire Ball}, and other flying objects! The melee class players were all charging towards Zhang Yang, all yelling their battle cry as loudly as they could! Zhang Yang only had one head to offer! They would have to fight against each other if they wanted to claim the reward!

Zhang Yang stood calmly, facing the oncoming projectiles. He was completely at ease since Serena had her left hand up, casting a protective barrier to shield them. Her sword in her right arm had began to move!

"Kill them all! Sword of Life and Death!"

Suush! Suush! Millions of streams of light were sent out flying in all directions!

Instant kill! Instant kill! Instant kill! Instant kill! Instant kill! Instant kill!

Anywhere the light ray traveled, dead players lay on the ground!

Chapter 234: Counter Attack!

Where the Sword of Life and Death was swung, million would be deprived of their lives instantly!

The massive surge of players storming up the Twilight Hill were instantly wiped out, nothing but a fading trace of golden light remaining at where they stood. Bodies were piling up, streams of blood flowed down, dyeing the hill red!

What a deadly princess! Such strength! Such power!

No wonder they say that one does not anger royalty! Zhang Yang was witnessing raging fury incarnate! Like a storm, simply going on its way, leaving destruction in its wake!

Inspired by the scene before his eyes, Zhang Yang called out to Hundred Shots in the guild channel. "Hundred Shots! Are those bastards from Pride and The Dominators still standing guard over the bodies of our guild mates?"

"Yes!" said Hundred Shots, a man who rarely let his anger show, but nothing could be hidden from his tone at this moment. "They said that if they are unable to kill us to Level 0, they will remain here and kill us until we drop all our equipment!"

Zhang Yang smirked. "Keep your heads down, don't revive just yet! Wait for my arrival! I have just finished my quest and had procured some sort of killing machine as a result! When I reach you guys, we will strike back and get their equipment as revenge!"

"Awesome!"

"Guild master completed his quest!"

"Haha! Yeah! It's time to give those bastards a taste of their own medicine!"

"Let them bark all they want! We'll have our revenge soon enough!"

The entire guild cheered. Right then, Hundred Shots was kind enough to not pour cold water on their heads. For once, he allowed them to chit and chat in the guild channel.

"Warrior! Can you summon a beast mount?" asked Serena.

"Yes! I am!" Zhang Yang quickly summoned Whitey and got on its back. Serena got up as well and sat with both her legs on one side of the bear. One of her hands was upraised, ready to attack, the other holding onto Zhang Yang's shoulder.

"Run, run like the wind..." Just as Zhang Yang started to move the bear, Serena murmured some words out. Spheres of wind gathered at all four feet of the bear and the speed of the bear was greatly increased. The beast ran forward, having gained three times its original speed. This is good sh*t! If any players ever got their hands on this skill, they would have hit the jackpot!

One death every10 steps, over a trail that could not be traced! The legendary Chinese war general, Guan Yu was known for his killing spree of Yan Liang, Wen Chou, and Old Lou. Those who heard his tale could say one thing, "Guan Yu! Such speed!"

This was one of the event in China history, describing how fast Guan Yu the war general rode his horse.

He had taken more than two hours to get to the tomb, but he had only spent less than 20 minutes to travel all the way from the tomb to the fortress. With haste, Zhang Yang rode the bear to the front of the fortress.

Since Serena had not regained her official title, and Zhang Yang still had the "wanted" status on him. The system would still announce his position every 10 minutes.

A majority of the players around who had not joined the chase earlier knew that there were at least millions of others going after Zhang Yang. Thus, realizing that it would only be a waste of time, they had packed up and left the fortress. So far, the only players remaining in the fortress were players from Pride, The Dominators, and the Axe Gang, guarding the dead bodies of players from Lone Desert Smoke.

The grudges that Pride and The Dominators had against Lone Desert Smoke were well founded, however, Axe Gang was a simply doing it out of their presumptions. The guild had only been recently created. They wanted to use the fame of killing Lone Desert Smoke to boost themselves, reaching the peak of stardom in an instance!

Shocked, the players from those forementioned guilds realized that Zhang Yang was making his way all the way through the Flatlands of the Passing, Land of Deteriorating Bones, and Frozen Sky Wasteland. The most shocking part was the fact that the most recent announcement had revealed Zhang Yang's current position -- in front of the fortress!

What's going on?! Has he come to kill himself?

Humbly Gentleman was to demented to think twice about it. He was already pissed since he had taken such a long time to arrive to the fortress. By the time he had arrived, Zhang Yang had already broken through the fortress. He had missed the most climatic event! Frustrated, he had directed his frustration to the members of Lone Desert Smoke. He had brought along over 10,000 players to guard the bodies.

But all of that did not matter any longer! Zhang Yang had returned! Humbly Gentleman was pleased. Now that a second chance had presented itself, he would be more careful this time. He commanded a large number of members to ready their guard. At a single command, hundreds of Spellcasters rushed towards Zhang Yang. Not matter how strong he was, he could never survive hundreds of attacks from Spellcasters. Even if he had an unlimited duration of {Shield Wall}, the sheer cumulative attacks from that many Spellcasters will kill him eventually!

Now that the guild master of Pride, Floating Fire Ball had been sent to the jail, the rest of the Spellcasters from Pride had form a small party to rush out of the fortress to join their counterparts from the Dominators in killing Zhang Yang. Riding the tide of battle, the Axe Gang, not wanting to miss their chance for stardom, joined in! Right now, Zhang Yang had the glory of being China's number one tank! Stepping over his dead body would be the best way to gain great glory and fame!

Knowing that Zhang Yang's was strong against physical attacks, the two guilds had gathered up their spellcasters, sending them all in one shot! All three guild's attacking parties came out of the fortress practically at the same time. All three leaders exchange a look, but neither of them looked like they were willing to cooperate with each other. After all, Zhang Yang had only one head. In the end, only one person would be holding up his severed head! Only one of them could claim the prize!

"Let's just kill him first, and talk about it later! We take some time off to discuss about whoever gets the final prize!" Humbly Gentleman cried.

The other two guilds exchanged a look and nodded at the same time, agreeing to Humbly Gentleman's terms.

Humbly Gentleman smirked. In his heart, he was gazing at those guilds in contempt, for being ignorant of his power! Only those who were worthy may challenge The Dominators! The Dominators was one of the four super guilds in White Jade Castle! Even if Pride and the Axe Gang were to combine their forces, or even double their strength, they would still be weaker than The Dominators!

They focused on the scene of the approaching Zhang Yang.

"My princess..." Zhang Yang raised his fingers and pointed at the dead bodies, piled outside the fortress's entrance and said, "Those people had given up their lives to protect me! They had sacrificed their own well-being to ensure that the soul container could reach you! Those people, gathered outside the fortress were the ones who had sullied their hands with the blood of those that stood up against injustice!"

Serena remained as stoic as ever. This kingdom's princess must be from a generation of iron-bloods! She made her decision quickly and leaped off the bear, landing on the ground. She flung out her right arm, and the gigantic sword materialized in her slim hand.

"Hahaha! Zhan Yu...Zhan Yu...No matter how much you try to run around, you will fall by my hands!" Humbly Gentleman gloated. He somehow knew that Zhang Yang had to run back into the fortress to complete his quest! His prediction was right on the mark, but he had not predicted the appearance of Serena the killing machine.

The guild master of the Axe Gang spoke up. "Zhan Yu! Do you know who I am?"

Zhang Yang snickered. "Some random guy who came out of nowhere. I don't need to know your name!"

He frowned and patted his chest proudly. "Bastard! Don't act all

high and mighty just after gaining a little bit of fame! I want you to remember me! Because today is the day that I, Moon—"

"Stop yapping and start killing!" Humbly Gentleman bellowed. Hundreds of Spellcasters led by him started to march forward. All started to cast their spells as soon as they entered the effective casting range.

"Tch!" the guild master of Axe Gang clicked his tongue. "Zhan Yu! Etch my name in the back of your brain! Because the person that will be killing you is Moon—"

"Die! Zhan Yu!" Kindling Chest Hair screamed from the top of his lungs. Almost everyone from Pride let out their hatred, making sure that Zhang Yang would receive their sentiments.

The guild master of Axe Gang dropped to his knees and sobbed. How hard was it to just announce his name?

Shush! Shush! Shush!

Thousands of Spellcasters got together and covered the sky with {Fire Ball} and {Frost Arrow}. Now that it has come to this, even if Zhang Yang used {Shield Wall}, he had no chance of surviving such an onslaught!

"Those who worship chaos and evil shall face the wrath of my sword!" Serena held out her left arm and created a large barrier. Her right arm, holding the gigantic long sword was raised up high. A glowing aura of great destruction could be felt emanating from it!

Absorbed! Absorbed!

All attacks that had made contact with the barrier simply vanished from existence, as if they had passed through a wormhole! There was not even a single ripple on the shield!

"How could this be!?"

Humbly Gentleman could not understand what had just occurred right in his eyes! Everyone was stunned.

Because Serena did not have any name tag, and players had come to believe that she was just another player who had hidden away her profile information. She had just raised an arm and was neutralized all the attacks from nearly a thousand Spellcasters! This...this...

It's just bullsh*t!

"F*ck! Hack! She must be using some kind of hack!"

"Sh*tty developers! What bullsh*t were they saying about no hacks being used in this game! F*ck them! Suck my d*ck!"

"Get your lazy sses out here now, GMs! I want to report a fcker

here for using hacks!"

Serena scanned the area and locked onto her targets. With gleaming eyes that radiated death itself, she swung her sword and created two pillars of light that came out blasting towards Humbly Gentleman and the players around him.

"Holy Light, Cross Soul Slash!"

Shush! Boom!

The blast flew straight into the herd of players and sent bodies parts flying into the air. Nearly thousands of players were killed, leaving only 30 to 40 survivors, only because they were standing at the edge of the party, missing death by an inch!

After dying, the guild master of the Axe Gang was hugging the iron bars of the jail with tears flowing nonstop! What a pitiful scene...even in death, he had yet to find the opportunity to announce his name!

Zhang Yang laughed happily. He then switched to the guild channel and announced, "Those who are still waiting outside of the fortress may revive now! Get up! Let's fight back! It's our turn to kick some *ss!"

Over 300 players outside the fortress heard Zhang Yang's call and quickly revived themselves. They got up and starting killing off the players who had survived Serena's mega blast.

Even though the recently revived members had only 20% HP, these 300 members from Lone Desert Smoke were the elites among the elites. Without breaking a sweat, they easily wiped out the enemy.

"What a relieve!"

"F*ck yeah! Kill these sons of b*tches!"

After waiting for more than three hours, the itch in their heart was finally solved.

"Hey noob tank. How did you suddenly become so strong?" Wei Yan Er ran over to Zhang Yang after she revived. She cocked her head to one side while asking him.

In the soul state, a character's range of vision was limited. Just like {Shadow of the Void}, the character could not see other monsters or characters unless they traveled to where their dead bodies were. This system was implemented to prevent spying during a major war. A player could purposely die and spy on the enemy's army while in their soul state, undetected.

That was why Wei Yan Er had no idea what exactly happened. In her vision, as were the vision of the others who had died, they could only witness Humbly Gentleman and his men being slaughtered. But they had no idea what killed them! "Hm. She's very pretty! D*mn, noob tank! What are you showing her off for! You already have my cousin sister! Why would you still be finding other girls to play with!? Hmph! You have lost my respect!" Wei Yan Er scoffed and cross her arms angrily.

Zhang Yang was rendered speechless. Sigh...the elder one is a broken compass and the younger one is a complete idiot!

"She is Princess Serena! The one we killed before was the spectral impersonator! This one is the real deal!"

"Oh!" said Wei Yan Er as her eyes widened. She observed the princess carefully from top to bottom and finally scoffed after a while. "Hmm. She does look a little similar."

Just in the nick of time, Han Ying Xue, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the gang arrived. Fatty Han was wheezing in anger as he bellowed angrily, "Little Yang! I reckon we can fight back now, right?!"

Zhang Yang nodded. "I don't care whether its Pride, The Dominators or even players from the Axe Gang! I want you to kill whoever you see! If it's a fight they want, it's a fight they'll get! They better be prepared to lose when they're the ones who declared war! F*ck! If they won't leave White Jade Castle after this, we'll kill them until they do so!"

"GROWL!"

Members from Lone Desert Smoke had been piling up their anger after being guarded for hours after death! After such a speech from their Guild master, their blood boiled, spewing out their battle cries!

Chapter 235: Super-Ultra-OP Reward!

Walking together, Zhang Yang and Serena proceeded slowly into Tukula Fortress.

The horns of war have been sounded!

Kill all those who stood guard over the bodies!

Kill all those who took advantage of the war!

Kill all enemies!

Bodies of Lone Desert Smoke continuously revived as the duo passed through them. All of them joined the "revolutionary" army and their numbers soared!

500! 900! 1,700!

Pride, annihilated!

The Dominators, wiped out!

Axe Gang, vanquished!

As the army exited the fortress, all three enemy guilds were completely destroyed! Half of them were sent to jail by Serena, the

other half killed by Lone Desert Smoke! As such, the fallen players revived and joined the army. Their numbers surpassed 10,000!

Watching his enemies in pieces, Zhang Yang summoned [Gold-Eared Bear King], mounted it and shouted at the top of his lungs. "I'm back, b*tches!"

Everyone laughed at his actions.

With the system repeatedly announcing Zhang Yang position, Zhang Yang proceeded towards the city. Word finally got out about Zhang Yang having a mysterious woman beside him, massacring everyone he met. At first, players did not believe such an overpowered character could exist. But when a recording of the scene where Serena had struck down thousands of players got out into the internet, the news started to spread like wildfire.

Such devastating power!

Those who still had the intention to behead Zhang Yang, finally had second thoughts. They would have to see if they could fight on toe to toe with that mysterious woman!

There were other players who did not trust anything except their own eyes, and had meekly tagged along the large army of Lone Desert Smoke from behind. They would only believe it if they could see it with their own eyes. They were in luck. Oblivious and ambitious players had come, attempting to kill Zhang Yang. Some guilds like Counts of the Rose and Dragon Rampages were small guilds that wanted instant fame, and had come up to fight Zhang

Yang. Of course, naturally, they were wiped clean when Serena furiously lifted the Sword of Life and Death, sending them all to dust.

The players who were tagging along got to watch the "movie", and were left awestruck.

However, if they even had a little bit of IQ in their brains, players would easily guess that Serena was not a player!

Think of it, Zhang Yang was accused of killing the princess and had a kill order on his head. Yet after a miraculous effort, he managed to turn the tables around with just one woman. How cool was that!?

For 30 years the river has flowed to the west, the water would return to the east 30 years later.

After having been persecuted so heavily, the tables have turned for Zhang Yang and now he had the grandest of luck.

"D*mn. I wish I could become the king's son in law! Think of it guys! If I could bring my wife with us into dungeons, or wars, we would be invincible!" said Fatty Han rather earnestly.

"Fatty bro, with that kind of body, how could you even become the princess's husband? Where would White Jade Castle hide its face? If one wants to become the husband of a princess, one must at least have a handsome face such as I!" said Endless Starlight as he tried to snatched the spotlight.

They had managed to bring Serene back to the city after a total of three hours! By then, the number of players following behind Zhang Yang was exceeded beyond 8,000,000! It's either that or 10,000,000! If there was a Guinness World Record for a number of spectators in a game, they would have successfully been drafted!

As they entered through the castle entrance, the 12 elite soldiers standing guard there saw Zhang Yang and immediately unsheathed their swords. They surround Zhang Yang and one of them shouted. "You murderer! Surrender now!"

"Impudent!" cried Serene as she got down from the bear. "Stand down, right now!" she bellowed.

"Y-You are..." When the soldiers saw Serena, they were bewildered and did not know what to do next.

"In the presence of the crown, why do you not kneel!" Serena was no longer as furious as she was before, rather, she was only treating her own soldiers as a superior would. Either way, she had managed to strike fear and doubt into the hearts of the soldiers.

"M-My princess! We heard that you were k-ki—" One of the soldier spoke, his voice trembling.

"Hmph. That's not of your concern! Stand down! All of you!" said Princess Serena as she thrust her fair hands out, gesturing them to withdraw from their attacking stance, like a true noble.

"Yes! Princess!" All the soldiers withdrew and allowed the party to proceed.

With Serena leading the way ahead, the path was cleared until they reached the King's Chamber in White Jade Castle. This time, only Serena herself and Zhang Yang were allowed to enter the chamber.

Foom! The doors opened at her call and the two of them walked in extravagantly. Maids and soldiers along the way were kneeling down and hailing their princess.

Royal Chamber of the Dawning Light!

This hall was the king's own forbidden chamber. Even though it had almost the same structure of the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna, this hall was much larger and luxurious! The towering pillars of the hall were so large that it was estimated to be at least a few hundred meters tall! The pillars only could express pride, honor, dominating power of the citizens!

"Father!" The moment Serene entered the hall, stepping forward and bowing down to an elderly King who was seated upon the throne.

[Derick, King of the White Jade Kingdom] (Ascended,

Humanoid)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

King Derick was clearly shocked, a look of child-like wonder dawning upon his wizened face. He quickly raised to his feet and said faintly. "Serena...Y-You---"

"Father! I'm not dead! I'm alive!" said Serena with a smile on her face. "Three years ago, I was ambushed and imprisoned by the spectres! This hero saved me! The princess before me, was an impersonator who had used half of my soul to impersonate me!"

"Is...Is that true!?" said Derick. His voice tremble with doubt. He thought for a while and said, "Follow me to your chamber! I want to see the true form of the accursed spectre with my own eyes!"

The King and the Princess strode to the chamber with guards and maids following closely behind. The crowd arrived at the Royal Chamber of Star and Luna. At the center of the hall, a huge jade coffin lay there. On top of the coffin were fresh flowers that were maintained by several maids who quickly got to their knees. There were a total of 12 maids dressed in white, beautiful maid uniforms.

"My King! P-P-P-Princess!?" The maids got up to their feet and bowed respectfully to their king. But when their eyes saw Princess Serena standing next to the king, they trembled. Confusion, bewilderment, shock filled their faces.

Derick thrusted his hands out and gestured. "Open the coffin!"

Four guards walked quickly to the coffin and each of them took a corner. With a simultaneous heave, they pushed the lid open.

A dried, wrinkled skeleton was revealed to everyone. The face was distorted so badly and the corpse and the real Princess Serena shared no common features!

"Without my soul, this wretched spectre could no longer maintain the illusion!" said Serena.

"Oh! My child! My precious child! I'm so happy that you're safe!" The king hugged Princess Serene as tightly as he could, with tears flowing down his old, tired eyes.

Standing at one side, Zhang Yang was tapping his boots repeatedly, thinking, "Old fart, it's time for my reward! At least rescind the kill order and give me back my shop!"

Luckily, it was only a matter of minutes before the King Derick turned to Zhang Yang and praised him. "Young warrior! You have saved my only daughter! You have also foiled a major conspiracy and saved the entire kingdom! You are now a hero! I must reward you handsomely!"

About d*mn time old fart!

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Return to White Jade Castle. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

'Ding! Main Story Quest Link: The Spectre's Scheme. Complete. Evaluating...'

'Ding! Your quest score: Perfect!'

'Ding! You have obtained the reward: Level +5, Skill Point: +1!'

'Ding! You have obtained the reward: Indistinct Skill Book {Beast Taming}!'

'Ding! The King has removed all charges pressed against you. You have regained all the authority you have in White Jade Castle! Your Reputation Point in White Jade Kingdom has been raised to Revered!'

'Server Announcement: White Jade Kingdom has canceled the kill order on player Zhan Yu!'

'Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu has completed the Main Story Quest Link: The Spectre's Scheme. His achievement will be recorded in the Achievement Board!' 'Server Announcement: War of the Spectres will be launching next mouth! For more information, please visit the official website!'

Zhang Yang's notification channel was constantly flashing with new notifications until finally it stopped. When he read everything, he was stunned.

Indistinct Skill Book!?

Zhang Yang's knees went weak from the sudden news! He felt like he had been given a huge pie! A hot, delicious, luxurious strawberry rhubarb! The kind that you'll never get sick of eating!

In 'God' Miracle', skill books were categorized into two types. Normal skill books and Indistinct skill books.

Needless to say, Indistinct skill books will grant an awesome, mega, OP skill! Yet, at the same skill, they will grant a normal, extremely common skill such as {Regeneration} or {Force Strike}. These types of skills were the most basic of their respective classes. Basically, skill books will grant a skill, requiring a specific class requirement. An Indistinct skill book however, would completely ignore such requirements! Any class could learn from them! Because of them, there will be rare cases of Warriors casting magic spells, Spellcasters using {Stealth}!

However, an Indistinct skill book was, at most, extremely, awfully hard to farm! In fact, in his previous life, after 'God's

Miracle' had been operating for five years, according to the data statistic from the '5 Years Game Review', the entire world had only manage to produce 127 counts of Indistinct skill books!

The rarity of the skill book was beyond any measure!

As such, since Indistinct skill books could only grant basic class skills, it had its advantage and short comings. For example, if a Warrior had learnt the Thief's skill {Shadow Assault}, it would only grant the Warrior an additional attacking skill. However, what if the Warrior manages to learn the skill {Stealth}? That would be a whole different story!

{Beast Taming} was a Hunter's basic skill. With this skill, a Hunter can capture a Wild Beast and tame it to be his pet. They could also use the skill to use their pet mount as their pet! Now that Zhang Yang had learnt the skill, his pet mount could remain in the field as a pet instead of a Battle Mount or a Mount! In fact, his pet would exactly be like a Hunter's pet, fighting alongside Zhang Yang in dungeon, Battle Arena, and even indoor instances!

It would turn him into part-Hunter!

He quickly took out the skill book and observed the item that he had never even got a whiff of in his past life!

[Beast Taming] (Indistinct Skill Book)

Use: Teaches you {Beast Taming}.

Level Requirement: 10

Bound.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Yang pat the book on his chest and learn the skill.

[Beast Taming]: Captures a wild beast to be your pet. Allows Battle Mounts to be summoned as pets. During a beast's capture, you have to be the target's main aggro or the capture will fail. You cannot capture any beast that is higher than your current level. You can only summon one pet at a time.

Casting time: 30 seconds.

Zhang Yang took out the [Lease of the Gold-Eared Bear King] and summoned it. After two seconds, the fat, white bear appeared beside Zhang Yang and lay down on the floor lazily. It scratched its chin with its claws and even yawned.

Once a mount was not ridden within 2 seconds, it would instantly disappear. Now that he gained the skill, the mount would not disappear.

Zhang Yang cracked a wide smile! Even though the main story quest had caused him so much trouble, the rewards were definitely worth it!

"Hey noob tank! What's your reward!" The impatient little Wei Yan Er had seen all the server announcements and had quickly rushed to Zhang Yang to ask.

"Hehe! Increase five Levels. One skill point. And an Indistinct skill book!"

Chapter 236: Service Hiring

"Five Level bonus?!"

"Woah! Dumb Yu! That means you must be Level 60 then!"

"What's an Indistinct skill book?"

Zhang Yang had made the announcement in the party channel, which was why the rest of the gang had rushed over to check things out. He explained the characteristics of his newly obtained skill and the team was floored. For a non-hunter class character to be able to use {Beast Taming}, it made Zhang Yang into half a hunter, and a full tank!

"Warrior, please head back for now! I'll personally reward you in the future!" said Serena with a radiant smile. Her mannerisms and speech towards Zhang Yang seemed a little more than friendly.

'Ding! Your relationship with Princess Serena is now: Good!'

Zhang Yang almost staggered in surprise. Relationship and Reputation are two different systems. Only an NPC with strong AI programming such as Serena could establish a Relationship system. However, the true function of the system is unknown. Still, it can't possibly be a bad thing, having a good relationship with Princess Serena!

Now that his quest has been completed, and the rewards

collected, there was no more reason for Zhang Yang to stay there any longer. Zhang Yang did an adventurer's salute and said, "My King, my Princess, Zhan Yu will now take his leave!"

As he stepped out of the palace, he saw members of Lone Desert Smoke occupying the entire courtyard! Faced with 10,000 members who were all cramping together like sardines, Zhang Yang could not help but feel honored. All of the players raised up their weapons and cheered! They had fought as a guild, facing all players from China as the enemy and had successfully helped Zhang Yang achieve his goal in completing his quest! This achievement was truly worth celebrating!

Zhang Yang took out his own axe and raised it up into the sky and cried, "From today on! We, Lone Desert Smoke, will declare war against The Dominators, Pride, and the Axe Gang! Until they leave this city, we shall not rest! For honor!"

"FOR HONOR!"

Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight and the rest of the gang led teams of their own to start the assault. Each of them formed attack teams consisting of at least a hundred members, leading them out of the city and beginning their hunt for the forementioned guilds. While all of that was happening, Humbly Gentleman was still locked up in jail. He had logged out to have his dinner, when he learned of the news through a frantic phone call. Due to the fact that most members from The Dominators were in jail, with the remaining players scattered and divided without a leader, they could not endure the attacks from the very furious Lone Desert Smoke members. Most of them were killed so many times that

they were afraid of reviving themselves and eventually logged off the game.

With the rising pressure and stress of being the hunting target, most of the players chose to leave the guild. With such events happening, Humbly Gentleman grew anxious. To speed things up, he spent the entire day and night to let the duration of his punishment run its course. He did not even spare any time to sleep! However, even after his efforts, by the time he was released from the prison, The Dominators had already lost at least 10% of its members.

Unrelentingly, Lone Desert Smoke showed no mercy and no signs of slowing down. Crimson Rage and Sky High joined the fray and participated in the assault on The Dominators.

In just five short days, The Dominators, Axe Gang, and Pride suffered heavy losses. All of them were cowering behind the city walls, refusing to leave the place to go grinding. As a result, many members of the guilds had chosen to abandon their guilds as a result of being unable to handle the massive stress. Now that the situation had escalated to such a level, Humbly Gentleman gave up resisting and was forced to do the right thing. He discarded his ego and faced Zhang Yang to beg his forgiveness.

Zhang Yang agreed to forgive the man, under one condition. Humbly Gentleman would have to kneel down in front of Little Merchandize Shop for 24 hours.

Zhang Yang merely offered the condition as a prank, he knew that a person such as Humbly Gentleman would never accept that level of embarrassment. However, against all odds, Humbly Gentleman did the impossible; He went to the shop, dropped planted his face on the ground and knelt for an entire day!

Unlike him, Zhang Yang was a man of his word. Now that Humbly Gentleman had crossed the bridge, Zhang Yang complied to his wishes and pulled his troops back, issuing a temporary ceasefire on The Dominators. However, things took a different path. Now that Humbly Gentleman's act was witnessed by the entire world, the guild had lost its credibility. Many more players in the guild quit since they believed that the guild will have no future under the so-called leadership of such a spineless bastard! A small internal conflict occurred and the guild lost a handful of elite players.

As such, The Dominators lost a great deal of strength and was removed from the rankings of strong guilds in White Jade Castle. Even though they still had their standards, they had lost respect. Morale was poor.

As for Pride and the Axe gang, they hung on using their own methods. Even if they could not put up a fight, they could still hide! The two guilds had "migrated" to Wild Willow City and Crimson Sky City, to reduce their pressure from Lone Desert Smoke.

At the same time, things got a little rowdy in the real world! There were online arguments coming up in the forums.

Some said the guilds deserved such treatment. You reap what you sow. Why in the first place, did those guilds guard the dead bodies

of players from Lone Desert Smoke? Back then, why did not they feel remorse as they hacked at prey that they greatly outnumbered? They should have known what they were getting themselves into when they decided to go to war against Lone Desert Smoke. They should have known what could happen to them if they lost.

On the other end of things, other players mentioned that the actions of Lone Desert Smoke were a little over the top. Conflicts between guilds are a common thing. A minor skirmish between one another is too common to even pay attention to. However, Lone Desert Smoke had driven two guilds out of the city! It was overly excessive no matter how you looked at things!

All in all, the commentators in the forum did agree on one thing. A consensus was established on the authenticity of Lone Desert Smoke's power, and its implications. They have proven themselves by almost causing the disbandment of a powerful, established influential guild that had left its mark over many games in the past! Because of this feat, they had gained themselves a top-of-the-food-chain status!

Such dominating power!

As the person in charge of liaising with outsourcing parties, Hundred Shots had been receiving many requests and news about company sponsorships. Because of that, Han Ying Xue was rather pleased as she was "the one" who first "found" the guild.

Now that Zhang Yang had gained an extra five Levels, he had overtaken Han Ying Xue and became China's highest Leveled

player! After removing and putting on all his Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment such as the Ring of Raging Blaze and Arcane Resistor, he gained a major boost in his overall statistics.

HP: 24,090

Strength: 730

Defense: 1,000

Damage Absorption: 988

Weapon Attack: (1,929 – 2,138) x 1.05%

He learned a new skill at Level 60, {Killing Cleave}.

[Killing Cleave]: Attempts to kill the target. Skill can only be used on targets with less than 20% of its maximum HP. Requires 20 Rage points to cast. Causes 100% physical melee damage to the target. Every additional Rage point will be converted to 3% extra damage per point. This skill will ignore all Defense, is Unavoidable and Unblockable.

Requires: Melee Weapon

Cost: Consumes all Rage.

Cool Down Time: 15 seconds.

If the skill was activated at 100 Rage (max), it could deal a total of 340% melee damage. That amount of damage is truly devastating! However, it wouldn't be very practical against a boss. The reason was a such, 20 Rage a hit could be the same as {Force Strike}. If all rage is consumed, each extra Rage point will only be an additional 3.4% melee damage. It's much weaker than the 10% Rage {Horizontal Sweep} or the Level 10 {Tornado Cleave} which only costs 8% Rage!

However, if the target was a player, it would be a different scenario, since the skill can only be used when a target's HP was lower than 20%, which couldn't amount to more than 1,600 HP, since the majority of non-tank players only had 8,000 HP at most! Any other skill can be used to kill that player! This skill will only reach its maximum potential when the game matures a little more. By then, average players would be at a higher level and have higher HPs. By then, the skill could be used to guarantee certain kills!

When all other skill have been used and are in cool down, this skill would serve greatly as a bonus attack. Unavoidable, unblockable, ignores all defense?! However, Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye}, it would be like adding salt to the sea!

A skill like this was currently wasted on Zhang Yang. On an inferior player however....a tank would need to constantly kite the boss. Taking damage constantly will basically provide an endless

supply of Rage points. Since the skill could ignore all defense, weaker players with lower tiered equipment could use the skill to deal extra damage to kite the boss properly.

• • •

After a few days of grinding, Zhang Yang had his Bear King by his side whenever he was in combat. Since pets would require lower experience points to level up compared to a player, Whitey had been gaining levels faster than before. Thanks to Zhang Yang dragging monsters all around the field to kill them as entire herds instead of facing them one by one, Whitey had finally reached the same level as Zhang Yang, Level 60.

By then, Whitey had not procured any new skill. Zhang Yang had to visit the auction house to purchase two pet skill books. As the name states, the skill book was only eligible for pets. By right, Whitey was a mount, not a pet, and therefore unable to learn skills from such a method, but when Zhang Yang learned {Beast Taming}, Whitey had gained the status of both pet mount and normal pet!

[Icy Build] (Passive): Whenever you are attacked by a Frost attack, reduces damage by 90%.

[Wild Recovery]: Coverts 10 Focus points into 5% HP recovery every second. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cool Down Time: 2 minutes.

{Wild Recovery} is extremely common, which only cost Zhang Yang 20 gold coins. On the other hand, {Icy Build} was as expensive

as f*ck! It cost Zhang Yang 20,000 gold coins to buy that bloody book! However, after reading the skill description, Zhang Yang felt that the skill was worth its cost.

At Level 60, [Gold-Eared Bear King] was truly mighty! The difference between a pet and a player is that a pet would not require any equipment to gain stats! Levels would be relative to their power! As their levels go up, so do their stats! The stat growth they gain would depend on their rarity.

[Gold-Eared Bear King] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Level: 60

HP: 16,800

Defense: 1,200

Weapon Attack: 3,692 – 3,892 (Attack Interval: 3 seconds, DPS: 1,264)

After Zhang Yang had acquired the skill {Beast Taming}, the bear had gained a Defense attribute. However, the Defense attribute would only be active when it is summoned as a pet, instead of a mount. The ridiculous bear had actually surpassed its own master in terms of both offense and defensive values.

Right now, the bear had two modes. One, the mount mode. In this mode, {Shared Life}, {Wild Charge}, and {Claw Attack} are the only skills available. As a pet however, it was able to use {Wild Charge}, {Claw Attack}, {Wild Recovery} and {Icy Build}!

The current date was October the 24th. The majority of players around had already passed the Level 50 threshold. Zhang Yang's stockpiled [Solid Iron Plates] had been sold out clean. On average, each [Solid Iron Plate] was sold at around 13 gold coins each. All 17,000 stacks of [Solid Iron Plate] had been sold for a total of 44,200,000 gold coins! The current currency exchange rate was at 1:3 which covert that sum to 130,000,000 dollars! That number had exceeded Zhang Yang's prediction by 50,000,000 dollars!

[Level 3 Fire Resistance Potion] were not as common however. This situation had left Zhang Yang in a huge dilemma. If he placed his efforts in making potions, his current lead in levels would slowly drop. On the other hand, if he ignored the market demand and paid attention to grinding, he would be missing the chance to make more money!

The best way to solve this problem would be to hire a player for their services, the kind that specializes in crafting potions! But... could he find someone he could trust? It's hard to put his trust on anyone, because every recipe that Zhang Yang finds and procures is worth a lot of gold coins! Facing the prospect of such profit, greed would easily change a man's perception.

Fatty Han was his number one choice, but making potion will be a test of patience...someone like Fatty Han will definitely flip the table! He thought...and thought...and after giving some time, he had an idea. He logged out of the game and picked up the phone.

"Hello..." Yu Li voice was heard over the phone. She sounded a little tired.

"It's me. Zhang Yang. How is your mother?"

"Yes. She's been relocated to the best ward now. A kidney donor is already on the way and the doctor said that she can have her surgery within a week!" said Yu Li excitedly. She giggled a little and said, "So, I don't think you're calling me just to ask about my mother. Have you finally decided to accept my invitation to bed?"

A drop of cold sweat went down his forehead.

What a woman!

"Actually, I have an idea that would help you return the money you borrowed from me!"

"Hm?"

"I want to hire you as my personal potion crafter. In the game, I will have you craft me some potions! I will pay you...60,000 dollars as monthly salary! You will be able clear all your debt to me in just five years, with some personal savings to boot!"

"Zhang Yang...I said that I don't want to owe you anything anymore---"

"Listen to me, woman! Geez! Have you forgotten that I have been selling potions for a while back then? In the near future, there will be many more types of potions for sale! I don't have that much free time, sitting around all say on my ass, crafting bloody potions! That is why I'm hiring you to do some virtual hard labor! Do you understand the situation here, woman? I could earn millions or even billion while all you get is a fixed salary. I'm practically robbing you!"

"...I understand. Thank you so much, Zhang Yang." Yu Li was silent for a while before she finally replied. She understood Zhang Yang's intention. He could have easily looked for other people to do his work but instead, he asked her. She knew that Zhang Yang was just finding a reason to help her.

"Until your mother fully recovers, you best stay with her. You can get back into the game when she's all good. I'll help you increase your Alchemy mastery. Oh! Could you please come over to White Jade Castle? It'll save me a lot of time when delivering the materials!"

"Ok!"

Zhang Yang hung up, a great weight taken off his shoulders. At least that's one problem solved.

Zhang Yang daily routine comprised of making potions and grinding his level. The daily dungeon runs of Poison Fireland and the Palace of Centaur were left to Endless Starlight. That young man had the potential to grow even stronger. After a few days of raiding and training, he was showing the promising skills and capabilities of a great tank!

After Level 60, gaining one level would take eight days at minimum. Since Zhang Yang had to allocate some time to craft some potions, he had only managed to gain one level by the first of November. Currently, the Level Ranking Board's Top 10 players were as such:

Zhan Yu, Guardian, Level 61

Little Snow, Priest, Level 57

Frost Night, Assassin, Level 57

Slim and Handsome, Beastmaster, Level 57

Drizzler, Berserker, Level 56

Daffodil Daydream, Pyromancer, Level 56

Hundred Shots, Beastmaster, Level 56

One Sword Stroke, Guardian, Level 55

Endless Starlight, Defender, Level 55

Drifting Scent, Bandit, Level 54.

There were three tanks and one healer in the Level Ranking Board Top Ten list?! A normal player would definitely be stunned in disbelief. Everyone would expect a Spellcaster to be the leveling king! Since when was a tank better at grinding than a Spellcaster?

• • •

9 am: Zhang Yang logged into the game on time and heard a clear voice of a woman ringing in his ears, "Spectre War Zone has been launched, you may now proceed to enter through Teleportation Points in major cities!"

Spectre War Zone. The name was self-explanatory, it was a war zone filled with spectres. This new map was like a dungeon instance. Even though the map was filled with elite tiered monsters, the monsters inside the war zone were much easier to defeat than a regular common map elite monster. The experience points granted were lesser than the regular elite, they were still substantially higher than the experience points from normal monsters!

These monsters in the war zone do not drop regular drops like coins, materials, etc items, or equipment. Instead, at a fixed drop rate, these monsters will drop Rune Crafting essences and Rune Craft recipes! The war zone will be divided into different level maps to suit the varying levels of players. The lowest tier started at Level 10, and the levels went up by 10 per ascending tier.

Level 10, Level 20, and Level 30 Spectre War Zone's elite monster had a 1% chance of dropping [Level 1 Black-Steel Essence], 0.1% chance of dropping [Level 1 Green-Copper Essence]. The bosses here will have a 1% chance of dropping [Level 1 Green-Copper Essence] and a 0.1% chance of dropping [Level 1 Gray-Silver Essence].

Level 40, Level 50, and Level 60 Spectre War Zone's elite monster will have 1% chance of dropping [Level 2 Green Copper Essence] and 0.1% chance of dropping [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence]. The bosses here will have 1% chance of dropping [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence] and a 0.1% chance of dropping [Level 2 Yellow-Gold Essence].

At the current stage of the game, there were plenty of Green-Copper tiered weapons lying around, however, Level 40 Gray-Silver tier equipment were so rare that no one would willingly disassemble them to extract their essence. So, naturally, without materials, there would not be any Rune Stones, which made the new profession rather meaningless.

To counter this problem that was quickly becoming prevalent, the developers had created the Spectre War Zone. The first three days of each month, players would have one chance of entering the war zone at a cost of 30 gold coins per entry for three hours. The entry count would not be carried over to the next month, only resetting when the time came. As such, Rune Crafting players would not have to worry about a shortage of essences. Even though

the existence of the war zone would not satisfy the current market demand, it was a solution to lessen the burden of those players that learned Rune Craft. At least, the profession had some meaning now!

Chapter 237: Spectre War Zone

Since the entry period was only for as long as the first three days of every month, players who had read the introduction of the war zone have been waiting patiently for the opening of the war zone. Even though the area was large and divided into different levels of areas, it was still a situation where 10 men would need to share a toilet! There are more than 50,000,000 players alone in China! To make matters worse, the introduction had clearly stated that the Spectre War Zone's monster would only respawn once a month, meaning that latecomers would be left with an empty plain of dust and grass!

That was the reason why dozens of players stayed up waiting for the clock to strike midnight! The early bird gets the worms!

By the time Zhang Yang logged into the game, Han Ying Xue and the other had already entered the war zone. When Wei Yan Er noticed, she quickly contacted him and yelled, "Hey sleepy head! Lazy bum! Why did you wake up so late, noob tank!"

F*ck! This lazy-*ss is the one who's always late! D*mn! She was up a little early just to catch the opening time of the Spectre War Zone! Zhang Yang laughed sarcastically and replied her. "So, what did you guys get?"

"My god! There are so many people here!" Wei Yan Er sighed. "I thought I knew the meaning of a crowd when I visited a mall during the Black Friday sales. But d*amn! There are so many people here KSing mosnters here, there, and everywhere! Now I know what it really means when people say that there's no room

for even an apple to fall!"

"Woah! We got ourselves a smart *ss!" Zhang Yang immediately replied.

"Stupid! Dummy! Noob tank! Call me stupid, one more time, and I'll take my cousin sister away from you!"

"Sure! It doesn't matter since our little Yan Er is a rare flower! A genius philosopher! A rare gem! The flower among flowers!"

"Hehe!" Wei Yan Er rubbed her nose. "Since when did I become yours? Please...However, I'll overlook that statement since you have pretty good eyes, being able to notice all my points! HEY! Han Ying Xue! Why are you always sneaking around when I'm not paying attention!"

Beep

The little brat let out a scream that was quickly cut short as she hung up the voice messenger.

Zhang Yang laughed at the amazing little girl. She would never get boring. Zhang Yang rode Whitey all the way to the Teleportation point and paid the 30 gold coins entry fee, and entered the Spectre War Zone.

Of all the players in all eight servers, China included, Zhang Yang was the only person in the entire map of Level 60. When he

entered the map, all he saw was a gray sky filled with dark clouds. The sun was fully blotted out behind the grayish dark puffs of clouds. Ahead of him, there were massive flatlands, filled with spectral monsters lurking around aimlessly. Each of them were separated by at least 30 meters apart.

[Fallen Warrior] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 62

HP: 20,000

Defense: 60

The background story of this Spectre War Zone was that the Union had recognized the Spectres as an alarming threat. Thus, they had dispatched adventurers and assigned them to their designated war zones to eliminate the vengeful spirits that had turned into spectres.

Even though the monsters here had the elite title upon their heads, their HP was only a little bit higher than usual normal tiered monsters. They were not hard to defeat; even a normal player (players with weaker equipment than Zhang Yang) could slay a monster by themselves with ease. The only difference between them and Zhang Yang was that Zhang Yang could go on and on while the normal players would might have to sit down to recover their HP after killing only one elite monster.

Zhang Yang summoned [Gold-Eared Bear King] and sat on it. He bent down a little and pats the side of its head. "Buddy, it's us against time itself here. Let's see how much we can haul in three hours!"

"Growl!"

Zhang Yang commanded the bear and both of them rushed down the flatlands, and into the roaming monsters. Since the monster here were rather scattered, Zhang Yang could not rely on his kiting technique. Instead, he had to resort to killing them one at a time. However, with his current damage, coupled with the damage from his pet mount, they could easily kill the 20,000 HP monster in just seven to eight seconds, while only losing a fraction of their own HP.

As Zhang Yang killed his way deeper into the war zone, he came up to a small hill side and saw a fully-clad armored warrior riding a skeletal horse down the other side of the hill. Behind the horseman were a few skeleton soldiers in groups of 10 and more. They were kneeling on one leg with flags stabbed into the ground by their sides. Although the flags seem ragged and old, these few spectres were looking up at the flag with great respect. They were completely still, as if they were statues made from cement!

Even after turning into spectres, these soldiers could perhaps retain a sense of pride and duty from their days of living...

[Resurrected Knight] (Boss, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 300,000

Defense: 350

The bosses in the Spectre War Zone did not have any tiers. They would only drop the respective level of essence based on their own levels. Zhang Yang sighed. He had been feeling down since he didn't stand to gain much, only materials for that Snow Bitch's runecrafting. He gently patted the white bear and commanded it to charge into the monsters.

"Aack ack....." The spectres noticed Zhang Yang arrival and got up to their feet. With the flag pole behind them, the soldiers grabbed the hilts of their swords with their skeletal hands and tugged out the rusted swords that were once shiny.

'-o!'

'-o!'

The attacks were so weak that all of them could not even penetrate Zhang Yang's defense. Ignoring them, Zhang Yang went straight to the boss. The boss pulled out a long spear and thrusted it towards Zhang Yang. The damage done to Zhang Yang was only below 1,000, which means its basic attacking power was at around 3,000! It was set that way to favor the majority of normal players. The boss had been set in such a way that even a small group of Green-Copper equipment base player could defeat it.

After all, the purpose of the Spectre War Zone was to grant a lucrative way for essences to enter the market, not to test player's equipment.

No one can stop him now!

In this zone, Zhang Yang was more of a boss than a player. After sharing his HP with the pet mount via <Shared Life>, their combined HP had reached 41,000! Their attacking power had reached 4000+ DPS! With their current strength, they defeated the boss in only 70 seconds! That, by everyone else's standards, was insanely powerful!

After three hours in the zone, Zhang Yang exited the instance with a broad smile on his face.

"Noob tank! Cousin sister said this and I quote, pass all the loots to her obediently or she will get over there to search your body thoroughly." Just as Zhang Yang left the zone, Wei Yan Er merry voice rang.

D*mn! I have yet to even touch these stuffs myself and here they are, about to be snatched away...

"Noob tank! Don't feel bad about yourself. Pervy Fatty, Starlight brat, and uncle Hundred Shots have already been robbed cleaned by my cousin sister!" said Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang facepalmed. "Where is that woman?"

"At the Rune Crafting instructor!"

Without wasting anymore time, Zhang Yang rode the bear towards the Rune Craft Shop, only to see Han Ying Xue crafting Rune Stones endlessly. Naturally, everyone had gathered up a large haul. Because of that, Han Ying Xue was able to take everyone's loot from the Spectre War Zone to craft Rune Stones.

"Ahah! Great timing dummy! All the materials were just about to finish!" said Han Ying Xue as she looked up at Zhang Yang.

"I'd say, have you made any progress with Rune Crafting at all?"

"Before, I had only made +1 Rune Stones. With all these materials now, I can make +2 Rune Stones! Come on hurry up! Give me all the loots that you have gathered! I'm almost reaching Level 3!" said

Han Ying Xue as she gestured with her hand impatiently.

Before the introduction to Spectre War Zone, Han Ying Xue had only the support from Zhang Yang's Little Merchandize Shop. Technically, Han Ying Xue was the first player in China to push her mastery level to Level 2! But, to achieve Level 3 mastery, one would require many [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence]. No matter how grandiose Zhang Yang was, he could not provide that much equipment for her to dissemble. After all, the most popular equipment in demand was the Gray-Silver tier. Who would want to sell those equipment for disassembling?

However, the tables has turned. With the Spectre War Zone, and the collaboration of an entire guild, Han Ying Xue had somehow managed to push herself to reach Level 3 in Rune Crafting! That was why normal players could never be proper Rune Crafters, it would drive them bankrupt before anything else!

Without giving a second thought, Zhang Yang transferred all his essence to Han Ying Xue.

"Dummy...did you rob a hundred people to get these? How did you get so much?!" cried Han Ying Xue in shock and surprise. Like her, Wei Yan Er, Fatty Han, and the rest of the group had only managed to farm on average, 10 [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence], and one [Level 2 Yellow-Gold Essence].

Zhang Yang had just transferred a total of 92 [Level 2 Gray-Silver Essence], and 43 [Level 2 Yellow-Gold Essence]! Having that many [Gray-Silver Essence] was still conceivable, but the amount of [Yellow-Gold Essence] he carried was just unbelievable! It was an

impossible feat!

Zhang Yang scoffed. "Answer me, woman! Where are the Rune Stones that you promised? How much longer are you going to delay!?"

Perhaps others did not fully understand, but Zhang Yang knew that every 10 points of Luck would increase his chances in several aspects of the game by 1%! Since he had 9 Luck points, he had, technically, increased the drop rate of [Gray-Silver Essence] to 2% and [Yellow-Gold Essence] to 1%!

0.1% to 1% was an increment of a multiple of ten! Plus, Zhang Yang was completely alone in the Level 60 Spectre War Zone. Since he had only focused on killing bosses, how could he not gather that many [Yellow-Gold Essence]?

Han Ying Xue smiled happily, her grin spread from ear to ear. She nonchalantly transferred a few Rune Stones to Zhang Yang and said, "With this, I will easily become a Level 3 Rune Crafter! It's a shame though. Rune Craft recipes above Level 3 are not sold by the instructors! Looks like I will have to farm them myself!"

Zhang Yang took out the Rune Stones that Han Ying Xue had just handed over and observed their properties. There were only two Rune Stone, one was for a weapon, and the other was for a shield.

[Rune Stone: Vampiric] (Useable, Tier 2)

Use: Inscribes a rune on a weapon. Grants the weapon a +2 Vampiric effect. Grants a chance to restore 100 HP on every successful attack. Effect will only proc once every 10 seconds. Inscribing a rune has a 50% success rate. Failure will result in a drop on the effect Tier by 1 level.

[Rune Stone: Shield Spike] (Useable, Tier 2)

Use: Inscribes a rune on a shield. Grants the shield with a +2 Shield Spike effect. Grants the ability to inflict 100 Shadow damage on a target after receiving an attack from the same target. Inscribing a rune has a 50% success rate. Failure will result in a drop on the effect Tier by 1 level.

The inscription a Rune starts from +1 to +2 and so on. However, since high Tier Rune Stone could replace the usage of lower Tier Rune Stones, super rich players could buy +10 Rune Stone to jump all the way from +1 to +10. Normal players would start inscribing from Tier 1 Rune Stone +1, to Tier 2 Rune Stone +2. This was the best and most economical way. However, Han Ying Xue's Rune Stones were all in Tier 2! It completely went against her miserly nature!

"Do I look like a miser?" said Han Ying Xue as she winked at Zhang Yang. "Using higher tier Rune Stone could easily increase the success rates!"

Wei Yan Er walked behind Zhang Yang and whispered. "Actually,

she had already thrown away many Tier 1 Rune Stones because they had taken up too much space in her inventory.

"You little minx!" bellowed Han Ying Xue angrily.

Chapter 238: The Infiltration

Level 1 Rune Stone's were weak and the materials needed for crafting were just too cheap. Almost any Rune Crafter could craft this level of Rune Stone and it only served to raise their mastery level. Just like a [Level 1 Whetstone], it had come to a point where it's something that can be given away. Even the recipient might not appreciate this much! That was the reason why Han Ying Xue had gotten rid of all the Level 1 Rune Stones from her inventory and storage.

Zhang Yang stared at Han Ying Xue, and laughed under his breath.

"What are you looking at? I'll pluck your little balls off and shove them down your throat!" Han Ying Xue scolded viciously.

Zhang Yang laughed more, ignoring her. He took out his Dragon Tooth Battle Axe and inscribed the enhanced Vampire Rune Stone on it.

'Ding! Dragon Tooth Battle Axe has gained the effect of {Vampiric +1}. Level 2 Whetstone effect has been replaced!'

It's a shame that both the whetstone and the Rune Stone could not stack.

Zhang Yang took out another enhanced Vampire Rune Stone and applied on the weapon. However, after two seconds, a "crack" was heard and there was a long and unsightly crack on the weapon's

edge.

'Ding! Enchantment failed. The {Vampiric +1} effect on the Dragon Tooth Battle Axe has disappeared. 10% of the weapon Durability has been lost!'

"WTF! You sly minx! What kind of Rune Stone did you gave me! I'd failed at +2!"

Han Ying Xue shrugged and scoffed. "That's your problem! Not me. I only used two Rune Stones and achieve {Mana Drain +2}!"

"What about the little girl?" Zhang Yang laughed as he turned to face Wei Yan Er.

Wei Yan Er shrunk and bashfully whispered. "16 pieces..."

"BAH!" Zhang Yang exploded in laughter. "Looks like there's no such thing as being 'worst'! It can only get much 'worse'!"

"Hey! This young lady here is beautiful and charming! Why would you say I'm worse?!" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes. "Hurry up and keep on inscribing more Runes! Don't beat around the bush! I have a bet with cousin-sister right here on whose luck would be the worst!"

Luckily, Zhang Yang only used two pieces of enhanced Vampire Rune Stone and managed to upgrade his weapon to {Vampiric +2}. He did not even fail a single time when he came to his shield. He

had only used a total of 6 pieces of Rune Stones.

After he was done inscribing Runes, he bid everyone farewell and used the city's Teleportation point to fly over to Tukula Fortress. There, he summoned the white bear and rode on into the wild.

So far, Zhang Yang was the only person who had reached Level 60. The new dungeon "Thunderbolt Prison" require a number of players that his guild could not provide. The only choice left was for him to get everyone to train their levels together. Furthermore, the new dungeon had a rather complicated system. The dungeon required four parties to start the raid. There were not enough members in Lone Desert Smoke to even dispatch 4 parties of 5 men!

Zhang Yang rode through the Frozen Sky Wastelands and entered the Forest of Tanila.

Forest of Tanila is a Level 60+ training ground, and it also carried the possibility of being claimed as a Territory! Zhang Yang's current objective was to search for new Territories.

Theoretically, as long as players achieved Level 60, new Territories would spawn in Level 60+ maps.

Forest of Tanila was a place with extremely large and ancient trees. The ground was rather open as the tree were widely spreaded from each other. That being said, the branches grew excessively, and the leaves from all the trees around had covered the entire sky. Light from the sun could only seep through the gaps among the leaves to reach the floor. The forest was extremely cooling, but well-lit. Zhang Yang walked slowly across the forest, pacing slowly without any intention to rush. As he strode on, rays of light beamed on his armor, reflecting the sunlight out across the forest. Zhang Yang lingered in the forest for a total of three days.

On the fourth day, as he was roaming around the forest, he stumbled upon an open area with a camp in the middle of it.

"Hold your steps!" Two Elven warrior rushed over. Both of them wielded long swords. Though they looked extremely graceful, there were markings and tribal paint all over their foreheads, making them look rather savage, their eyes gleaming with killing intent.

[Silver Wings Camp Soldier] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

Zhang Yang unsummoned his mount and did an adventurer's salute. "Fellow Elven warriors, I am an adventurer from the White Jade Castle!"

The two female warriors exchange a quick look with each other and one of them asked. "We have sent out countless requests for aid! And yet White Jade Castle sends us a single man?!"

Zhang Yang smiled. "Sometime, a man can do things an army could not!"

"Hmph."

The two female warriors sheathed their swords across their backs as they scoffed.

"Brag all you want. We shall see your strength. Enter the camp and speak to our leader!"

The warriors let down their guards and allowed Zhang Yang to proceed further in.

The camp area was as large as a football field with a defensive parameter made out of wood, to block off wild animals. There were at least thousands of tents in the camp, with the largest tent being right in the center. On its sides, were flag poles stuck into the ground, bearing the sigil of the elven race.

Zhang Yang's priority was to search for a Territory. However, he had now been led on a little detour as this place seemed to have a quest for him. He might as well complete the quest. Who knows? The quest might reward him with something valuable!

Zhang Yang walked around and got into the largest tent. Inside, he saw a female Elf wearing completely white ceremonial clothing. Her chest was leaning on the surface of a table. In one hand, she held a light-silver colored magic staff. With her other hand, she was pointing and picking out random spots on what seemed to be a map. There was a worrying frown on her face.

[Priestess Kalor – Song of the Forest] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 68

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 700

The moment Zhang Yang stepped into the tent, Kalor noticed him and lifted her head up to glance at him. After having a look at Zhang Yang, she went back to the map. "So, you're the reinforcement sent by the Union?"

"I guess so." Said Zhang Yang. "Priestess Kalor, what sort of trouble are you in?"

Kalor lean back on her chair and sighed lightly. "A bunch of bandits have set up a stronghold in the Thunderstorm Castle, somewhere north of the forest. Their activities are threatening our very lives. Even though we have set up a front line here, the

bandits would still sneak around here, often attacking our base. They would rob our supplies and kidnap our people to sell them as slaves!"

Zhang Yang cocked his head. "Why don't you guys destroy their stronghold?" he asked.

"Thunderstorm Castle has a perfect, impregnable defense. Their stronghold has the geographical advantage! With mountains surrounding their base, the only entrance in is limited to one! Furthermore, they have set up three magical cannons at the entrance of the stronghold. With our current force, we will be annihilated if we were to start an attack!" said Kalor disgruntledly.

Kalor sighed. Out of the sudden silence, she stood with a sudden glint in her eyes. She looked at Zhang Yang and smirked. "Perhaps our approach to the attack was wrong. Perhaps...if we were to sneak into the stronghold and find out where they store the energy source and ammunition of the magical cannons and destroy that! Once the cannons are down, we could take the opportunity to strike and destroy the stronghold! Human! Do you accept this impossible mission?"

'Ding! Priestess Kalor has a quest for you: Destroy the Defense of Thunderstorm Castle. Will you accept it?'

Alright, now that he had a quest, he has something to do! Zhang Yang nodded. "Priestess, I will do my best to assist our allied Elven brethren!"

'Ding! You have obtained [A Bag of Explosives]!'

[A Bag of Explosives] (Quest Item)

Use: Tick! Tick! Run! It'll blow after 10 seconds!

"Wonderful! I have here a magic cape that will temporary change your appearance into a female elf! There will be bandits roaming around in the forest! When that happens, I want you to let them kidnap you and allow them to take you into their stronghold! When night comes, you can remove your disguise and find the energy source to destroy it!"

Kalor took out a black cape and handed it over to Zhang Yang.

D*mn! What a bold strategy!

Zhang Yang accepted the cape and scolded the developers for thinking of such a psychotic plan!

[Cape of Disguise] (Quest Item)

Use: Turns you into a beautiful Elven female! Removing the disguise will also purge all immobile status! Note: the magic power of the cape is limited to only one hour.

Zhang Yang took all the items, placed them in his inventory, and left the place. Based on the location Kalor had explained, the place that he should be heading for was somewhere to the north of the forest. Zhang Yang rode his way north, and after 20 minutes, he arrived at his destination. Zhang Yang observed the stronghold from afar and understood now why the stronghold was said to be impregnable. The castle was built within a valley of mountains. Although the size of the stronghold was large, it was completely shielded by mountains all around it. There was only one entrance and even that was protected with a river surrounding the castle. To enter the stronghold, one must cross a drawbridge from within the castle itself. Furthermore, the three magical cannons hanging outside the entrance of the castle walls were not mere ornaments. Those contraptions are not some toys; they could easily fire at long range, laying waste to anything they struck.

At first, Zhang Yang thought of using {Shadow of the Void} to sneak into the castle. However, he had second thoughts when he saw the large door being tightly shut. The whole time he lay there in wait, the draw bridge was never lowered, even after he had spent some time waiting for something to happen.

The only option left was to get kidnapped by the bandits as a female elf!

It can't be helped. Zhang Yang sighed and summoned the bear. He rode the bear and started searching the forest for the bandits.

After only five to six minutes, he found a group of bandits, sitting around a campfire roasting what seemed to be their food. Zhang Yang started to move. He got off the bear, took out the cape, and after a bright glow, Zhang Yang turned from a rugged, tough, manly adventurer into a slim, curvy, and sexy elven female. Zhang Yang was now wearing only a rough linen skirt on him. The rest of his original equipment, his shield, his axe, his armor were all hidden beneath the disguise.

He lowered his head and walked slowly towards the group of bandits, entering their aggro range. He then pretended to act frantic and quickly ran away.

"Hey! There's a girl! Chase after her!" The bandits screamed and started to chase after Zhang Yang. The kidnappers were very happy that their "victim" was such an easy catch, practically walking into their hands. After that, they brought Zhang Yang into the stronghold.

When they approached the river, one of the bandits shouted out to the occupants of the castle, and the door to the castle was opened. The draw bridge was lowered and the bandits entered the castle. After pushing Zhang Yang into a small shack, the bandits locked the doors and left him there.

"Huh?"

The disguise effect of the cape could not be dispelled manually! Much worse, when in disguise, Zhang Yang could not even use his weapon. All he could do right now was to wait until the effect wears off by itself. It did not take long for the magical spell to

disperse, returning Zhang Yang to his original appearance. He took out his battle axe and start hacking at the door in front of him.

[Strong Wooden Door] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 100,000

Defense: 1,000

After a series of banging and cracking, the door turned into a pile of splintered wood.

Zhang Yang then exited the shack and started his search one house at a time.

Monsters have a certain level of A.I programming. Since this was just a game, the system would only trigger when a player is within the distance of the monster's aggro, regardless of how visible your actual hiding spot was. As long as you're away from the aggro triggering distance, you can stand, breakdance, or take a dump without being attacked.

[Thunderstorm Castle Bandit] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 6,500

Defense: 60

Zhang Yang summoned the bear and started his killing spree while searching for the cannon's energy source.

Still, the area of the castle was so large that Zhang Yang had been killing for more than three hours, only managing to cover a quarter of the entire place. By then, it was already 6pm. Zhang Yang logged off and had his dinner before coming back to continue his search. After two hours, he arrived at a rather large building. Four guards were standing outside. They were all elite tier!

[Captain of the Red Shirt] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

Just four? Gimme a break...

Zhang Yang pulled on the reins of his bear, and started charging fiercely towards the guards.

Chapter 239: Invincible King Arthur

```
'-1,012!'

'-1,045!'

'-1,009!'

'-1,011!'
```

Four attacks landed simultaneously on Zhang Yang, taking away only 10% of his entire HP! The basic attack values of the bandit captains should only be around 3,500. Their attacks were nothing but a scratch! Furthermore, Zhang Yang's current armor was already leagues ahead of the number two tank in China! With a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment and the pet mount {Shared Life} ability, these four elite monsters were nothing but ants waiting to be squashed!

Zhang Yang smirked and slashed the monsters with {Horizontal Sweep}, dealing more than 3,800 damage of the monsters. There was still, one drawback while fighting with the OP pet mount. Despite the massive boost to the rider's HP, moving around while mounted was a little too meticulous, it lacked the fine control of an individual person's movement. It would be fine if they were fighting a boss, since it's impossible to dodge the lighting speed attacks. However, fighting normal monster would require agile maneuvers and footwork! Furthermore, some skills were inaccessible while mounted.

Zhang Yang got off his mount and stomped the ground hard with {Thunder Strike}, slowing down all four of monsters. Zhang Yang thought of a plan and laughed. In such a small area, Zhang Yang started to kite the monsters around. He finally made it so that the bandits blocked off each other, only being able to attack him one at a time!

With {Block} and other status effect skills, Zhang Yang and the bear killed off the four elite monsters with relative ease.

Among the loots, there was a key.

[Large Gray-Silver Treasure Chest Key] (Useable)

Use: Opens a locked Large Gray-Silver Treasure Chest.

After taking care of the guards, Zhang Yang went up to the large building and slammed the edge of his axe onto the door.

The door was also a destructible target with 500,000 HP and 1,500 Defense. It took Zhang Yang quite some time and a whole lot of banging and hacking before he got the door open.

Bang!

After the wooden door fell apart into many broken planks of wood, Zhang Yang entered the building and saw that it was a huge

storage room, filled with thousands of solid chunks of blue colored crystals. Zhang Yang referred back to the quest helper and saw that he was standing right at where he was supposed to set the explosives. Zhang Yang got on the bear and took out the [Bag of Explosives]. He steeled himself before he lit the fuse, and tossed the explosives into the warehouse before rushing away from the scene like a race horse and its jockey.

BOOM!

A deafening explosion was heard from behind, sending pieces of the building flying in all directions. A large mushroom cloud soared up into the night sky, further darkening the already blackened night sky.

Even though Zhang Yang had left the place before the explosive even began ticking, the shockwave from the explosion had knocked Zhang Yang off his feet, sending him and the bear flying into a stone wall.

Wham!

The collision was so strong that it had taken off as much as a third of his HP!

After the ringing in Zhang Yang eardrums ceased, voices and screams from the bandits started to replace the ringing. Chaos

filled the air and many of the bandits started to run around in massive confusion.

"Kill!"

In the same time, the drums of war could be heard from a distance. Zhang Yang got up and headed to a clear spot where he saw groups of Elven soldiers on leopards appearing outside the Castle! Riding with the speed of the wind, the warriors were charging in fearlessly with the weapons it their hands, ready to strike down anyone in their path!

Wham! Bam! Boom!

The battle started with the padding sound of the running leopards, as they sprinted with their might, carrying their Elven masters into the castle. The cannons on the castle wall had started firing, managing to kill hundreds of Elven warriors. However, since Zhang Yang had already destroyed their ammunition depot, the cannons stopped firing after one volley.

Zhang Yang took this chance to rush over to the castle entrance. He killed the bandits guarding the entrance and took control over the drawbridge. He flipped the switch and lowered the draw bridge to allow the charging groups of Elven warrior to enter the castle.

Kalor was also present in the fight. She was riding a black Night Panther. She approached Zhang Yang. He saw her legs seeping out of her ceremonial outfit, revealing her sexy jade white thighs! "You did it, warrior!" said Kalor happily.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Destroy the Defense of Thunderstorm Castle. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

Zhang Yang smiled weakly and said, "Thanks to the Gods of war, I'm barely alive at the moment!"

Kalor smiled back and turned to gaze up towards the peak of the castle. "Warrior! We're not done yet. Even though the defenses have been taken out, there is still much to do before victory can be claimed. The leader of these bandits is an extremely powerful beastman! I have heard that his sword strikes are so strong that they could break apart even the strongest shields ever! He is said to have torn wild beasts apart with his bare hands! We...our people call him...Arthur the Butcher!"

Zhang Yang stared back at her, unfazed. "In the face of justice, let those who worship evil's might! Beware my power, justice shall fight!" Zhang Yang tried to say something cool but he butchered the line on the way.

Still, Kalor was impressed by his speech and expressed her admiration. "Well said, let's go now, Warrior! Together we shall end this monster's life!"

'Ding! Priestess Kalor has a quest for you: Kill King Arthur. Will you accept it?'

Duh...Accept.

"Warriors of the night, to me!" 12 female Elven warriors, all of them atop Night Panthers gathered close to Kalor as she raised her magic staff up high.

"It's time! For revenge!"

"FOR REVENGE!"

13 Night Panthers and their riders dashed towards the peak of the castle. Zhang Yang followed closely behind on his white bear.

Along the way, they had to jump across dead corpses of both bandits and the Elven warriors. War is always cruel. War does not spare the innocent. War knows no peace. War will always bring death.

"Foolish Elves! How dare you sneak into my territory! I shall mince your flesh!" A thunderous roar blasted through the entire stronghold. The roar was so loud that all of the riders, including Zhang Yang had to let go of the reins to cover their aching eardrums!

Kalor face turned green. "It's...It's the demon! It's Arthur!"

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Sounds of crashing rubble was heard in the distance, along with the sound of a woman wailing in pain. In a flash, a three meter tall, green-skin man appeared right in front of everyone. In his right hand was a massive sword, dripping in fresh blood. In his other hand was an Elven warrior's neck. She was choked so hard that she could not even scream. All she could do was struggle in vain.

When the green monster saw Zhang Yang and Kalor, he cracked a malicious grin and tightened the grip in his left hand with a force so strong that the sound of cracking bones could be heard. The struggling Elven warrior suddenly collapsed as her life was taken in an instant.

[Leader of the Bandits, King Arthur] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 68

HP: 4,000,000

Defense: 700

"Kill the demon!" Kalor roared. She jumped down from her Night Panther and sprinted forward. Once in range, she pointed her staff at King Arthur and started chanting a spell.

All the 12 Elven Warrior followed behind and charged towards King Arthur after getting off their mounts.

"Bah! Imbecile little weaklings! This King could kill you all with one finger!" King Arthur laughed manically. He lifted a massive leg and swept across the field knocking, into one of the female Elven warriors.

Wham!

The boss force was so overwhelmingly strong that, when the female warrior was hit, all she could do was cry "Argh" and slide across the floor, silent. The body was so disfigured that the chest had caved in, as if all the bones had shattered from within. Blood oozed out from her mouth, nose, eyes and ears.

King Arthur brandished his sword and let out a glowing ray of light. At the speed of lightning, the sword slashed through four Elven warriors so swiftly that Zhang Yang could not even make out what he was doing!

Shiiing! Shiiing! Shiiing!

After what seemed to be a million strikes, blood spilled everywhere like broken fountains. All four targeted female warriors were literally turned into fine mince meat. Pieces of them fell to the ground like a large pork loin going through a meat grinder. The result was so disturbing that Zhang Yang could not bear to look.

The battle was completely one sided. Five warriors were taken down, no, mercilessly destroyed in an instant!

D*mn! Those warriors were elite tier! They had at least 130,000 HP each! Yet, even they had not lasted for more than a second against the boss! This was a battle that he cannot turn from! Zhang Yang jumped down from his mount and rushed towards King Arthur.

{Wild Charge}!

Zhang Yang commanded the bear to charge up to the boss as he slashed with his axe.

Immune!

Boom!

All attacks, including the blast of {Punishment Ray} from Kalor were useless against King Arthur! All their attacks were only responded with the word "Immune".

D*mn! All attacks are immune? How are we supposed to fight!?

Kalor face turned white as a paper. The staff in her hands trembles from her fear. "Y-You! You demon! You have the Sword in the Stone!" Kalor cried as she saw the huge bloodied sword in King Arthur's hand. Despair filled her soul.

"Hahaha! I am the King's Candidate! A man who will become

king! All those who oppose me shall die!" King Arthur lifted with his sword. Zhang Yang noticed that he was about to do the same series of quick slashes that he performed earlier, and prepared for the attack.

The sword glowed again and this time, this time, King Arthur swung the sword again, instantly killing every single target in his sight. In just a few seconds, all 12 of the Elven warriors were in pieces. The last target was Zhang Yang. He could not see where King Arthur was, but only caught a gleam of the sword. A strike was coming!

{Shadow of the Void}!

Zoom!

Zhang Yang entered an alternate dimension and avoided the boss ultimate killing strike!

Since the boss was invincible, it had to be a mechanism set by the quest. In order to kill King Arthur, he had to find a way to dispel the invincibility on him! Since it was part of the story line, King Arthur's ability to kill everyone with a single strike seemed reasonable.

Zhang Yang withdrew all the way back into the corner of a random shack. After the 20 second effect expired, Zhang Yang reappeared back to the "real" world and walked out of the shack. King Arthur was long gone by now. However, Zhang Yang still

kept his guard up. He walked carefully towards the spot he was standing and found Kalor's mount lying dead on its side. He walked a little further to find Kalor's body split in two. She was dead before her body could even fall to the ground.

D*mn!

When Zhang Yang approached the body, a bright, white light flashed. Countless of white particles emerged from Kalor's corpse and gathered together to form a humanoid figure.

[Kalor's Soul] (Normal, Summon)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

Defense: o

Zhang Yang approached the soul and spoke to her.

"Warrior! You're all right! Thank the gods!" said Kalor's hallowed soul as she expressed her happiness and surprise.

If it was another player doing the quest, they would surely have been killed. If Zhang Yang had died, he would have had to return back here to revive himself. The story would continue on anyway.

Zhang Yang kept quiet. Not knowing what to reply, he nodded.

"Warrior! My soul will not last any longer." Said Kalor.

"That demon had obtained the legendary artifact! The Sword in the Stone! He now has an immortal body! No one...no one could kill him now! I need you to find an Elf called Merlinda! Currently, she resides in the Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal! You can find her there! Only she has a way to defeat the demon! Please make haste, warrior! You must kill him before he kills all my brethren!"

Arghh---

Kalor's soul trembled broke off into countless of light particle. The particles faded away eventually.

'Ding! Quest Change: Kill King Arthur. Please proceed to Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal and search for Merlinda!'

Merlina...what a familiar name. Wasn't she the same NPC that was held captive in the Underground Tower back then? Zhang Yang tried to recall. He summoned the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and rode out of the stronghold. Luckily, there were no surviving bandits as they had all been killed by the attacking Elven warrior army back then. The place was completely deserted and Zhang Yang rode swiftly, leaving Thunderstorm Castle behind.

Now, the million-dollar question. Where was this Palace of Frozen Fractal?

Right now, the only thing that came into his mind was Han Ying Xue, the directional idiot, the broken compass! That lady had absolutely no sense of direction, but had a knack of finding the right places at the right times! Zhang Yang could only feel disgruntled about it.

Hold up. Zhang Yang remembered something. He tried to recall the memories back from his past experience. Back then, he remembered grinding before in the same map, and went the Palace of Frozen Fractal. There was a boss called the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, which was a Yellow-Gold tier. However, back then, the boss was already engaging a guild. He had only managed to catch a glimpse of it. It was supposed to be...the West side!

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and headed towards the West of the map.

Zhang Yang rode fast and passed through a thick forest. After a while, the forest cleared up and reveal a large flatland. In the distance ahead, Zhang Yang could now see the silhouette of a palace, and as he got closer and closer, the image of the palace got clearer. Zhang Yang stood from a distance, surveying the entire palace. It was as large as a football stadium! It was probably the same size as the sphinx in Egypt!

The entrance to the palace had two skeletal soldiers guarding it. Their deep, dark eyes was lit up with the familiar green-emerald colored flames.

[Frozen Fractal Skeletal Warrior] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

From the looks of it, and the names of the skeletal warriors, this must be the place!

Zhang Yang felt a little drowsy and found out it was already 12 midnight. He quickly checked around his location and logged out, calling it a day.

The next day, after his daily routine, he logged back in and reappeared at the same place. He summoned the white bear and rode towards the palace. When Zhang Yang was within range, he charged into them and start his assault. The aggro range of the skeletal warrior was extremely large. Before Zhang Yang could enter their melee range, they had already pulled out their spears, let out their roar, and charged towards Zhang Yang.

As soon as Zhang Yang got within 10 meters from the skeletal warriors, Zhang Yang jumped down from the bear and used {Charge}, colliding into one of the skeletal warriors. At the same

time, Zhang Yang commanded the bear to used {Wild Charge} and engage another skeletal warrior.

{Blood Rage}! {Horizontal Sweep}!

Wham! Four counts of extremely high damage was inflicted!

Two of the monsters were stunned and the remaining two struck Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Thud! Zhang Yang stomped the ground, activating {Thunder Strike}, slowing down the four monsters as they moved slower towards him.

{Blast Wave}!

Four "-593!" popped out and all of the monsters was stunned again.

The white bear could only focus on one monster at a time, chomping on them. This Yellow-Gold pet's regular attack was high, but sadly, its skills were lackluster, dealing only 1,900 DPS. Still, it was a value that could be evenly matched with a fully Gray-Silver geared Level 50 player!

Luckily this was not a boss! The monster's attack speed was fast,

but not fast enough to be unavoidable. Without breaking a sweat, Zhang Yang danced around with the monsters and played them like they were just nothing but dance partners. He quickly killed them all while only losing as much as 5,000 HP! He did not even need to sit down to eat any recovery snacks!

Zhang Yang proceeded to enter the palace. After passing through the gates, Zhang Yang entered a flower garden with thousands of withered flowers. There were pathways to the left and right that branched out from the main path. The palace was so old, who knows how many years it had once stood in glory before turning into ruins. With cracked walls and broken pillars lying everywhere; the once beautiful marbled floor was now just pieces of broken tiles. Only two to three pieces of marble tiles were still intact to tell hints of their tale.

Zhang Yang followed his usual behavior and took the pathway to the left.

Crack!

In just a few steps in, the ground beneath Zhang Yang cracked open. A pair of skeletal hands came out from the soil and grabbed Zhang Yang's legs. No wonder the pathway was so empty! All the monsters were hiding beneath the ground!

At a simple mental command, the bear growled fiercely and began swinging its massive claws.

Chapter 240: Frozen Ice Weeding

This monster that had a fetish for human feet was also a Frozen Fractal Skeletal Warrior. After sneaking up on Zhang Yang, the monster got out of the ground, covered in dirt and sand. The eyes were just the same as the previous skeletal warrior, malice-filled green-emerald flames and sought nothing but destruction. However, no matter how malicious it was, any non-boss monster was nothing but a scarecrow waiting for Zhang Yang to mow down.

The pair of Zhang Yang and the [Gold-Eared Bear King]turned this monster into a pile of brittle bones within half a minute. The monster dropped a few [Cotton Cloths] and 60 copper coins. What a stingy monster!

Zhang Yang continued down the pathway and confronted many more hidden skeletal warriors. However, no matter how many of them came up from the ground, it was their suicide wish. Without breaking a sweat, Zhang Yang sent them back to whence they came; into the ground.

Just as Zhang Yang was about to turn a corner, he caught a glimpse of a shiny object.

"Hm?"

He walked a few steps backwards and examined the object closely. The shiny object was a crystallized leaf growing from a plant. The branch had three leaves growing from it and was hidden behind a large rock in the corner. If hadn't been paying attention, he would have surely miss it completely.

This...this is a Frozen Ice Weeding!

Even though Zhang Yang had never practiced "Herb Picking", and was unable to detect herbs and their positions in the mini-map, he knew the importance and value of this super famous herb!

[Frozen Ice Weeding] is a main ingredient when it comes to crafting [Beginner Mobility Potion]!

What is the most important thing when it comes to PvP? It would be the ability to counter status effect skills! If a player was inflicted with a status effect, it would bring an end to the fight no matter how strong one's attack was!

[Mobility Potion] is a potion that grant immunity to immobile, slow, and stun effects! This is extremely important to Hunters, Thief, and a few melee class characters! For example, the longest status effect came from the Ice branch of Spells. When a player reaches Level 60, Cryomancers could learn the skill -- {Heart of Ice}. This skill would grant an additional slowing effect to {Frost Arrow}! By then, they could easily play catch and chase with other melee attacking players until the latter died!

Take Hunters for example, because of their minimum range, once an enemy got within their range, they would be sitting ducks if they could not regain distance!

[Mobility Potion] was so valuable because of the fact that status control skills existed in the first place!

Even though [Beginner Mobility Potion] would only last for three seconds, it was ample time in PvP. 3 seconds could either save you or completely ensure victory! This potion is a must-have in any Professional League tier fights!

However, the most troubling problem with [Beginner Mobility Potion] was the scarcity [Frozen Ice Weeding]! Besides guilds that had the item and sold them out, no one else knew where to harvest the herb!

Now, Zhang Yang has discovered that secret. It had been here all along! This place, the Sacred Palace of the Frozen Fractal was where this herb came from!

It was no wonder why so many guilds in his previous life had waged wars against each other to occupy this place! Not only did it host the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, it was also the place that spawns [Frozen Ice Weeding]!

Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre was a Yellow-Gold Level 60+ boss, and once players exceeded Level 100, no one would even want to farm for Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment! However, that was not the main point! The most valuable loot to be obtained from this place was the [Frozen Ice Weeding]! Potions and Herbs will always remain relevant at any level!

There were other tiers of potions besides Beginner, such as

Normal and Advanced, with Normal having a five second effect and Advanced having a 10 second status immunity duration. The other two tiers of potions were as hard to produce as the Beginner tier. The main ingredient to craft the potion was even harder and rarer than [Frozen Ice Weeding]! That was why, these three tiers of Mobility Potion were highly demanded in the potion market! They were one of the most sought after ever, in the market.

Zhang Yang cracked a smile. This place is a gold mine! He will make sure that Lone Desert Smoke occupies this holy ground!

However, it was a pity that he did not learn "Herb Picking". If he attempted to dig out the herb, it would only destroy the herb. He needed a player with the harvesting skill to come and dig it out. Ever since Zhang Yang had announced that he will support artisantype players, many players in Lone Desert Smoke started to "spawn" gathering-type players. They would not spend much time leveling, investing all their time in gathering herbs, mining minerals, cutting leathers, and other materials! As long as they could complete a certain quest, they would be paid and rewarded!

•••

The Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal had three sections, the Front Wing, Middle Wing, and the Rear Wing. Between each hall was a huge flower garden in the middle of the palace. Zhang Yang proceeded on killing several more skeletal warrior for at least another hour and managed to clear the Front Wing. He walked through the withered garden and moved on to the Middle Wing.

Along the way, Zhang Yang took notice of the herbs. [Frozen Ice

Weeding] only grew in the flower garden and along the pathway. There was not a single herb in the main wing. The herb was most prevalent in the gardens! After a rough estimation, Zhang Yang counted at least 100 pieces of [Frozen Ice Weeding] just in the Front Wing and Middle Wing! If the spawn rate in the Middle and the Rear Wing were similar enough, he could harvest at least 150 pieces of [Frozen Ice Weeding] in one sweep. Since herbs respawned in between the time of 30 minutes and 2 hours, he could harvest around 1,800 pieces in one day, if he were to calculate the respawn rate at its longest possibility -- 2 hours!

Since the three tiers of Mobility Potions could be sold for 100, 200, and 400 gold coins each, 1,800 pieces of [Frozen Ice Weeding] would produce at least 1,800 [Beginner Mobility Potion]! That meant that he could earn 180,000 gold coins in one day!

Hehehe, no wonder those guilds in my previous life were fighting for their lives to get this place! I smell gold here! A huge pile of gold!

Zhang Yang nodded his head in appreciation and continued on his way.

As the name Frozen Fractal suggested, this place was filled with shiver-inducing chilly air. Even though the surrounding environment was like summer, the place was basically a freezer! Luckily, players could easily adjust the sensitivity of their five senses, or else, they would be sneezing from the cold!

The Middle Wing was slightly larger than the Front Wing. The moment Zhang Yang walked into the Middle Wing, an ice arrow

came out of nowhere, flying across the room and stabbing Zhang Yang.

'-1,812!'

Zhang Yang received a sudden damage. A skeletal spellcaster reveal itself in front of Zhang Yang. Its appearance was roughly the same as the skeletal warrior, only that it wielded a staff instead of a sword.

[Frozen Fractal Skeletal Spellcaster] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

MP: 60,000

Defense: 450

Zhang Yang had a sudden thought. He recalled that the bear had the skill {Icy Build}. He should test the skill and figure out its potential!

With a mental command, the bear growl and headed straight for the skeletal spellcaster. The skeletal spellcaster had been in the middle of casting another {Frost Arrow}. Before it could finish it, the white bear had charged in with {Wild Charge}, stunning the monster, interrupting the spell at the same time. The bear started swinging its massive claws and attacked the monster. After one second, the monster recovered and faced the bear, starting to chant a spell to attack the bear.

'-351!'

The {Frost Arrow} flew across and dealt severely weakened damage to the bear! Rather strong!

Zhang Yang laughed and praised the effectiveness of the pet skill! It had been worth every coin! He used {Charge} and rushed towards the monster. He stacked {Cripple Defense} and increased the overall damage dealt by him and the bear. To defeat a high HP, high Defense monster, {Cripple Defense} should be prioritized first!

Zhang Yang and the bear continued to attack the monster until its HP dropped below 20%. Zhang Yang accumulated his Rage and used {Killing Cleave}!

'-7,565!'

D*mn, it was not a critical hit.

{Blood Rage}! {Warrior's Will}!

{Destructive Smash}!

'-8,900!' Critical hit.

20% of the skeletal spellcaster's HP was 26,000. After that combo, it was left with only 9% HP!

Without much effort, the skeletal spellcaster was turned into a pile to bones and scattered into the wind.

Zhang Yang continued killing for yet another hour, before arriving at the lowest part of the Middle Wing. There, he saw four skeletal spellcasters guarding something that looked like a cage. Inside the cage was a female Elven priestess who wore a white ceremonial outfit. Both her hands and legs were shackled with iron chains.

When Zhang Yang observed the female priestess' name tag, he smirked. It was Merlinda – Song of the Forest. She was the same NPC that Zhang Yang had saved from the Underground Tower! Right now, he was still wearing the same ring that he had obtained from the "Beyond Perfect" quest!

This woman, how did she get caught again! She must be sharing the same fate as a certain plumber's princess.

Zhang Yang shook his head and patted the bear. With a mental command, the bear king growled and charged towards the skeletal spellcasters.

This time, it was best to let the pet to take the lead. The four skeletal spellcaster started their powerful spells, but since the white bear had a 90% Frost damage resistance, it was the best meat shield against Ice Spells!

```
'-349!<sup>'</sup>
```

'-373!'

'-330![']

'-364!'

Four weakened damage texts popped out above the white bear!

The bear growled and charged towards one of the skeletal guards. It lifted its massive claw and started attacking.

Zhang Yang followed his bear closely behind and used {Charge} on another monster.

{Blood Rage}! {Horizontal Sweep}!

In an instant, all monsters switched targets and started to cast {Frost Arrow}, directed at Zhang Yang.

{Blast Wave}!

A blast waves burst out and stunned all four monsters at the same time.

"Warrior!? Is that you?" Merlinda was both surprised and happy when she noticed Zhang Yang. As a strong A.I NPC, it was not surprising for her to have a good "memory".

Zhang Yang grunted a reply and continued to kill the monsters. He thought to himself, "Back when I fought Terpot Ryhar, this NPC was shackled and lying on the ground. Even after the battle was over, she was still lying down there! I was busy looting the equipment and the [Land Lease] and died no sooner. I wonder, how did this woman escape from that place?"

The four elite skeletal spellcasters were rather strong. Zhang Yang had to use {Shield Wall} and activate {Merlinda's Shadow}, {Berserker's Heal}, even using {Shadow of the Void} to escape the battle. He let the bear tank the monsters as he ate some recovery snacks before rejoining the battle with full heath. Only then, did he manage to kill all the monsters successfully.

"Priestess, how did you end up here?" Zhang Yang tried to open the cage but the system rejected it, notifying Zhang Yang that the cage could not be opened via attacks. It could only be opened with a key.

"I was here to search for my race's Fallen Celestial Artifact!" said Merlinda earnestly. "This place was once a sacred palace of the moon god ritual! However, as you can see, this place has succumbed to the flow of history -- time itself. After thorough research, I have found out that the Elven Celestial Artifact, the Staff of Prophecy was here! However, when I arrived here to search for the artifact, I found out that sacred palace of the past had already been taken over by an evil and powerful spectral spellcaster! Even though I tried my best to confront the monster, I was unable to fight him. He locked me up and forced me to start the Ritual of the Moon God, to give him the power of the Moon God!"

Chapter 241: Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre

"Priestess! I bring grave news!" Zhang Yang retold the events that had happened where Kalor had led an attack to assault the Thunderstorm Castle which failed miserably when King Arthur slaughtered them all.

Merlinda listened and could only express her sadness and rage. After a while, she finally opened her mouth to speak. "The Sword in the Stone is a godly relic with unlimited power. Legend has it that only the bravest of warriors could lift the sword out of the stone. Warrior, I would need your help! As I am now imprisoned, I would need you to find the Frozen Key that is on the person of the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre! You'll need to get the key and the Staff of Prophecy! Only then, will I be able to confront King Arthur with his Sword in the Stone!"

'Ding! Quest Change: Kill King Arthur. The quest requires you to kill the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre and get the Frozen Key and the Staff of Prophecy for Merlinda!'

"O' brave warrior! Please take extreme caution! Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre has powerful Ice magic! She cannot be defeated easily!" Merlinda warned Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang nodded. "Priestess, rest assured. I shall return with the key and the staff!"

After getting out of the Middle Wing, Zhang Yang had to pass through the flower garden. Along the way, he spotted many more [Frozen Ice Weeding] and was extremely agitated. Soon later, a man who sat atop a bear entered the Back Wing, having killed more than 10 monsters along the way.

The largest area in palace was the Middle Wing, and the smallest was the Back Wing. As expected, 'smaller' was just a relative term. It was still huge. The area was supported by 12 humongous pillars. Each pillar was at least 60 to 70 meters tall. Close to the ceiling were carvings that looked like the Moon God. Along the pillars were 12 Spectre Warriors sitting atop Skeletal War Horses, standing guard beside their respective pillars. Each of the warrior was fully clad in thick metal armor, with only the green-emerald flaming eyes visible through the gaps of the helmet visors.

[Frozen Fractal Death Knight] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 300,000

Defense: 1,000

Note: Beware the Harbinger of Doom! Beware their swords.

In the deepest part of the palace, there was a huge majestic throne. Sitting on the throne was a huge being with the name tag "Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, Luke Vick". Even though it was a spectre, it did not possess any skeletal body like the normal spectre monster. This one looked like a mighty monarch, a dominating and powerful aura being emitted from its throne.

[Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, Luke Vick] (Yellow-Gold, Spectre)

Level: 68

HP: 10,000,000

MP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,200

Zhang Yang smirked. He might have trouble against any other boss with such stats. But this particular one was clearly ice-based! It would be nothing but an easy target for his bear!

Now, before worrying about the boss, its best to take care of the 12 death knights!

Zhang Yang picked up a small rock about the size of his palm and tossed it at one of the death knight.

Pak!

It hit. The rock toss was nothing but a provocation. It did not inflict any sort of damage to it. The death knight that was hit by the rock turned around and bellowed. It pulled the reins of its skeletal horse and charged towards Zhang Yang.

What a cheater! How could it use a mount inside an indoor environment!

Zhang Yang sighed and took several steps back, waiting for the right timing as the monster entered his own effective range.

Shuush!

Zhang Yang glided across the floor with {Charge} and quickly inflicted several layers of {Cripple Defense}. He quickly chained a normal attack after and dealt 1,726 damage.

The Death Knight recovered quickly after Zhang Yang's {Charge}, this time, before it could even lift it sword, Zhang Yang commanded the white bear to use {Wild Charge} and stunned the monster again. After one second, the monster recovered again and finally able to attack. It lifted its huge sword and swung it towards Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Having completed the five layers of {Cripple Defense}, Zhang Yang's attack was raised to a higher level. Slowly, each strike of his

axe increased in damage over time.

Suddenly, the emerald flames in its eyes glowed with a sudden burst of flame, and the sword in its hands burst out in dark green flames!

'Ding! Frozen Fractal Death Knight has used {Death Strike}. All damage increased by 100%!'

'-6,212!'

The {Death Strike} was similar to a Critical strike, it did double damage. Its basic attacking power had reached 10,000! Only a tank could survive after taking the hit! If other classes were to replace him, he or she would surely die!

Zhang Yang jumped in surprise. He quickly hopped atop the bear's saddle. {Shared Life} was automatically applied, boosting up his HP to 41,920.

Technically, Zhang Yang's and Gold-Eared Bear King's combined attacks were superior to that of the Death Knights. However, they would be unable to hold for too long as the monster had 300,000 HP. Zhang Yang was forced to use {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, and even {Merlinda's Shadow} to kill the monster.

At his current level, Zhang Yang had already upgraded {Shield Wall} to Level six. Coupled with the set-equipment's set-effect that reduced {Shield Wall}'s cool down by one minute, {Shield Wall}'s

current cool down was only at three minutes and 30 seconds! This was only 30 seconds more than {Berserker's Heal}'s cool down.

After eating some recovery snacks, Zhang Yang waited for two minutes before attacking the second Death Knight. Since each Death Knight would take up some time, and Zhang Yang would need to wait for his skill to finish their cool down, he would spend more than 50 minutes to kill all 12 Death Knights. All that was left now was only the boss itself! But before he started the fight, Zhang Yang decided to wait until all his skills were ready to be used.

Zhang Yang paced slowly to the bear and gently patted the white's fluffy head. "It's time, Whitey. Bite that sucker!"

Whitey growled and kicked off his velvety paws, rushing towards the boss. Since mounts were generally faster than a character's movement speed, the white bear reached the boss's aggro range fairly quickly.

Luke Vick stood up in surprise and bellowed angrily. "The living? How could the living be in my palace! Die!"

It raised it's the staff in its right hand and started casting a {Frost Arrow}. With a quick mental command, Zhang Yang made the bear U-turn sharply. Before the boss could finish casting the spell, the bear had already ran out of the effective range, wagging its stumpy, fluffy white tail at the boss to stare.

Enraged, Luke Vick started coming after the bear. When the boss walked out of the throne room, Zhang Yang quickly greeted it with

```
a {Charge}.
 {Cripple Defense}!
 '-288!' {Crippled Defense}.
 '-1,629!' Normal attack.
 The aggro on the bear was quickly replaced by Zhang Yang. The
boss started targeting Zhang Yang, casting {Frost Arrow}.
 {Wild Charge}!
 The bear rocketed towards the boss and clawed at the boss
ferociously. However, it seemed that the skill was unable to
interrupt the boss' skill casting.
 In that case!
 {Crash Magic}!
 Immune!
 D*mn! It did not work. It was not as weak as the one in the Tomb
of the Shadow Ash!
```

'-6,212!'

The boss' damage was strong as well! With one strike, the boss was able to take away a quarter of Zhang Yang's HP!

Zhang Yang inflicted five layers of {Cripple Defense} and started his full-scale assault. He consumed a bottle of [Beginner Power Potion], used {Warrior's Will}, hacking away with {Destructive Smash}!

WHAM!

'-10,596!'

Such power! Even Zhang Yang himself was shocked at his own damage. At the current stage, which non-tank character would survive this hit?! What if, in the future, Zhang Yang could get his hands on the "God of War" inheritance and gain the ability to wield a two-handed weapon, using its long 3.8 seconds attack interval weapon to strike an enemy. What sort of damage would he deal in that case?

It was a pleasant surprise but he currently had an immediate threat to deal with. The boss was strong to begin with. {Frost Arrow} was fired every three seconds. With 10,000 basic attack, Zhang Yang would be receiving a constant 2,000 DPS! How long would he last against a boss that had such an abundance of HP?

After 25 seconds, Zhang Yang HP was reduced down to a dangerous number of 237 HP. However, he did not activate {Berserker's Heal} and fought the boss, regardless of his HP.

'+10,032!'

A {Frost Arrow} hits Zhang Yang on the chest, however, instead of killing him, Zhang Yang recovered his health!

This is the 5 set-equipment set-effect of his Furious set!

"When you received a fatal attack, the attack will not kill you, and will cause you to recover 40% of your maximum HP. Effect will only proc once every FIVE minutes."

After three seconds, a second {Frost Arrow} was fired, and Zhang Yang took the attack was left with only 4,031 HP

The boss had started its next attack.

{Frost Arrow} 1 seconds...2 seconds...2.9 seconds...

Pew!

{Shadow of the Void}!

Zhang Yang tucked his tail and ran away from the boss. He reappeared far from the boss' effective attack range and ate recovery snacks to heal his HP. Back at the battle, the boss had switched his target to the bear after losing sight of Zhang Yang.

'-1,023!'

Pew!

A {Frost Arrow} was fired and the bear barely felt it!

Hm. {Icy Build}, nice job!

With haste, Zhang Yang quickly recovered himself back to full health and used {Charge}. This time, to prevent him from gaining too much aggro value, Zhang Yang had unequipped his shield to disable his passive skill {Shield Oath}.

The bear was now the main tank and Zhang Yang acted as the main attacker! This was one of the reasons why Zhang Yang did not want to "combine" with the bear. It was to allow the bear to gain enough aggro to pull the boss! In the "combined" status, attacks of a mount would be registered as the attacks of its master!

After eight attacks from the boss, Zhang Yang mentally command the bear to use {Wild Recovery} which healed the bear 50% HP over a period 10 seconds.

After another 20 seconds, Zhang Yang aggro value had exceeded the bear's, he immediately reduced his skill usage to allow the bear to regain the boss' aggro. After two minutes into the fight, the bear was finally dying after being shot countless times. Zhang Yang quickly equipped his shield and hopped onto the bear, raising the "combined" HP to 21,420 / 41,920.

Even though Zhang Yang possessed strong damage reduction skills, his damage reduction was inferior when compared to the white bear's {Icy Build}. Just 30 seconds into the battle, Zhang Yang was already being beaten to a pulp!

```
{Berserker's Heal}!
```

'+**4**1,920'

Once Zhang Yang triggered the skill and healed both himself and the bear, he hopped down and started to fight, one man and one bear!

However, back when Zhang Yang and the bear were linked together, Zhang Yang had gathered a huge amount of aggro from the boss. When Zhang Yang separated from the bear, the boss switched to Zhang Yang instead of the bear. As the battle progressed dangerously and he was close to death once again, he used {Rearm} and activated {Shadow of the Void} to run away, again!

Chapter 242: The Sudden Appearance Of A Territory

Zhang Yang managed to lose his aggro once again, forcing Luke Vick to cast {Frost Arrow} spell at Whitey instead. Zhang Yang recuperated briefly, hefted his battle axe without its usual partner, the shield, and dashed towards Luke Vick.

After two minutes, Whitey { Wild Recovery}'s cooldown was completed, and perfect cycle was bound to fall into place!

Zhang Yang had cleared his aggro twice. Whitey's DPS was at least 1,600, and Zhang Yang was intentionally controlling his firepower throughout the battle. Thus, Luke Vick's aggro was securely locked on Gold-Eared Bear King!

'{Wild Recovery}, unite, {Berserker's Heal}, split...'

Luke Vick's HP continuously reduced as they repeated the perfect cycle over and over again!

Ten minutes later, Zhang Yang's {Shadow of the Void} was ready again. He used {Shadow of the Void} again after madly slashing at Luke Vick to fully capitalize on the opportunity, stealing the aggro from Whitey for a few short moments!

40 Minutes later, Luke Vick's HP bar was at its end, the boss suddenly roared loudly, an expression of disbelief on its face, and fell defeated!

'Ding! You have slain Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, Luke Vick, you have acquired 10,000,000 Experience points!'

Hu!

Zhang Yang let out of a long breath. One of the reasons why he could defeat Luke Vick alone was because he had combined the abilities of his pet mount and and his own skills such as {Beast Taming}, {Berserker's Heal}, {Wild Recovery}, and {Shadow of the Void}. Each one of them was indispensable coming together to form a miraculous culmination!

Luke Vick's loot was generous; there was seven pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment and a lot of Gray-Silver equipment, it was truly awesome!

At Zhang Yang's current level, he did not bother giving any of the Gray-Silver equipment a second look but directly threw them all into his backpack. However, the Yellow-Gold equipment did catch hold of his attention, and he studied them with the seriousness of a curator!

Among the seven pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment, two of them were leather armor, one of them a cloth armor and the other a heavy armor chestpiece, all of them being set equipment! The other two pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment were a cape and a pair of accessories.

[Flawless Defense Cape] (Yellow-Gold, Cape)

HP: +84

Vitality: +21

Equipment: Absorbs 40 damage points each time you take damage.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

[Lover's Charm: Yang] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Use: Immediately teleports you to the target's surrounding. The target is the wearer of [Lover's Charm: Yin]. Cool down time: 3 hours.

Gender Restriction: Male

Level Requirement: 60

[Lover's Charm: Yin] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Use: Immediately teleports you to the target's surrounding. The target is the wearer of [Lover's Charm: Yang]. Cool down time: 3 hours.

Gender Restriction: Female

Level Requirement: 60

This would come in handy! After killing a boss or player, one could use this charm to escape, on the condition that the person who wore this Lover's Charm must already be in a safe place!

But, who should I give this Lover's Charm to?

The most ideal person was Han Ying Xue, because in the future if Zhang Yang ever encountered a powerful boss in the open field, Han Ying Xue could simply use [Lover's Charm: Yin] to teleport to Zhang Yang's location! But if Sun Xin Yu saw the questionable name of the equipment, wouldn't she butcher the two of them?

On the other hand, Wei Yan Er was a cheeky brat, and if Zhang Yang did not hand this novelty item over to her, there would be no end to her whining!

Well, just forget about it, I will decide on this in the future!

Zhang Yang picked up a key that was made entirely out of clear ice and a silvery white magic staff, and placed them all in his backpack. These were the quest items, [Frozen Key] and [Staff of Prophecy]. Unfortunately, despite being a Celestial grade weapon, the [Staff of Prophecy] could not be used as a weapon!

Time to submit the item and complete the quest!

Zhang Yang ran back to the Middle Hall. Merlinda caught sight of him and immediately asked, "Warrior, have you succeeded?"

Zhang Yang took out the [Frozen Key] and opened the gate of the prison. At the same time, the chains on Merlinda were also unfastened. Zhang Yang then answered, "Fortunately, I did not let you down, and completed the task you assigned me!"

"What of the Staff of Prophecy?" Merlinda looked at Zhang Yang nervously.

Zhang Yang took the magic staff out from his backpack and handed it over to Merlinda and said, "The item shall returned to the owner!" He snickered to himself. If it was not a quest item but the real weapon itself, Zhang Yang would just run off with it!

Merlinda suddenly showed a relief expression, took magic staff with both of her hands and gazed at it in excitement!

"Seven thousand years! Seven thousand years! The Staff of

Prophecy has finally returned to the Elves!"

'Ding! Merlinda has received Elf's Celestial weapon, upgrades received!'

A golden light appeared around Merlinda, and the Level 45 Elite NPC immediately leveled up at a rapid pace!

[Merlinda - Song of the Forest] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 15,000,000

MP: 10,000,000

Defense: 1,200

Her excitement was gradually replaced with a solemn expression, and she said, "Warrior, the Elf tribe in Forest of Tanila has suffered great losses to King Arthur, we must destroy the demon as soon as possible! In such a state of emergency, we cannot afford to waste a minute!"

'Ding! Your quest: Kill King Arthur completion requirement changed. Please assist Merlinda in destroying King Arthur together!'

After doing so many tasks, Zhang Yang was back at the starting point!

Zhang Yang nodded and agreed, "We shall set off immediately!"

Both of them ran out of the Front Hall and started summoning their mounts.

"Ao!" Merlinda's mount was a white tiger, it was magnificent and mighty, and just as large as Whitey!

"Let's go!"

The tiger and bear started moving their limbs, and exploded into a sprint through the forest, towards Thunderous Storm Castle.

After half an hour of rushing, both mounts stopped in front of Thunderous Storm Castle. The castle, which had been host to a massacre not long ago, still reeked of bloodshed and anguished deaths. The castle looked like a horror movie from afar, smoking and riddled with holes!

Supposedly, monsters should have spawned around the area but currently in its story mode quest, it was completely deserted.

Merlinda and Zhang Yang reined in their mounts and slowly

entered the castle. Along the way, the bodies of Elves and thieves were scattered throughout the pathway. Merlinda's face was a mix of sorrow and rage!

Both of their mounts increased their speed and reached the front of a cathedral at the top of castle. There was a huge training ground at the entrance, filled with rows of wooden targets.

King Arthur was standing in the middle of the training ground with his sword raised up like a cup of wine. He was huge! Eight elite Thieves were surrounding him and cutting the woody target with weapons for training.

"Demon, your death is coming!" Merlinda shouted zealously and dashed towards King Arthur with her white tiger.

King Arthur cracked a smile and said, "You little'uns, kill this woman!"

The eight Thieves immediately stopped their training and dashed toward Merlinda.

"Warrior, please intercept them, that demon is mine!" Merlinda turned around and loudly shouted to Zhang Yang.

Damn, every time this NPC gets so fired up and always rushes ahead, and I always end up covering her *ss! Zhang Yang grumbled to himself as he dashed forward with his Whitey. Once he entered {Charge}'s attack range, Zhang Yang immediately jumped down

from his mount and dashed towards the frontmost Thief monster, activated {Blood Rage} and used {Horizontal Sweep}!

A bunch of '-3,800' damage texts popped up. Zhang Yang then followed up by using {Block}, increasing his rage points by up to 30 points, and used {Blast Wave}!

The eight Thief monsters were instantly stunned, and Merlinda quickly broke off them and directly dashed towards King Arthur.

Zhang Yang skillfully moved around and kited the eight monsters away. He also did not forget to pay attention to the battle between Merlinda and King Arthur.

"Fool, the battlefield belongs to men and only men. Women only need to stay in bed and nurture the seeds of men into strong descendants!!" King Arthur scoffed at Merlinda, "Pathetic Elves, to actually be led by women, what a weak race!"

"Demon, then witness this weak woman sending you to hell!" Merlinda stopped 30 meters away from King Arthur. She raised her right hand and threw a {Holy Punishment} on King Arthur.

'Immune!'

King Arthur raised up the huge sword on his hand, made a loud laughter and said, "Stupid woman, this is the [Sword in the Stone] given by God, and whoever who wields this will have invincible power! Go to hell!" King Arthur bent his knees slightly, lowering

himself into a horse stance, and launched himself forward, creating a shockwave and breaking the objects beneath his feet and in his surroundings!

"The Magic of Prophecy: Blast Topple!" Merlinda raised up [Staff of Prophecy].

Bang!

This sent the oncoming King Arthur flying back. He rolled on the surface ground like a rock skipping across the surface of water, smashing through ten woody targets and laying sprawled on the ground.

Wow, so this is the power of a Celestial weapon?

Zhang Yang exclaimed to himself while he was pulling the monsters.

"Ha ha ha" King Arthur immediately got up, "You may knock me over, but without causing actual harm, how far can that take you? I have [Sword in the Stone] and I will never be defeated!"

"Then you shall no longer have the [Sword in the Stone]!" Merlinda raised her [Staff of Prophecy] once again and proclaimed in her regal voice, "The Magic of Prophecy: Deprivation!"

Shush, [Sword in the Stone] on King Arthur's hand instantly turned into a ray of silver light that shot directly into the sky and

disappeared.

"Impossible!" King Arthur roared loudly, "B*tch, return me my [Sword in the Stone]!"

King Arthur roared angrily, his skin that was originally green in color flashed red and he dashed towards Merlinda.

'Ding! King Arthur has become enraged after losing [Sword in the Stone]. He will now deal and also receive double damage!'

"The Magic of Prophecy: Blast Topple!" Merlinda simply raised her staff and King Arthur was toppled over immediately. At the same time, Merlinda also cast {Punishment Ray} and a '-4,000' damage text popped up above King Arthur's head. Her attacks were still as weak as ever!

King Arthur started advancing but was toppled over again, before being stung by {Punishment Ray}. The two NPCs were repeating their actions over and over again.

Three minutes later, Zhang Yang threw a chain of life-saving skills and finally killed all eight Thief monsters. Then, he mounted his Whitey and dashed towards King Arthur.

Although Merlinda was a Yellow-Gold boss, her attacks were very weak. Zhang Yang rapidly built aggro and got the undivided attention of King Arthur.

As predicted, Merlinda was a healer through and through, she immediately cast a {Higher Regeneration} on Zhang Yang.

It still restored 5% HP every second, despite her upgraded state. After casting her {Higher Regeneration}, she repeated her actions in Underground Tower, casting {Punishment Ray} after ray at her target.

The difference now was that Zhang Yang had vastly lesser HP back then, so the 5% HP recovery did not help him much. With his massive HP now, the 5% HP recovery was ridiculous!

Restoring him by at least 2,000 HP every second, almost every healer class player would be put to shame.

One of King Arthur's barehanded punches dealt about 6,000 damage on Zhang Yang. But the King attacked rather sporadically, once every two seconds, so if Zhang Yang used {Block} every six seconds, he would reduce the bulk of the DPS to around 2,000 which could be covered by {Higher Regeneration} easily!

On the other hand, King Arthur received double the usual damage which increased Zhang Yang's DPS to around 5,000. With such DPS, the King had his back against the ropes!

With the help of Merlinda's {Higher Regeneration}, Zhang Yang was unbeatable. It was just a matter of time when it comes to slaying King Arthur!

80%, 60%, 40%... King Arthur had 4,000,000 HP, but with the effect of receiving 100% additional damage, his HP dropped dramatically, and his HP bar became empty within six minutes.

Finally, Merlinda blasted her final {Punishment Ray}, and King Arthur cried out, crashing down onto the ground while loots continuously popped out of his body.

Although they won the battle, Merlinda remained stoic. After a moment of silence, she finally spoke up, "Warrior, thank you for your help! I have to go back to my tribe now to see my people whether they are safe, "xin luo si er ke"!"

In the Elven tongue, "xin luo si er ke" held a meaning that could be translated as "farewell".

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Kill King Arthur. Gained 1,000,000 Experience points!'

Merlinda gently patted her white tiger and white tiger took her away rapidly.

That's it?

After going through the trouble of killing a Gray-Silver boss, a Yellow-Gold boss and running all the way forth and back, the reward was 1,000,000 experience points? It was a total waste of time!

Zhang Yang let out of a sigh and picked up the loot. Although all of them were Gray-Silver equipment, he could always sell them for money. Money always brought some happiness at the very least!

[Pseudo Sword in the Stone] (Gray-Silver, One Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 320 - 520

Attack Interval: 2.5 seconds

DPS: 168

Use: Dispels all debuffs and causes you to be immune to all damage and effects. Lasts for 2 seconds.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

This weapon came with an invincibility effect! This was definitely a PVP weapon. Besides, if it had a 2 second invincibility effect prior to being identified; that effect would probably be extended to 3 seconds after the identification process!

This weapon looked familiar to Zhang Yang. Still, even if the invincible effect was incredible, the weapon's tier was too low.

After identification, the weapon's DPS would still be very low. It was not worth giving up the [Dragon Tooth Battle Axe] for the [Sword in the Stone]!

This weapon could only be sold!

However, with this invincible effect, it could definitely fetch a high price!

Finally Zhang Yang's mood lightened up, and he kept the rest of Gray-Silver and Green-Copper equipment. Then, he suddenly caught sight of a piece of light green command order.

The moment his fingers made contact with it, the red color wordings that was unique for system appeared in world channel.

'Server Announcement: The first Territory Command Order has appeared, battle for territory will be held tomorrow at 7.00 pm, all players please make your preparations! Territory's position will be at Forest of Tanila, the exact location will be announced when battle for territory starts! The battle for the territory will last for three hours, when the battle ends, the final player who holds Territory Command Order will become the lord of the territory!'

Chapter 243: Battle For Terra Nulius

F*ck, another forced trade, it activated upon touch!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, he had experienced a Territory Subjugation battle, but never a Battle for Terra Nulius1, so his knowledge on the latter was second-hand, obtained from numerous guides and forums online. Territory Subjugation Battle and Battle for Terra Nulius look similar but they were actually different in meaning and difficulties!

The [Territory Command Order] Zhang Yang triggered was a Battle for Terra Nulius for Thunderous Storm Castle. For tomorrow's battle, Thunderous Storm Castle would become a completely neutral ground, and all the players in the China server would be allowed to participate in this battle. However, the players from the other seven major cities could only participate if they used [Destination Teleportation Scroll]s to teleport across cities, and these scrolls were extremely difficult to come across.

In the Battle for Terra Nulius, the territory itself would be neutral, and there will not be any defensive facilities, so players would be fighting each other uninterrupted. Finally, the one who held [Territory Command Order] at the end of the time limit, would become the owner of territory!

Territory Subjugation Battle were different! It would be the attempt to conquer a territory that has already been claimed by someone else!

To activate Territory Subjugation Battle, a [Territory Subjugation Order] must first be found before it could be used by a guild. After the usage has been registered, both sides had 12 hours for preparation, before battling it out for 3 hours.

If the attacking guild successfully seized the defending guild's territory hall within the time limit, they would then be the new owners of the territory.

In Territory Subjugation Battle, a defending guild could use defensive facilities which would give them a massive edge! After all, in order to seize the territory of another guild, proper price should be paid, shouldn't it?

Zhang Yang tore off [Teleportation Scroll] and thought in his mind, "If I solely rely on our own guild, it'll be too difficult for us to hold on for 3 hours. I'll have to seek for reinforcements!"

Zhang Yang gathered the gang and said, "I got the [Territory Command Order]!"

Zhang Yang thought there would be cheers among them, but he was only greeted with silence. Then Wei Yan Er said, "Ha ha, we knew it was you for sure. When the server announcement popped up, everyone started looking for you!"

Zhang Yang stared back at them awkwardly, these people had too much faith in him!

Zhang Yang asked, "Does anyone know the rules of Battle for Terra Nulius?"

"En!" Daffodil Daydream nodded and answered, "The side who owns [Territory Command Order] has an advantage since they can set up defensive positions before the battle. However, any players who die, regardless of their side, will be directly sent back to main city the main city, and they will be unable to participate any further!"

"Forget about the whole of China, White Jade Castle alone already has 6,000,000 players. Each of us will end up fighting three or four hundred people at once!" Hundred Shots interrupted.

"Not that many!" Han Ying Xue shook her head and said, "The Forest of Tanila is Level 60 map, even if Level 50 players come to this map, they will be hunted down by the monsters. Level 40 players will struggle to pass through the Frozen Sky Wasteland before even reaching Forest of Tanila! So tomorrow, we will be fighting against most Level 50 players, a small amount of Level 40 players, and if we estimate it, a total of 5,000,000 players in the whole of China fit that criteria!"

"That's still an astonishing amount!" Endless Starlight lamented.

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Currently, none of them knows that I have the [Territory Command Order] and they do not know the exact location of the new territory, so that's our headstart! Tomorrow, we will gather all Level 50 and above guild members in the Forest of Tanila first. Then everyone will enter the exact location of the new territory half an hour before the battle starts.

Since no one else knows the exact location of the new territory, we are safe, even if there are spies in our guild!"

Zhang Yang paused for a while and continued, "I will contact Crimson Rage, Sky High and Lost Paradise to help us, and since there will be more territories in the future, we can provide aid in return!"

After the discussion, Zhang Yang contacted Snow Seeker via voice chat.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, are you here to invite Crimson Rage to help you defend and protect your new territory?" Snow Seeker actually stunned Zhang Yang with her words.

Zhang Yang shook his head and asked, "The system did not mention the owner of the [Territory Command Order], why do you all assume that it is me?"

"He he", Snow Seeker gently smiled and said, "When the server announced that the new territory is in the Forest of Tanila, I checked the map and realized that it is a Level 60 map. Besides you, who else is Level 60?"

Zhang Yang was about to mention that level 50 players could very well travel in that map, but most of the Level 50 and above players would not do that!

"Alright, since you guessed it correctly, if I continue lying, it

would be insulting your IQ!" Zhang Yang laughed and said, "That's right, I am really going to invite Crimson Rage help us work together and protect against the enemy!"

"We are allied, I will definitely help you! But..." Snow Seeker's demure tone changed and she smiled gently.

"Alright, what do you want?"

"Guild master Zhan Yu, don't talk to me like I'm an opportunist!"

"Well, so Crimson Rage would actually help us without asking for anything in return. How generous, thank you very much!"

"Hey hey hey, you're really bold! Alright, I'll be straightforward with you. How about this. After winning the new territory, we, Crimson Rage will get 20% of your profits!" Snow Seeker proclaimed!

Damn, such a big appetite!

Zhang Yang quickly shook his head and said, "I can't do that, I still need to invite Sky High and Lost Paradise, if they ask for the same thing, then I will be left with nothing! I should just tear the [Territory Command Order] up if it turns out like that!"

"Then, guild master Zhan Yu, what's your offer?"

"If we win, guild members of Crimson Rage and Lone Desert Smoke can use teleportation portals within the new territory without any charges!"

"Guild master Zhan Yu, you are so stingy!"

"Guild master Snow Seeker, do the counting. Five gold coins are required each time when using the teleportation portal, and you have 20,000 guild members. Every day your guild members would use it at least once. I'm wavering the teleportation fees for your entire guild. After a month, damn, you would save up millions! Besides, wherever the portal takes you would be bound to earn you even more gold!"

"Why don't you just open up a business? You have the potential!"

"Hah, so guild master Snow Seeker agrees with me, right?"

"We are allies, right?" Snow Seeker intentionally let out of a sigh, Zhang Yang was just too tricky for her.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Okay, 5.00 pm, tomorrow, please bring your people to the Forest of Tanila. Half an hour before the battle starts, I will tell you the exact location!"

"... You are really being cautious!"

"Ha ha, one can never be too cautious!"

Afterwads, Zhang Yang also contacted Sky Shaman and Crimson Fire. Both of them also supported Zhang Yang and his strength instantly skyrocketed!

Other than Lost Paradise, Sky High, Crimson Rage and Lone Desert Smoke were all currently top guilds in White Jade Castle. The Dominators had taken a great hit, so they had be ousted from the list, barely able to still be regarded as a strong guild.

Zhang Yang spent 100 gold coins to identify his [Flawless Defense Cape] and its attributes were enhanced.

[Flawless Defense Cape] (Yellow-Gold, Cape)

HP: +120

Vitality: +30

Equipment: Absorbs 58 damage points each time you receive attacks.

Level Requirement: 60

After making some potions, Zhang Yang checked his Little Merchandize Shop's account, and was satisfied. Although [Solid Iron Bar]s were sold out, Resistance Potion was the hot-selling item now. It was only garnering him a daily profit of 300,000 gold coins, but it was a fresh item that would be bound to gain more regulars in Little Merchandize Shop, so the daily profit could rise up to 800,000 coins. Although this could not be compared with the previous [Solid Iron Bar] sales, Zhang Yang realized that profits of Little Merchandize Shop had still increased a little!

Long lasting, stable income was the long-term solution!

Since the server had announced the discovery of a new territory, a large amount of players have started searching around in Forest of Tanila, hoping that they could find the exact location in advance and gain the advantages over everyone else! However, those players who did the searching were depending on a very combustible factor -- luck. Most of the strong guilds instead focused on preparing themselves sufficiently -- a more stable determinant -- before heading for Forest of Tanila.

It was the first territory, a lot of people hoped to win it for themselves, for glory of being the first, if not for the profits that it implicated!

The next afternoon, all the guilds in the eight main cities of China server were moving in large forces and gathered in the Forest of Tanila. Although Forest of Tanila was a Level 60 map, the monsters in that map could not fight so many players. Hundreds of Level 50 and above players wildly slashed at the monsters, wiping the monsters out via sheer numbers!

Half an hour before the battle started, Zhang Yang posted the

coordinates of Thunderous Storm Castle in guild channel and then informed his allies, and immediately gathered all guild members of the four guilds.

Because the system did not announce the exact coordinates of the territory or the current holder of the [Territory Command Order], several of them hung back, waiting for the final announcement. However, if Snow Seeker and some others could guess that Zhang Yang was holding [Territory Command Order] there were others who certainly had the same thoughts. Many guilds tagged along the Lone Desert Smoke envoy as they headed to the castle.

20 Minutes left before the battle started.

Zhang Yang started to set up his defenders. Thunderous Storm Castle's defensive facilities could not be used but Zhang Yang could still make use of the terrain, the moat in front of castle gate, "narrow" doors, and streets.

It would be impossible for 60,000 players to defend against 6,000,000 players in a wide and spacious zone! But, fighting in a castle with such complex architecture, a miracle was possible!

Finally, the bell rang, it was 7.00 pm!

'Server Announcement: The first new territory's coordinate is XXXXX,YYYYY, the name of the territory is Thunderous Storm Castle! Battle for Terra Nulius will last for 3 hours, the final player who holds [Territory Command Order] will become the owner of Thunderous Storm Castle! Starting from now on, Forest of Tanila

will be set as special battlefield, all players will unable to access it! The players who die, will be sent back to White Jade Castle!'

'Server Announcement: The current player who holds [Territory Command Order] is Zhan Yu! The player who holds [Territory Command Order] will be marked on the map and will be unable to leave the area of territory!'

'Server Announcement: Battle for <u>Terra Nulius</u> starts now, counting down!'

Each player in the Forest of Tanila could see the text of a timer -"2: 59: 59" counting down at the upper left corner of their HUD!

Terra Nulius - Probably best if the term is Googled for more details. Basically means unclaimed land, or land where prior owner has relinquished claim. The literal translations of Territory Subjugation Battle and Battle for Terra Nulius were Battle for Territory Snatching and Battle for Territory. It would have been rather half-*ssed if a game coined the latter term as Battle for Unclaimed Land, or Battle for Nobody's Land, and as much as I dislike the use of terms/words/jargons that cause hiccoughs in the flow of a reader, I decided to settle on "Terra Nulius".

Chapter 244: Battle Commences!

'Ding! You will be marked with a special symbol because you hold a [Territory Command Order]!'

'Ding! You cannot leave Thunderstorm Castle, otherwise the [Territory Command Order] will automatically drop!'

'Ding! If you are killed, [Territory Command Order] will have a 100% chance of dropping!'

Suddenly, a huge green command order light appeared on the top of Zhang Yang's head, the light beamed straight into the clouds, even ignoring buildings and obstacles. Players far away from Zhang Yang would definitely see the beacon. He was so exposed that he was practically naked!

"Ha ha ha!" Wei Yan Er could not help but laughed nonstop, out of breath and said, "Noob tank, you look like one of those death row inmates from the past, with a sign on your head and round your neck!"

Han Ying Xue and rest burst out in laughter once they heard Wei Yan Er.

"This is more like a price tag for Zhang Yang to sell his body! Hey ladies, are you all interested to bid for Little Yang? The minimum price is one gold coin!" Fatty Han patted Zhang Yang's shoulder and said.

"Too expensive! That's too expensive!" Wei Yan Er shook her head continuously and said, "If the price is one copper coin, I'll pay on behalf of my cousin!"

"Damn it, cut the bullsh*t, back to your positions!" Zhang Yang shouted, forcing a straight-face, as he tried to reassert his dominance as guild leader!

The Battle for Terra Nulius has started!

Even though many guilds were still rushing over to Thunderstorm Castle from their respective locations, those guilds who already guessed Zhang Yang as the person who held [Territory Command Order] were already formed up outside Thunderstorm Castle. They would have rushed into the castle before everything else, but were repelled! This was because was an invisible barrier outside the gate of Thunderstorm Castle.

Now, who is going to step up to make the first move?

The name of Lone Desert Smoke had spread all over the world as Zhang Yang and his guild, Lone Desert Smoke, had recently broke through all the players in the China server. Even the players in the other seven regions also knew this legendary guild which also tore through new dungeons, with a fierce PvP reputation to boot!

Nobody was willing to step up!

Tick tock, tick tock, the time slowly passed by!

"Kill!" finally there was a guild who could not help but initiate the first attack!

Instantly, like setting off a warehouse of dynamite, more than 10 guilds worked together and started attacking Thunderstorm Castle.

"Boss, why don't we attack?" Traveling Piglet looked at Humbly Gentleman and asked. He probably hated Lone Desert Smoke as much as his leader. Their guild was almost disbanded by Lone Desert Smoke, it made the people of The Dominators extremely furious.

Humbly Gentleman looked at the huge command order light floated on top of Thunderstorm Castle, and although he could not see Zhang Yang, he could clearly see Zhang Yang's location. He sneered and replied, "What's the point of going now? Battle for Terra Nulius lasts for three hours, let the others wear themselves out first! This is not a competition of 'whosoever holds the [Territory Command Order] for the longest time wins'. There is a saying, that coming in time is better than coming early!"

"Then, when should we attack?"

"Hmph, let most of the defenders die off before we take advantage of them!"

Humbly Gentleman's idea sounded good, but he was underestimating the integrity of the defense! The entrance of Thunderstorm Castle was narrow, it was easily defensible, and difficult to fight in, besides, the ranged attackers of four guilds were positioned at the top of castle, while melee attackers were positioned at the entrance. Moreover, many AoE skills were being used at the entrance, killing off the players who had generously bunched themselves up!

The defending side could also use the castle walls as firing cover, simply crouching down when under fire and allowing the healers behind them to recover their HP. The only way of attack the defending side was to have several ranged attackers focus fire on one target at a time, hoping to kill the target off before they could dodge or recover!

Hundreds and thousands of players passed the drawbridge. Even with millions on their side, their numbers would dwindle down to match the number of the defenders. This was not a battle that would be won solely with numbers.

The attacking side had limited options. The more they dallied or tried to form up outside the castle walls, the more fire they took from the defenders. They could only rush forward! As time slowly passed by, more and more guilds gathered and worked together. In such a large scale battle, the power of an individual player was extremely negligible, even the strongest would fall in no time. Every second, deaths occurred, signified by the flashing white lights as players were sent back to their main cities to be resurrected.

Zhang Yang traded, passing the [Territory Command Order] to Fatty Han and said, "Hold on to this, I'm going to do some killing!"

"Damn, I also want to kill people!" Fatty Han groaned.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and went away with his Whitey.

'Server Announcement: Player Slim and Handsome has obtained [Territory Command Order]!'

"F*ck, I don't want this gigolo's price tag!" Fatty Han looked at the green command order light floating over his head in dismay.

Zhang Yang came to the entrance of castle and quickly whirled his axe.

The defenders in front of him slowly died off, and finally Zhang Yang was at the fore. He swung his axe and used {Horizontal Sweep}, and instantly, a bunch of high damage text floated above the players' heads. Some critical strikes instantly brought death to some of them.

'{Blast Wave}!'

A conical shock wave blasted out and his targets were stunned. Zhang Yang and his people took the chance to finish them off, pushing the defense line forwards by four meters! "That's Lone Desert Smoke's guild master, quickly kill him!"

"The one who is riding a bear is Zhan Yu!"

"F*ck, he's powerful! Focus your fire on him!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud as Spellcasters were ill-suited for fast paced assaults as Spellcasters needed to be stationary in order to cast their spells. The players behind them would constantly push them forwards interrupting their casting progress. Thus, they could only use instant casting spells, making them rather useless.

Therefore, those who were at the forefront were Warriors, Knights and Thieves, melee attackers! Faced with physical damage attackers, Zhang Yang had nothing to fear. With his high defense, anyone managing to inflict more than 1,000 damage on him in a single hit would already be a powerful foe!

However, Zhang Yang had 40,000 HP. He could hack and slash at leisure. He also had the backing of four healers, including Han Ying Xue!

Like an ultimate God of war, Zhang Yang stood at the entrance of the castle, completely halting the progress of the attackers! Zhang Yang was just like the <u>Zhang Fei of the past</u>, single-handedly blocking an entire passageway!

"Hurry up, Spellcasters come forward. Kill that Zhan Yu!"

Various guild masters ushered their spellcasters forward. When facing a tank with such high defense, it was pointless to send melee attackers to attack Zhang Yang!

The front line of attacking side was changed to Spellcasters instead of melee attackers. However, Zhang Yang was not stupid, he simply fell back when he saw them approaching. The ranged attackers above his castle ramparts took the opportunity to cast AoE skills, wiping out the Spellcasters!

Defenders had the advantage of engaging with melee attacks on ground level, while assaulting the enemy with ranged attackers on a higher level. It resulted in a multi-layered attack that was devastating to the attackers. Such firepower was almost double or triple that of the attackers!

Zhang Yang could not help but feel relieved that this was not a Level 100 Battle for Terra Nulius! Level 100 players could use flying mounts, totally bypassing any obstacle at ground level!

The entrance of Thunderstorm Castle was like a meat grinder that claimed the lives of several players within the first hour! However, the number of attackers still greatly outnumbered the defenders. The attacking side took out a defender for every 10 to 40 casualty, relentless assaulting the defenders. They finally broke through the entrance of Thunderstorm Castle!

"Retreat!" Zhang Yang raised his axe, and they fell back to the courtyard, taking advantage of the narrow drawbridge that could

be used as a bottleneck against the attackers! However, without the high ground for the defenders to launch attacks from above, they had lost considerable firepower!

Luckily, the purpose of defending side was not to kill all enemies but to hold on for three hours!

Looking at the army that was pouring in like ants, Zhang Yang thought of Princess Serena. If only he could invite Princess Serena and use {Sword of Life and Death}, they would be eliminated!

"Retreat and fighting in groups, try to use the castle's terrain!" Zhang Yang was standing at the back. There were seven routes that could lead to the top of castle, where Fatty Han was. Fatty Han was holding [Territory Command Order] and the green command order light served as a lighthouse for the attackers!

It was an all-out brawl on the streets now!

Fortified with the HP of his mount, he went wild. {Shared Life} increased his HP up to more than 40,000, he had strong damage resistance and four to five healers constantly followed him around, he was a force to be reckoned with!

However, with his power alone, he could not block all enemies as seven routes led to Fatty Han's location and one of the routes' defense lines had already collapsed. Fatty Han was now at risk, and the tide of battle could be changed in an instant!

Hundred Shots in the thick of it all, managing the defense of several routes. He would constantly divide the manpower between them all, reinforcing those that needed help, taking away those who had nothing to do.

Here's to victory!

Lone Desert Smoke and the rest of the guilds had been set on lasting for 3 hours, rather than killing off all their attackers. That goal was simply too unrealistic! Currently, they only needed to hold on for another 1 hour 52 minutes 37 seconds!

"Zhan Yu, I never thought that we'd meet again so soon!" One Sword Stroke tore through a mass of defenders, atop his blood-red dire wolf, his eyes focused on Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Cut the bullsh*t, aren't you here to grab [Territory Command Order]? Don't pretend to be so noble, let's fight and I will defeat you once again!"

Wei Yan Er clapped her hands, laughed and yelled, "Noob tank, straightforward huh!"

"Hmph!" One Sword Stroke snorted angrily, patted his mount and dashed towards Zhang Yang.

"Looks like you can't wait to die!" Zhang Yang coldly said, swung his battle axe and dashed towards One Sword Stroke as well.

'{Destructive Smash}!'

In this chaotic battle, maneuverability became irrelevant, they could only rely on firepower and healing effects, therefore, Zhang Yang had to take the full force of One Sword Stroke's {Destructive Smash}, incurring a debuff that reduced healing effects on him by 75%!

Let's not forget that before Zhang Yang's rebirth, One Sword Stroke was the only Warrior in China server, who completed the Level 30 class quest in S difficulty!

"Focus fire on Zhan Yu, his healing effects have been debuffed by three quarters, he'll have a hard time recovering!" One Sword Stroke yelled loudly.

Romance of the Three Kingdoms - In the battle of Chang Ban, Zhang Fei, one of Liu Bei's generals held back the entire army of Cao Cao back momentarily, buying time for his charge to escape. He held a river and broke bridges down; looking fiercely and shaking his spear, shouting, "I am Zhang Fei. Come and battle me to the death!" None of Cao Cao's men dared to go near him.

Chapter 245: Seizing The Territory

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Well done, One Sword Stroke, but don't forget that you are also carrying the same negative effect as well! Focus your firepower on One Sword Stroke and take him out!"

Both of their {Destructive Smash} had the same effect, the threat was just too deadly!

Instantly, both sides focused fire on Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke, healers from both sides beginning a race of their own as they expended their mana in healing their leading tanks!

Face to face, axe against axe, shield against shield, titan against titan!

Arrows flew across the sky, spells tore through the air, the scene was marvelous!

Although both Zhang Yang and One Sword Stroke were super tanks, further embolstered by Battle Mounts to boost their maximum health points, they were losing health quickly! {Destructive Smash} simply removed the potency of the healers, making it extremely difficult to retain their HP. But in terms of equipment, Zhang Yang had a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment. His shield was slightly out of place, being a level 50 equipment, but it was also another Yellow-Gold equipment! His mount was also a Yellow-Gold! What does One Sword Stroke have to answer to that?!

When Zhang Yang's health bar was down to 47%, while One Sword Stroke's health bar had already gone down to 20%!

The consecutive lose of health points would only mean both guardians would have infinite rage points at their disposal! The moment the health bar of One Sword Stroke fell below 20%, Zhang Yang's icon of {Killing Cleave} lit up!

Full rage, {Killing Cleave}!

'-34,600!'

A horrifying numerical value appeared right on top of One Sword Stroke's head, instantly taking all his remaining health points away from him!

One Sword Stroke instantly turned into a stream of white light, the shock and disbelief clear in his eyes, as he was directly sent back to his main city!

Everyone was shocked!

30,000+ in one hit, was he still a freaking human?

Zhang Yang could not believe it himself as well, so he quickly stole a glance at the battle record: 'Your {Killing Cleave} is a critical hit, overlaid with {One Lucky Hit} onto One Sword Stroke, a

damage of 34600 points (Reduction of 8800 points, absorption of 600 points)!'

So it was the combined effect of {Killing Cleave} and {One Lucky Hit}, creating a damage that was six times higher than the initial value!

Such a unlucky person, Zhang Yang sighed quietly for One Sword Stroke. He was recording the whole battle. If that clip of his recording ever made it on the official website, surely there would be an uproar among the players!

"Noob tank, what the heck did you just do?!"

"Critical attack of {Killing Cleave} and {One Lucky Hit}!" Zhang Yang posted the description of the skill {Killing Cleave} on the party channel.

Wei Yan Er immediately widened her eyes and said, "If a two-handed weapon did that under the same circumstances, with a critical {One Lucky Hit}, my damage would exceed 50,000, or even 60,000!"

Zhang Yang laughed loudly and said, "For a character like yourself, who can't even get a critical attack after a millennium, what are the odds of {One Lucky Hit} and critical attack happening at the same time for you?"

"Wa! Noob tank, you are so mean! You too, cousin sister, you are

just so mean!"

Retreat! Retreat! Retreat!

Although that 30,000+ damage hit from his battle axe had bolstered the morale of his guild, but still, one guild was not enough to hold against the assaults of millions of players. He could only order his forces to continue retreating to the peak of the castle!

The numbers on his side were rapidly dropping!

It was still 1 hour 22 minutes 12 seconds away till the end of the great battle!

Under the amazing coordination of Hundred Shots, defenders from all seven routes were able to fall back unhindered, all of them halfway through the distance. However, out of the 63,000 defenders, they were left with 25,000, and this number was still dropping as rapidly as water from a ruptured vessel!

Outside the fortress walls, Humbly Gentleman grinned sinisterly and said, "Brothers in arms, previously we were oppressed by Lone Desert Smoke until we could not even lift up our heads! We were once kings and queens among the guilds in countless online games, and no one was above us, all worshiped us, so what say you, do you accept such humiliation?"

"No!" thousands of the members of The Dominators were

roaring!

"Do we silently accept humiliations and insults, and allow others to thread on us?"

"No!"

"Now, this is our best chance to get our vengeance! Kill, kill all of those b*tches in Lone Desert Smoke, and reclaim the glory that was once ours!"

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

"Kill all the members of Lone Desert Smoke, and claim the [Territory Command Order]! Reclaim our Dominator's Honor!"

"Rawgh!"

Thousands of people were roaring in chorus, stomping their feet against the ground as they charged forwards to the Thunderstorm Castle. Despite being such a hypocrite, Humbly Gentleman knew his way around the hearts of others, being a veteran guild master with several years of experience beneath his belt!

There were many other guilds with similar plans as The Dominators, and they had carried out their late assaults at different times! The Dominators knew it was time to move. If they were any later, there wouldn't be anything left for them!

One big wave after another, Lone Desert Smoke had lost many of their players! The enemy still outnumbered them greatly, a large crowd still waiting outside the castle walls

Retreat! Retreat again!

40 minutes remained, and the defenders had fallen back so far along the seven routes that one fifth of them were already in the hall where Fatty Han was located!

"Zhan Yu, we're totally out of reserve players!" Hundred Shots frantically cried out.

Zhang Yang nodded his head and said, "All defenders, fall back to the hall! We'll use the doorway as our last bottleneck!"

"Alright!"

Hundred Shots began to coordinate the troops, and the defenders totally turned around and marched to the hall. All this while they had been engaged in combat as they slowly backpedaled at the same time, intending to reserve their strength as much as possible!

The Dominators had waited for some time after the latecomers had made their way in. But they were surprised to find that the castle was still full of people, each street were crowded with players squeezing against each other. It had become a fool's dream to rush in unhindered, and claim the territory as their own! Unless of course, if they were willing to put aside everything and start killing all the players who were in their way!

But if they really did that, they would be provoking millions of players, signing their death warrants!

The initially determined face of Humbly Gentleman instantly fell! What is this madness! How could there be so many people here? How are they going to snatch the Territory Command Order now? There was only 30 minutes left until the battle ends, and even if they were all given three hours more, they might not even get a bloody path in front of them to even reach the location of the Territory Command Order, let alone fight for it!

Technically, those who had charged ahead first at least had a higher chance of obtaining the Territory Command Order than these cunning ones who have grossly underestimated the scale of the crowd. What did people like Humbly Gentleman stand to gain in the end? They were not getting any free meals any time soon!

"Boss, now... What should we do?" the members of The Dominators slowly turned to their leader.

"What else is there to do? Let's charge forward with our might!" Humbly Gentleman was slouching in disappointment!

If they had actually met their enemies in combat, losing would not be very demoralizing, knowing that they tried their best! But now, to lose before the battle had even begun for them, nobody would be pleased about it. They stared at Humbly Gentleman, unable to hide their discontent!

At this point, his members were beginning to question his leadership!

Retreat! Retreat! Retreat!

When Zhang Yang and the others had retreated up to the highest location of the castle, the cathedral, only 1,634 members remained!

"Into the church! Everyone, into the church!" Zhang Yang commanded in a loud voice.

Fortunately the church was pretty large, capable of taking in more than 2,000 people!

"Kill!" the players from all other guilds were surrounding the church while shouting in loud voices.

Zhang Yang laughed loudly, as he and Endless Starlight blocked the narrow doorway, forming an extremely sturdy meatshield!

The entrance of the church was a doorway that led to a hallway of the same size that was about 15 meters long, with a width of not more than 4 meters. In the middle of the path, there is a horizontal wall. That part of the path was slightly more spacious than the other parts, and players were required to to go around from both sides, like air going around a moving windscreen. Beyond that would be the vast openness of the church. Zhang Yang and the

other tanks held their ground at the end of the entrance, leaving only the narrow path for the enemies, forming a perfect defensive formation. Anyone who rushes over will have to withstand the attack from the spellcasters and the strafing shots of the hunters behind the tanks, leading to even more casualties!

Because it was an indoor environment, Zhang Yang was unable to ride on his mount, his maximum health points had been steeply reduced to only 26060. However, the limited space also hindered the enemy, and they were only able to come in small numbers at a time!

Relying on the special terrain of the path, although the numbers of players on the side of the Lone Desert Smoke were outnumbered beyond a thousand to one, they were able to hold their ground. With hundreds of them using spell attacks with splash effects, it was a total death sentence for those who charged in, and there was no room at all to bargain with the results!

"Stop! Stop!" many leaders of their own guilds immediately tried to prevent further casualties, as charging in blindly would only mean using their numbers to fill up a bottomless pit. Even if they continued charging in for the next 3 hours, they would never make further progress!

A change of tactics was required!

"All thieves sneak in, use your {Stealth}!"

But... Zhang Yang had already predicted that it would come to

this, so as instructed, the Hunters kept bombarding the entrance with {Barrage}! It consumed a fair bit of arrows, but they had already been promised a fine sum of allowance at the end of the battle.

The {Stealth} of the thieves were completely wasted as they were immediately exposed and killed in turn!

"All knights, charge in and use your {Sacred Protection}, we must open up a path!"

The opposition immediately switched to a new tactic.

It was only 21 minutes left until the battle ends!

After some redeployment, hundreds of knights walked right out of the crowd, Guardians, Templar and Sacred Knight, all sorts of classes were present.

"Charge!"

The knights went around the 'wind shield' and immediately, they activated their {Sacred Protection}, charging right into the human shield that was formed by ZHang Yang and his gang.

Immune!

Immune!

Immune!

Carrying {Sacred Protection} on them, the knights were glittering in gold complexion, like the statues of immortal gods, ignoring all damage, all negative effects, directly colliding with the human shield created by Zhang Yang and the others!

It was a huge impact, an unstoppable force meeting an immovable object!

When players clashed into each other, the tendency of being knocked back would be determined by the strength attributes of both sides.

Gong! Gong! Gong!

That moment both sides collided into each other, men and horses were immediately thrown off their feet, the perfect defense circle was suddenly left with a few gaps!

The players of the opposition were like ants that tasted blood, and they poured through the gaps! The defensive formation was slowly torn apart!

It was only 14 minutes until the battle ended!

"Kill that fat f*ck! He's got the Command order!" the players were

shouting endlessly.

The remaining time was running out, and everyone turned their sights onto Fatty Han.

"Tighten up the defense, block the entrance, don't let anyone else enter!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly, "Fatty, pass me the Territory Command Order!"

Fatty Han uttered a reply, as he squeezed his way over to Zhang Yang, passing the order.

'Server Announcement: Player Zhan Yu has acquired the Territory Command Order!'

"Kill Zhan Yu!"

The players were like a hive of bees, switching their targets to Zhang Yang.

The chaotic battle had begun!

The players who managed to squeeze in were from a variety of guilds from the eight main cities, some of them possibly allies, but most of the players were definitely fighting for themselves. The Lone Desert Smoke elites kept their calm, casting AoE skills at calculated areas. In return, those players furiously fired back with their own AoEs, inflicting most Lone Desert Smoke casualties, but inadvertently hitting even more of their own!

"Sun of the beach! Why did you hit me?"

"For f*ck's sake, you were hitting me as well, weren't you?"

In the massive field of AoE bombardments, the attackers were suffering greater losses than the defenders!

But there was a large number of players on the outside that would constantly replenish the attackers within the hall. On the other hand the numbers on Zhang Yang's side were slowly but surely dwindling down!

Seven minutes!

Following the reduction in the numbers of the players in the church, Zhang Yang found himself quickly surrounded by the enemy. He was still afflicted with {Destruction Smash}, making it difficult for him to recover! His health bar was beginning to flash red at the danger line!

{Blessing Protection}!

Endless Starlight waved his hand, throwing a spell onto Zhang Yang, instantly slowing the process down. But now Endless Starlight was taking heavy damage!

This was the Defender's version of 'Sacrifice', it was not a 100%

damage transference, only taking on 50% of their target's inflicted damage, but it had a longer duration of 10 seconds!

The other guardians and defenders were inspired by his action, taking their own respective turns to activate their {Sacrifice} and {Blessing Protection} on Zhang Yang, It gave Zhang Yang the strength to stand firm, towering like a mountain peak!

However, their sacrifice was paid heavily for, as more and more tanks on Zhang Yang's side fell!

Three minutes to go, Lone Desert Smoke was left with only 329 members!

Two minutes left!

The Lone Desert Smoke was left with only 29 members remaining!

"Haha, the time is just right. The territory is mine now!"

"You should just f*ck off for f*ck's sake!"

"You should be the one f*cking off!"

One minute left!

{Shadow of the Void} activated!

With a shoof, Zhang Yang ran right out of the big church, using his 20 seconds of boosted movement speed to get away from his attackers!

40 seconds left!

{Rearm}, {Shadow of the Void} activated again!

Another 20 seconds passed, Zhang Yang had managed to find himself a quiet and peaceful corner, and he began to summon his [Gold-Eared Bear King]!

"There! Over there!" the moment Zhang Yang revealed himself, that large green pendant immediately hovered over his head!

Leaping atop his mount, Zhang Yang's health bar was instantly boosted up to 40,000 points!

All players were gushing towards him like a fierce tidal wave of tsunami!

{Shield Wall}!

{Shadow of Merlinda}!

```
{Block}!
```

{Berserker's Heal}!

Zhang Yang practically threw every emergency skill he had at disposal!

18, 17, 16... 10!

The health bar of Zhang Yang was nearly depleted!

Shoof! Just as he was about to drop dead, he miraculously disappeared once again!

The players frantically looked about, and saw the green pendent beaming into the sky far in the distance, pointing out the new location of Zhang Yang!

That was --- the teleportation of the [Lover's Charm: Yang]!

Zhang Yang had given the [Lover's Charm: Ying] to Sun Xin Yu earlier on, asking her to enter stealth mode and hide somewhere safe, only activating it at the last moment!

"Quickly! That side!"

The tidal wave changed directions and headed for the new

location of Zhang Yang!

It was too late!

'Server Announcement: The Battle for the Territory Command Order has ended, the final possessor of the Territory Command Order is --- Player Zhan Yu! The Thunderstorm Castle now classifies as the territory of this player, everyone will be sent back to your own main cities!'

All the players were voicing out in protest, but as the white lights flashed, everyone was forcefully sent back to their respective main cities by the system.

Looking at his residual health points of 48 points only, Zhang Yang let out a long breath, laying down on the furry body of Whitey.

Chapter 246: Territory Construction

'Ding! Congratulations on becoming the territory owner of Thunderstorm Castle, you can now select to rename the territory, proceed?'

No wonder he was unfamiliar with the name 'Thunderstorm Castle', having never encountered it in his previous life, it turns out that the name of territories could be changed!

Zhang Yang was lazy, so he said, "No change necessary!"

Unexpectedly, the system did not continue on with a tutorial on managing the territory, but instead, took him directly to the management interface.

In his previous life, as he had not managed to conquer a territory before, therefore, he was currently on uncharted waters, he would need to slowly feel his way around and learn more about it the oldfashioned way.

Of course, anyone would know at a glance that the firs thing to do was to set up the teleportation circle, it was one of the main appeals of owning a territory. It would provide convenience to the members of his own guild while acquiring a large income at the same time!

'Ding! You have chosen to built a Teleportation Circle, each Teleportation Circle requires a sum of 1,000,000 gold pieces to build, and each Teleportation Circle can only be directed to one of

the eight main cities in China region! After building the Teleportation Circle, you can set up the fare for using the Teleportation Circle!'

Zhang Yang immediately took out 1,000,000 gold pieces, passed it over to the system, and built a Teleportation Circle that channeled straight to the White Jade City.

He would hold off on building Teleportation Circles for the other main cities, as the benefits simply outweighed the costs! As the bank and auction houses of the cities had become interconnected, as were the system-run Teleportation Circles in the cities themselves which were free-of-charge. Getting to any one main city was as good as getting to any other main city!

Besides, Zhang Yang also had personal reasons for his own Teleportation Circle! By opening a Teleportation Circle that took players to White Jade City, players would emerge in the city at a location that was just opposite his Little Merchandize Shop. Even if 1% of the non-White Jade City players who went through the portal visited his shop out of convenience...

Hehe! Zhang Yang could not hold it anymore and started laughing, his glee unfiltered as he spoke on the guild channel, "Members who have achieved level 50 and above, come over to the Thunderstorm Castle and set your teleportation scrolls to the Teleportation Circle. You will not have to run back and forth anymore, reaching Thunderstorm Castle would be as good as reaching White Jade City!"

"Guildmaster, I love you so much!"

"Let's go, go, go! Quickly, onto the plane!"

The next instant, players above level 50 were rushing to the teleportation spot.

Zhang Yang also contacted Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman and Crimson Fire, informing them on the completion on the construction of the Teleportation Circle, inviting them to use it to their hearts' content!

He had set the teleportation fare for the members of these four guilds to zero, while the fare for others was set at 1 gold piece. However when it came to the Dominators, Pride and Axe Gang, the fare was hiked up to 10 gold pieces! It would make no difference to Zhang Yang if they were to use it or not!

The Teleportation Circle was not an inexhaustible source of income, it required a large amount of magic crystals to be powered up on a daily basis, which meant that the owner was required to buy 'energy' from the system. Basically, the owner himself was being taxed by the system itself!

The magic crystal is extremely expensive, costing 10,000,000 gold pieces each, but fortunately, it could last for 10 days, still roping a surplus! Currently, there are more than 60,000,000 players in the China region, and approximately 5,000,000 to 6,000,000 players who were above level 50. Each of the players would just need to use

the teleportation once per day, which would cover the expenses within two day or so!

As more players achieve level 50, his Teleportation portal would be accessed far more frequently! Of course, more territories will also appear in the game, he would not hold this monopoly for long!

After setting up the Teleportation Cirlcle, Zhang Yang turned his attention towards the defense line of the territory!

The subjugation of a territory did not solve all problems however! As long as any guilds comes in possession of a [Territory Subjugation Order], they could easily trigger a Territory Subjugation Battle. Although Lone Desert Smoke is a powerful force, attackers could gain access to siege engines and lay waste to players!

Therefore, it was necessary to set up defensive weapons of their own!

Firstly, the iconic Magic Cannons that had been previewed during the quest back then! That toy was a bundle of pure awesomeness, boasting a ranged attack that reached hundreds of meters, having its explosive attacks covering areas as wide as several tens of square meters. Capable of instantly killing players, it was a must-have!

Of course, such power would be met with an equivalent cost! Each Magic Cannon required 5,000,000 gold pieces, along with the [Power Source Crystals] needed to power it up for 1,000,000 gold

pieces each. Each Crystal would provide enough power for the cannons to fire up to ten times.

This meant that one round would cost 100,000 gold pieces, not exactly something that anyone could afford!

For the greater good however, it was a necessary investment!

Zhang Yang purchased two Magic Cannons and two [Power Source Crystals], watching his money gush out. He could not help himself but thought that if it were up to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, they would be in a stressful dilemma as they tried to weigh the cost and benefits of the cannons!

Now that the main firepower had been set up, he had other defense to attend to. The game was simply merciless when it came to the retention of wealth! From time to time, monsters will be spawned to harass the otherwise peaceful castle. Their purpose was to serve as fodder for the insanely expensive cannons to waste their rounds on! To prevent that however...

Zhang Yang hired an army of NPCs --- 100 elite-grade knights, each of them requiring a monthly salary of 10,000 gold pieces. Of course, it wasn't like they needed the money -- it was for the system once again.

These NPC were all level 65, but were upgradeable at additional cost. Their levels were limited by the level of the owner of the castle. For instance, the castle owner had to at least be level 70, in order to level these NPC up to level 75. Similarly, players had to

attain level 80 before these NPC be leveled-up to level 85.

These NPC would be able to ward off monsters and maintain order and security within the territory. They were basically similar to the guards of the main cities, only being slightly inferior!

Thirdly, the city defenses itself!

The ramparts of the castle like the walls and main gate were actually be targetable and vulnerable to attacks. At level 1, the city gate would only have 1,000,000 health points, 1000 defense points, 1000 magic defense points, but when upgraded to level 2, it would have 10,000,000 health points, 2500 defense points and 2500 magic defense points!

The tougher the city defense got, even if under fire from some devastating siege engine, it would buy additional time for the defenders!

As Subjugation battles were limited by time, the defenders would only have to hold their ground rather than wipe out the attackers!

Unfortunately, upgrading the city defense would require all sorts of mineral ores, and the higher the level, the higher the quality and quantity of such required ores. They were far away from being able to upgrade their city defenses to level 2 at the moment!

NPCs such as the equipment repairing blacksmith, item sellers, were not immediately available, nor could they be simply bought --

players would be required to complete a series of specific quests to acquire these NPCs. Zhang Yang gave it some thought, realizing that they would only be detrimental to the profiteering of the Telephone Circle, as the NPCs would only remove the need to teleport back to the main cities for such services!

With everything almost settled, Zhang Yang linked his teleportation scroll to the Teleportation Circle of Thunderstorm Castle before heading back to the White Jade City through the Teleportation Circle and began shouting across the regional channels, "Fellow players, the Thunderstorm Castle within the Forest of Tanila is currently facilitated with a Teleportation Circle, as long as you link your teleportation scroll settings to the circle, you will suffer the long hard journeys no more! The teleportation fee is super cheap, only requiring one gold piece!"

After shouting at White Jade City, he then teleported to the other seven main cities to continue his promotion.

Only the foolish or the prideful would forego such a convenient means of transportation! Zhang Yang would not have to go out of his way promoting this service of his, he would only have to make it known once.

In terms of location, Thunderstorm Castle was based in the level 60 ranges of maps, located in between the level 50 and level 70 maps, while also having similar level 60 maps on both its left and right sides. Being in the middle of the maps that varied by 30 levels would keep most players within the region for 4 to 5 months!

How lucrative!

Before the second territory appears, this Teleportation service would stand to earn Zhang Yang lots of profits! Even with a second territory around, or even the third territory appearing, it would not deteriorate much!

Zhang Yang then rewarded his guild members for their efforts and contributions, spending a great deal of money. Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue gazed at him with glittering eyes as they watched him.

Such generosity only bolstered the morale and ensured the loyalty of his members! Zhang Yang's reputation as a leader grew far and wide. Furthermore, by also being the long-standing number one guild when it came to the progress of dungeoneering, the members carried the name of the guild with pride and honor that went beyond the fair and warm treatment of the guild.

The moment he returned from his tour around the eight main cities, he saw many players rushing over to Thunderstorm Castle, linking their teleportation scrolls there as per recommended.

Beep beep beep, the voice communication device suddenly alerted him to a call from Humbly Gentleman.

"Zhan Yu, you god damn fascist!" Humbly Gentleman roared.

Zhang Yang laughed out oud and said, "How am I a fascist now?"

"Others are paying 1 gold piece for your teleportation circle, why are we paying it tenfold?" Humbly Gentleman demanded.

10 gold pieces was only 9 gold pieces more than 1, but it devastated the psyche of The Dominators, driving a massive wage between the two parites!

ZHang Yang grinned silently in his heart, this hypocrite really does not know any shame! He did not expect him to perform such a humiliating act before this, but the two sides were far from burying the hatchet. Having died once, Zhang Yang would never spare a single tiger cub or puppy and risk regretting it afterwards, he would be determined to see his opponents to their end!

He softly replied, "I see. So you have a voice louder than everyone else, and a fortune greater than everyone else. 10 gold pieces too little for you? How about 100 gold pieces then?"

"You---" Humbly Gentleman was speechless!

When there are competing companies, the consumers held the power of the Gods! However, when there's monopoly in play, the consumers would be mere offerings!

Humbly Gentleman felt like slapping the man in the face. But the Teleportation circle would save them from a 3-hour journey, he could not afford to provoke Zhang Yang any further!

He had to endure it!

"Well done, you!" Humbly Gentleman viciously cut off the voice communication with Zhang Yang.

Either way, he could not allow his members to bear the burden of paying 9 extra gold pieces. Mutiny would be imminent if he kept this up! Arrogant and conceited as he was, he was still a guild leader with a functioning brain!

He would have to dig money from his own pocket to subsidize the additional payload!

Humbly Gentleman made up his mind determinedly, but when the number of 10,000+ members came across his mind, he quickly shivered! It would be impossible for him to pay for them all on a daily basis, so he could only lay out instructions to his members to limit their usage of the circle, while also offering a subsidy once every 10 days!

Even so, he would still have to pay about 300,000 gold pieces. Humbly Gentleman felt an excruciating pain in his heart, his face turning pale green!

Why would this Humbly Gentleman always offer himself as tribute for Zhang Yang to step on? Zhang Yang shook his head, tore a teleportation scroll and went back to the Thunderstorm Castle, deciding to get on with his grinding.

With the possession of this major-profit-earning territory, the profits from crafting potions and other items had became insignificant. Zhang Yang now had to maintain his lead in levels, for if and when a territory of a level 80 map appears, he would be the first to claim it!

Chapter 247: Fire Chocobos

Territories, indeed, gave much convenience to the players, especially their proprietors.

If they had to travel by foot and rented flying Gryphons, the journey would take 3 hours! During that 3 hours of riding the Gryphon, players wouldn't be able to perform any actions, other than to chat with each other. If players below level 60 intended to set off to their appropriately leveled maps from Thunderstorm Castle, they could easily force their way through the slightly overleveled monsters if they worked in parties. It would only take them about 40 minutes to reach their own maps, saving a lot of time!

Therefore, a large number of players had linked their teleportation scroll to Thunderstorm Castle, and the fare of one gold piece could easily be earned back within an hour. It was both money and time-saving!

Three days had passed, Zhang Yang took a good look at the financial income of the territory. He could not help himself but to rub his eyes in amazement!

10,680,000 gold pieces!

Although he had anticipated some ridiculous amount, this far exceeded his expectations! Netting an average of 3,000,000 gold pieces on a daily basis, it quickly covered the cost of the [Power Source Crystal] in 3 days, with the remaining 4 days being nothing else but profit!

Furthermore, only 5,000,000 to 6,000,000 players were in the leveling bracket of 50 and up. What would happen when that number increases by tenfold?

However, since the first territory has appeared, more territories would be bound to follow in the near future! Whatever Zhang Yang planned to do, was to master the basics of setting a perfect territory, and perhaps add in the equipment repairing blacksmith to add to the appeal of his castle. Mechandize selling NPCs were not as heavily prioritized. Surely some players would have come up with the idea of selling such supplies in the Territory themselves.

The benefits were humongous, but Zhang Yang could not possibly keep it all to himself. He immediately gave an enormous raise to the salaries of the members in the management level of the guild, and every core player, so much so that even their very gait as they walked about had a noticeable spring to it! The career of a professional player was much scorned by the other members of society, and they would often live by a "don't ask, don't tell" basis, however, the players of the Lone Desert Smoke can now righteously proclaim that, "I am a professional player!"

Core players were earning up to 50,000 a month, on part with the income of executive white collars, so these players could carry themselves with the same amount of dignity, right?

At his command, Hundred Shots had led some members of the guild over to claim the Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal as their own. There, he allowed players who possessed the Herb Picking profession to pick up some [Frozen Ice Weeding] once every two

hours. However, there was no sign of the recipe for [Beginner Mobility Potion] dropping, so the [Frozen Ice Weeding] were stored in the warehouse at the moment, eating up its storage space!

As the territory now had an owner, NPCs who provided territory quests started appearing. However, the territory quests required players to be above level 60. Currently, only Zhang Yang alone qualified for the quests.

The forth day after owning the territory, Zhang Yang accepted a few territory quests, summoned his Whitey and sped away.

The territory quests were simple, it just involved killing a few bears, slaying a few wolves, clearing out some undeads, all to provide safety for the territory. The three quests that Zhang Yang took required the killing of 100 Red Flaming Tigers, 100 Bloody Scarlet Wolves, and 100 Flatland Chocobos.

He quickly completed the quests to kill the tigers and to kill the wolves. At the moment, he was on his way to the Northwest part of the forest in search of the Flatland Chocobos.

"Gu---gu---!" a strange, birdlike sound was uttered, and a bird that dwarfed even the ostrich appeared right in front of Zhang Yang. Its whole body was covered with colourful feathers, beneath it was a pair of thick legs that each ended in three razor-sharp claws. It had a wings, but appeared to be incapable of flight, along with two strangely large eyes that occupied two thirds of the surface area of its entire head.

[Forest of Tanila, Chocobo] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 63

HP: 6,300

Defense: 60

Zhang Yang rode up to it on his Whitey, and effortless dispatched the Chocobo. It dropped some feathers that were worth a few pieces of copper coins which he completely ignored.

Slaying them was no problem, but these birds were rather hard to come across, and Zhang Yang took more than one hour just to come across one of them. After slaying 90 of them, they appeared to have vanished altogether. No matter how hard he tried to find the remaining Chocobos, the numbers just could not be scraped to completion. He decided to venture on into the deeper part of the forest.

93... 96... 98, 99, only one left!

Hoof!

A shadow blurred with the myriad of five colors suddenly entered the edge of his vision, and Zhang Yang reacted almost instantly, instinctively activating {Block} and placing his shield

before him.

{Block}!

A particularly large Chocobo collided right into Zhang Yang, the feathers of which had an iridescent quality, magnificently sparkling in the light! It was gorgeous!

[King of Fire Chocobo] (Gray-Silver, Beast)

Level: 65

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 700

Zhang Yang smiled lightly, and with a tap on Whitey, he answered with a charge of his own.

With his current equipment, even a Gray-Silver boss that relied on physical attacks such as this was a pushover for him! And if it is a boss that had magical attacks, he would simply swap places with his mount, juggling the aggro between them, while using {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from battle while his mount occupied the enemy. He would still be able to single-handedly take such a boss down, only having to put in a little more effort! Bosses that relied on physical attacks would be a total piece of cake!

In less than 6 to 7 minutes, this Gray-Silver boss crumpled to the ground in a beautiful heap, dropping a few pieces of Gray-Silver and Green-Copper equipment.

Zhang Yang leisurely grabbed the loots and placed them in his backpack. That boss was a good omen, as his counter now read that he has killed 100 Chocobo in total! He can finally head back! Just as he was taking out a teleportation scroll, Zhang Yang caught sight of something that laid at the trunk of a large tree. He uttered an 'eh' in surprise, quickly stepping out of the small circle that was beginning to form under his feet.

Just beneath the big tree facing him was a huge bird nest. The miniature head of a Chocobo had stuck it's head out to look around, its little wings flapping, as it weakly cried out, 'Gu--- gu---gu---'. The whole body of the Chocobo was covered in fluffy, short feathers which were milky yellow in colour, a far cry from its adult brethren who were dazzlingly beautiful!

[Fire Chocobo Chick] (Rare Gray-Silver Battle Mount)

Level: o

HP: 50

A [Battle Mount]! And it was a Gray-Silver grade!

It was no wonder why the King of Fire Chocobo initiated an attack on him, he was trespassing upon its nest!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his voice communication device and said, "Little girl, quickly! Call me brother!"

"Stupid noob tank, are you trying to take advantage of me, you are still 1,000 years too far from that!" Wei Yan Er snapped back.

Zhang Yang chuckled and replied, "I just came across a [Battle Mount]! Oh, did I forget to mention that it's Gray-Silver?"

"Wow, where? Where is it?" her tone quickly changed, and she anxiously pressed him for answers.

"Call me brother!"

"Heck, I'll call you brother-in-law!" Wei Yan Er was talking sweetly.

Han Ying Xue was definitely charming, but it was the type of deadly charm that only a siren would produce. A shiver ran down his spine and he quickly said, "No thank you, I cannot afford to have her, you can save that name for someone else! I'll activate the [Lover's Charm: Yang], use the [Lover's Charm: Yin] to get over

here now!"

"Aww, sister Sun snatched it back from me! She's so stingy, she's not letting up at all!" Wei Yan Er pouted.

"Fine, fine, stop grumbling already. Drop whatever you're doing, I'm adding you to party. Better hurry, or I'll catch it myself!"

"Don't! Stupid noob tank! Wait for me! If you ever dare catch my baby, I'll bite you to death!" Wei Yan Er was yelling at the top of her lungs while summoning her mount, swiftly traveling to his location.

Currently, Zhang Yang was the only player in the party who possessed a [Battle Mount], while Han Ying Xue and the others were still waiting bitterly for their turns, but if he was to offer anyone else a pet mount... she would probably burn holes through him with her eyes until he turned into ash!

Every single member of the party would definitely concede to the wiles of that brat. After all, this little girl knew her way around the minds of her elders, enjoying the attention and pampering that they showered upon her.

As he was bored, Zhang Yang sat his ass on the ground and turned Whitey into his backrest while waiting for the arrival of Wei Yan Er. At the same time, he kept an eye on the little Chocobo just in case it slipped away. After all, this is a game, who knew if the little bird would wander off on its own, having lost its parent.

"Boss, there really is a [Mount] here, but there's a bloody Gray-Silver boss guarding it. Ah Xi and myself were killed the moment it spotted us!"

"Oh I see it now, there really is a [mount] right there, a Gray-Silver one!"

"Boss, if you can subdue a Gray-Silver [Mount], surely your strength will increase by a notch. When that happens, whoever it is, Zhan Yu, One Sword Stroke, or Frost Night, they all will be beneath the dust before you, boss!"

"That's right, the official site did mention it, the attack power of a Gray-Silver [Mount] is equivalent to the attack of a player equipped with a full set of Gray-Silver equipment! When a player is combined with his mount, he'll gain huge boosts to his attack and HP!"

Five players stumbled out of a thick shrub together, one of them being Floating Fire Ball himself, who had been slaughtered several times by Zhang Yang in previous engagements!

When the five players saw Zhang Yang, they were shocked, for they never would thought that they would actually see someone in such a place! The weirdest part of it was that, this player was not even attempting to subdue the Battle mount!

"Hey kid! Get lost, this location is now booked by us, Pride!" one of the players with the name 'Prideful Siye' above his head took a step forward and began raising his fist while speaking to Zhang Yang.

Few had actually met Zhang Yang in person, and Prideful Siye was trying to butter up the ass of Floating Fire Ball, which was why he was making a show in front of his leader, raising his voice with his chest puffed out.

Zhang Yang smiled lightly, returning his gestures with a dismissive wave of his own, "I found this little fella first, you guys can go on ahead!"

"Hey kid, you dare to speak in such a tone? Who do you think you are? One Sword Stroke, or Frost Night, Drizzler or Zhan Yu?" Prideful Siye was unaware of his boss' rapidly changing expression, as he continued clamoring arrogantly in front of Zhang Yang.

"Get lost already or I'll just cut you down here and now!" Zhang Yang was beginning to lose his patience, that arrogant face was just asking for it.

As Prideful Siye was going to shout back at Zhang Yang, he was forcefully pulled back by his arm by Kindling Chest Hair. He could not comprehend the situation, but when he heard what Floating Fire Ball had to say, "Zhan Yu, today we will give the respect where it's due, let's leave!"

Zhan Yu? This kid is Zhan Yu?

Prideful Siye was shocked, almost gagging on the intended insults that he hastily forced back down his throat! Previously, the Lone Desert Smoke had made their name as a PvE Dungeon Clearing guild, but after the two major incidents, the Princess Serena quest and the Battle for Terra Nulius, every other guild had been left speechless by their combat strength and unity!

To insult Zhan Yu would be to insult Lone Desert Smoke itself, and nobody else seemed to be able to stand up to them at this point!

Kindling Chest Hair begrudgingly followed Floating Fire Ball back to where they came from, and finally blurted out, "Boss, are we really going to give up on this [Pet Mount]?"

It was a strong [Pet Mount] capable of greatly boosting the combat ability of a player!

Floating Fire Ball cracked an insidious grin, "Give up? Like hell! We've got over 20 members close by the area leveling up, let's wait till everyone is gathered here...we'll let him have a taste of our strength, Pride!"

Chapter 248: Utter Slaughter

Territories, indeed, gave much convenience to the players, especially their proprietors.

If they had to travel by foot and rented flying Gryphons, the journey would take 3 hours! During that 3 hours of riding the Gryphon, players wouldn't be able to perform any actions, other than to chat with each other. If players below level 60 intended to set off to their appropriately leveled maps from Thunderstorm Castle, they could easily force their way through the slightly overleveled monsters if they worked in parties. It would only take them about 40 minutes to reach their own maps, saving a lot of time!

Therefore, a large number of players had linked their teleportation scroll to Thunderstorm Castle, and the fare of one gold piece could easily be earned back within an hour. It was both money and time-saving!

Three days had passed, Zhang Yang took a good look at the financial income of the territory. He could not help himself but to rub his eyes in amazement!

10,680,000 gold pieces!

Although he had anticipated some ridiculous amount, this far exceeded his expectations! Netting an average of 3,000,000 gold pieces on a daily basis, it quickly covered the cost of the [Power Source Crystal] in 3 days, with the remaining 4 days being nothing else but profit!

Furthermore, only 5,000,000 to 6,000,000 players were in the leveling bracket of 50 and up. What would happen when that number increases by tenfold?

However, since the first territory has appeared, more territories would be bound to follow in the near future! Whatever Zhang Yang planned to do, was to master the basics of setting a perfect territory, and perhaps add in the equipment repairing blacksmith to add to the appeal of his castle. Mechandize selling NPCs were not as heavily prioritized. Surely some players would have come up with the idea of selling such supplies in the Territory themselves.

The benefits were humongous, but Zhang Yang could not possibly keep it all to himself. He immediately gave an enormous raise to the salaries of the members in the management level of the guild, and every core player, so much so that even their very gait as they walked about had a noticeable spring to it! The career of a professional player was much scorned by the other members of society, and they would often live by a "don't ask, don't tell" basis, however, the players of the Lone Desert Smoke can now righteously proclaim that, "I am a professional player!"

Core players were earning up to 50,000 a month, on part with the income of executive white collars, so these players could carry themselves with the same amount of dignity, right?

At his command, Hundred Shots had led some members of the guild over to claim the Sacred Palace of Frozen Fractal as their own. There, he allowed players who possessed the Herb Picking profession to pick up some [Frozen Ice Weeding] once every two

hours. However, there was no sign of the recipe for [Beginner Mobility Potion] dropping, so the [Frozen Ice Weeding] were stored in the warehouse at the moment, eating up its storage space!

As the territory now had an owner, NPCs who provided territory quests started appearing. However, the territory quests required players to be above level 60. Currently, only Zhang Yang alone qualified for the quests.

The forth day after owning the territory, Zhang Yang accepted a few territory quests, summoned his Whitey and sped away.

The territory quests were simple, it just involved killing a few bears, slaying a few wolves, clearing out some undeads, all to provide safety for the territory. The three quests that Zhang Yang took required the killing of 100 Red Flaming Tigers, 100 Bloody Scarlet Wolves, and 100 Flatland Chocobos.

He quickly completed the quests to kill the tigers and to kill the wolves. At the moment, he was on his way to the Northwest part of the forest in search of the Flatland Chocobos.

"Gu---gu---!" a strange, birdlike sound was uttered, and a bird that dwarfed even the ostrich appeared right in front of Zhang Yang. Its whole body was covered with colourful feathers, beneath it was a pair of thick legs that each ended in three razor-sharp claws. It had a wings, but appeared to be incapable of flight, along with two strangely large eyes that occupied two thirds of the surface area of its entire head.

[Forest of Tanila, Chocobo] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 63

HP: 6,300

Defense: 60

Zhang Yang rode up to it on his Whitey, and effortless dispatched the Chocobo. It dropped some feathers that were worth a few pieces of copper coins which he completely ignored.

Slaying them was no problem, but these birds were rather hard to come across, and Zhang Yang took more than one hour just to come across one of them. After slaying 90 of them, they appeared to have vanished altogether. No matter how hard he tried to find the remaining Chocobos, the numbers just could not be scraped to completion. He decided to venture on into the deeper part of the forest.

93... 96... 98, 99, only one left!

Hoof!

A shadow blurred with the myriad of five colors suddenly entered the edge of his vision, and Zhang Yang reacted almost instantly, instinctively activating {Block} and placing his shield

before him.

{Block}!

A particularly large Chocobo collided right into Zhang Yang, the feathers of which had an iridescent quality, magnificently sparkling in the light! It was gorgeous!

[King of Fire Chocobo] (Gray-Silver, Beast)

Level: 65

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 700

Zhang Yang smiled lightly, and with a tap on Whitey, he answered with a charge of his own.

With his current equipment, even a Gray-Silver boss that relied on physical attacks such as this was a pushover for him! And if it is a boss that had magical attacks, he would simply swap places with his mount, juggling the aggro between them, while using {Shadow of the Void} to disengage from battle while his mount occupied the enemy. He would still be able to single-handedly take such a boss down, only having to put in a little more effort! Bosses that relied on physical attacks would be a total piece of cake!

In less than 6 to 7 minutes, this Gray-Silver boss crumpled to the ground in a beautiful heap, dropping a few pieces of Gray-Silver and Green-Copper equipment.

Zhang Yang leisurely grabbed the loots and placed them in his backpack. That boss was a good omen, as his counter now read that he has killed 100 Chocobo in total! He can finally head back! Just as he was taking out a teleportation scroll, Zhang Yang caught sight of something that laid at the trunk of a large tree. He uttered an 'eh' in surprise, quickly stepping out of the small circle that was beginning to form under his feet.

Just beneath the big tree facing him was a huge bird nest. The miniature head of a Chocobo had stuck it's head out to look around, its little wings flapping, as it weakly cried out, 'Gu--- gu---gu---'. The whole body of the Chocobo was covered in fluffy, short feathers which were milky yellow in colour, a far cry from its adult brethren who were dazzlingly beautiful!

[Fire Chocobo Chick] (Rare Gray-Silver Battle Mount)

Level: o

HP: 50

A [Battle Mount]! And it was a Gray-Silver grade!

It was no wonder why the King of Fire Chocobo initiated an attack on him, he was trespassing upon its nest!

Zhang Yang quickly activated his voice communication device and said, "Little girl, quickly! Call me brother!"

"Stupid noob tank, are you trying to take advantage of me, you are still 1,000 years too far from that!" Wei Yan Er snapped back.

Zhang Yang chuckled and replied, "I just came across a [Battle Mount]! Oh, did I forget to mention that it's Gray-Silver?"

"Wow, where? Where is it?" her tone quickly changed, and she anxiously pressed him for answers.

"Call me brother!"

"Heck, I'll call you brother-in-law!" Wei Yan Er was talking sweetly.

Han Ying Xue was definitely charming, but it was the type of deadly charm that only a siren would produce. A shiver ran down his spine and he quickly said, "No thank you, I cannot afford to have her, you can save that name for someone else! I'll activate the [Lover's Charm: Yang], use the [Lover's Charm: Yin] to get over

here now!"

"Aww, sister Sun snatched it back from me! She's so stingy, she's not letting up at all!" Wei Yan Er pouted.

"Fine, fine, stop grumbling already. Drop whatever you're doing, I'm adding you to party. Better hurry, or I'll catch it myself!"

"Don't! Stupid noob tank! Wait for me! If you ever dare catch my baby, I'll bite you to death!" Wei Yan Er was yelling at the top of her lungs while summoning her mount, swiftly traveling to his location.

Currently, Zhang Yang was the only player in the party who possessed a [Battle Mount], while Han Ying Xue and the others were still waiting bitterly for their turns, but if he was to offer anyone else a pet mount... she would probably burn holes through him with her eyes until he turned into ash!

Every single member of the party would definitely concede to the wiles of that brat. After all, this little girl knew her way around the minds of her elders, enjoying the attention and pampering that they showered upon her.

As he was bored, Zhang Yang sat his ass on the ground and turned Whitey into his backrest while waiting for the arrival of Wei Yan Er. At the same time, he kept an eye on the little Chocobo just in case it slipped away. After all, this is a game, who knew if the little bird would wander off on its own, having lost its parent.

"Boss, there really is a [Mount] here, but there's a bloody Gray-Silver boss guarding it. Ah Xi and myself were killed the moment it spotted us!"

"Oh I see it now, there really is a [mount] right there, a Gray-Silver one!"

"Boss, if you can subdue a Gray-Silver [Mount], surely your strength will increase by a notch. When that happens, whoever it is, Zhan Yu, One Sword Stroke, or Frost Night, they all will be beneath the dust before you, boss!"

"That's right, the official site did mention it, the attack power of a Gray-Silver [Mount] is equivalent to the attack of a player equipped with a full set of Gray-Silver equipment! When a player is combined with his mount, he'll gain huge boosts to his attack and HP!"

Five players stumbled out of a thick shrub together, one of them being Floating Fire Ball himself, who had been slaughtered several times by Zhang Yang in previous engagements!

When the five players saw Zhang Yang, they were shocked, for they never would thought that they would actually see someone in such a place! The weirdest part of it was that, this player was not even attempting to subdue the Battle mount!

"Hey kid! Get lost, this location is now booked by us, Pride!" one of the players with the name 'Prideful Siye' above his head took a step forward and began raising his fist while speaking to Zhang Yang.

Few had actually met Zhang Yang in person, and Prideful Siye was trying to butter up the ass of Floating Fire Ball, which was why he was making a show in front of his leader, raising his voice with his chest puffed out.

Zhang Yang smiled lightly, returning his gestures with a dismissive wave of his own, "I found this little fella first, you guys can go on ahead!"

"Hey kid, you dare to speak in such a tone? Who do you think you are? One Sword Stroke, or Frost Night, Drizzler or Zhan Yu?" Prideful Siye was unaware of his boss' rapidly changing expression, as he continued clamoring arrogantly in front of Zhang Yang.

"Get lost already or I'll just cut you down here and now!" Zhang Yang was beginning to lose his patience, that arrogant face was just asking for it.

As Prideful Siye was going to shout back at Zhang Yang, he was forcefully pulled back by his arm by Kindling Chest Hair. He could not comprehend the situation, but when he heard what Floating Fire Ball had to say, "Zhan Yu, today we will give the respect where it's due, let's leave!"

Zhan Yu? This kid is Zhan Yu?

Prideful Siye was shocked, almost gagging on the intended insults that he hastily forced back down his throat! Previously, the Lone Desert Smoke had made their name as a PvE Dungeon Clearing guild, but after the two major incidents, the Princess Serena quest and the Battle for Terra Nulius, every other guild had been left speechless by their combat strength and unity!

To insult Zhan Yu would be to insult Lone Desert Smoke itself, and nobody else seemed to be able to stand up to them at this point!

Kindling Chest Hair begrudgingly followed Floating Fire Ball back to where they came from, and finally blurted out, "Boss, are we really going to give up on this [Pet Mount]?"

It was a strong [Pet Mount] capable of greatly boosting the combat ability of a player!

Floating Fire Ball cracked an insidious grin, "Give up? Like hell! We've got over 20 members close by the area leveling up, let's wait till everyone is gathered here...we'll let him have a taste of our strength, Pride!"

"Little brat, how much longer are you gonna take??"

"I'm not a gazelle, you buffoon, take it easy, jeez!"

"Well, hurry up, Pride members are lurking about, they had their eyes on the [Pet Mount]! They're probably gathering their men up

as we speak! I'm not risking my neck for you, if there's too many of them, I'm outta there!"

"Please, no! You are the ferocious and mighty noob tank, surely you can take on a hundred of them, I'll even send you my cousin's nudes," Wei Yan Er was genuinely frantic, even bringing up an ultimate 'weapon'!

Zhang Yang chuckled, saying, "Faster!"

He had the {Shadow of the Void} on hand, which was why he was totally unafraid of being rounded up or ambushed! In a worst case scenario, he can still activate the [Lover's Charm] to be spirited away to Sun Xin Yu's location. He already had many options planned.

As expected, Floating Fire Ball soon returned with an additional 20+ players behind him, making up a party of 25 players! Zhang Yang fanned his vision across them and saw that there were only five spellcasters. He smiled to himself confidently. Maybe running was no longer needed...!

"Zhan Yu, on second thought, perhaps you should bow to me this time!" Floating Fire Ball was brimming with confidence, as he folded his arms and flashed a cocky grin.

Zhang Yang made an exaggerated show of climbing up his [Mount], and with a shake of his [Battle Axe], he said, "Well, we could have done this the easy way, but if you insist on being difficult....the hard way it is!"

"...K-Kill!"

All 25 members of the Pride roared in unity, as their long-ranged players started unleashing volley after volley. Zhang Yang calmly gazed up at the oncoming projectiles, and looked back down to see the melee players getting into formation. They started cutting off his routes of escape, and started their advancement.

Zhang Yang rode out on his bear like a Mack truck that bodily met the melee players, sending them flying. Pride was extremely far behind when it came to dungeon progression. Besides Floating Fire Ball who had a full set of Gray-Silver equipment, most of the players were barely past level 50, and had Green-Copper equipment at most. The melee-profession players could not even get past Zhang Yang's defense value, causing absolutely no damage, and the only threat he faced was from the small bunch of Spellcasters at the back of the party!

Unfortunately, there were so few of them that they hardly made any difference!

Gong! Gong! Gong!

Zhang Yang smacked into a Thief, sending the player flying into a tree. At this point, his [Mount] had considerably slowed down, allowing the other players to round up on him.

{Blood Rage}, {Horizontal Sweep}!

A series of magnificent damage values appeared across the battlefield. The main purpose of this assault was not to hurt his enemies, but to reveal the Thieves who happened to be in {stealth}. To expose them would be to deny them the opportunity of using their {Ambush} skills! Even if they couldn't hurt him, they would still afflict some annoying status effects!

{Sanction}!

Kindling Chest Hair threw his hammer at Zhang Yang, instantly stunning Zhang Yang for 5 seconds as golden start glimmered around his head!

Without hesitation, Zhang Yang activated {Warrior's Will}, and jumped right off Whitey. Floating Fire Ball had taken out his [Sealing Leash], ready to subdue the Fire Chocobo Chick!

He was definitely looking down on Zhang Yang if he believed that a single stun would buy him enough time!

Shoof! {Wild Charge}! At Zhang Yang's mental command, Whitey had charged at Floating Fire Ball, as Zhang Yang forced his way through to the battle line of the ranged attackers.

'-696!'

'-742!'

'-645!'

'-821!'

The {Fireballs} and the {Frost Arrow} coming from the four spellcasters pounded into Zhang Yang, barely tickling him. With the level 50 Copper-Green equipment on them, their spell damages could not even exceed 700 points.. Even using their most powerful skills such as {Explosive Flame}, and {Frost Dragon Slayer}, which multiplied their base magic attacks by threefold, they simply could not hurt Zhang Yang!

Meanwhile, the Hunter-profession players might as well have been sprinkling Zhang Yang with soy-sauce, as their arrows bounced off uselessly, causing no more than zero damage!

What was the main purpose of playing online games? It was all about the equipment, wasn't it? The differences between Copper-Green and Yellow-Gold were miles apart!

Shoof! Zhang Yang dashed forward towards a caster with {Charge}.

It had taken him less than eight seconds to reach the back row, and the critical attack of {Destructive Smash} which was boosted by the effect of {Warrior's Will} was still in effect!

'-8,848!' {Destructive Smash}, critical hit!

"Argh!" that caster only had a total of 5120 health points, there was no way he could have warded off the blow! He instantly turned into a flash of white light and crumpled to the ground!

'-136!'

'-158!'

'-182!'

Both {Explosive Flame} and {Frost Dragon Slayer} had 10-second cool down periods. As a result, the Spellcasters had could only attack using their inferior {Fireballs} and {Frost Arrows} which only multiplied their magical attacks by two! If the previous volley had been pathetic, this one was even worse!

However, these ranged players had been stationed far away from each other under the rational directing of Floating Fire Ball, to prevent Zhang Yang from having the chance to catch them all in one draft.

The melee attackers of Pride had caught up, and surrounded him once again!

Although these players could not inflict much damage, their status effect skills, be it speed reduction, bind, or stun, were infuriatingly bothersome! Zhang Yang immediately summoned his [Servant - Clear Lotus], and commanded her enter {Stealth} while he charged at Kindling Chest Hair and the others.

{Concussion Shot}, {Speed Reduction Venom}, a bunch of status effect skills were thrown right onto Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang plowed through it all, ignoring their effects. He would only have to ward off {Stun} statuses! It was not worth using up his skills on these status effects that only slowed him down, not stopping him completely in his tracks. The remaining three spellcasters could still fire their {Explosive Flame} and {Frost Dragon Slayer} without any cool down restrictions, and could possibly remove his HP in 20 seconds or so. In the meantime, he would have to kill the players around him!

He still had his {Berserker's Heal} to be used when the time comes to return to full power in no time!

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang took two steps back, angling himself before sending out the shockwave, stunning all the melee attackers of the Pride for 4 seconds!

{Thunder Strike}!

After two AoE attacks, the his targets were almost close to death. If not for the healers practically breaking their backs in healing their team mates, they would have already been wiped out!

"Sun of the beach, someone get this bear off me!" Floating Fire

Ball was screaming at the top of his lungs.

The [Gold-Eared Bear King] is a Yellow-Gold [Pet Mount], capable of dishing out over 1,900 damage per second, while Floating Fire Ball was only dressed in thin cloth armor that hardly provided much defense. As Whitey basically smacked him around with its huge paws, the leader of Pride was dying on his feet already!

Floating Fire Ball quickly activated an {Ice Barrier}, entering an immobile, invincible state. He continued screaming for help.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "I'm truly sorry, they're too busy saving their own asses!"

Although there were four healers of Pride backing them up, Zhang Yang's repeated AoE attacks had left up to 13 melee attackers stumbling about. The healers could not possibly keep all of them alive at the same time, as Zhang Yang began targeting those who were closest to death!

```
{Force Strike}!
```

{Shield Bash}!

With each hit killing one player at a time, even the accompanying damage that came with {Cripple Defense} had reached up to 1000+! Zhang Yang gave a few quick slashes here and there for good measure.

Zhang Yang was 4 seconds away from being cleared of all the status effects, while Pride was left with only nine melee attackers!

{Kidney Shot}!

The Thieves could not afford to wait for the 5-star {Kidney Shot}, the first thief only managing to save up 2-stars before he used it anyway, forcing Zhang Yang into a 3-second stun status.

{Substitute} skill activated!

Zhang Yang went straight into a 5-second period invincibility, and as [Servant - Clear Lotus] was already in {Stealth} as per commanded earlier on, the other opponents could not even hit her as they could not even see her - if they even knew that she existed in the first place!

Slice, dice! Slash, hack!

By the time he was no longer invincible, another three players had fallen!

{Horizontal Sweep}!

{Thunder Strike}!

In the chaotic mess of horrified screams, more bodies fell! Zhang Yang swung his [Battle Axe] up and down, activating another {Destructive Smash} that swept across the battle field, and the last melee attacker crumpled to the ground!

"Mother of god, he's wiped out our front line!"

"My god, he still has three quarters of his HP! How do we even fight him?!"

The gang of the Pride couldn't help screaming out loud, faced with a monster of a player! What else could they do?

The difference between equipment grades have been made apparent here!

If Daffodil Daydream was the one who engaging him, she actually stood a chance of killing him in less than 20 seconds! Furthermore, Daffodil Daydream was only equipped with Level 50 equipment. If she got to level 60 while being fully decked out in Yellow-Gold, she would have forced Zhang Yang against the ropes, bringing out all his emergency skills!

Previously, Zhang Yang had slaughtered up to 30 players of Pride while equipped with an incomplete set of Gray-Silver grade equipment. Now that he surpassed his opponents by two grades of higher leveled equipment, it was a total bloodfest!

"F*cking hell! F*ck f*ck f*ck!" the {Ice Barrier} would only last for 10 seconds, and Floating Fire Ball would still find himself smacked around like a rag doll when Whitey resumed its attacks. Thanks to

a knight healer busting his ass to heal Floating Fire Ball, he was not yet dead. However, could a Copper-Green grade healer possibly heal more than the damage values inflicted by a Yellow-Gold [Pet Mount]?

That would be a big no!

Zhang Yang was already rushing towards the ranged attackers who cowered in response.

"Boss, we are totally no match to him, we should retreat!" someone cried out. While the spellcasters were able to do some damage, the Hunters had totally given up, seeing how their own attacks inflicted zero damage on their opponent! Some of them even dropped their bows and fell to their knees in despair. The healers glumly stood at their positions as they mechanically healed their team mates. Everyone was shell shocked. Against the god-slayer Zhang Yang, their healing effects were just like fireworks being set off in the midst of actual explosions!

"Retreat! Retreat!" Floating Fire Ball shouted in embarrassment. Dying may not deduct their levels, but their experience points would still be removed. It requires approximately seven days to level up once at their levels, and that amount of time is no joke!

However, can he really get away?

What would be the first thing that comes to mind when you hear about [Pet Mount]s? Speed? To try outrunning a [Pet Mount] would be complete idiocy!

Floating Fire Ball only managed a few steps before he was flattened by Whitey's paws!

Pak!

A glittering silver hat dropped right on the ground beside the dead bpdy of Floating Fire Ball. Zhang Yang immediately ran over to pick it up. Such equipment was already beneath him, but if he could do it to spite Floating Fire Ball, why not?

The others scattered. Zhang Yang quickly mounted Whitey and gave chase.

Another three of them were brutally killed, before the others managed to tear their teleportation scrolls up, vanishing into thin air.

In his previous life, some high level players would occasionally block the main entrance of low leveled territories and initiate battles of one versus many. Zhang Yang had never understood the purpose of doing so. There was no fun in it at all.

In reality, even a highly trained operative of any renowned special forces would be unable to stand up to a hundred civilians in direct combat. But in a game, with good enough equipment and sufficient levels, such a fantasy could be realized! No wonder the Americans loved producing action heroes, it just felt great to watch a single person take out an army!

Firstly, it was torture for the newbies. It was just unfair and callous. If they had been similarly leveled and equipped, it would have been a different story!

Of course, Zhang Yang would never deliberately go around killing low level players just for the sake of fun and adrenaline, however, he was basically acting in self-defense here! It would be injustice to the entire set of equipment on his body if he did not exercise a display of his power over their bratty sentiments!

Almost twenty minutes later, Wei Yan Er finally arrived, looking more frantic than he had ever seen her, even during large scale battles.

Seeing Zhang Yang from afar, she screamed in her high pitched voice at Zhang Yang, "Noob tank, is my baby still there?"

Zhang Yang frowned a little and spoke softly the party channel, "Little girl, don't you know there is something called the party channel?"

"I love to shout, why can't I?" Wei Yan Er ran over to Zhang Yang, scanning his surroundings, and immediately spotted the nestling. Her face cracked into a joyful grin and she ran over to it, "Hey birdie, you're going to be mine soon, wahahaha!"

"... You did not just watch some other series like '<u>A Bride for a Ride</u>', did you?"

"Hmph, I don't have time for you now, leave me be!" Wei Yan Er took out her [Sealing Leash] from her backpack, but she held on to it, clasping it between her palms as the prayed, "To all the gods up there in the sky, please give me your blessings, let me get it in one attempt!"

She chanted those lines a few more times like some weird mantra before throwing out her [Sealing Leash] in excitement.

```
10%, 20%, 30%... Pak, failed!
```

"Sigh, this brat is such a pain to deal with, even those gods weren't bothered about you!" Zhang Yang could not help himself but ridicule her.

"Hmph! They're just lazy, I don't believe in gods anyway!" Wei Yan Er took a 180 degree turn from her apparent polytheism, and she threw another [Sealing Leash], uttering a completely different line, "I believe in <u>Chun Ge</u>, that there is a bird!"

Zhang Yang almost fell off his mount, choking on his own breath as he howled in laughter.

Pak, failed!

Wei Yan Er roared furiously, "Chun Ge is also unreliable!"

Zhang Yang collapsed in laughter and said, "Little girl, two [Sealing Leash]es are worth 200 gold pieces!"

Wei Yan Er bitterly glared at him, "Noob tank, you must compensate me!"

"Why?"

"You called me over for this! If you hadn't called me over, how would I end up wasting two [Sealing Leash]? This is causality! Cause and effect, understand?"

Zhang Yang felt the familiar drip of cold sweat running down his head. This pair of sisters had a level of stinginess that could be categorized as a unique form of art by itself!

"Little girl, why do you two...save up so much?" Zhang Yang could not hold his urge to ask her anymore.

"If I don't save up, not even 50,000 dollars will be enough for me!" Wei Yan Er told him poignantly.

Zhang Yang blinked stupidly for a moment, then he asked, "You spend over 50,000 dollars in a month?" From his point of view, these two could have stingily abstained from spending even a fraction of that in a month, it was very much like them!

"Sigh, perfumes, handbags, the money will be gone after a few simple purchases, and I have to ask anything more from cousin sister! Cousin sister used to only have 50,000 dollars as her pocket money, so she would scrape anything more than that from me, she caused me so much pain that I eventually I learned how to save up money myself!" Wei Yan Er pouted her mouth discontentedly, and continued, "Now that cousin sister has become rich, she's become a total miser! Sigh... To eat a meal in her house, I would be required to do house chores! She used to have a maid in her house, but ever since I started going over for meals, the maid was discharged, my life is now bitter!"

... so much self-contradiction in such a twisted history!

"Yea! I got it! I got it!" Wei Yan Er jumped up in joy, as the fifth attempt was successful!

[Fire Chocobo] (Gray-Silver Battle Mount)

Level: o

HP: 50

Little girl immediately summoned the nestling out, and due to the 'Summoning Bond', the nestling naturally behaved in a way that made her look like the surrogate parent. It continually nuzzled its little head against the ankle of Wei Yan Er, looking extremely cute while doing so! "Noob tank, I've got a birdie now!"

A Bride for a Ride: A comedy that revolves around Foolhardy Tiger Wong who is annoyed with his mother's constant nagging for him to get married. He therefore snatches Chow Man-bun, a pretty man disguised as a girl, who later met his sister and turned into a bizarre triangle.

Chun Ge: The stage name of a female singer in China (Chris Lee) who dresses up androgynously, then the term was altered over the time and became a cultural spoof.

Chapter 249: Rival In Love

The next day, Zhang Yang woke up early in the morning and directly logged in to the game, he was being summoned urgently by Wei Yan Er. So, he quickly used a [Teleportation scroll] to teleport to Thunderstorm Castle and arrived at the entrance of the castle as instructed by her.

The little girl was on top of an extremely colorful Chocobo, joy all over her face, giddy with joy.

Zhang Yang had something that was a mix between a glare and a smile, and he asked, "Little girl, did you rush me here just to see 'Birdie'?"

"Of course not!" Wei Yan Er quickly shook her head, but her smile only grew wider, and she eagerly asked, "What say you? Isn't my Little Flower very pretty?"

Giving names such as Little White and Little Flower, this little girl could only seem to throw out one-dimensional names! It wasn't as if Zhang Yang had exceptional naming sense himself, looking at Whitey...

"Hm, it's definitely prettier compared to you!" Zhang Yang replied with a deadpan expression.

"I'm not talking to you anymore!" Wei Yan Er lifted her chin up with rage.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, and he said, "Alright then, I'll take my leave!"

"No! Stop! Cousin sister is still waiting for you to save her!" Wei Yan Er quickly caught up to Zhang Yang on her Chocobo and said, "I'm giving you a chance to save a damsel in distress! Cousin sister will definitely be grateful, you can have her body all to yourself!"

"Ha!" Zhang Yang guffawed, and he said, "That's no damsel, that's a bloody siren! Like, those ladies who drown you with voices! Why would I save a siren, that's asking for death, one must be alert before doing so! Look at Xu Xian who saved the White Snake, look at how miserable they turned out to be!"

"Pui! You must be a man with a sad love life!" Wei Yan Er sniffed.

"Yeah, yeah, what's this all about then?" Zhang Yang did not see any signs of Han Ying Xue, the siren would usually be inseparable from this brat.

Do you still remember that guy we used to mention, Luo Yang Ming?"

"Yeah, the guy who stalked witchy Snow all the way to England, but got kicked out later on, what about him?"

"Yes! Yes!" Wei Yan Er nodded continuously, "That guy has a face thicker than the ancient civilization! Even when cousin sister

has totally turned her back on him, he's still sticking onto her like a piece of dog sh*t, he's really starting to piss her off! Everyday, he would call and mutter some disgusting mushy words, she's already smashed three of her phones to pieces! Hehe, that one did break her heart!"

While he was imagining Han Ying Xue smashing the phones with a look of instant regret, Zhang Yang could not help himself but laughed out loud.

"You really don't have a conscience, do you!" Wei Yan Er quickly criticized him, but she had also started giggling.

"I thought your ass was on fire, from the way you called me over, but this is it?" Zhang Yang frowned disapprovingly at her, her mind seemed to work in a completely different manner from the average human!

"You're the one who ran here like your ass was on fire!" Wei Yan Er was never one to back down from petty war of words, and she continued, "Of course not, do I look like I'm that boring? We don't know how that Luo Ming Yang found out that cousin is playing {{God's Miracle}}, or how he even found her game ID out. This morning, he came looking for her, and has been stuck on her since then! I will always boldly do what is right, so I purposely summoned you, the Panda Prince to save the princess!"

"What the hell, why don't you just kill him off, what trouble would that be?!" Zhang Yang shook his head continuously.

"You are really stupid! The Luo has a face thicker than the walls of the city! Killing him won't work at all, he'll come back like an immortal nightmare! I have a great idea, why don't you act as her boy friend to get rid of that Luo guy!"

Zhang Yang rolled both of his eyes backward ad said, "Little girl, are you trying to save witchy Snow, or are you trying to push me over into the burning furnace? Even if I just have to play act, I can still feel a chill running down my bones!"

"Hehehe, cousin has the same genetic inheritance like me, you should feel blessed to have her as your fake girlfriend!" Wei Yan Er pulled Zhang Yang by his arm and said, "Faster, faster! Cousin's gonna blow anytime soon! I couldn't care less if I wasn't in the same house as her, but if this is going to affect my lunch hour, my life would be miserable!"

"Holy god, and here I was thinking that you were just looking out for her!"

"Hehe!"

The walked through the alleyways. They saw Han Ying Xue in a corner, with a male warrior kneeling by her side, both his hands holding up a bunch of black roses, offering it up to her!

Holy sh*t, those flowers required real money!

In 'God's Miracle', there are numerous shops that sells items that

are purely cosmetic. A variety of rings, necklaces, accessories, were purchasable. They added no attributes to players, but they were all finely crafted and appealing to look at. Of course, that would make them extremely expensive.

For example, a platinum ring with the flavor text -- 'Love her, then buy it for her!', would cost 99999 gold pieces!

These were so called Luxurious Items, and flowers also fell under this category.

That bundle of flowers that the male player was holding up was the most expensive variant in the florist shop, costing 9999 gold pieces each. Furthermore, one day later, the flowers will automatically wither and fall, it was the most money-burning item ever!

Although a platinum ring is more expensive, it would not deteriorate or disappear!

That player did not hide his personal information, the name 'iLuvHanYingXue, level 10, male human, Berserker Warrior' was floating right above his head. There was no doubt that this man is Luo Yang Ming.

"... little Snow, I truly love you, please just accept my tidal wave of love for you!" as they walked closer, they could hear the mush Luo Yang Ming was making.

Han Ying Xue was almost blue in the face, she was probably too annoyed to even say no.

"Luo Yang Ming, you really are thick faced! Cousin already told you to roll home a hundred times, why can't you see that!" Wei Yan Er could not bear it anymore as she snarled at him.

"Cousin Yan Er, how could you speak like that to your cousin brother!" Luo Yang Ming straightened up upon seeing Wei Yan Er. He turned around and replied her in the strict tone of an elder.

"How can he be your cousin brother, if he and witchy Snow --- "
Zhang Yang could not help but began to wonder.

"He is the son to the cousin sister of my father, and cousin sister is the daughter to the sister of my mother. So, the two of them are totally unrelated by blood!" Wei Yan Er waved her hand around.

Luo Yang Ming, however, stared at Zhang Yang warily, and said, "Cousin Yan Er, who is this man? Don't forget our standing! Please do not mix with these mongrels!"

What the hell, that sentence would score him ten out of ten points in provoking people into beating him up!

Wei Yan Er snorted and said, "You who bear the surname Luo! What are you overweening for? If my father did not sponsor you, that factory of yours would not even be open! Cutting corners in production, taking advantage of your own people, your actions

almost destroyed my mother and her sister's blood and sweat!"

The face of Luo Yang Ming immediate turned pale, and he said, "Cousin Yan Er, don't throw false accusations at innocent people!"

"Witchy Snow, let's go, didn't we agree earlier to go leveling up together?" Zhang Yang waved at Han Ying Xue.

Luo Yang Ming's gaze on Zhang Yang instantly turned from wariness to outright scorn, so he turned around to Han Ying Xue and asked, "Little Snow, who is this?"

"Hey, I'll only say it once!" Zhang Yang rode on his Whitey and shoved himself in between Luo Yang Ming and Han Ying Xue, looking down from his elevated position. As he reached his right hand out and lifted up his index finger, he said, "Witchy Snow is my woman, you better god damn stop harassing her!"

"Haha! Where did you wretched being come from, what right do you have to pursue my little Snow?" Luo Yang Ming shot back.

"You idiotic moron, she's been my woman since forever! What rights are you talking about, are you really that f*cking idiotic?" Zhang Yang purposely cursed continuously, using his very best to land some solid hits into the heart of Luo Yang Ming.

Luo Yang Ming grew even paler, and his whole body trembled, but after a while, he suddenly smiled and said, "Little Snow, this is an actor you hired, right? You have never had a boyfriend till now even, your heart is filled with me!"

"God, Mr Luo, can you possibly get any more disgusting!" Wei Yan Er made a show of puking.

"My dear hubby, let's go!" Han Ying Xue summoned her [Storm and Gale Direwolf], gazing at Zhang Yang seductively while speaking sweetly, and Zhang Yang felt a shiver down his spine. His heart was knocked off rhythm for a second, and in a bad way!

The three [Mounts] began to pick up speed, leaving Luo Yang Ming behind in one of the alleyways.

"You bastards, whether you are acting or not, Han Ying Xue is mine! Only mine!" Luo Yang Ming barked at the backs of the three figures that were rapidly disappearing. His face was almost goblinlike as he cried, "You f*cking b*tch, you humiliated me for so many years, just wait till I get my hands on 'Silky Soft Holdings' and make it mine, I will turn you into my toy till you die!"

• • •

"I realize that your relationships are a little messy!" After riding out for a distance, Zhang Yang began to talk.

"I guess it's okay to tell you everything now!" Wei Yan Er looked at Han Ying Xue, and seeing no objection, she continued, "More than 20 years ago, when my mother and my aunt were still pursuing their studies in university, they took a loan and founded

'Silky Soft Holdings'. The two of them were the best designers in the world! In just a short time, they already made 'Silky Soft Holdings' a major company!"

Zhang Yang was shocked for a moment, never once fathoming that 'Silky Soft Holdings' was founded by their mothers together.

"Then, about 17 years ago, my mother and my aunt went to Europe to take part in a Fashion Design Exhibition. Who would have guessed, on their way there, their plane crashed! My mother and aunt..." Wei Yan Er was solemn for once, her eyes genuinely beginning to tear.

Zhang Yang stared in shock and asked, "Southern Airlines, CA1077?"

"Huh? How did you know!" Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue whipped around to look at him, their eyes wide in shock.

Zhang Yang sighed painfully and said, "Both my parents were on that plane too!"

The three of them remained silent for a moment.

"Noob tank, to think we actually share the same fate!" Wei Yan Er patted Zhang Yang on his shoulder like an old friend. Perhaps in a way, their souls had that sort of bond.

Unpleasant memories quickly came flooding back, and he quickly

"Yes!" Wei Yan Er nodded and said, "So my mother and my aunt left their shares of the company to me and my cousin here. However, before we hit the age of our adulthood, the company will be under the care of by my father and my uncle! A few years back, my uncle had cancer and passed away. For my sake, my cousin let my father look after the holdings on behalf of her. But, he's not really doing it any good, he's using our shares to sponsor dirtbags like Luo, helping them start up their own companies!"

She shrugged and said, "I'm fine with that, but they're ruining our reputation! As they are considered subsidiary companies of Silky Soft Holdings, their actions reflect on us! They often use substandard goods to throw the market off, resulting in lots of rejected stocks, the company that my mom and aunt had put all their hearts and passion into is really shaky at the moment!"

"My father will always stand by his side of the family! Hmph! When I am 18 years old, it will be the time to place justice above filial piety! I'm not going to let the efforts of my mother and my aunt go to waste!"

Xu Xian: Male character in 'Legend of the White Snake' novel, who fell in love with White Snake (disguised herself into a woman named Bai Suzhen)

White Snake: Female character in 'Legend of the White Snake' novel, who fell in love with Xu Xian.

Chapter 250: 10,000 Phantoms

"Based on what you had just said you to me, this guy called Luo who claims to be head over heels over the bitchy Snow is in truth only trying to get hold of her share of the company?"

"That's why I said it's disgusting! The lowest! Scum!" Wei Yan Er cringed as she described Luo Yang Ming. "He would hump my cousin-sister's leg just to get some money from the company's trash can! I mean, look at the guy! Pretending to be a successful man, putting up airs as if he was Bill Gates or the other apple guy! Disgusting prick!"

"Alright, alright, I'm going to stop you there now. Show's over, I'll get going now!" said Zhang Yang as he stopped the bear.

"Ah! Wait up! We just accepted a quest yesterday! We need to go to some ghostly place to kill a boss! I need you to come with us!" screamed the little girl.

"What ghostly place?"

"10,000 Phantoms! How bout it? Scary, isn't it?" said Wei Yan Er as she tried to mimic a ghost with her face.

Zhang Yang smiled with delight. "So, you guys know where these 10,000 Phantoms are?"

"Dummy! You're really as dumb as you look! If we had known

where it was, we would be clearing the quest by now!" said Han Ying Xue, pretending to have remained unaffected by the recollection of her sad story.

Zhang Yang knew something that Han Ying Xue did not. 10,000 Phantoms was a good place indeed! That rather scary name aside, the place hosted a boss that drops priceless items called [Fate Crystals]!

[Fate Crystals], or Attribute Crystal as players commonly called them, will permanently increase a player's certain attribute! [Fate Crystals] came in three tiers, Gold, Silver, and Copper. [Gold Fate Crystals] will increase a certain attribute by 10 points, Silver by 7 points, and Copper, at the very least, 5 points.

The spawning point of 10,000 Phantoms was not fixed. It was something like a mobile dungeon that will only spawns in maps above Level 50. Once all the bosses inside are killed, 10,000 Phantoms will disappear and will respawn again after 10 days.

Since [Fate Crystals] were such special items, high leveled players will flock to the 10,00 Phantoms once it spawns. There was no limit to how many times you may clear the dungeon, or how many crystals you were allowed to use on your character!

Back then, in his previous life, Zhang Yang had only been in the map once! All he managed was to spectate a horde of powerful players clearing all 7 floors in no time! He got nothing from it!

[&]quot;Okay! Let's go, let's go!" Zhang Yang was excited.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er exchanged a look and asked, "So, what treasure will appear in 10,000 Phantoms?"

"Why'd you ask?"

"Tch!" Han Ying Xue clicked her tongue. "Take a good look in the mirror, you sly monkey! You have excitement written all over your face!"

Zhang Yang laughed as he answered them. "Alright, the bosses of 10,000 Phantoms will have a chance of dropping [Fate Crystals], you can use those crystals to increase a certain attribute, permanently!"

"WoWoWoWo~! I want that! In that case, I'll take Strength and Dexterity, cousin sister will take the Intelligence and Spirit, all the Vitality will go to the noob tank!" Wei Yan Er bounced on her feet and shrugged as she expressed a "be grateful you begger" kind of smug look.

"Listen here, you little girl. I'll need Strength crystals as well, you hear?"

"Nope! No deal!" Wei Yan Er shook her head so hard that you could practically play drums with it, if you attached two drum sticks to her forehead.

"Oh well...in that case, let's hope that all the [Fate Crystals] drops

All three of them rode on their mounts and got out of Forest of Tanilla, passing through the Frozen Sky Wastelands and into the Necrotic Wastelands. After a small walking distance, they arrived at a small valley of mountains. From afar, they could already see how creepy the place was. Dark, damp air surrounded the valley and occasionally, the sound of crows could be heard as their wings fluttered by rapidly.

"Hmm...According to the quest description, it should be around this valley!" said Han Ying Xue as she sat on her Direwolf, circling around aimlessly.

Zhang Yang observed the area and spotted something that looked like an cave entrance to a tomb. "There!"

Even though he had only managed to enter 10,000 Phantoms once, the image of the creepy and eerie entrance was clearly etched into his brain. All three of them kept their mounts and headed into the entrance.

Do not be fooled by this narrow entry, the inside was like heaven and earth! The place was in the belly of the mountain, as wide as a football field, perhaps even wider! Along the insides of the mountain wall was a tunnel as wide as 20 meters. The tunnels formed a long spiral-like route, going down and deeper into the earth. Fire torches hung on the side of the tunnel wall, illuminating the otherwise dark, hollow pathway. From where they stood, they peeked down the center of the mountain. It looked like a giant monster with its maw wide open!

The spiral pathway had at least seven spins, with each complete circle being as long as 5,000 meters. The slope of the pathway was rather steep, like the mountain side itself. Judging by the looks alone, it would seem that it went down as deep as several hundred meters.

"Noob tank! I want a {Beast Taming} Indistinct skill book as well!" Wei Yan Er puffed her cheeks and asked Zhang Yang. She was amazed at how Zhang Yang's [Gold-Eared Bear King] was able to walk beside him, while her own mount was confined within her inventory since she could not summon it inside an indoor environment.

Zhang Yang snickered. "Trust me. You're better off starting as a new Hunter than hunt for the skill book."

"Argh...if I had known earlier, I would have just cut off your head myself and claim the price, at least I'd have something to go for me!" Wei Yan Er vented her frustration.

"Eh? Why aren't there any monsters around?" said Han Ying Xue warily. The path ahead of them was completely shrouded in darkness, devoid of movement and sound. Visibility was decent, they could see a few hundred meters ahead of them. The only problem was, there was not even a single monster around!

Zhang Yang twitched an eye brow and frowned worriedly. "I think someone else might be here!"

"Let's hurry then!" Wei Yan Er kicked off and dashed forward without waiting for the rest. Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue nodded and started to sprint as quicckly as they could.

Luckily, just 200 meters ahead, they already spotted a group of 20+ players fighting a bunch of monsters. The group of players consisted of five different guild, all forming 5-men parties.

Though they were separated by several meters front and back, the gap was not that obvious.

"So, players first? Or monsters?" Wei Yan Er switched to the party channel and asked.

Zhang Yang thought for a while and replied. "We'll leave them be. If they were to try anything funny, we'll let them see how funny they look when we kick their asses!"

As the saying goes, an eye for an eye. Zhang Yang hated being bullied. That was why he understood how it felt like and would not attack unprovoked.

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er nodded and followed Zhang Yang.

The monsters around here were all elite tiers. For a normal player, these monsters would be as tough as mini-bosses. That was why, even though those other players had a tank and a healer in their parties that appeared to have swapped parties between guilds. No party consisted of 5 players from the same guild. It was

minimum requirement, a perfect dungeon raiding party group would require one tank, one healer, and three attackers.

However, all five parties members equipment were not on par, most of them were wearing armor that gave out a green colored hue, while only a few of them had a silverish hue on them. By the looks of it, their progress was slow since they would need around 40 seconds to kill one monster.

[Rotten Skelatal Walker] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 54

HP: 108,000

Defense: 300

Zhang Yang took out his golden battle axe and smirked. "Let's kill them all, AoE style!"

"Ok!" Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er nodded. With their powerful equipment, they could easily kite monsters that were non-spellcaster type, even if they were elite tier. They might only struggle against open world type elites, but even that wouldn't be much trouble if they worked together.

"Stay close!" Zhang Yang rushed to the front and got ahead of all

the five parties. He charged ahead into a bunch of monsters. Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er followed closely behind him, along with the bear. Since the bear did not attack, all aggro was on Zhang Yang alone.

With a single charge, Zhang Yang had kited seven to eight monsters with him.

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang stomped the ground and slowed all the monsters without looking back. He continued on further.

"Growl!" The monsters got closer and almost at the range to attack.

{Block}!

A flash of damage text from the {Block} reflected damage popped out. Zhang Yang chained his move with {Horizontal Sweep} to create generate aggro on him.

"Holy crap! Are those three crazy?" Players from behind Zhang Yang's party saw how he was executing the "suicidal" rush and stared in awe and disbelief. Even if they want to die, they shouldn't do it like that!

"Weird...Did you notice any Hunters in their party? If I'm not mistaken, that's a huge bear following them, right?"

"Yeah. The one with the shield must be a Guardian. He has a Rage meter gauge. Same goes the lady with the huge battle axe, she's a Berserker! The one wearing cloth armor and with a MP gauge must be a priest! I'm certain that there's aren't any Hunters in their party! How could a pet exist then?"

Zhang Yang went on charging into monsters for at least 50 to 60 meters ahead. The monsters following behind him already amounted to more than 40. He stopped at a wall of the tunnel and cried, "Little brat! You're up!"

```
'-201!'
```

The monster had caught up to Zhang Yang and thrust their hands out to attack Zhang Yang. None of the damage values went above 200+! It could not be helped, since their basic attack were only around 2,500. They already did the Elite title justice by managing to slightly penetrate Zhang Yang's super high Defense.

```
{Horizontal Sweep}, {Thunder Strike}, {Blast Wave}!
```

```
{Tornado Cleave}!
```

^{&#}x27;-223!'

^{&#}x27;-208!'

Both Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er started unleashed all their AoE skills and dealt devastating damage to all the monsters around!

They had killed all the surrounding monster in only four to five minutes! Defeated, the monsters dropped all sort of cloth etc items and a few coins on the floor. Smiling and snickering, the two girls started to pick up all the battle loots. They had purposely asked Zhang Yang to set the loot distribution to free-for-all before they had entered the place. First come, first serve basis!

Seeing how Zhang Yang party had mowed down all the elite monsters like dried twigs, the players behind were staring with huge disbelief!

They themselves could only take on one monster with five men! They even had to carefully draw out one monster from the herd, one at a time! If they accidentally pulled two, it would be chaotic! If they accidentally pulled three, it would be a one-way ticket to the graveyard for them.

The problem was that Zhang Yang's party had only three players! How could they even stand toe to toe with 40 monsters all at once!? Are they even humans to begin with?

"We can't just let them take the lead! There must be a boss up ahead!" Initially, the players behind wanted to take the chance and run ahead, following the path that Zhang Yang had just cleared. However, Zhang Yang had not kited all the monsters in his way, he had merely ran through, attracting the attention of whatever he could. The monsters further to the side of the tunnel had spread themselves out to fill the gaps. Even though the gap between the

monsters were wider now, players would still have to kill them if they want to proceed.

All the players exchange a look and agreed that an "alliance" is the only way to get pass!

After the two girls were done looting all the drops, Zhang Yang started to rush again. In just half an hour, the party had proceeded so far ahead that the five temporarily allied parties were completely shrouded in darkness!

Since the bear did not have any AoE skills, it was rather redundant in this field. Though its DPS was as high as 1,800, it was nothing compared to Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er's total damage!

Even with the cumulative pushing power, the area of this mountain belly was just too large. They had only traveled as far as 2,000 meters in three hours! They probably had to double that distance to complete one circle!

"I'm beat! That's it! I'm done!" said Wei Yan Er as she patted her tummy. "I'm so hungry! I'll go stupidly crazy if I don't put some food in my belly!"

"As if you could get any smarter after you eat..." Zhang Yang whispered.

The time was already 12 noon. All three of them agreed to have a quick break and relogged after their lunch.

Chapter 251: Lost Dream

After having their lunch, everyone logged in after 30 minutes and got together.

Before they logged off, Zhang Yang had killed all the monster around the area. Since elite tier monsters required five hours to respawn, the place was empty and bare when Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er came back. All of them continued their journey and reached the end of the first part after three hours.

Technically, the entire tunnel simply followed the shape of the mountain from the inside. The spiral pathway led downwards to the lowest and deepest part of the mountain. Technically, Zhang Yang's current position was a complete cycle from where they entered. If they could drill upwards, the entrance to the mountain would just be 50 meters up!

Now that he had arrived to what seems to be a gigantic rock blocking the pathway forward. Standing in front of the rock was a huge, mega-sized version of the Hatred Amalgamated. Its innards were spilling out of its rotten body. It had a pair of hands, and an extra hand stitched to its back. Each hand carried a gigantic cleaver. There seems to be green liquid leaking out from all parts of its body. The liquid dripped down, corroding the ground, releasing a visible cloud of gas around it.

[Despaired Hatred Amalgamated] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 56

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 600

"Gimme Strength Crystal! Gimme Strength Crystal! Come! Come! Hoy!" Wei Yan Er clapped her palms together and mumbled something inaudible.

"Ay! Dummy! What are you standing there for? Get going quickly! It's just a Gray-Silver boss!" Han Ying Xue urged hurriedly.

"Hehehe. Relax b*tch. Keep pushing and you'll get nothing! I'll cursed your future husband to be a minute-man!" Zhang Yang laughed and rushed away before giving any chance for Han Ying Xue to respond to his sarcastic insult.

"!@\$%\$%\$!@%^!@\$@##@" Hatred Amalgamated rumbled incomprehensibly. It stomped forwards with large paces towards Zhang Yang.

'-2,206!'

The boss landed a strike on Zhang Yang. He purposely allowed the monster to hit him instead of activating {Block}. He wanted to gauge the monster's attack. He was rather satisfied with the result. If he went all out with the boss, there was hope to defeat him in a solo fight! However, since it's an indoor environment, he would have to rely on the "combined mode" with the bear to defeat it!

Han Ying Xue swiftly cast a {Regeneration} on Zhang Yang.

```
'-o!'
```

'-1,000!'

'-1,000!'

After two seconds, a green, viscous liquid spewed out from the boss and landed on all three of them, dealing different amounts of damage.

"Bleh! Disgusting!" cried Wei Yan Er. This attack was the boss' {Rot Aura} which will deal 1,000 Natural damage to all targets within a 30 meter radius.

Despaired Hatred Amalgamated was just a one of the guardian bosses of 10,000 Phantoms. It wasn't particularly difficult. Since the party strength was overwhelming, thanks to their high-tiered equipment, the boss was defeated in just six to seven minutes. The fat-*ss boss wailed and dropped to the floor, oozing out more green liquid after being defeated.

Hideous as it was, the boss was still rather generous! It dropped two Level 50 Gray-Silver equipment and a total of six [Fate Crystals]! One Vitality, two Strength, one Dexterity, one Intelligence, and one Spirit Crystal! All of them were Copper tier and could only add five points each.

After distributing the crystals, Zhang Yang took one Vitality and one Strength crystal while Wei Yan Er took one Strength and one Dexterity, leaving Han Ying Xue with the remainder.

[Fate Crystals: Vitality] (Copper, Usable)

Use: Permanently adds five points to Vitality.

All three of them smiled satisfyingly and used the crystal promptly.

'Ding! You have gain 5 points of Vitality!'

'Ding! You have gain 5 points of Strength!'

Along with the crisp clear sound of the notification, Zhang Yang attribute gained a tiny boost. Though the boost was significantly small, it would provide an obvious increase in power after accumulating more [Fate Crystals]!

"There's this huge rock blocking the road! How are we going to get pass it?" Wei Yan Er strafed to the left and tried to find a possible route through the gaps. She pointed towards a slightly larger gap and screamed to Zhang Yang. "Hey! Noob tank! Use the shrinking potion! We could pass through here!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Little brat! I think if you force yourself through that, you'll really flatten your chest!"

"D*mn you! So, how are we going to get past this?"

"Easy as pie. Do you not see the properties of the rocks? We can attack it!" said Zhang Yang as he took out his battle axe and began bunting the rocks.

[Solid Boulders] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 1,000

Clang! Clang! Bang! Bang!

The two of the melee attackers started to swing their weapons around and eventually smashed the rocks into tiny pebbles. Once the rocks came crumbling down, four arrows flew through the air and struck Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er.

Out of a sudden, four Skeletal Archers appeared in front of Zhang Yang's party. Each of the archers had a bow fashioned out of skeletal remains. Their eyes was glowing with green-emerald fiery flames.

[Rotting Skeletal Archer] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 56

HP: 112,000

Defense: 300

```
'-203!' '-217!'
```

'-2,321!' '-2,367!'

The archer continued their attacks and dealt very different damage to Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er.

"Growl!" the bear roared and rushed towards one of the archers. Likewise, Zhang Yang rushed forwards with {Charge} and attacked the other archer.

All Hunter class monsters will automatically try to gain distance

whenever someone closes in! With a calculated maneuver, Zhang Yang forced the monster to jump away, towards the second archer which was 10 meters away.

Under Zhang Yang's manual control, the bear had also forced the third archer to jump towards the fourth archer.

With the one man and one bear tactic, both {Charge} and {Wild Charge} were used intelligently to round up all the archers together. They would usually need to chase the monsters around, but instead, they had managed to herd the monsters like sheep!

Zhang Yang used {Horizontal Sweep}, {Thunder Strike}, and {Blast Wave} to generate a large amount of aggro on all of the archers around. Only then, did he start to unleash hell. Not much later, all four archer monsters were easily defeated by Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er.

Zhang Yang stuck his axe in the floor and gazed further into the tunnel ahead. Zhang Yang sighed, even though the monsters ahead were crowded. "D*mn. It's all but Hunter-type monsters. I won't be able to kite them all! We have no choice but to kill them one by one!" Previously, Zhang Yang was able to control and kill the monsters before because he was mentally multitasking. It may look easy to execute but it took up a lot of mental stress! If he were to continually use his multitasking ability, it wouldn't take long before he himself would be lying on the ground!

Losing the ability to multikill, the team's pushing power dropped by a significant level. After sometime, it was already getting late. The party then disbanded and went on their own ways for dinner. Until 7.30pm, they came back together and continued on.

Zhang Yang noticed Sun Xin Yu was online and abruptly sent an invitation to her. "Let's go together?"

Cold as ever, Sun Xin Yu remained quiet as a graveyard and accepted the invitation.

Not much sooner, she cried out. "Put on the accessory!"

Zhang Yang smirked and put on the Lover's Charm: Yang. He did so intentionally, just to force Sun Xin Yu to open her tightly sealed mouth.

Shush!

A bright light flashed, and Sun Xin Yu materialized beside Zhang Yang.

"Sister Sun! Can I have the accessory? Let me play with it for a few days!" Wei Yam Er complaint to Sun Xin Yu.

Without replying her, Sun Xin Yu remained stoic as ever and did not even move a muscle until Zhang Yang begun to push forward.

With Sun Xin Yu in the party, the party's offensive power had shot up. The party made it to the second boss before 12 midnight!

[Spectre Hunter, Sven] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 57

HP: 2,500,000

Defense: 600

The strongest skill of this boss was {10 Strikes}. Each of its arrows was able to deal 2,000 damage! However, its so-called strongest attack was rendered to be a complete joke when the boss targeted Zhang Yang. Fully clad in Yellow-Gold equipment, Zhang Yang was a super tank with super defense! The boss was barely able to penetrate his defense!

Overwhelmed! Overwhelmingly overwhelmed!

The party of four had only used five minutes to defeat the boss and hauled 10 pieces of [Fate Crystals]

After defeating the boss, a similar wall of rocks was stacked up behind. Zhang Yang party chose not to destroy the wall of rocks and instead, decided to hit the hay stack. Since the boss would only respawn after several days, the party will not be surrounded by monsters when they log into the game the next morning.

Due to Sun Xin Yu's day job, she had used [Teleportation Scroll],

going back to Thunderstorm Castle. The Lover's Charm, would quickly reunite the party whenever she needed it. Before going off, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had given all their random items for Sun Xin Yu to sell off! Being true misers at heart, the two sisters had wanted to utilize their inventories to their maximum potentials, for monetary purposes.

The party took four days to reach six floor of the 10,000 Phantoms. All of them obtained [Fate Crystals], none above Copper tier. Zhang Yang had obtained eight pieces of Vitality and six pieces of Strength. The boost it provided was not much, but the altogether they were equal to 14 Levels of AP gain. It's really a great haul when everything was taken in perspective.

Compared to Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and the rest had gained a Level and a little extra experience points. Since Zhang Yang's Level was way higher than the monsters he killed, the experience points he gained was lowered, however, he was still able to reached Level 62.

On the fifth day, Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er broke down the last wall of rocks and arrived at the lowest part of the 10,000 Phantoms.

Since the entire map had a spiral geometry, the top six floors were like the audience seats of a football field. The seventh floor was rather short and small compared to the previous six floors. After walking a mere 200 meters, they had arrived at the pathway that connected them to the lowest part of the map, just like entering the football field.

The huge "football field" did not share the well-groomed attributes of an actual football field! The surface of the ground was extremely uneven, with potholes here and there! There were even storm drains at a few random spots that emitted an extremely unpleasant odor! As they walked, they could only hear the wet squishy sounds of their footsteps. There were no monsters around! The place was so devoid of sound that they could practically hear the sound of a needle drop! Everyone instinctively had their guards up, preparing to react to any movement.

Just then...

Shush! Sun Xin Yu warped next to Zhang Yang with the Lover's Charm. Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er jumped and reacted violently to Sun Xin Yu's sudden appearance.

"S-S-S-Sister Sun! Oh god! Don't just jump out of nowhere! That scared the daylights out of me!" cried Wei Yan Er as she patted her chest.

Zhang Yang suddenly remembered an ancient funny joke. "Hey, listen. There was this guy,. He was auditioning to be an actor. So, the instructor let him warm up a little. He was supposed to say "A cold eerie wind blew, and I was so scared, that I dropped a brick!". That man was so nervous that he said "A cold eerie wind blew, and I was so scared, that I dropped a d*ck!""

"...Bleh!" All three females expressed their disgust. Han Ying Xue crossed her arm and shook her head. "Dummy...How and why did you learn all the bad habits from that pervert Fatty!"

Zhang Yang laughed mentally. If Fatty Han was here to hear that accusation, he would surely get offended at the slanderous claim! Ever since he was a kid, Zhang Yang had always been very naughty. Even though he was younger than Fatty Han by two months, it was Zhang Yang that led Fatty Han down the "dark side". It was best not to reveal the culprit who started it all!

"Sister Sun, don't you have work today?" Wei Yan Er asked Sun Xin Yu.

"It's my off-day!" Sun Xin Yu was ever so direct and simple.

"Oh!"

All four of them proceeded forwards. From afar it would seem as if their heights were fluctuating, one head bobbing over the others at times. The route was extremely uneven.

"This path is so tough to walk on! Hmph! Just like those evil businessmen building random freeways! I can even stomp a hole with my foot!" Wei Yan Er voiced her complaints after walking a few steps.

Ignoring the fact that each circle around the tunnel was 5,000 meters long, the radius of the circles would only be 800 meters. It was a shame there were no shorter routes. After walking down an empty walkway with no monsters to fight, the party had only spent 10 minutes or so to reach the centermost point of the 10,000 Phantoms.

As the party approached the place, which was a few hundred square meters, countless florescence light orbs glowed ferociously, illuminating the entire circular platform.

A spectral monster was seen riding on a skeletal war horse, right in the center of the platform. A huge battle hammer was seen resting on his right shoulder. Fully clad in blood-red metal armor, only two round glowing, green-emerald flames could be seen through the gap in the eye holes.

[Spectre General, Bullon] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 60

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 700

"Why isn't it a Yellow-Gold tier?" said Wei Yan Er as she pouted her lips disgruntledly.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Little girl, do you really think that Yellow-Gold bosses would be available everywhere like McDonalds?"

Wei Yan Er nodded her head innocently.

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and shook his head. Even though they had defeated a number of Yellow-Gold bosses a few days back, it did not mean that Yellow-Gold bosses would be spawning around like mushrooms after the rain! Zhang Yang had been lucky enough to accept a main story quest in the first place! That was why he could encounter so many Yellow-Gold bosses in the first place! As far as the game progressed, Yellow-Gold bosses were still a rare sight!

"Hurry up and get killing! We have been roaming around this ghostly place for more than four days! Look at my poor Little Petal! Its only at Level 32! We didn't even have the chance to properly grind!"

"Wait!" Sun Xin Yu suddenly let out a scream. She then vanished with a sudden "poof" and disappeared into the air.

"What's wrong?" the party asked.

Sun Xin Yu remained quiet. After a few seconds later, two shadowy figures were forcefully revealed. Both of them had star circling on their heads; they were stunned!

"Thieves!" the party gasped.

Zhang Yang mentally praised Sun Xin Yu incredible awareness. As expected from China's number one Thief. When Zhang Yang was unable to detect any strange activities around him, Sun Xin Yu could, ever so vigilantly! Naturally since Sun Xin Yu was a Thief

class herself, she had a far better understanding as to how a Thief worked and how they could strike from within the shadows.

However, Sun Xin Yu's opponent was also proved to be a worthy fighter! Even though he or she had been caught by Sun Xin Yu, she was also stunned in the process! Not anyone could simply execute such actions!

Zhang Yang shifted his gaze up to the target's name tag. Luckily, he or she did not hide the profile information.

Lost Dream, Level 54, Human Male, Bandit, {Sheng Dynasty}!

Of all people, it's him! The guy with the big mouth!

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue.

Lost Dream was a rather famous player in Zhang Yang's previous life. He was ranked fifth in the China's Thief ranking. Many players had shared the same opinion that Lost Dream's capabilities were at least on par with Sun Xin Yu. However, he had a rather "big mouth" and because of his behavior, he lost some popularity and lost some positions in the ranking list!

Minute-man: Man who just cums way to fast.

Big mouth: In China, there is another way to describe a person who can't keep a secret. It could also be used to describe people that loves to gossip around or talk loud. In this case, Lost Dream belonged to the kind that could not keep a secret and loves to gossip.

Chapter 252: The Gamble

According to rumors, Lost Dream was the son of an official. In real life, his father was a high-level ranking official at the Provincial level!

That man had two special quirks. The first was that he could never keep his mouth shut. The second, he was a gambling addict. Not the kind in the casino, but one to never back down from small wagers and dares. According to rumors, he once took a dare from his "friends" to go into a gay bar and get some "dudes". In the end, the man did not back down from his bet and "changed" into a raging homosexual man going right into the city's biggest gay bar!

However, where he least expected it, he saw the son of another Provincial level officer's son! In the very same bar! Knowing that Lost Dream was a big mouth, he quickly approached the man and had begged him to keep it a secret from anyone. If he did that, he would advise his own father to help Lost Dream's father get the Provincial Leader position! However, eventually, Lost Dream went back and wreaked havoc with his new-found news. What followed next was a budding grudge between the two otherwise neutral officers! Lost Dream had foiled his own father's dreams for his "uprising"!

That was how stupidly loose-lipped Lost Dream was.

However, no one could deny that Lost Dream had a certain depth of understanding when it comes to playing as a Thief. How else could he be listed in the top 10 Thief Lord's list? Being able to stun Sun Xin Yu at the same time as she did, preventing the opponent from getting the upper hand in battle, proved his ability!

{Ambush} four second stun ended the same time for Sun Xin Yu and Lost Dream, both of them flicked their left arms and disappeared with a "poof", entering {Stealth}.

However, just as the both of them entered {Stealth}, both of them were revealed again in the same time! This time, Sun Xin Yu had the upper hand. Her {Ambush} on Lost Dream was successful and she did not receive any status effect skill!

Zhang Yang mentally praised her again. Earlier, when the two of them used {Ambush} at the same time, the system was confused, even though Sun Xin Yu had activated her skill faster by a millisecond. Since the difference in effect frames was 0.01 second, the system could not determine which side had activated {Ambush} first and had caused both opponents to be stunned simultaneously. However, after the first {Ambush} had ended, Sun Xin Yu was one frame faster then Lost Dream in activating {Vanish} and {Ambush} for the second time, so her attack landed successfully on Lost Dream and stunned him.

Though the fraction of a second was nothing but a tiny blip in time, they mattered most in such crucial situations! In this case, Sun Xin Yu stood trimphant!

When two Thief class players clashed, whoever performs the first {Ambush} and {Kidney Shot} combo will surely be the first to kill the opponent. Taking into account that the difference in equipment tier gap was not that large, Sun Xin Yu's equipment could only be better than Lost Dream and never be weaker. That

was why death was a certainty when Lost Dream was stunned by Sun Xin Yu.

Shush! Shush! Shush!

The daggers in Sun Xin Yu's hands glimmered with light reflecting off it as the blades flew around at an incredible speed. Each strike was so strong and fast that it chipped away a large chunk of Lost Dream's HP! Since a Dagger's attack speed was incredibly fast, its single attack was not really high. A Thief will be at a major disadvantage whenever he or she faces a high Defense boss or tank-class players! One can never fully unleash the full potential of a Dual-Wielding weapon! However, when a Thief faces a non-tank class player in PvP, the greatest threat would be the Assassin class!

This class is a specialized PvP character class!

"Ice Cube! Don't kill him!" Zhang Yang yelled just in time to stop Sun Xin Yu's final blow from killing Lost Dream.

Sun Xin Yu turned around to glance Zhang Yang. She then slid across the floor and went back to where the party was, and returned her daggers to their sheaths around her waist.

"Phew! This one says, lady, you're super strong! This young master has never encountered anyone who could overpower him!" Lost Dream regained his mobility after recovering from {Kidney Shot}. He turned around and shot Sun Xin Yu a thumbs up. "However, this young master is not satisfied with one fight! Come!

Shall we fight once more?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "In that case, shall we place a bet? You can't win any one out of the four of us!"

Lost Dream got annoyed. "Excuse this young master. This one had been underestimating the enemy a while back. But now that this young master is prepared, and this one will not lose another fight!"

Zhang yang pretended to put on airs. "Oh well, if you're not ballsy enough to bet on it..."

"Excuses me?" Lost Dream jumped to his feet. He was clearly infuriated. "Alright! Let's bet on it then! Speak your desire!"

Like a fish in the net, Zhang Yang had trapped this stupid arrogant son of a b*tch. He smirked. "You can choose any one out of the four of us! If you lose, you'll have to join me!"

"Haha! If this one wins...Let's see...this young master doesn't like being followed by men. However, this one does not mind being called Young Master Lost Dream!" said Lost Dream with his nose up high.

Zhang Yang twitched and raised an eye brow. With a smile on his face, Zhang Yang said, "I accept that wager! Please, choose your opponent!"

Lost Dream paced back and forth while observing all four of them. "This one had just fought this pretty face, so this young master will not bother her for a while. And you're a Guardian! This young master has no fear fighting you, however, this one does not wish to fight an empty turtle shell! This young master does not like to take advantage of poor ladies, and will not fight the Priest! That leaves the Berserker!"

This bastard was not an idiot after all! Even though he admitted that he lost to Sun Xin Yu on the premise of being overconfident, he was actually afraid of her, which was why he was not keen on a direct rematch! However, he did not choose Han Ying Xue. That move proved that Lost Dream had some pride in him since Thief were exceptionally strong against Cloth Armor classes.

"Kick his *ss little brat!" said Zhang Yang.

"You betcha!" Wei Yan Er snickered as she walked up front.

Having been left close to death thanks to Sun Xin Yu, Lost Dream sat down and recovered himself with some recovery snacks. After a few seconds, he stood up and dusted off his pants. "Young girl, this young master will not pull his punches. Don't be crying when you lose!"

"Tch! You think you can defeat this young lady? Dream on!" Wei Yan Er lifted her head up high. She was already referring to herself in third-person, clearly influenced by Lost Dream's odd manner of speech.

"Haha!" Lost Dream laughed and entered {Stealth} promptly.

The little brat was a battle addict. Whenever she had the chance, she would drag Sun Xin Yu or Zhang Yang over to have a friendly PvP match in the city's Battle Arena. Having been {Ambushed} by Sun Xin Yu numerous times, Wei Yan Er knew better than to try looking for a thief who was in stealth. You want to fight? Come at me! At least, she could gain some Rage points!

Pow!

Lost Dream appeared from beyond the shadow, appearing behind Wei Yan Er. He slammed the back of Wei Yan Er's head with the hilt of his sword and stunned her.

{Ambush}! Four seconds stun!

"Dummy Yu! Can Yan Er win?" said Han Ying Xue.

Zhang Yang smiled. "Ask the Ice Cube. Ask her the odds of the fight between her and the little brat!"

Han Ying Xue turned her gaze to Sun Xin Yu.

"Four to six!" Sun Xin Yu paused for a moment to think.

"I won six times, while she won four!"

Zhang Yang laughed mentally. He knew that this lady was never willing to admit her losses and wanted to prove her strength by adding a few details to clarify her statement.

Back at the fight, Lost Dream was slashing his swords at Wei Yan Er's back furiously.

10, 20, 30...Along with the slashes, Wei Yan Er's Rage points rocketed up as her HP dropped.

{Ambush} ended.

{4 Combo Kidney Shot}!

Wei Yan Er had lost so much HP that she was only left with 5,400 HP out of 11,000 HP! It didn't look too good for her. Until...

{Warrior's Will}!

Wei Yan Er was waiting precisely for this moment! Having used her opponent as a rage point provider, she had allowed him to strike her until she had sufficient rage points to do what she needed to do. She turned around as fast as she could and swung her glimmering battle axe at Lost Dream.

Wham!

'-8,912!' {Destructive Smash}, Critical Hit!

Even though Wei Yan Er's {Destructive Smash} could only deal 150% melee damage, her two-handed Yellow-Gold weapon had a long 3.5 second attack interval, and the total damage had reached exceeded 3,000! Without being a critical strike, {Destructive Smash} would deal at least 4,500 damage! Since {Warrior's Will} was used, {Destructive Smash} would land as a Critical hit, causing massive destruction indeed!

Lost Dream was instantly killed!

"Aiya! You're all mush now! Why didn't you used {Blur}?" Wei Yan Er shrugged and expressed a "Dummy!" kind of look on her face. When Wei Yan Er fought Sun Xin Yu, Sun Xin Yu would always be prepared to use {Blur}. Right after Wei Yan Er uses {Warrior's Will} to break out of the stun, Sun Xin Yu will respond with {Blur} or the Invincible frame {Vanish} to avoid the attack!

[Blur] (Level 1): Harnesses the power of shadows. Causes all physical attack to have 75% of missing.

Last for 10 seconds.

Cool down time: 10 minutes

Lost Dream had never thought that Wei Yan Er was so strong, since only less than 100 players owned a Level 50 Yellow-Gold weapon! Even though he was strong, but he had never had a fight with a player as well equipped as Wei Yan Er! That was why he lost! He lacked experience and was in over his head!

Han Ying Xue was unable to revive Lost Dream with her skill since Lost Dream was still registered as an "Enemy". The status would only wear off after 10 minutes. Without waiting, the guy released his soul and ran to his coprse.

"Should we fight the boss first? That guy would probably take some time!" said Zhang Yang as he turned around and started attacking.

Zhang Yang and his party had lost any interest in Gray-Silver bosses. It did not take much effort to kill this boss. Even with 5,000,000 HP, it only lasted as long as 10 minutes against Zhang Yang's party.

After defeating the boss, Lost Dream had just only returned his soul to his dead corpse, reviving just in time to see the boss fall. He sat down and recovered himself to full health.

Zhang Yang distributed all the [Fate Crystals] and smiled as he talked to Lost Dream.

"How about that. Hehe. You dared to bet, you better walk the talk. I'll be seeing you more often now!"

Lost Dream's face twitched. He felt that he had been played directly into Zhang Yang's hands. He knew that he did not lose in term of control and skills. He had lost in terms of equipment! It was an instant kill! How careless could he be!

"Once more!" Lost Dream cried disgruntledly.

Wei Yan Er responded in the same manner. "Bring it! This young lady will wreck you upside down!"

The two of them entered the battle again!

{Ambush}, {Kidney Shot}, {Warrior's Will}, up till this point, the battle was just as like the previous one.

{Blur}!

Lost Dream's entire character began to lose focus. Wei Yan Er's {Destructive Smash} went through him and missed.

{Blast Wave}!

Wei Yan Er quickly cast {Blast Wave} instead, and stunned Lost Dream! The little girl started to laugh manically. It all fully depended on pure luck for a Berserker whenever a Thief uses {Blur}. The odds of {Blast Wave} getting through the 25% hit chance would determine the final victory.

That was why Sun Xin Yu had stated the odds of 4 to 6!

Wei Yan Er quickly turned around and ran away from Lost Dream as far as she could. After four seconds, Lost Dream recovered and started chasing after the little brat.

Five seconds...Six seconds...10 seconds!

Even though Thieves were naturally high in Dexterity, specialized builds that capitalized on that affinity would be really fast at moving! However, the little brat had a four second head start!

Invincible frame: Also known as IFrames are basically a period of time in which the subject is invincible. They will not take damage nor not suffer debuffs. They can't be interacted by opponents for the duration of their iframe. It's a name that's mostly widespread in fighting games, where certain attacks and animations would provide invincibility for a certain number of frames, lasting only a fraction of a second after the activation of a skill.

Chapter 253: Another War General! Get!

Lost Dream's {Blur} ended.

Wei Yan Er cracked an evil smile. She stopped running away and turn around to greet the oncoming Lost Dream. Lost Dream's face turned white when he saw the malicious grin, but he was too slow to react.

```
{Tornado Sweep}! {Destructive Smash}!

'-4,812!'

'-4,521!'

Wei Yan Er had successfully defeated Lost Dream in two slashes.

"Hell yea!"
```

"Wait!" 10 minutes later, Lost Dream came back again after reviving. He did not take his defeat wholeheartedly since he still had one more trick up his sleeve. He had not activated {Vanish} earlier. If he had used {Vanish} right after {Blur} had ended, he would have been able to stun Wei Yan Er again and surely win the battle!

The party was already walking away when Lost Cream cried out. Wei Yan Er had her axe resting on her shoulder when she turned around. Zhang Yang frowned and clicked his tongue intentionally. "Lost Dream. Come on bro. You're such a sore loser! Accept your defeat and get a move on! What a loser, if you know you'll lose, don't bet on it!"

"What did you say to me?" Lost Dream flipped. He cringed to hard that his left eye brow was twitching rapidly like an old telegram machine. His speech reverted back to a natural person's. "I lose? Me? Hmph! In that case, come on and fight me! You and me! Mano e mano!"

If he could, Zhang Yang would he shaking his head disappointingly. Besides the rumor describing Lost Dream as a gambler and blabbermouth, but he had never imagined Lost Dream as one who was full of excuses! He laughed and said, "Argh...Every time you'd lose, I'll be hearing only excuses. I bet that you'll give more excuses when you lose this around!"

"Oh please, this young master does not behave that way! A good man shan't fight with a lady! I only let her win!" Lost Dream rolled his eyes. "Fight me! If you win, I shall join you then! Or else, you shall address me as the young master!"

Zhang Yang paces towards the white bear and pats the bear's fully head. "If you can defeat my pet, victory is yours!"

"Excuse me?" Lost Dream cocked his head. "You're a Guardian correct? How do you have a pet?"

Zhang Yang threw up a hand, flashing the victory fingers with

his index and middle finger. "If you want to know, you'll have to worship me!"

"Hmph. I accept that challenge. If I win, you'll teach me how to catch a pet!" Lost Dream turned his gaze to the white bear and imagined himself killing players with a pet of his own! He drooled at the thought of how cool he would be!

"Start!"

Poof

Lost Dream disappeared into the shadows.

"Growl!" The Gold-Eared Bear King roared and walked a few steps forward. With Zhang Yang controlling the bear mentally, the bear sat down on its bum and started scratching its head with its rear claw, a lazy and nonchalant posture.

Shush!

Lost Dream appeared behind the white bear and used {Ambush}, stunning the bear as he appeared, and started attacking.

'-488!'

'-1'

The bear had 1,200 Defense while Lost Dream was only wearing a full set of Gray-Silver equipment on him. With 1,700 weapon attack in his main hand, he was able to deal a certain amount of damage to the bear. However, his secondary hand's weapon was so weak and it could only deal '-1', heavily penalized damage!

At least, the skill {Malign Attack} was strong. Taking up 40 Stamina points, the skill can deal 150% of the main hand weapon's damage to a target.

However, Stamina points were limited! Also, hard hitting skills often had longer cool down! After the four seconds stun effect of {Ambush} ended, Lost Dream had only dealt a little more than 3,500 damage. It was a puny scratch compared to the bear's 17,720 maximum HP!

"Crap! What bear is this? Such thick skin!" Lost Dream got frustrated.

Zhang Yang and the rest of his party laughed.

After {Ambush}, Lost Dream chained the attack with a {Kidney Shot}. Since Bandits could not raise their combo count as swiftly as an Assassin, the strike Lost Dream had just used was only a fourcombo count {Kidney Shot}, stunning the bear for only five seconds!

After the five seconds stun, Lost Dream had only damaged the bear for slightly over 4,000 damage. Swiftly, Lost Dream used {Vanish} and entered {Stealth}.

{Wild Recovery}!

A green light engulfed the white bear and its HP slowly regained, 5% at every second.

"F*ck me!" As Lost Dream was waiting for his Stamina to recover, he could only stare at the bear as it healed itself back to full health!

After 10 seconds, Lost Dream started all over again with {Ambush}. After {Ambush}'s four seconds stun and {Kidney Shot}'s five second stun, Gold-Eared Bear King' HP had dropped down to 9,000 before it could regain control of its movement.

Counterattack start!

'-3,792!'

'-3,612!'

The bear dealt more than 7,000 damage with one normal attack and one {Claw Attack}. The attack was so strong that Lost Dream activated {Blur} promptly. He exclaimed, "Ooi! What sort of pet is this? What the heck have you been feeding it?!"

{Blur} was a powerful life-saving skill. However, the evasion rate was only 75%. It did not provide perfect invincibility. If one had extremely bad luck, one might even receive more than one attack! Lost Dream did not exactly draw the short end of that stick, as he evaded the first attack from Gold-Eared Bear King. The second attack however, did land. The claw smacked Lost Dream so solidly that he was instantly killed.

After running back and reviving at the same spot, Lost Dream sulked and recuperated with recovery snacks.

If Zhang Yang was a Hunter instead of a Guardian, Lost Dream could choose to kill the Hunter, knowing that the pet would fall no sooner! Even though Lost Dream did not clash with Zhang Yang, he knew that a Guardian would be even tougher than the bear! "Killing the head of the snake" would never work in this situation!

"The reason why I have a pet is because of an Indistinct skill book called {Beast Taming}. I originally had a battle mount to begin with. This skill allows me to use the pet mount as a Hunter's pet!" Zhang Yang proactively explained the secrets of his Gold-Eared Bear King. He thought explaining it would not make any difference to him.

Lost Dream was delighted. It wasn't because he had learned the secrets of the bear, but he felt that Zhang Yang was a promising character. He stood up and casually patted his shoulder. "Brother! This young master shall grant the privilege of having you as a friend! Ah right! This one doesn't even know who you are!"

Zhang Yang smiled and reveal his profile information.

Zhan Yu, Crypt Slaughterer, Physician's Friend, Hero of Snow Sprite City, Centaur's Brave Warrior, Hero of White Jade City, Level 62, Human Male, Guardian, {Lone Desert Smoke}.

Typically, a player's name tag would be easy to read in one second, but Zhang Yang's name tag was so long that Lost Dream quickly gave up halfway through!

He laughed. "Haha! So, you're the infamous Zhan Yu! This one assumes that all of you here are from Lone Desert Smoke as well! Hahaha! No wonder! No wonder this one lost so pathetically!" The man's characteristic was rather well-mannered. He was no longer sulking, looking rather jubilant instead.

"Join us!" Zhang Yang sent an invitation to Lost Dream. This guy may be a little weaker than Sun Xin Yu, but his skills as a future top 10 thief was apparent! He would definitely be one of the important assets in the future Professional League!

"Huhu! This one sees that you've humbly asked for this young master's presence. In that case, this young master shall be courteous for a change! But be warned! This young master is ridiculously good looking! There's isn't anyone else like this one! Please do not fall in love with this one! This young master is only but a passing legend!" said Lost Dream while running his fingers down his hair in a way that was so cringey, that the girls were rolling their eyes!

Lost Dream then proceeded to withdraw from his own guild and

accepted the invitation from Zhang Yang. The battle team for the future Professional League got even stronger!

The party then distributed the boss loots and went back to the Thunderstorm Castle via [Teleportation Scrolls].

Just as they returned to the castle, they heard a loud explosion roaring in the night sky. The night sky was then illuminated by many colorful lights of fireworks. The flowery design of the firework was indeed dazzling and beautiful. The last explosion burst out so brightly that it was clearly visible five to six kilometers away!

"D*mn! Who would burn their money for that!' Zhang Yang scoffed.

Fireworks were priced at different prices in the game. Small ones would cost one to two gold coins, while larger ones would even cost thousands! The one that they had just witness probably cost more than 5,000 gold coins! What a waste of hard-earned money!

After some time, another wave of fireworks burst out in the sky, and the last one formed the words saying, "Little Snow! I love you!"

Five words formed out of the sparkles of the fireworks. Each word was so big; as large as Thunderstorm Castle itself! A final blast was fired, forming a beautiful heart-shaped frame around the sentence.

"Bleh...it must be the work of that bastard, Luo Yang Ming!" said Wei Yan Er as she frowned.

"What a disgusting prick!" Han Ying Xue pout her cheeks.

The words lingered around for five minutes before dissipating into the night sky. Many players started chattering, wanting to know who was willing to spend such a huge amount of money for that extravagant fireworks display. Just so you know, the kind of fireworks display that would form words required special reservations! From how large the word should be, to how long it should be display in the sky, all that would take up an extremely large sum of gold coin!

On the other end, female players were extremely jealous of the said, "Little Xue". Thanks of Lou Yang Ming, the female players now expected their own partners to do the same for them!

As the fireworks display ended, Luo Yang Ming popped up at their location. With a passionate expression, he stared at Han Ying Xue. "Little Xue, please accept my love!"

"You stinking, rotting, piece of useless meat! How persistent can you be! You're f*cking annoying you know that?! I asked you to stay away from her a long time ago! Why would you crawl back here!?" Zhang Yang walked up and stand between Han Ying Xue and Luo Yang Ming.

"Little prick! Move!" Luo Yang Ming has had it. He no longer wore the proud aristocratic posture and began insulting Zhang Yang.

"You move!" Zhang Yang roared. He lifted his axe and cleaved Luo Ming Yang into two. Luo Ming Yang was only Level 20. That blow was enough to send him off to the graveyard.

"F*ck you! You dare to snatch my woman!? Just because you have a guild with ten thousand players, you're acting all high and mighty? Hmph! Arrogant little bastard! I see what you truly are! Bastard could even be a road sweeper or worse than that! So what if you're the guild leader of Lone Desert Smoke! I'll form a guild of my own and use my money to buy all the members from your guild! I'll see what you do next!" said Luo Yang Ming to Zhang Yang through a private message.

Zhang Yang did not reply but laughed at his futile threats. This man did have a small fortune, but he thinks that the world revolved around him. Zhang Yang himself has the Thunderstorm Castle and the Little Merchandize shop! Both could generate him approximately 75,000,000 gold coins a month! Even if the exchange rate drops to 1:2.5, you would still earn 180,000,000 dollars a month! Although his total revenue could not be compared to the earnings of Silky Soft Holdings, Zhang Yang's profits alone were enough to exceed even Silky Soft Holdings!

It's safe to say that with the Territory and the Little Merchandize Shop, Zhang Yang was already earning more than Silky Soft Holdings! He believed that when investors learn about the nature of the Territory and Little Merchandize Shop, they would be willing to emptied their wallets just to have share or even buy the place down!

Luo Yang Ming was just a frog in a well! How could he know such things? He was from a prim and proper family, it was only natural that he will not touch online games! He was completely clueless about the impact 'God's Miracle' would have in real life! Coincidentally, it had created a brand new market in the world economy!

Sigh...he was just like a dog barking up the wrong tree -- or in this case, a tree that carried a squirrel that was larger than him!

Zhang Yang laid down a new command to the troops in the Territory, to kill a player called "iLuvHanYingXue" on sight!

Chapter 254: First Shot

Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang were progressing really quickly. So far, they had already reached Level 59, and were on the brink of reaching Level 60!

The second and third [Land Leases] were released and taken respectively by the guilds Radiance and Crimson Rage. However, these two guilds had two very different levels of luck. Radiance was lucky enough to produce their land in Blue Ocean City. Although the positioning of the land did not allow it to be as lucrative as Little Merchandize Shop, it was still inside a major city! Crimson Rage had an unfortunate draw. The land that their [Land Lease] produced was some random small town outside the Emerald City. It was rather bad. Since it was not worth anything at all, at most, Crimson Rage could only use it as an extra warehouse storage unit! Snow Seeker was so angry and frustrated that she even went to Zhang Yang to complain about it!

However, as Zhang Yang would have guessed, this sly fox of a woman had only done so to gain some sympathy points from him. She would then ask to have a portion of the profits gained from Thunderstorm Castle.

• • •

It was November the 17th. A day that Zhang Yang would never forget.

6pm. In the evening.

Tu Tu Tu

The phone ranged just as Zhang Yang logged out of the game. He rushed to the table and hurriedly picked it up.

"Hello!"

"Zhang Yang~~" A soft, sultry voice of a female was heard.

"Oh! It's Teacher Yu! Right! How was auntie's surgery?" Zhang Yang scratched his head from the itch he had after having laid down for a long time. He recalled the kidney surgery her mother had undergone a fortnight before.

"It was all good! The doctor had not found any signs of rejection! The doctors said that she could be discharged the day after tomorrow!" Yu Li squeal with joy. She was practically chirping with happiness. "I have something to discuss with you. Could you swing by?"

Zhang Yang sniffed his armpit before answering. "Yeah! Sure...
I'll drop by later. I'll need to go get dinner first!"

"I've made dinner at home! Just come over and eat with me!"

"Sounds good!"

Zhang Yang felt something off, as Yu Li was rather cheerful considering how recent the "tragic" incident back then was. He took a bath, got out of his apartment, and hailed a cab to get to Yu Li's place. It was no surprise that Zhang Yang could still remember her address. He was not drunk back then.

The cab took only 20 minutes or so to reach the doorstep of her home. He ran upstairs and knocked on her door. He quickly sniffed at his armpits and nodded satisfyingly. Although he did not smell good, at least he did not smell!

"Come in!" said Yu Li as she opened the door, leaving the front door open for Zhang Yang to walk in. Yu Li was wearing a long black dress. The fabric was smooth and silky, tightly plastered to every inch of her bodyline. Zhang Yang could see the perfect curvature of her entire body, from the round peaks of her chest, down to the impossibly slender waist, and finally, the her round, perky butt that simply wanted to burst through the fabric. Every inch of her body screamed for a man's touch.

Yu Li bent down, causing further creases in the already tight fabric, to lay down a pair of slippers for Zhang Yang to step into. After that, she quickly turned around and headed to the kitchen. As she walked, her perky butt jiggled in tandem ever so seductively as Zhang Yang stared after it, having bent down to change into the slippers. His crotch tingled with a burning sensation and it took all of his willpower to repress the urge as his member threatened to tear through his trousers.

What's wrong with me?

With the dedication that would have graduated him from a monk's temple, Zhang Yang forced his mind to work over matter, removing himself from the gutter. He sucked in a deep breath and let it out slowly. After he was 100% sure that his pants were loose once again, he went to the sofa and sat down comfortably.

"Teacher Yu! Is dinner ready? I'm starving here!"

"Almost ready! Sit tight!"

It did not take long before Yu Li walked out of the kitchen with dishes in her hand. One by one, she placed the dishes onto the dining table gracefully and took out a bottle of red wine.

"Have a seat!"

The dining table in the dining area was not wide enough for two people to have their dinner. Instead, Yu Li had placed all the dishes on a makeshift table in the living room. Zhang Yang got up from the sofa, pulled out the chair and sat down. Steaming hot, fresh from the kitchen, one could instantly see that the food was way more than the serving for just two people! Zhang Yang took a whiff and said, "Wow! They smell great! But...I don't think the two of us can finish it!"

Yu Li uncorked the wine and poured two glasses of wine for each of them. "I wouldn't be here if it weren't for you. So, here's to

you!" Yu Li raised her glass up high.

"Hehe! Don't mention it!" Zhang Yang had never been a good Samaritan to begin with. If it had been someone else, he would not have lifted a finger to help. Zhang Yang raised his glass and clinked it with hers.

"For health!"

"For health."

Without saying anything more, Zhang Yang and Yu Li began to dine. He picked up the cutlery on the table and started to scoop fill his plate. He was famished. Zhang Yang was a big eater to begin with, and since he also disliked seeing wastage, he walloped the entire table of food clean.

After half an hour, Zhang Yang had successfully "raided" all the food. He patted his bloated tummy and belched. "Fuu! That was awesome! I'm completely stuffed! I could probably go on for a week without food now! Teacher Yu! Your dishes were excellent! You can really cook!"

Yu Li smiled and took a sip of the wine. "Thanks! If you like them, feel free to come over anytime!"

Fidgeting around with his own half-emptied wineglass, Zhang Yang finally stopped and said, "Alright. Now that dinner is done, I better head back!"

"Wait!" Yu Li cried. She puts down the wineglass and strode over slowly. Her movements were deliberately slow and seductive as she placed her chin right next to Zhang Yang's shoulder. She gazed into his eyes and whispered, "You've had your dinner, but you haven't had me yet now, have you?"

Her lustful voice sent waves of raging hormones coursing through Zhang Yang's body. Hid mind went completely blank for a good second as the burning lust in him almost overwhelmed everything else. Frantically, Zhang Yang tried his best to summon the image of Brother Chun and Sister Fung, the two god-tier bosses to calm himself down. He shook his head like a mad dog, jumping to his feet.

"Stop teasing me Teacher Yu!"

"Why? Am I not pretty enough for you? Am I not woman enough for you? I can't move you heart one bit? Or is it that your little wee wee doesn't even work?" said Yu Li with a playful wink.

"Not functioning---" Zhang Yang scoffed. "Teacher Yu, why are you trying so hard to mess with me?!"

"You know what? Fine. If you want to leave, go ahead! However, just so you know. Once you leave, I'll just change into my sleeping gown, the sexiest I can find and go knocking from door to door starting from the sixth floor! I'm sure at least one man would be willing to sleep with me!"

"You wouldn't dare---"

"Yes! I will!"

Yu Li was serious. She was staring into Zhang Yang with the same look in her eyes that she had when she was serious about failing one of her students back then. Somehow, he really took her words for it and believed that this woman would actually get out there and start knocking on random doors, just to get back at him! If he had not experienced his emotional crisis back then, he would never ever do anything to betray Lin Yu! However, as of right now, barely any of the love that he had for Lin Yu remained in his heart, buried, not deep within his heart, but more like in a graveyard somewhere in a dead corner, to the point where he was not even bothered to try and exhume it back up!

Dammit! Might as well treat it as an exercise after a meal!

Zhang Yang was as normal as a man could be. Since he possessed the memories back from before he was reincarnated, the memories of a man and a woman in bed together, with their limbs entwined and their bodies conjoined, was deeply etched in his mind. Ever since he restarted his life, he had been enduring for more than five months! During the entire time, he had not even had the opportunity to beat his stick, sexual deprivation had caged up a wild beast in his pants!

His could feel the rhythm of his breath changing. He was almost sure that the vapors of his breath had turned into steam. His vision blurred, as his eyes went unfocused with lust and desire. The male instinct took over as his gaze slid down to enjoy every inch of the woman's curves.

Yu Li had started to feel the same way as he did. She felt his gaze like a magical, invisible hand that ran all over her body. Wherever his eyes laid, turned hot and frisky, craving for the man to touch them, to rub them, till her voice broke through the silence of the night! Her cheeks were filled with red-hot desire as they blushed pink. In fact, every part of her exposed skin, her breast, her cleavage, her thighs practically glowed with the vermillion color of lust!

"Take me!" She whispered into his ears silkily, as Yu Li embraced Zhang Yang in her arms, pressing her body against him. Zhang Yang felt something soft and amazing, and her scent filled his senses, as his rough hands explored her bare back. She was like a cotton filled viper, soft and lovely but at the same time possessing a deadly hidden strength as she curled her body around Zhang Yang with other-worldly flexibility, squeezing herself against Zhang Yang's chest as her own hands slid down between Zhang Yang's thighs.

The fire in him burst into a an inferno. His hands went faster, running themselves up and down Yu Li's back, feeling her hot, smooth skin. They ventured down south, to find a pair of soft, supple mounds that conveniently fit in his palms. It was like they were the perfect size for his preference as were his hands...he grabbed onto them tightly without a care--his nails happened to be clipped.

Zhang Yang's desire threatened to tear through his body and soul. He scooped her off her feet and carried her -- princess-style

towards her bed.

As he carried Yu Li in his arms, their eyes silently met. Her eyes reciprocated his gaze with their own silent screams of desire. Take me, they said. Just take all of me, they said. Slowly, she welcomed him and slithered her arms behind Zhang Yang's neck, gently purring like a cat.

Boom!

Zhang Yang kicked the door open with a foot. His body was burning on overdrive, fueled beyond its capacity. Unable to control his own strength, he nearly gave the door a new hole as it swung open. He summoned his strength and tossed Yu Li onto her bed, as he turned and locked the door behind him.

"Ahhh~!" Yu Li yelped in surprise she fell onto the bed, her chest bouncing along with the mattress.

Zhang Yang attacked her before she could even react, piling his body on top of hers, grabbing hold of her outstretched wrists. Yu Li has never done this before, but was well aware of the steel pole that protruded against her lower abs. She knew what Zhang Yang wanted and she would give him just that.

"Yu Li..." Zhang Yang's ragged breath tickled her ear. His face was flushed red, as he gazed at her with clouded eyes, a depraved being possessed by a mix of alcohol and lust. Swiftly, he buried his face into her breasts, going wild with the soft flesh that parted, submissively giving way to him. Even with a layer of fabric still

shielding them, it did not take long for Zhang Yang to feel the hard bumps against his cheek. Instinctively following them with his mouth like a predator picking up on the scent of its prey, he took them in his lips, teasing around with his tongue.

"Uhh...Ahh..." Yu Li's voice leaked out, the tell-tale crescendo accenting the end of her expression as she arched her head back, as her erect protrusions were sucked on, flicked about in Zhang Yang's mouth. Her hands ravaged Zhang Yang's back, her fingers digging deep.

Like an animal, Zhang Yang ripped off her dress. The zipper was on her lower back, and he felt that it was rather troublesome and that it would kill the mood. Instead, he used his brute strength to rip the dress apart, tossing the pieces aside as it slid down the bed, and onto the floor with a light clink.

With the dress gone, all that was left now was her fair, snow-like skin and her black undergarments that clutched her chest together in an explosive pack.

"Beautiful..." he said. He buried his face deep into the cleavage of her chest. He licked the center, reaching out for the deepest part of her cleavage. It sent a violent wave through her entire body. He bit the lower part of the cups and tugged them down to reveal her pink, cute bumps that stood out beside the black material.

Yu Li's breath was ragged, matching Zhang Yang's. She was in her own world, lost just like Zhang Yang was. She moved her hands to his face, feeling the contour of his face like a passionate potter, slowly sliding them down his neck. She arched her back, drawing his attention to the pronounced curvature of her chest.

Zhang Yang traced his fingers up her back, until he found the one thing that he wanted to remove. He unhooked the latch and tossed laced cups as far away as he could. Having lost all restraint, her breasts jiggled out of control. As she laid back down on the bed, a tiny quake jiggled over her breast ever so violently and Zhang Yang was almost hypnotized by the sight.

He lowered his head and attacked one of her nipples, while he kept his hands busy on the other. He squeezed the tiny protrusion between his fingers, gently stimulating the stiffening tip.

Unable to contain the rampaging impulses, she twitched and lurched in her throes of pleasure. Her sweet cries rose in intensity as she moaned and moaned endlessly as Zhang Yang tortured her breasts. Her firm breasts were perky and smooth, yet so soft that they jiggled back to shape whenever he released them, as he kneaded them with vigor.

"Zha...Zhang Yang...Oh...Zhang. Yang!" Her cries filled the room as she gripped the back of his head, pulling at his hair. He looked up at her and their mutual desire was made apparent as their eyes met.

Zhang Yang pressed his lips against hers and delivered a passionate burning kiss that left her craving for more. He left her gaping, panting lips as he moved down her neck, down her breasts, following the smooth curvature of her abs and found himself a little obstacle. Just a little lower, would be Yu Li's last line of defense, before being fully exposed to him. He raised his head,

parting his lips from her belly. Yu Li looked at him passionately, as if she had just given away that which was most previous to her. That alone had made Zhang Yang to bury himself deep inside her more. Sliding one hand beneath the material, he grabbed, and pulled it all the way down her fair legs, tossing them aside once they were free.

Yu Li felt a cold breeze down there. Amid her confusion and her ecstasy, she had finally realized that her final line of defense had been torn through. She opened her half-closed eyes, only to find Zhang Yang nuzzling between her legs. A sudden wave of embarrassment surged up, her cheeks was dyed in pink now. Squeezing her legs shut, she bolted upright and pulled Zhang Yang back to her level. "Stop staring...I know you want me..."

If Zhang Yang was in a game now with a meter to gauge his level of desire, he would have broken the game already! He pressed himself against Yu Li, their foreheads pressed against each other, and Zhang Yang finally said the one thing he had been thinking all night long, the one thing all men would want, "I'm going to make love you...I'm going to f*ck you now."

"Take me! Make me your woman and show me you're a man... f*ck me Zhang Yang." It was particularly embarrassing for her to finally use the f-word for its most literal meaning.

Even though Zhang Yang was still a cherry boy in this life, he had already been to twenty-toes with the same woman in his past life. In essence, he had a body of a virgin, but a mind that carried the experience of a past life. His manly part twitched and jerked as Yu Li's ragged breath brushed past his ears. It was as if this was all she

wished for entire life. Granting that wish, Zhang Yang would. With a swift stroke, Zhang Yang plunged into her warm, forbidden crevice.

The silence of the room was finally filled with the scream of Yu Li's first being torn away. Tears filled her eyes but she quickly wiped them away. After letting her catch her breath for a second Zhang Yang began moving, slowly at first, but like a locomotor warming up, he picked up the pace, until finally, he was pistoning like a bull going all out on her. The room was once again filled with noise, with Yu Li's cries of pain and ecstasy, Zhang Yang's own ragged breath, and the fleshy, wet sound of impact as their bodies collided again and again.

30 minutes later, silence finally fell. Light fell upon the naked bodies of a couple clinging to each other, as if they were madly in love.

Zhang Yang got up and looked into her tired eyes. Though they were fully exposed to each other, there was nothing to be ashamed of anymore.

"Does it hurt?" Zhang Yang asked a relatively stupid question.

"How would you feel if I used my finger to dig your nose till it bleeds?"

"Why didn't you say anything?"

"Do you really think a little bit of pain would stop me?"

"Well, at least I could do it, a little more gently?"

"Sigh...this pain would only be felt by a woman once in her lifetime. I wanted to savor every bit of it." said Yu Li as she caressed Zhang Yang face.

She suddenly giggled weakly. "I would have never thought that my first time would be taken away by my very own student! If word got out, others would definitely be call me names like slut, harlot, minx!"

"Teacher..."

Zhang Yang understood how she felt. He wanted to embrace her once more but she placed her hands on his tight, muscular chest.

"There's no need to console me. I've already give this much thought." Yu Li bounched up and got on top of Zhang Yang. "Now, let me get on top!"

Zhang Yang reached out to wrap his hands around her slender waist. "Why...why did you do it?"

"Honest to god? I was feeling a little one sided. I was dissatisfied. Back then, when you said you wanted to hire me, it wasn't just for your good, wasn't it. You really wanted to help me."

Yu Li looked up to the ceiling and stared at the empty surface. "When I was dating—for four years, I thought I had found it. My one true love. But eventually, finding right partner, the right man turned out to be extremely tough. Perhaps, in one far corner of the world, there will be a right man for me. Who truly loves me for who I am! But, until I find him, I'll probably be a 40 or 50 year old hag!"

She looked back down at him and ran her hands playfully over his abs. "The day you find your woman. I will quietly leave you in peace. I will never bother you anymore." Yu Li smile. This time, her smile was different. It was not forced nor pretentious. It was her genuine smile.

"Now, I'm a free woman. I can do whatever I want to do! And now, I want to have you inside me! I want you to f*ck me everyday!"

Those words brought a sudden life back in him. The flames that had just died down came up scorching, sending the blood pumping into his meat pole as it reared up, ready to go for a second round.

"Hey!" Yu Li jumped when she felt Zhang Yang pressing against her behind. "What's wrong---No! No more! It did hurt for me, remember?"

Like a needle in his brain, her words struck him deeply. After a woman's first time, the pain will linger on for what seems to be forever. It wouldn't subside until two to three days later. In worse

case scenarios, the pain would remain for a week, even! It could leave a trauma that went past biology and emotions that would scar them for life, making them averse to men and love.

"Don't make that expression. Let me tell you a little secret. At first, it hurt like hell. But after that, I felt pleasure like never before." Yu Li whispered into his ears, biting on them playfully.

Another question rose inside him. Dreadfully, he needed to know. It would say a lot about his performance. It would determine on a man's confidence in himself. "Did...did you cum?"

"No!"

"No! You lying minx!"

"No! I'm serious!"

"

Zhang Yang crossed his arms. Puffing with confidence, he grabbed her hands and pulled her back down to the bed. "In that case, I'll give you one right now!"

"Please no!"

Yu Li was shocked. Her precious part had just been torn open, she knew that she would not endure a second session. She

frantically pleaded. "Alright! Alright! I did! I did!"

"Did what?" Zhang Yang playfully questioned her.

Yu Li winked at him. "Sigh...do all men love teasing like that?"

Zhang Yang laughed. Sometimes, men can be rather generous and humble. But, sometimes, there were things that they cannot let pass. In this case, it did wonders for a man's pride!

The two of them cuddled around for a little while when Zhang Yang finally left the bed. "I have to go now."

"There's no need to rush things. I told Fei Fei about this. She will only be back tomorrow morning, she will be staying at a hotel for the night. You can go to sleep with no worries!"

In all honesty, Zhang Yang did not want to leave Yu Li's warmth embrace. Who wouldn't? He nodded obediently and went back to bed.

Yu Li raised one of her eye brows and said sarcastically, "How about this. I'll call her to come back now, and you can take her in as well! She's been finding a man of fortune to be a lover! You can have your threesome here!"

Zhang Yang felt a jump in his heart. His raging cock down there responded the same way as well.

Yu Li saw it and scoffed. "I see that all men sure are greedy. You already have a fish in your tank, and you're still searching for other fish in the sea!"

Zhang Yang did not mind tasting other women in his life, of course he thought of doing the hanky-panky all the time! To have his body respond to her sly, alluring suggestion would only be natural. He cast it aside with his mind and asked her. "So, your mother will be discharged the day after tomorrow?"

"Yes. That's why I ask you to come over tonight! Or else, you might never have the chance to do it anymore!"

Zhang Yang patted her head and slowly caressed her fair face. "Buy a new house! Do you really wish to cramp in three persons in this god-forsaken building?"

"Sure. You're my exulted master. Your wish is my command!" Yu Li agreed. She did not want to have her mother staying in this small space.

"After I go back, I'll send you another 1,000,000 dollars."

"Is that your way of paying me back after shredding me apart?"

"You can say that. Since you're my woman, I can at least treat you a little better, now can I?"

Brother Chun and Sister Fung: Brother Chun was the nickname

of Li Yu Chun who gained fame in China as an ambassador of gender-neutrality. She was always seen in sharp suits. Sister Fung was the nickname of Luo Yu Feng, gaining fame by critizing others on the internet. Self-proclaimed to have known Chinese drawing, Chinese instrumental, and Chinese poem since childhood. In year 2010, she went to America, vowing never to return to China. However, in year 2011, she was deported by the Americans, under the premise that her messages were causing too much harm in society.

Chapter 255: Soaring Swords Professional League

Zhang Yang shook his head, smiling weakly as he asked, "Lend me your gaming helmet. I'd like to log in for a while."

Yu Li got up from her bed and immediately cringed in pain with a loud "ouchiee" as she limped towards her closet. Digging among the neatly arranged clothing, she bent down, causing her firm breasts to sway about as they dangled down. She straightened up with a gaming helmet. After handing the helmet to Zhang Yang, she returned to bed rather disgruntledly.

"D*mn, it really hurts..."

Zhang Yang snickered and put on the helmet to log into the game.

"Noob tank! Have you seen the system's announcement? The preliminary rounds of 'Soaring Swords' starts next month!"

"Little Yang, registration for 'Soaring Swords' opens tomorrow."

"O Guild master! Please babysit me!"

Just as Zhang Yang logged into the game, he was instantly bombarded with private messages from Fatty Han, Wei Yan Er, and a few other members of his guild. He was stunned. 'Soaring Swords' was already starting? But then again, it was about time too! He was the one who was out of place.

Soaring Swords, was Dream Tech's first world class, international level, PvP competition. Each region would host their own tournament. This was the starting point, or rather the filtration point for the future Professional League. Unlike the future Professional League, Soaring Swords would only allow team fights. Only players in a party formation could register, up to a limit of five members.

After a series of preliminary battles, each major city will only produce 4 parties each. All 32 parties in entire China will have the final decisive match in the city of Shanghai. Other than the luxurious grand prize, all 32 parties that had been carefully selected from the preliminary round will be seeded in the S-Class Professional League held next year!

Keep in mind that the League had a 10 player limit in their battle team. The League will also have 1v1 competitions. Thus, not only did they have to possess good teamwork, but each member of the party must be able to hold their ground in a solo fight!

Zhang Yang proceed to create a party and invited those that he discerned to have a certain level of potential. He then switched to the party channel and announced, "I'm sure everyone has heard of and wants to join the Soaring Swords!"

"You betcha! Noob tank! The champions will have the best rewards! Each member will gain three levels, one skill point, and a chance to participate in the lucky draw! According to the official statement, there's even a 1% chance to draw a Violet-Platinum tier equipment! You hear that? Violet-Platinum!" Wei Yan Er was wild with excitement. She was already picturing herself standing on the champion's podium.

"Those parties who make it to the finals will earn 20,000 dollars a person as a reward! Final 16, will have 40,000 per person. Final 8 will have 80,000 dollars per person, and Final 4 will have 160,000 per person! As for the top three teams, the 3rd place will have 200,000 dollars per person, 2nd place will have 500,000 dollars a person. And the final champion's team will have 1,000,000 dollars per person! Dream Tech sure is going all out for this competition!" Hundred Shot's own salary was already raised to 100,000 dollars a month. Still, he was shocked when a million dollar prize was presented as a prize.

Zhang Yang laughed. "In that case, we must think of a way to get ourselves all top 3 places!"

"Noob tank! This time, you must be on my team! This young lady will allow you to fight. I will not be dragging the team down this time!" Wei Yan Er snickered evilly.

"Puh! Little Yang will surely be with this Fatty bro!" roared Fatty Han as he jumped out of the crowd.

"Bullsh*t! The guild master will surely be in my team!"

Everyone already knew about Zhang Yang strength. Just with his {Destructive Smash} that reduced healing effects by 75%, there was

nobody who wouldn't be willing to be a vegan monk for him.

Finally, the excitement died down, and everyone turned their expectant gazes to Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang put up a serious face and said, "As of right now, our guild is the strongest guild in all of China. I can't say for sure, but I'm sure that many guilds have set their eyes upon defeating us. They will try to take our places and kick us down the rankings. So I say this, we must take this chance to rise up among others, to fight for the glory of the guild, to earn our place, not just in the hearts of all players, but for the world to witness! Let them see, Lone Desert Smoke, the champions of China!"

Everyone nodded. A man's wants far outweighed the benefits of the guild. As long as the guild's position remained unfazed, unshaken, everyone in the guild would have bright futures!

Zhang Yang swept across the crowd to quickly observe every one of them. "I plan to create two permanent battle teams. The target of these teams is to be among the four teams who will represent China. The first team will have, me, that little brat, that b*tchy snow, Ice Cube, and Daffodil Daydream. The second team, Hundred Shots, that fat guy there, Lost Dream, Fantasy Sweetheart, and Galileo."

Galileo was a Berserker who had recently joined Lone Desert Smoke. His controls and intuition were impressive. He had performed extremely well in the secondary raid party, drawing Zhang Yang's attention.

In the first battle team, Han Ying Xue would be the healer of the team. Without her "ginormous" support, the team will not be able to perform well. Sun Xin Yu, a.k.a Ice Cube, will be China's Thief Lord in the future, the best of the best, so naturally, she was in his team. As for the little brat, if he had not proactively recruited her, she might grovel at his feet, sobbing until he looked like the villain instead. That being said, her skills and equipment were above the average member around. She had some potential, to be able to win four out of 10 matches against Sun Xin Yu.

Daffodil Daydream was in his team since there were already three melee fighters around. Her nuking style, her burst damage was a necessity in the team. Besides, she was the only ranged attack! Compared to the second battle team, Daffodil Daydream's capabilities exceeded even Hundred Shots, and Fatty Han. Fatty Han was a PvP dumb*ss, through and through. He could be in the team solely because of his equipment. Hundred Shots had yet to obtain the mini-Red Dragon as his pet, and was nowhere at the strength Zhang Yang knew him by. Without it, he would never be a super strong tier player like Zhang Yang!

"Little Yang, bro, come on. Why are you being so greedy! Four ladies all to yourself? Dude!" Fatty Han stared in envy.

Zhang Yang shrugged. "Team 1 and Team 2 have been decided. Anyone else who wants to participate in the competition may form their own team! The guild will not interfere!

After a quick grinding session, Zhang Yang logged out of the game and used Yu Li's computer in the room to access the official

site, looking up for further information on the Soaring Swords. After all, his memory of Soaring Sword Competition was all but covered in memory dust, he could not possibly remember all the tiny details.

According to the announcement in the official site, any player above Level 50 can participate in the event. The number of participants in the battle team is limited to not more than five members. Player can still participate in the event with a team less than five members. There was nothing that said a single player was not eligible. If one thinks that one is strong enough to take on five players, one may do so proudly and even win the grand prize!

The registration would start at 00:00 the next day, ending on the 30th of November. However, players owuld need to purchase a Party Registration Log for 10 gold coins if they wished to participate. The registration would be completed after all team mates had placed their forms and signature into the book, which would be submitted to the system.

A player is and limited to only one battle team. After the submission, no one is allowed to switch sides or join another team.

The preliminary rounds would start on the first day of December and end on the 10th. Only 32 battle teams will be selected from the preliminary rounds to join the semi-finals. On the 20th of December, all 32 teams will have to proceed to Grand Skyline Hotel in Shanghai, fully sponsored by Dream Tech. Further information would be added upon further notice.

Zhang Yang read the entire announcement carefully before

turning off the computer and going back to bed.

Yu Li was already sound asleep, all curled up like kitten. Zhang Yang sighed heavily. He knew a little thing or two about body language. When a person sleeps in such a position, curled up into a ball, it showed signs of insecurity and depression.

Zhang Yang felt sad for her. He reached out his hands and pulled her gently into his embrace, falling asleep with her in his arms.

The night passed by silently.

The next day, Zhang Yang opened his eyes. He was extremely surprised when the first scene he saw was a completely alien surrounding. It took a while before he remembered that he was in Yu Li's bedroom and that he had spent the night at her house. He turned his head to the other side only to find an empty bed. He sucked in a deep breath, taking in the fragrance of a woman from the pillow beside him.

Fuu!

Zhang Yang let out a long breath and got up with a flip. He got his cloths on properly and opened the door. Just then, the smell of fried eggs came rushing into his nostrils. He walked to the kitchen and found her there cooking breakfast.

Zhang Yang leaned on the corner of the wall and observed the woman. After transitioning from a young maiden to a full fledged

woman, she was wearing tight jeans that had did nothing to hide the shape of her curvy long legs. Her ass was held firmly by the fabric of the jeans, creating a perfect peach like curvature that sent Zhang Yang's blood boiling with desire again.

He sneaked up behind her and embraced her.

"Ah!" Yu Li was startled. She turned to him and plucked his nose lightly.

"Don't play now. If the eggs get burned, there's no breakfast for you, young man!"

"Doesn't matter. I'll just have you for breakfast!

Now filled with desire, Zhang Yang's hands slithered up from Yu Li lower waist, slipping beneath her shirt. His hands made their way slowly up to her warm, perky breasts. Gradually and sexually, Zhang Yang pressed his lips on her snow-white neck and nibbled them a little.

"Let go you, little minx! I'm serious! Ah! My eggs! It's going to burn!"

Now that he was already heated up and ready to go. Zhang Yang shut the stove off before scooping her off her feet and carried her into the bed room. laughing manically as he did.

"Hehe! Little minx? Did you just call your man little minx? That

would not do, missus! I must teach you a lesson!"

After a long and draggy plead, Yu Li begged Zhang Yang to let her off the hook this time. She was still fresh from the session that tore her apart, the stinging pain still deep within her forbidden area. In the end, Zhang Yang caved in and had Yu Li suck him off instead.

After having breakfast and "dessert", Zhang Yang left the building and took a cab home. Along the way, Yu Li's bashful expression from yesterday flitted through his mind. He clenched his fist, knowing that from today onwards, he would soon often find himself late for work, due to a certain activity in the morning.

Back at his home, he regained his composure and logged into the game.

The first thing he did was to buy himself a Party Registration Log Book. After having all the girls sign, Zhang Yang went to the Registration NPC in White Jade Castle to submit their application.

'Ding! You have submitted the name list of your battle team for Soaring Swords event. Party Name: Lone Desert Smoke Team 1. Team Member: Zhan Yu, Frost Night, Drizzler, Little Snow, Daffodil Daydream. Please confirm the details before proceeding!'

"Proceed!"

'Ding! You have successfully registered your battle team: Lone Desert Smoke Team 1. Please wait patiently for the event to start!

Please remain connected during the event period. Penalty will be incurred for not fulfilling the requirement!'

What a fraud! One team's Registration "fee" was at 10 gold coins each! With China's 6,000,000 players, which added up to 1,200,000 battle teams, that would be 12,000,000 gold coins! F*ck! With that amount of gold coins, it was no wonder that they could provide such a grand rewards, and complete with traveling and accommodation fees for the hotel! It's like a government building a tower from the blood, sweat, and tears of its citizen's tax, and then further expanding influence of 'God's Miracle' upon all that! That's killing two birds with one stone!

Still, even if he knew about the future development of the game, the one earning the most profits would still be the gaming company themselves! This was the true difference between a gambler and a casino!

Zhang Yang put those thoughts behind him and summoned the bear, riding all the way to Crimson Blood Mountains of the Didier Flatlands.

In the game, humans did not only have 64 major cities in eight regions of the world. In high level maps, there were many other kingdoms and other small forces that existed as their own sovereigns. These kingdoms and forces did not ally themselves in the Union. Some of them had even struck a deal or agreements with the Spectres.

Didier Flatlands was ruled by Count Didier. A long time ago, this land had once been a part of the human empire. However, after the

invasion of demons and spectres, Count Didier took the chance and leave the human empire and started a small reign in this very land. Even though his reign was not an official kingdom, he had the authority of one. Since then, seven generations since had passed since the creation of this place.

Three years ago, according to the lore, all seven generations of Didier decedents had led an army to fight a bloody war with the spectres, managing to stop the invasion.

However, the warriors who had sacrificed their lives for the safety of the people had been reanimated as walking zombies. They had become the very thing that they had sought to kill. Losing their memories, emotions, and consciousness, they were doomed to roam forever in this Crimson Blood Mountains.

Chapter 256: The Weird Spectre

Zhang Yang arrived at the Crimson Blood Mountains where the place was filled with monsters. They were all melee-attackers which made it really easy to kill them in large groups.

Zhang Yang patted the bear's head and started to rush into the enemy. One by one he kited them until they accumulated in numbers, and kill them in one go. The obtained experience was extreme satisfying.

Zhang Yang continued grinding for three days straight and killed his way up to the peak. When he arrived, he felt weird. The place was empty. There were so many monsters down the hill yet at this hundred-meter square area was only occupied by one monster. The monster was just kneeling down, gazing into the distance. Its rotting eye sockets where glowing with the typical green-emerald flames of a spectre.

Is that a boss?

Zhang Yang eyes glinted. He hurried over to it and observed its properties.

[Smaug] (Normal, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 6,500

Defense: 60

As expected! It's a green, friendly monster! The name however, was extremely familiar!

But...could a spectre be a green-name monster? Zhang Yang was flustered. He kept the axe and his shield and went up to Smaug.

When Zhang Yang footsteps grew louder, Smaug got up to his feet immediately. The flames in his eyes flickers violently as the lower jaw crackled to speak in a deep, husky voice of a man. "Adventurer, are you here to end my life?"

A talking spectre!? That had to be at least a Witch Spectre level! How could a rotting, brittle-looking, meatless, skeletal monster be able to have the ability of speech?! He was supposed to be just the same as those mindless zombies!

Something was not right!

Zhang Yang shook his head to deny Smaug's statement. "To aise as a spectre after a man's death, could only mean an unfulfilled wish. Only a desire, a wish so strong, could force a man to rise from his grave! Tell me, spectre, what is it that you wish to achieve, and I will help you fulfill your wish!"

Naturally, Zhang Yang knew that Smaug had a quest for him. Otherwise, he would not even have the guts to blurt out such a corny line.

Smaug turned his empty sockets to Zhang Yang and said, "Three years ago, I was in the expedition army. I died on this very battlefield. Back then, I had a wife. A beautiful, loving wife who I will never forget. She was carrying my child in her womb! I can't just leave now, I have to meet her! I want to meet my child! Only then, can I leave this earth with a contented heart."

A husband, a loving father, and the unrelenting desire to care for his family had made this man to rise up from the dead. Unlike the other spectres that had remained on this earth due to vengeance and hatred, this man, no this spectre, was here because of his unconditional love.

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Respected warrior, how may I help?"

Smaug turned his head towards the far south and said, "Could you see to them? My wife and child. Please see it whether they are living a good life. Come back here and tell me all about them!"

'Ding! Smaug has a quest for you: Last Wish. Will you accept it?'

"Accept!"

"They should be living in the north, in a town call Balin. My

wife's name is Liya. Liya – Tuskar!" Smaug turned back to face Zhang Yang. "I must thank you, adventurer. You have a noble heart. A true heart of a warrior!"

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "I will be back with haste!"

Zhang Yang summoned his bear and rode down towards the south.

[Last Wish] (Difficulty Level: D)

Quest Description: Head towards the town of Balin and search for Liya – Tuskar and her child. Let them know about Smaug's affection for them and obtain a reply from Liya for Smaug.

Progress: Obtained Liya – Tuskar's reply letter 0/1

It was just Level D quest, yet it required Zhang Yang to run over the entire mountain. Zhang Yang sighed. Judging from the quest description, Zhang Yang guessed that it would not be of any worth to complete the quest. However, even though Smaug was just a program, a fictional character, the story he told and his devotion to his family had moved Zhang Yang. He decided to run around a bit to finish the quest.

Even though Crimson Blood Mountain and the town of Balin belonged in the region of Didier Flatlands, it took Zhang Yang one whole hour just to arrive at an old, dead town.

"Hold!"

Surrounding the town were protective wooden parameters with four guards standing at the entrance. Wielding long spears, they entered aggressive stances and bellowed ferociously at Zhang Yang.

[Balin Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

These NPC that were threatening Zhang Yang had yellow name tags. If Zhang Yang wanted to, he could just ride in without the need of stopping. However, it was not necessary.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and stopped right beside the guards. "I'm just a regular adventurer trying to find a place to stay for the night and resupply. I mean no harm!"

One of the guards walked up closer and carefully shift his head up

and down, studying him closely. He turned back after a while and screamed. "It's human!"

Zhang Yang murmured. "So, can I go in now?"

"Wait!" The same guard stopped Zhang Yang by blocking his path. "By orders from Lord Aiden, all visitors must pay 10 gold coins as an entrance fee!"

What a rip-off!

Zhang Yang grunted and took out 10 gold coins to pay the guard since he just wanted to finish the quest as swiftly as he could. After dropping the gold coins on the guard's palm, he proceeded into the town.

As he rode on the bear through the stone pavements of the small town, Zhang Yang could not help but notice the old buildings on either side of the road. There were not many people on the streets as well. The entire town seemed rather glum. Zhang Yang gently stopped an older woman and asked, "Excuse me dear madam, do you know where is Liya – Tuskar's house?"

The NPC woman was a rather plump, middle aged lady. She lifted her fat, chinless face up and looked at Zhang Yang and spoke in a rather agitated tone. "That shameless whore? How do you know that name? Wait...you don't look like you're from around here! Oh! The heavens have mercy on us all! Even a foreigner would know about that whore! What a disgrace she has been to the town of Balin!"

Did she say whore?

Zhan Yang was stunned. "I'm sorry madam. I'm her husband's friend in the army. I came here just to deliver a message."

"Smaug's friend?" The fat lady stared at Zhang Yang with disbelief and replied. "Young man, you're too late. Liya the whore had already died two years ago!"

"What?!" Zhang Yang frowned immediately. A simple, delivery quest had just taken a turn for the worse! It had just gotten more complicated! Zhang Yang asked again, "I recall that she had a child."

"So it seems. I heard when the b*tch was buried, she was still carrying a child in her womb! Pui! What a shameless whore! That lowlife could not even live a day without having a man in her bed!" That fat lady NPC face was twisted with disgust as she spat onto the gravel pavement.

Just as she was about to leave, Zhang Yang quickly asked one last question. "Where was she buried?"

"In the cemetery, far west of the city. I don't know the exact location. Find her yourself!" said the fat lady. But just as she walked away, Zhang Yang could hear her murmur. "That shameless whore should not even be buried in the cemetery. She should just fed to the wolves."

Liya's...a whore?

The question lingered in his mind until he rode the bear towards the cemetery of Balin. The cemetery was a large garden-like field. If tombstones were planted neatly in rows with a garden around it, this place would make a beautiful one indeed.

Zhang Yang got down and started reading each of the tombstone for Liya's name. When he reached a corner of the north most area, he found Liya – Tuskar's tombstone.

'Ding! Quest: Last Wish has been updated. Please investigate the death of Liya – Tuskar!'

The system notification rang in his ears just as Zhang Yang touched the tombstone.

Looks like this was not just a simple delivery quest after all!

Zhang Yang rode out and back into the town. After asking around, he finally found the location of Liya's old house. The small house was extremely old, and was close to falling apart. The door was barely working with half of what seemed to be a makeshift door. From the outside, Zhang Yang could clearly see many holes in the ceiling of the house. Right now, sun rays broke into the dark, solemn house, its interior barely illuminated only with pillars of light from the sun. It would never shelter any occupant from the rain.

Is this Smaug and Liya's house?

"Young warrior! Have you purged the entire world of demons and spectres or do you have that much time in your hands to come here?" A hunchbacked older gentleman walked out of a neighboring house. With a walking stick in his wrinkled hand, he raised it to point at Zhang Yang provokingly.

Zhang Yang remained stoic. "Respected elder. I am a friend of Smaug in the army. Three years ago, as he lay dying, he told me about his wife and child. He told me to ensure that they lived in comfort. I should have come earlier, but I took an arrow to the knee."

The old man slowly lowered his walking stick and paced slowly towards Liya's grave. He let out a long sigh. "Smaug was a brave man. When he was 11 years old, he could tear a tiger apart with his bare hands. When he was 18 years old, the idiot went on and charged into a dragon's nest. He single handedly defeated a dragon! Since then, there were rumors going on about Smaug. They said that the Gods smiled upon him, that he was blessed with powers that rivaled the God of War himself! However, rumors were rumors. The young lad had so much potential. Yet he fell at such a young age..."

So, Smaug was a famous character. That was why he could still retain his memories even as a low-ranking specter soldier. He could even speak!

Zhang Yang nodded his head. "Smaug was indeed a respectable warrior! He was brave and valiant. Respected elder, could you tell me about his wife? How did Liya die?"

"Sigh...Smaug was such a reputable hero. But he betrothed a whore! Liya was once the most beautiful woman in this town. Before she was married to Smaug, many men had been courting her all day with songs and poems! However, when Smaug left us, she could not endure the lonesome nights. In the end, she had lured all the men in the town! That whore could have shared a bed with every man in this town! Eventually...after peppered with insults from the townspeople, she could not take it anymore and ended her own life!"

The old man lowered his head in silence.

Smaug was a man who loved his wife so. And the wife was a woman who clearly loved him so much that he could still retain his soul as a spectre. How could this woman be a whore?

Zhang Yang got down from his mount and unsummoned the bear. He summoned his courage and pushed the rotten door aside to enter the house. The first place he entered was the living room of the house. With one quick glance, he could tell that everything; the furniture, the table, the small rack on the side, was all on the verge of collapsing. Zhang Yang looked around for a little while and headed towards the bedroom. Inside the dark, damp room was a large bed that took two third of the entire bedroom. On the left was as wooden closet and on the right was a small nightstand. The bed was a mess, covered in nothing but dust.

Zhang Yang went towards the nightstand and pulled out a drawer. There, he saw a black, leather-bound diary. Looks like the truth could be written in this evidence.

Chapter 257: The Diary

Zhang Yang unhooked the leather bound diary and opened it.

"Smaug, my one true love. When I heard about your passing, I was left alone, heartbroken. I wanted to end my life. I want to be with you! Please forgive me, my love! I'm still carrying your child. Until he grows up to be a fine man like you, I shall take my leave and meet you!"

On the very first page of the diary, Zhang Yang could already feel the unrequited love between a wife and her husband. How could a woman like her be a shameless whore?!

Zhang Yang flipped over and read more. The next six pages were of Liya lamenting of a husband who she clearly loved. But at the seventh page, the contents had changed.

"Smaug! Please forgive me! I've been tainted! I've been soiled! I have no right to be your love! The town chief, Aiden has violated me! My love! I want to die right now! But...I cannot take my life just yet. The child inside me is still growing...I cannot allow myself to die! I will endure this hardship! I will give birth to your child!"

Zhang Yang could feel the pain and despair through the writing. The words were written rather heavily. The quill had almost torn through the paper. Zhang Yang graced his fingers across the pages and could feel the agonizing pain of living, and the despair in her bravery to fight off death.

"The people...everyone stares at me with such judgment, such hatred! It's too late, but now I know that they were insulting me for seducing Aiden, that monster! They are calling me a shameless whore! Smaug, my love. I...I...I can't endure this any longer!"

"Kingsley...Owen...Kerry...they came barging in. They raped me. One by one, I was violated! When tear flow down my cheeks, they were only laughing! Smaug, I am destined for hell! But, before I knock on the gates of hell, I shall give birth to our child!"

"...Lady Velma from the bakery has dismissed me from work. No one in town is willing to hire me anymore! Oh...Smaug. How I wish to hear your sweet voice once more! Please...I will endure this...I will survive until our child comes to this world!'

"...Smaug, I don't deserve your love any more. To survive, I have sold my soul and body! Oh! Smaug, please forgive me! I may have given my body to someone else, but my heart will always be yours forever..."

The diary ended here.

'Ding! You have found a suspicious circumstance of Liya's death. Please head to the town's bar for inquiry. Hint: Drunkards will sometimes reveal the important clues!'

Rage. Zhang Yang mind was suddenly filled with only one emotion. A man left the town and place his life in the front line to protect those who repaid him by blatantly raping, assaulting, insulting, and forcing a widow to the point of prostitution? Not

even in death, the couple could rest in peace without being insulted!

Zhang Yang put away the diary and walked out of the house with grim eyes.

Liya had steel her heart with iron-clad fortitude to give birth to their child, how could such a woman would end her own life? She had already lost everything she had, that was why, there was no reason for her to end her own life!

If that was the case, who was the one who killed her?

The ultimate question played repeatedly in his mind, until he arrived at a small bar. Compared to the street, this place was much more rowdier and crowded. There were over 10 men occupying the bar stand, drinking and laughing with joy. Zhang Yang casually sat down and ordered a beer. Without much effort, he struck a conversation with one of the middle-aged drunkards, named Bass.

"I heard this town had an absolute beauty. What's her name again? Li...Li something!" said Zhang Yang, pretended to be oblivious.

"Liya – Tuskar?" said Bass. "Indeed she was a beauty to behold. It's a shame that she died a couple years back."

[&]quot;How did she die?"

The Drunkard Bass was startled. His face twitched a little as he continued gulping down his beer. "We don't talk about this. There could be a price on your head if you get too nosy."

Zhang Yang laughed. "Alright, alright! You must be saying that to scare me off. I'm pretty sure that you don't know anything, do you!?"

"Who says I don't know anything!" Bass was infuriated. He calmed down and turned left and right before lowering his head, whispering to Zhang Yang. "On that very day, I saw with my own eyes, the town chief's men brought Liya to his house with a horse carriage. However, when she got back home, she was already a living corpse!"

"Town Chief? You mean Aiden?"

"That's right. That's why I said it would be dangerous! My friend, you best keep your head down and keep this between us. Lord Aiden is the Count's nephew! He is what you would call a man with power! If this gets out, both of our heads will hang!" said Bass with a terrified face.

"Huh...I do wonder, why did Aiden want to kill Liya?" said Zhang Yang. He was genuinely confused.

"That, my friend, is a question I cannot answer." Said Bass as he shook his head. "However, I did hear rumors that Lord Aiden kept a journal of sorts! Perhaps he could have written it down!"

'Ding! Your quest: Last Wish has been updated. Please find Aiden's Diary and give it to Smaug along with Liya's Diary!'

[Last Wish] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Find Aiden's Diary and investigate the true culprit behind Liya's death. Submit both Aiden's and Liya's Diary to Smaug.

Progress: Liya's Diary 1/1 Aiden's Diary 0/1

The quest difficulty level had just been raised!

Zhang Yang quickly left the bar after cutting the conversation short, and he arrived at Aiden's house doorstep.

Aiden's house, or rather mansion was the largest building in Balin. The area and land was so large, though it could not be compared to the palace back in White Jade Castle, it was still several times larger than a regular town's man. There were eight soldiers fanned out in a straight line with long spears in their hands, with stern faces that would not hesitate at killing whenever necessary.

[Aiden's Guard] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 350

All of them were red-named! That meant that the guards would attack anyone within their aggro range!

If it was only one or two, Zhang Yang could at least survive the fight with a little HP left. But eight, 1,000,000 HP elite tier monsters were too much, even for the mighty Zhang Yang!

Zhang Yang clicked his tongue, annoyed. He summoned his bear and rode into the mansion boldly.

"Insolent fool! How dare you intrude Lord Aiden's property! Kill him!" All eight elite guards surrounded Zhang Yang.

{Blood Rage}! {Blast Wave}!

A conical shaped, compressed air blasted out, stunning all eight of them. Zhang Yang took this chance and rode past the defense blockade, rushing inside the compound. Once inside, Zhang Yang was in a large flower garden. There were many guards inside that were widely spread out. The white bear ran past like the wind and rushed through the garden and towards the main building.

"Intruder! Intruder!" As the stunned guards recovered, they began to shout as they gave chase.

With the incredible speed of the mount, Zhang Yang had arrived to the doorstep of the main building in just a few seconds. There were another eight elite guards right at the doorsteps. All of them swung their spears at Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang got down from his mount with a quick somersault. In an instant, Zhang Yang unsummoned his bear and activated {Shadow of the Void}.

poof

With a 200% bonus movement speed increase, Zhang Yang practically flew through the guards and entered the main building, like an actual thief.

Losing the aggro, the guards rushed back to their original position and resumed their guarding as if nothing had ever happened.

20 seconds later, {Shadow of the Void} ended and Zhang Yang materialized back in to the "real world".

"Die, intruder!" along with a scream, a shadow eclipsed over his from behind.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield almost instantly and blocked what a seemed to be just be a broom wielded by a female maid.

[Aggressive Maid] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

Luckily, she had only 130,000 HP, despite being elite. She was far easier to deal with compared to the 1,000,000 HP guards outside.

Zhang Yang started his counterattack. Zhang Yang was unable to summon the bear as it required a two second casting time. During the casting animation, the summon process would be interrupted when the summoner receives an attack. Zhang Yang had to fight this maid all by himself.

Even though he was alone, it took only one minute for Zhang Yang to terminate the maid. After making there were no other monsters around him, Zhang Yang quickly summoned the [Gold-Eared Bear King] and begun searching one room at a time.

The building was extremely large and was filled with many monsters. Luckily, they were all widely spread out. From the ground floor to the first floor, to the third, and the fourth, Zhang Yang had already killed more than a hundred elite monsters. After one hour, he had finally entered a room filled with nothing but books!

The room was as large as a hall, with 10 or more book shelves lining up to the end of the room. At the far end of the room was a desk. A silver-lined elderly man was wiping the desk. He was dressed in a butler uniform.

[Sebas the Butler] (Gray-Silver, Humanoid)

Level: 68

HP: 680,000

Defense: 700

This place must be Aiden's personal reading room! Zhang Yang took out his battle axe and charged at Sebas.

"Hmm? Which cave did you crawl out from!? How dare you intrude Lord Aiden's mansion!?" The old butler bellowed angrily and threw a punch at Zhang Yang.

'-2,206!'

Zhang Yang took the damage head on. The boss basic attack damage was roughly around 5,000. But Zhang Yang did not know how fast was his attack or what skills he had! Zhang Yang thought of it while frantically counterattacking Sebas. In any worse case scenario, it's still best to have {Cripple Defense} stacked up first and see how the battle turns out.

Two seconds later, another punch came flying.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang immediately raised his shield. He started calculate the boss attacking properties. So far, his single attacks were at 2,200 damage, with a two second attack interval. With {Block} every six seconds, the boss normal attack DPS will be roughly be around 700. After five stacks of {Cripple Defense}, the boss will still have 350 Defense. Combining the [Gold-Eared Bear King]'s basic attack DPS of around 1,850, and Zhang Yang's DPS of around 2,600, it would take roughly 150 seconds to kill the boss. That being said, he would have to remain alive for the entire ordeal!

After taking another attack, Zhang Yang took out a bottle of [Level 3 Healing Potion] and gulped down the bottle clean.

[Level 3 Healing Potion] (Useable)

Use: Restores 4,000 HP immediately. Use of any Healing Potion regardless of level will cause all potions to enter the same cool down time.

Cool Down Time: 1 minute.

Level Requirement: 60

Since he had not found himself a recipe to craft the [Level 3 Healing Potion], Zhang Yang had bought the potion from the NPC for 50 gold coins a bottle! It's extremely expensive!

After treating Zhang Yang like a punching bag, Sebas threw a lightning speed punch and stunned Zhang Yang.

'Ding! Sebas has used {Uppercut}!'

After the successful stun, Sebas turned around and starting punching the white bear.

```
'-3,812!'
```

'-3,739![']

Even though the bear had stronger Defense than Zhang Yang, it did not have any damage reduction passive skills, causing it to take a ferocious beating. Luckily, the {Uppercut} only stunned Zhang Yang for three seconds. After the boss threw out two punches, he turned around and started flinging his fists at Zhang Yang's body.

Zhang Yang had to resort to {Merlinda's Shadow}, {Berserker's Heal}, {Shield Wall}, [Heart of Fallen Warrior], and another bottle of [Level 3 Healing Potion]. Zhang Yang had manage to last for 95 seconds but his HP had been drained down below 2,000 HP!

Wham!

The boss threw another punch.

'+10,620!'

Furious set equipment set effect activated!

However, that had only bought Zhang Yang another 15 seconds, before he was once again in the danger zone. He quickly activated {Shadow of the Void} and ran away from the battle while frantically chowing down several recovery snacks.

Once the boss lost sight on Zhang Yang, it began to kick the white bear's furry *ss.

{Wild Recovery}!

A green-hue light radiated from the bear and it began to

regenerate at the rate of 5% HP per seconds.

Once Zhang Yang was fully recovered, he straight up used {Charge} and bashed the boss.

{Provoke}!

Immune!

It did not work on him! However, the boss turned over to Zhang Yang and attack him.

The poor white bear had only slightly over 300 HP left. If Zhang Yang was just a second later, it would have surely perished. Now that Zhang Yang was barely out of danger, he had turned the tables around. This time, it was the boss' turn to be in jeopardy. After merely 40 seconds, the elderly butler wailed in pain and fell down defeated.

The old butler had slightly below average HP, therefore, sadly, its drops were just as little. Other than a few silver coins, it only dropped one item.

[Butler's Bell] (Gray-Silver, Accessory)

Use: Summons 3 slaves to help you do your daily task. They could help you out against the enemy as well. Lasts for 60 seconds. Be warned, you might need to think twice before relying on their battle prowess.

Zhang Yang had seen this plaything in his previous life. The summoned slaves where three Dwarven Fat Moms. They had a fixed attack power, and were only able to fight on par with a Level 30 players. It was actually not too bad for a toy.

Zhang Yang kept the bell in his inventory and sat on top of the desk, rummaging about for Aiden's Diary.

The desk was extremely clean, without even a speck of dust on top. Zhang Yang pulled out the first drawer and saw a red, leather bound, slightly thick book. When he picked the book up, the system notification rang in his ear, indicating that he had obtained Aiden's Diary.

Just Zhang Yang was about to open the book to read, a sudden loud commotion could be heard from outside. Zhang Yang hopped down from the desk and peek out of the window. There, he saw an extremely fat man was walking through the flower garden towards the building, with 12 guards surrounding him.

[Town Chief, Aiden] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 70

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 1,400

As for the guards around him were elite tier monster with 1,000,000 HP each! Each of them was like a mini-boss!

Zhang Yang knows it was impossible for him to leave via the same route he entered. He quickly took out a [Teleportation Scroll] and tore it.

After 10 seconds, a magic teleportation magic circle formed beneath his feet. With a gust of bright light, Zhang Yang teleported to Thunderstorm Castle. He summoned his bear and rode his back to Didier Flatlands. Along the way, he took out the Diary and read it. Although the book was designed to be thick, Zhang Yang could only open the book like two planks of rigid wood conjoined in the middle. The rest of the pages could be flipped open. They were glued together firmly. To think that the developers of the game would be too lazy to have a little more in-depth details. They were probably thinking that as long as the book could convey the quest's story, the rest would not matter.

Chapter 258: Smaug's Revenge

"Yes! I've finally got her in my hands! I finally have her now! I was afraid to even approach her when Smaug was still alive! But now...He is dead! Muahahaha! What a good death! Such a good death! My wish shall be completed! That b*tch wanted to commit suicide, but she went mental when I tried to threaten that little parasite in her belly!"

" "

"Ahh...that b*tch is such a precious little jewel. Especially when her belly has grown bigger and bigger! What a wonderful sensation to **** that b*tch!"

" "

"D*mn it all! How did that frog-faced lady know about me and the little b*tch! It must be the work of Martha!"

" "

"Such a waste! The little b*tch was beaten to death by the frogfaced lady! What a shame, she was a beauty to behold..."

Zhang Yang closed the book. A hurtful sorrow lingered in his heart. Even though it was purely fictional, could real humans already commit such crime? After all, humans have been around for a long time. Who knew the atrocities of the past!

Zhang Yang rode the bear as fast as he could, passing through the Tanilla Forest and entered Didier Flatlands, reaching towards the Crimson Blood Mountains. Zhang Yang did not waste any more time and skipped past all the monsters around. He rode up the mountain, unsummoned the bear, and used {Shadow of the Void} to remove all aggro on him. Once Zhang Yang reached to where Smaug was, he stopped from afar. He could see Smaug still gazing towards Balin. Even with the eerie human skull, Zhang Yang could feel the love, compassion, and longing from his face.

Zhang Yang was stunned. He did not know what to do next. Should he continue the quest? At least, right now, Smaug still had the untainted memories of Liya and their child was safe from the attacks of the spectre, living peacefully in the small town of Balin.

People say that man is at the top of the food chain, for not even a ferocious bear or fearsome tiger could defeat a human's intellect. In the future, the largest threat to humanity, the most devastating force, will always be human themselves, not any other races or species!

"Adventurer! You bring news of my wife and child?" Smaug noticed that Zhang Yang had arrived and quickly got up to his feet. Zhang Yang could tell, even with that eyeball-less skull, Smaug was extremely eager to hear about his wife and child.

What a cruel world! However, everyone would have to face their greatest obstacle in order to move on. Zhang Yang pondered for a while, hesitating before he took out two diaries and gave it to Smaug. He then quickly withdrew to leave the spectre to his

sorrow.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Last Wish. Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

"ARGHHHHH!!" A loud roar was heard, ever so thunderously, bearing pain and anger in its tone. The sky and earth trembled. Clouds started to flocked and clumped together as a heavy killing intent was generated. It was so strong that it was almost suffocating. The miasma-like pressure was too intense. Over the entire mountain, vengeance that was left behind from countless warriors and spectres alike pooled up, formed a dark colored ball of gas that in turn formed into a long black snake. The vengeful miasma started to gather up above Smaug.

Zhang Yang stopped running away and turned around quickly to witness the event. Smaug had his skeletal arms wide open as he cried with anger and sorrow into the air. The half-liquid, half-gas-like miasma was being sucked into his body in a vortex that seemed to enter a bottomless pit, an abyssal black hole!

A dark, almost black crown was forming on the top of Smaug's head. As Smaug absorbed more miasma, the crown became more solid. The entire process took as long as 10 minutes. After that, almost all of the vengeance miasma on the field had been completely absorbed by Smaug.

Thud! Thud! Thud! Thud!

Losing their life-force, all the spectres lost their "life", and one by

one, all the skeletal soldiers turned into powerless, regular skeletons, falling into pieces without any force to move them. Each of them returned to the ground from whence they came, resting forever in the depths of the earth.

Smaug clapped his hands together with such force that he could feel a sudden burst of wave. The flame in his eyes burst into a more violent, vibrant flame. The dark clouds in the sky started to clump even closely together and started to generate thunder and lightning.

Zhang Yang could felt the rage in boiling inside him. This rage had made him absorb all the vengeance from all the spectres in the field and morph himself into Ashura the avatar of vengeance, capable of delivering a sea of blood from the high heavens to the depths of hell! No more was the spectre who let the days pass in peace, who was ready to meet his death, knowing that his wife and child were safe and happy!

Thump! Thump!

Smaug walked towards Zhang Yang with heavy steps that shook the ground. "Adventurer! I will require your assistance!"

"As you wish!"

"I need you to take me into Balin. I require you to search for the Blood Shadow Blade which was sent back after my death in the war!"

'Ding! Smaug has a quest for you: Revenge. Will you accept it?'

Accept!

[Revenge] (Difficulty Level: B)

Quest Description: Smaug requires you to search for his Blood Shadow Blade and bring it to him! Hint: Blood Shadow Blade was Smaug's beloved sword, Liya must have taken good care of it when she was alive!

Progress: Blood Shadow Blade 0/1

Zhang Yang summoned his bear. Both of them rode the bear towards Balin. After one hour, they stopped one kilometer away from the entrance of Balin. Zhang Yang took out a black cloak and gave it to Smaug. "Please put this on or else, we might not be able to enter the town!"

The cloak was a Green-Copper tier equipment that was found by Zhang Yang. He was unsure if an NPC could really put them on.

Smaug took the cloak and covered his entire body, hiding the heinous skeletal body under the thick fabric.

It worked!

Zhang Yang patted the bear's forehead and both of them rode slowly towards the entrance.

"Hold!"

The same guards stopped Zhang Yang and one of them demanded. "As per order from Lord Aiden, all visitor must pay one gold coin per pax!"

Zhang Yang threw two gold coins towards the guard and walked pass them towards the town.

"Wait!" One of the guard stopped them. This time, he pointed at Smaug and said, "What are you hiding so desperately? Are you a magnificent beauty or a demonic being that cannot make contact with the sun! Take off the cloak and show me your face! We will conduct a full body inspection!"

"Argh!" Smaug growl angrily as he reached out with his skeletal hands to grab the guard's arm.

"S-Spectre! It's a spectre!" Smaug had accidentally reveal himself as he grabbed the guard. Simultaneously, all four guards begun to attack him.

All of these guards were elite tier, with basic attacks at 4,000 damage. Smaug was just a normal tiered, Level 65 monster with 6,500 HP. How could he take on all those attack? Instantly, Smaug

was left with just 1 HP and fell to the floor. Kneeling down and struggling fruitlessly, Smaug's ragged breath was all that indicated that he was at his limit, unable to get up!

Zhang Yang had wanted to sneaked into the town, but when Smaug had exposed himself, Zhang Yang would have to deal with this by force. He immediately used {Charge} to rush towards the guards. {Blood Rage} was used, {Horizontal Sweep} was activated, Zhang Yang could not stop at attacking the guards and quickly tried to end the fight as soon as he could.

"Which spectre dares to infiltrate my town! Kill the monster!" Just when Zhang Yang had just started the battle, the plump Aiden walked out of the town, along with 12 ferocious and tough looking personal guards! Aiden thrust his flabby arms out and commanded them to kill Zhang Yang.

F*ck! 16 elites, one Yellow-Gold boss! How to fight?

Zhang Yang ended up using {Shadow of the Void} and sneaked into the town, leaving Smaug behind. After reappearing at the far end, he saw Smaug had already been detained by the guards! Growling in defeat, Smaug could only stare angrily with all his hatred at Aiden.

"Make a fire pit in the center of the town's plaza! I want this spectre to be sentenced to death by fire!"

With Aiden's command, the guard took Smag away.

'Ding! You quest: Vengence has been updated. You have one hour to search for Blood Shadow Blade and deliver it to Smaug or the quest will be deemed as a failure!'

The system notification rang in Zhang Yang ears just as Smaug was taken away. There was no time to lose!

Zhang Yang rushed towards Liya's house and practically ransacked the entire house to search for the sword. After a long search, there was no trace of the sword in the house. Frustrated, Zhang Yang left the door steps and saw the same old man who had scolded him before, standing outside his house. Zhang Yang went over and asked. "Excuse me sir, do you know about the sword that was delivered back here after Smaug's death?"

The old man scratched his head and said, "You mean the sword with a blood red blade? I think I had saw a young brat name Larry waving it around while showing off. It has to be that sword!"

Sighing heavily, Zhang Yang rode his bear to search for Larry. He found him inside a rundown house. "Three-Finger" Larry was found hiding inside, he was extremely skinny but upon further inspection, he was younger than he looked.

Zhang Yang approached the man and grab him by the collar, roraing in his face. "Larry! I know you have the sword that you stole from Liya's house! Give it to me!"

Larry pushed Zhang Yang away and said provocatively. "If you want it...you'll have to beat me!"

In an instant, Larry's yellow name tag turned to red!

["Three Finger" Larry] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 300,000

Defense: 350

The NPC jumped at ZhangYang and began to attack him.

However, even with that surprise attack, Zhang Yang beat Larry to a pulp without breaking a sweat. Currently, with Zhang Yang equipment, only a boss could take him on, elite monsters were nothing but soft tofu! Left with just 1 HP, probably because the lore requires it to be, Larry was sent down cowering. Basically, since the system had set it that way, Zhang Yang had only thrown a single strike, which had dealt 10,000,000 damage and left the NPC with only 1 HP left.

"I'm sorry! Please don't hit me! I'll tell you where it is!" said Larry as he covered his head. "That broken sword was already sold to the blacksmith Jim!"

Zhang Yang then proceed as fast as he could towards the blacksmith and quickly glanced through the weapon display cupboard. Without delay, Zhang Yang had spotted the sword among the other. The entire sword was literally blood-red in color! It was as red as fresh blood! He quickly talked to the blacksmith NPC Jim, Blacksmith Shop Owner and said, "Excuse me, How much is this?"

"Oooo! You have some good eyes there adventurer! That sword is an excellent piece of work, I'll tell ya!" Jim responded immediately. After gritting his teeth and procrastinate a little, Jim looked at Zhang Yang with an unwilling face and said, "Well...since you want it, I could sell it to you at a cheap price of only 10,000 gold coins!"

Cheap my *ss!

Zhang Yang wanted to just snatch the sword and run away, however, as he tried to lift the sword up, he could not do so, no matter how hard he tried. D*mn system would just want to rob players of their hard earned gold coins!

Zhang Yang paid the man 10,000 gold coins and went on his way. However, before he left the place, Zhang Yang had held back his feelings to punch the man in his face. He left the shop and quickly made his way to the town's plaza.

Luckily, the time remaining was at 18 minutes and 36 seconds.

Zhang Yang reached to the plaza and had already found a large

platform with many wooden planks beneath it. Smaug was tied to a large iron pole, propped right in the middle of the wooden stage. There were many more wooden poles, as tall as he was, placed beside him. Not far from the stage, 10 guards surrounded the area while the fat Aiden sat slightly further away. Even further away from the stage was a large number of spectators filling up the entire plaza.

Zhang Yang activated {Shadow of the Void} and phased through the crowd, heading towards the center of the plaza.

Since he could not see any being in the realm of {Shadow of the Void}, the only guidance he had was the iron pole right at the center of the stage. Just as he reached, the skill had ended, and he appeared right in front of Smaug.

"Your sword is right here!"

Chapter 259: The Forgotten King

"Intruder! Intruder!" The guards around cried out!

Smaug summoned his strength and managed to free his right hand. He quickly grabbed the sword from Zhang Yang. Having given the sword away, Zhang Yang quickly turned around and pulled his axe out to prepare for combat.

"Burn that spectre now!" Aiden's voice could be heard from afar.

Pak Pak Pak!

Three flaming torches ere thrown out of nowhere onto the pile of wooden plank. The fire spread out at an amazing speed and before he knew it, the entire stage was burning.

Zhang Yang was currently busy fighting all the guards. Even though he was probably the strongest player in China, he was completely overwhelmed by the number of elite monsters around that seemed to be spawning endlessly!

BOOM!

A large blast wave came by, knocking everyone back a few feet, while sending those closer to it flying.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The wooden planks on the stage were blasted away. Ignited with flames, the flaming pieces of wood flew across the plaza, hitting some of the spectators, making a complete chaos. Some people started screaming in terror while others were crying in fear.

Shiing!

A shadow, more crimson than black flashed, Smaug had freed himself from the ropes and stood in the center of the flaming stage. He took a stance that was so sure of itself that it was as if he was making a stand against the entire world, and stared into the plaza with his violent, flaming eyes.

Foom!

Smaug swung the sword in his hands outwardly and instantly caused all the guards around to turn into minced meat.

"From now, I shall erase Balin from the surface of this world!" Smaug bellowed loudly with intense killing intent and raised the Blood Shadow Blade up high in the air.

"HMM!?" Aiden was shocked. Blood was completely drained off his face. "Blood Shadow Blade?! Smaug's Blood Shadow Blade?!" Aiden pointed his fat fingers to Smaug and screamed. "How could a spectre like you use the sword of Smaug! The godly sword of Blood Shadow Blade!"

"Because I.AM.SMAUG!" Smaug bellowed as loudly as he could. "I shed my blood for you! I gave my life to your cause! Yet...you forced my wife to be a whore! You killed her! I...I...I will have you all pay for your sins with your lives!"

Shing! Shing! Shing!

The blade in Smaug's hand slashed continually as blood kept spilling all over the plaza. None were able to survive the sword, and the air was wet and red with blood.

Panic filled the air as citizens of Balin started to run amok.

Yet, Aiden laughed. "Smaug...When you were alive, you were worshipped as a God of War! But now you're dead! Even as a spectre, how could you really draw out the true power of the Blood Shadow Blade?"

"It doesn't matter! As long I can kill you! The world will be right again!" Smaug roared. Although there were no muscles attached to his legs, Smaug gathered his strength and dashed towards Aiden.

"You're but a lowly skeletal solder! You're not worthy of being my opponent!" Aiden stepped forwards and took put a huge battle hammer out from nowhere. He gripped the handle of the hammer with his flabby hands and swung it ferociously towards Smaug. "I will smash those brittle bones into powder! Haha! Just so you know, I really do miss your wife's perfect *ss!"

"You bastard!" Smaug raged. He raised the sword in his hand and clashed with Aiden's hammer.

Tiiing!

As the sword and the hammer clashed, countless sparks were sent flying everywhere. Aiden was a Level 65 Yellow-Gold boss, one who was far stronger than Smaug. The massive force of the hammer had sent Smaug flying off. He literally spun in the air for 10 or more revolutions before slamming hard against the floor.

"Smaug! You're not the young, invincible man that you once were! You're nothing but a rotting, brittle pile of bones! You're so weak! I'll help you smash whatever hope and will that you have left!'

Aiden took the chance, and flew across the field with the hammer upraised in his hands, ready to smash Smaug.

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang glided across the floor and knocked onto Aiden with everything he had. However, since a Yellow-Gold boss was immune to the {Charge} stunning effect, and had extremely high strength attributes. Zhang Yang felt like he was riding a small scooter that had met the path of a raging Mack truck! He was instantly knocked back!

Saaaahhh!

Zhang Yang stopped himself from being pushed back and immediately rushed back towards Aiden.

By then, Aiden was already right in front of Smaug. His hammer was already traveling downwards, coming at Smaug's skull.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang rode the white bear and got between Aiden and Smaug. He raised his shield up high and managed to block the hit.

Bang!

Even though Zhang Yang had stopped the attack from hitting Smaug, the overwhelming strength of the boss had sent both Zhang Yang and the bear four to five meters back. The bear's claws drew deep lines in the stone pavement to stopped itself from being pushed further.

Smaug took this chance and jumped forward.

Shing!

The blade was swung in a wide arc and along came a river of blood, spilling out of Aiden.

The battle between the two NPCs was completely unlike what players would usually experience. Even though Smaug was just a normal tier monster, his attacks were so strong that he could be the same as a super-powerful boss!

To his surprise, Zhang Yang found after he had dealt over 200,000 damage to the boss, Smaug had gained levels! He was now Level 66!

Smaug has gained power! His single attack was raised to 200,000 to 300,000. Eventually, it had surpassed 400,000! As Smaug kept on slashing the boss, he kept on growing stronger and stronger and gained higher attack values! WTF!? His leveling speed is just off the charts!

Level 67! Level 68! Level 69! Level 70!?

In the end, Smaug level had even surpassed Zhang Yang to a limit where it did not display a numerical number! Instead, his level was only represented with three question marks!

It was not just his level, his tier was also being raised!

Black-Steel! Green-Copper! Gray-Silver!

Smaug's tier rank was increasing rapidly, eventually stopping at Holy! The same tier was Princess Serena!

"Crack!"

The hammer in Aiden's hands was blown to bits. Aiden frantically shrunk away as he staggered back. Panic and fear filled his eyes as he could only stare at the blood-soaked Smaug with his jaw wide open. "What power!? Such power! Not even Count Didier could have such strength! How is that possible?! How could it be possible!"

Smaug came up closer to Aiden and looked down at him with his flesh-less skull. Smaug then lifted his sword, ready to cleave Aiden in half.

"NO! NO! You cannot kill me! I am Count Didier's nephew! If you kill me, the count will put a price on your head!" Aiden was screaming his lungs out.

"Kill you? No. Not just you. Today, everyone in this town must die!" Smaug murmured and swung the blade down as hard as he could. Even though Aiden was a Yellow-Gold boss, he was still just a large slab of meat in the face of the sword. A large head was sent flying across the plaza, spilling blood as it flew. The head rolled for a while and stopped, revealing Aiden's last moments in his petrified face.

The worst part of it all was that, Aiden did not drop any loot at all!

Smaug shuffled slowly towards the center of the plaza and scream in agony. He then looked up into the sky and raised his sword up high. A destructive power grew and gathered around the sword's tip. As it grew larger, a black ball of light appeared and expanded exponentially, growing from the size of a small egg to as large as a hot air balloon!

"This good for nothing, filthy town...I WILL DESTROY IT!" Smaug cried and swung the sword downwards. The black ball of light blasted off like a tactical nuke, obliterating the entire city with such force that everything in the town was torn apart!

Surface over surface of the ground was being peeled off, the inner layers peeling off even before the outer layers had left the surface. Even houses were smashed into smithereens like sandcastles being trampled by little kids. In this kind of apocalyptic destruction, no one could run. No one could hide. Everything and everyone was turned into dust.

This attack, was no weaker than Princess Serena's Sword of Life and Death!

All shall perish under the stroke of the Shadow Blood Blade!

All that was left standing was Smaug himself, with Zhang Yang by his side. Smaug turned to Zhang Yang and said, "Liya...where... Where is her grave?"

"It's in the town's cemetery." Zhang Yang replied solemnly.

Smaug nodded silently and walked towards the cemetery. Zhang

Yang pondered for a while before he followed Smaug. Even though the quest had ended, he wanted to see it to its end.

The two of them arrived at Liya's tombstone.

The two of them stood there while Smaug looked down at the engraved name that says: "Liya – Tuskar". Smaug bend down and reached out his skeletal finger to caress the tombstone. As his fingers sunk into the engravement, Smaug whispered. "Liya, my love. My angel. I have come for you. My love for you shall never wither, not even after death and infernal existence have claimed me. My love for you will never deter even if I rot eternally as a spectre!"

Kuang!

Smaug took his blade and sliced the tomb in half. He reached his hands into the grave and pulled out a huge wooden casket from the earth. He then pried the casket open and threw the lid away. Inside, the rotten, disgusting remains of a woman lay.

Even so, Smaug was not fazed. He reached out and caressed the woman's face gently. A green wave of energy seeped out of his hand and into Liya's dead body. "Please...wake up for me...LIYA!"

SUUSH!

A bright green, emerald light coursed through the corpse and Liya opened her eyes. "Urgh...Smaug...my love...Is that you?" Liya got up, albeit shakily.

Smaug held her face and his hands and said, "Liya, it is I, Smaug! Your one true love! Liya! I will never ever leave you again!"

The two of them rose out together in a warm, loving embrace.

What touching scene. A tragic love story. A couple who could only be together forever as spectres, united in a love that would never deter even after the sea dries up, even after the sky goes dark.

After a long hug, Smaug let Liya go and turned towards Zhang Yang. "Adventurer. You have my gratitude! I, Smaug, shall forever be your friend!"

'Ding! You have two options to select: Option 1, reject Smaug's friendship and report all that had happened today to Count Didier. Option 1 will reward you with Level +2, and a Yellow-Gold tier equipment! Option 2, accept Smaug's friendship. All NPCs under Count Didier's sovereign will deem you as a Spectre Sympathizer!'

A sudden ring echoed in Zhang Yang ears.

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Smaug, you're a respectable man, or rather, a respectable spectre. I will gladly be your friend!"

'Ding! You have accepted Smaug's friendship!'

'Ding! You are now an attack target to all neutral NPCs in Didier Flatlands!'

Smaug laughed loudly. "You, my friend, are an interesting fellow!"

'Ding! You have gained a good relationship with Smaug!'

Again! A Relationship?! Why couldn't he give something more materialistic!

Zhang Yang sighed heavily and turned to Liya. "So...what happens now? What do you plan to do?"

Smaug held her hands and stared into the distance. "We will go to a faraway land where no one could reach us! I am not on the side of humans, nor am I on the side of spectres! From now on, I am me. I will be the one and only, forgotten one!"

Crack!

A bolt of lightning shot out from the sky. Smaug raised his sword to accept the lightning. The half-materialized crown turned fully solid. It settled on Smaug's head, giving him a royal, dignified aura! [Smaug, The King of the Forgotten Ones] (Celestial, Spectre)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

F*cking hell! It's him!

Zhang Yang finally recalled his name. He had been having a sense of familiarity ever since he first met Smaug! So he was the King of the Forgotten Ones!

Chapter 260: Thunderbolt Prison

'The Forgotten Ones' was one of spectre race's divisions and their leader was The King of the Forgotten One, the Celestial boss, which was independent of the seven Spectre Witch King!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, most of the players' level had just reached Level 200 and they did not get to defeat Celestial bosses yet! That was why Zhang Yang found Smaug's name familiar but could not recall any further information about him.

No wonder Smaug had earned a reputation as the closest man to the god of war during his lifetime. Even though he had turned into spectre after death, he could still become a Celestial boss. This was so awesome!

To gain a good relationship with a Celestial boss!

Relationships were something intangible but undoubtedly practical, perhaps someday it would play a huge role! It was definitely much more valuable than a Yellow-Gold item that would be rolled out over time!

Smaug reached out with his right hand, and countless rays of aqua green light gathered in his hand which shaped into a piece of crystal clear jade. Smaug handed the jade to Zhang Yang and said, "My friend, this is my gift to you! My aura is in this jade, as long as you wear this, no spectres will attack you!"

Zhang Yang was full of joy, quickly taking the jade and replied,

"Thank you!"

[Friendship Jade] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Equipment: Disguises you as spectre, which is enough to fool the majority of spectres. However, as long as you are wearing [Friendship Jade], you will also become the enemy of all living beings!

Use: Summon Smaug's phantom to fight for you. Lasts for 20 minutes. Cool down time: 24 hours.

Charge remaining: 3/3

Level requirement: 60

Bound.

Yes! Definitely a great fortune indeed!

Smaug was a Celestial boss, even though his phantom would be significantly weaker than himself, it would at least be of Ascended or Holy grade! Unfortunately, it had only three times charges. Otherwise, it would have been super awesome!

Besides, [Friendship Jade]'s equipment attribute was not bad

after all as it could help Zhang Yang disguised as spectre and entered Malevolent Tower to steal the [Book of the Damned]. Zhang Yang would then have high chances of re-activating the Main Story Quest, which involved The Crafting Materials of a Relic!

Zhang Yang had accepted this quest when he was Level 10 and this quest had been left in his Quest Board for almost half a year!

"Zhan Yu, take care of yourself!" Smaug hugged Liya's waist, and suddenly, a pair of skeletal wings opened up from Smaug's back, which he spread and soared into the sky like an ascending meteor which quickly disappeared in the sky.

Would this be considered as a reunion of a wedlock couple?

Zhang Yang took out a [Teleportation Scroll], and a ray of light flashed 10 seconds later, returning him to Thunderstorm Castle.

As time went by, there were more and more Level 50 players, Thunderstorm Castle was now bustling with life and many players started to set up shops, selling potions, health recovery cakes and ETC outside the castle, which helped players save up time and money traveling back to main city. Of course, their charges were not extremely high as the one-way teleportation fee was only one gold coin.

As more players achieved Level 50, Zhang Yang earnings from the teleportation portal increased. The number of players utilizing this teleportation portal in recent days had reached up to 7,000,000, equivalent to a daily net income of 6,000,000 gold coins, a huge and terrifying number!

Two days later, the gang had achieved Level 60 and they urged Zhang Yang to go for new dungeon, Thunderbolt Prison.

"We cannot go for it now!" Zhang Yang shrugged his shoulders while he spread both of his hands in resignation.

"Why?" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes. She had just equipped her Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon and was dying to go on a raid!

Zhang Yang explained, "Thunderbolt Prison is a special 10-man dungeon, Dream Technology uses a dungeon's design concept known as 'Competition' mechanism! The Thunderbolt Prison will only be activated if four teams are gathered. These four teams are then required to enter Thunderbolt Prison together compete with each other!"

"And how do we do that?"

Zhang Yang replied, "The topography of Thunderbolt Prison is similar to a cross street, four teams will enter from one end respectively, and rush towards the center! There will be a lot of minions along the way including three mini-bosses while the final boss is in the center. However, there is only one final boss so whichever team gets there first, gets dibs on the boss!"

"What if other teams attack suddenly when that particular team

"That won't happen. Because when that particular team fighting the final boss, a barrier will be set up around them, the players from the outside cannot enter and the players from the inside cannot get out. The barrier will be disappear only when the final boss is defeated or the team is wipe-out. On the other hand, we have only one chance to try to defeat the final boss, so if the team who gets there first happens to fail, the final boss will disappear and we all will have to wait for two days in accordance to the dungeon's reset!"

"Whoever thought up of all this is a sadist!"

"Well to make things worse, Thunderbolt Prison is located in Thunderbolt Mountains and it takes a few hours to get there from Thunderstorm Castle. Besides, we need another three teams to activate the dungeon! Just in case we get there without the forth team, wouldn't it be a whole waste of time?"

Zhang Yang smiled a little and said, "I think it won't be too difficult getting other teams! Thunderbolt Prison is a special dungeon and physically traveling there and all is ridiculous, so there is an NPC in the main city responsible for accepting 'Reservations' for dungeons like Thunderbolt Prison. As long as the team leaders send a Thunderbolt Prison entrance request to the NPC, they will be queued in the list corresponding to difficulty. Once four teams are gathered, the system will send messages to every team member. Five minutes later, NPC will activate a teleportation door which leads to Thunderbolt Prison directly!"

"Oh, that's not too bad then!"

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "I will register the party at the NPC first. The moment we get four teams, we will depart immediately!"

"En!"

Zhang Yang grouped up 10 players then registered at the NPC. However, they still did not receive any messages from the system throughout the entire day. Zhang Yang also understood that while his guild could easily provide 10 Level 60 players, other guilds might not match that capability!

On the second day, Zhang Yang grouped up 10 players again and booked a spot in the list, but still no results.

It was still the same on the third day.

But on the fourth day, eight o'clock sharp, finally there was a change in such situation!

'Ding! The warriors who are heading to Thunderbolt Prison have been gathered, please immediately return to your main cities, in five minutes time, Krampus will activate a teleportation door that directly teleports you to Thunderbolt Prison. Please make the best use of your time!'

After receiving this message, Zhang Yang and the rest of the nine

players in the team immediately used [Teleportation Scrolls]. Krampus was located just next to White Jade Castle's teleportation portal which was quite convenient for them.

Those who showed up was Snow Seeker and her female army, ten beautiful, enchanting ladies like a group of beautiful birds flocking together.

Zhang Yang smiled at Snow Seeker and said, "Looks like we are going to be competitors!"

The roguish Perfumed Water immediately said, "Zhan Yu, Lone Desert Smoke has already won a lot of dungeon First Clears, let us have this one!"

Fatty Han immediately raised his hand and said, "I'm willing to switch sides, to flee from darkness, into light and join Crimson Rage!"

Snow Seeker smiled elegantly and said, "It seems like we are accompanying Prince Reading himself!"

"Ha ha, guild master Snow Seeker, you are too mean. Obviously, your more than ready, you're just trying to throw us off!" Zhang Yang scanned through Snow Seeker's team, smiled and said, "It seems like you have some new blood, and I see a few new faces!"

Zhang Yang actually "recognized" the two new members in Snow Seeker's team. Strictly speaking, he in fact recalled their names.

Mellow Venom, Guardian. In Zhang Yang's previous life, she was ranked fourth in China's Top 10 Tanks and the pride of all female tanks! Her capabilities were absolutely undeniable, being able to stand toe-to-toe in a male-dominant field!

Violet Moonknight, in Zhang Yang's previous life, was a remarkable healer, a Sacred Knight. Unfortunately, healers did not have their own Top 10 ranking list, thus, Violet Moonknight was not as famous as Mellow Venom or Snow Seeker but she was skilled enough for Zhang Yang to remember her name.

With the Professional League Championship closing in, the superstars from Zhang Yang's previous life were appearing, one after another! It seems like his presence has not affected Crimson Rage's upcoming lineup.

Snow Seeker remained unfazed but gently smiled and replied, "Where there is competition, there is progress!"

"Who are the other two teams?" Zhang Yang was curious, for there was no sign of the other teams, meaning that they would only meet up when the dungeon commences.

Five minutes later, Krampus silently raised a magic staff to cast a magic spell.

10 seconds later, a teleportation door similar to a dungeon entrance appeared in front of everyone.

"Let's go in!"

Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker spoke together and both teams filed into the entrance.

'Ding! You have entered Thunderbolt Prison (Hardcore Mode)!'

After entering the dungeon, Zhang Yang and Snow Seeker's 10-man teams were immediately separated. On the top left corner of the players' Control interface, red, yellow, blue and green team names popped up. From the Control interface, each team could be expanded to view team's current location and team members' names.

Zhang Yang and his team was marked as the blue team while their current location was in the West side, first prison.

Snow Seeker and her team was marked as the red team while their current location was in the East side, first prison.

The other two teams were from Radiance and Imperial Sky respectively! Among them, Radiance's team was marked as yellow team, located in the South side, first prison, while Imperial Sky's team was marked as the green team and located in the North side, first prison. From the Control interface, it could be seen that the team leaders for both two teams were Sword of Light and One Sword Stroke respectively. Obviously they had dispatched the elites in their guilds!

Radiance was the top guild in Black Dragon City while Imperial Sky was the strongest guild in Violet Star City. These four competitive teams could be said to be the China's strongest dungeon teams!

At Zhang Yang's current location, there was a long corridor inside the prison and there were unlocked, empty prison cells on both sides of the corridor.

Thunderbolt Prison was located in the Thunderbolt Mountains, and according to legend, Thunderbolt Prison was built before the fall of the Human Empire. It imprisoned the most heinous criminals of the empire. Because of an earthquake, Thunderbolt Prison had sunk into the ground, taking along its prisoners and guards!

But today, another earthquake had brought the prison back up the surface! However, all its former occupants had also returned as spectres!

This was the backstory of dungeon, while the players' mission was to destroy all these vicious spectres before they escape Thunderbolt Prison!

Zhang Yang said, "Those who have auras, please, do not forget to activate them. Endless Starlight, guard the left. I'll guard the right, let's make the best use of our time to kill all the monsters! Do not forget, only the first team to reach gets the chance to fight the last boss, we are not here to work with the other teams!"

Endless Starlight came forward, and the two of them led the team along the corridor.

Zhang Yang's strategic arrangement of team members for this dungeon were: Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, Hundred Shots, Endless Starlight, Lost Dream and Fantasy Sweetheart. Two tanks, two healers and six attackers which was according to the standard configuration for 10-man team. However, with Zhang Yang's current capability, he could actually perform the tanking role for both tanks in this dungeon raid.

"GROOAN!"

10 steps in, and three monsters in prison overalls suddenly rushed out of the shadows, raising their skeletal fists to attack Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight who were walking at the forefront.

[Prisoner of Thunderbolt Prison] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 65

HP: 500,000

Defense: 350

Endless Starlight immediately used <Justice Bash> to pull one of them aside while Zhang Yang took on the other two. Everyone quickly attacked the two monsters that Zhang Yang pulled without hesitation. Endless Starlight stared at them mournfully and said, "Brothers and sisters, why didn't you guys take on mine?"

"Stupid Starlight, are you able to maintain aggro once I mess with them?" Wei Yan Er raised her Yellow-Gold axe.

Endless Starlight nodded earnestly and replied, "Give me a chance, sister!"

The HP of the elite monsters in Thunderbolt Prison was indeed high, but elite or not, the monsters could not withstand the strength of these players. Zhang Yang and the gang quickly disassembled the skeletons, leaving pieces of them on the ground.

The main force of Lone Desert Smoke had at least three full sets of Yellow-Gold equipment along with Yellow-Gold weapons. Wei Yan Er also had a Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon which was strong enough to swath through the entire dungeon with ease. So, these so-called elite monsters posed to challenge to them.

But Zhang Yang said, "My fellow comrades, we must keep our speed up! The female army of Crimson Rage is really well-equipped as well. They can handle the dungeon with ease, they can't be far behind us!"

This was because Crimson Rage also knew the spawn points of a

few Yellow-Gold open world bosses, thus, both Lone Desert Smoke and Crimson Rage had an agreement: Demonic Treant King belonged to Lone Desert Smoke, Lord of Flames Arcel belonged to Crimson Rage while Winter's Wind Bear King was on a first come first serve basis!

This month alone, both guilds had defeated the three open world bosses a total of six times. Thus, both guilds should definitely have a wealth of Yellow-Gold set equipment! Therefore, Zhang Yang did not dare assume that they had more Yellow-Gold set equipment than Crimson Rage.

Hence, Zhang Yang and the gang must remain earthbound and not underestimate the enemy!

As they continued to move down the corridor, they cleared the monsters on the current floor before they followed the stairs down to the second floor and the first floor.

The prison cells of the ground floor had been completely destroyed, and in the center position, a huge spectre stood there. The left half of the body had almost rotten away completely and exposed its bones, while the right half of the body remained intact which made it seem lopsided and odd to look at.

["Left-handed" Phil] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 66

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 700

Note: Boss of the prisoners in the first prison.

Prince Reading - term for wasted potential, or someone who has hidden talent that remains mostly unused. Fatty Han had uncharacteristically come up with a line there and then that was most ingenuous, formed by a play of words that rhymed rather well together.

Chapter 261: The Competition Between Strong Guilds

"Let's talk about tactics while fighting, here we go!" Zhang Yang had already taken out his axe and shield and rushed towards "Lefthanded" Phil.

The battle was initiated.

A black aura immediately appeared beneath "Left-handed" Phil's feet. It reached out with its right hand which was completely skeletal and tried to grab Zhang Yang's face.

'Ding! "Left-handed" Phil initiated <Frost Aura>. Causes 1,000 Frost damage to all targets within a 30-meter radius range every 2 seconds!'

'-3,982!'

'Ding! You are affected by Fire Receptive Effect, when you are receive Fire attack, damage increased by 200%, lasts for 1 minute!'

"Left-handed" Phil slapped Zhang Yang across his face, and a damage text immediately floated above his head, while a debuff icon popped up in his HUD.

'-1,000!'

Two seconds later, except for Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, the rest of the people received the first tick of damage from <Frost Aura>.

"Endless Starlight, this boss constantly switches between two states, as of now, it is in its frost state. It may seem to be regular physical attacks, but it also causes Frost damage to the target and the Fire Receptive Effect! After a period of time, this boss will switch to its fire state where its physical attack will cause Fire damage and the Frost Receptive Effect! So, two tanks are required for this boss, one will need to tank the frost state and the other one will need to tank the fire state!

Zhang Yang shrugged off another blow from the boss and resumed his explanation, "This boss can be provoked! When you see the aura beneath his feet turn from black to white, use <Provoke> to take over!"

"Roger!" Endless Starlight nodded in understanding.

As a mini-boss, the tricky part of "Left-handed" Phil was its two states. As long as the players work against that aspect of it, the boss was more or less a pushover for the averagely equipped player.

Everyone performed ferocious slashes, and five minutes later, "Left-handed" Phil cried in pain and fell defeated, popping its battle loots all over the floor.

They quickly distributed the battle loot, ran through a dark passage and entered another prison building.

'Ding! Blue team has entered the West side second prison!'

Just as they just stepped in, system notification immediately rang in everyone ears.

The other three teams were startled.

They were not exactly close to Zhang Yang's team in terms of progress. Up to the first mini-boss, "Left-handed" Phil, they had kept up with their pace. However, because of the tactical issue and lack of knowledge on the boss, they would be wiped out once before they figure out out to defeat the boss.

"Lone Desert Smoke is strong as expected!" Mellow Venom gently whispered.

"Sisters, please fight harder, we are not here accompany Prince Reading! Lone Desert Smoke has already claimed a lot of First Clears, we must steal one from them!" Snow Seeker tried to raise the party's morale with her clear and harmonious voice.

"Okay, for the sake of sister Snow, I'm going to fight really hard!" Perfumed Water screamed.

"Screw you, sister Snow is mine!"

The bunch of crazy women started to go berserk.

Zhang Yang's team continued moving forward, where they defeated the minions easily along the way. About six minutes later, system notification rang as Imperial Sky had entered the North side's second prison. Less than 30 seconds later, the system notification rang twice as Crimson Rage and Radiance cleared their obstacles.

Zhang Yang smiled to himself as he had overestimated the difficulty of the first mini-boss, "Left-handed" Phil. With the capability of Crimson Rage and the other strong guilds, this mini-boss had not caused much trouble for them! When Zhang Yang thought about it, it was absolutely logic, although "Left-handed" Phil's damage increases by 200% due to his debuffs, it was not too difficult for the current top tanks to acquire over 15,000 HP, thus, they could use <Shield Wall> and withstand the boss with sheer force!

As long as they were not stupid, they would have surely used their off-tank to <Provoke> the "Left-handed" Phil. If that was the case, they would definitely have found the tactics to defeat "Left-handed" Phil with ease!

Because of the competition mechanism, even the leading team dared not relax or let their guard down, because the slightest misstep would cost them their lead! Therefore, Wei Yan Er and the rest silently hacked and sliced their enemies with extreme prejudice as they kept on urging Zhang Yang to speed up.

In a short time, Zhang Yang's team found themselves standing in front of the second mini-boss.

["Three-Legged" Witt] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 67

HP: 6,000,000

Defense: 700

Note: Leader of the prisoners in second prison.

"Three legged?" Fatty Han exclaimed incredulously. "Even I won't dare claim that I'm three legged even if my third leg is 22 centimeters!"

"Fatty bro, I'm pretty sure you'll only be 22 centimeters when we square it!?" Endless Starlight who had grown pretty close to Fatty Han, immediately fired at him.

"Buzz off, little brat, you only have a matchstick to speak of. Even you cube your 'Matchstick' it'll never match up to my square-rooted leg!"

Lost Dream was an outgoing man, even though he was relatively new in the guild, he was already able to mix around with Fatty Han and the rest. He laughed and said, "It can't be helped! My 'stuff' is extraordinary talent. Every time I go to the washroom, it leaves a trail on the ground, people would think someone just mopped the floor!"

"You three bastards, if you guys dare to discuss about such topics in front of Yan Er again, I will snip all of it off!" Han Ying Xue showed her queen's power, one of her hands was placed on her waist while the other was pointing menacingly at their crotches in turn.

The three guys quickly clamped their legs together.

"Beware, this boss will swing its third leg about occasionally and cause an AoE damage, so those who get smacked must immediately withdraw or you'll receive the subsequent damage!" Zhang Yang tried to keep everything short and simple. He yelled, "Let's fight!"

Battle was initiated.

Zhang Yang's team members were not your run-of-the-mill elite players. They would commit the simplest of instructions to memory and carry out their battle with great efficiency. Six minutes later, the boss fell to the ground, lifeless.

'Ding! Blue team has entered the West side third prison!'

System notification rang once again in everyone's ears.

"Damn, that bunch is really quick!"

One Sword Stroke had a frown on his face. He said, "Everyone, drink the potions, do not be afraid to splurge, all expenses will be reimbursed by Imperial Sky! As long as we win the First Clear, everyone will be rewarded with 500,000 in cash!"

At the mention of money, their morale shot up, and Imperial Sky pushed themselves to the limit. In only four minutes, they also entered the third prison.

Crimson Rage and Radiance also worked hard, with a small gap of 30 seconds, both teams also entered the third prison!

Now, it was the time to see which team would defeat the third mini-boss first! This was crucial, as only one team would get to fight the final boss. There were no runner-ups, only losers!

The minions were annoying. They hid in the shadows, snuck around like thieves, and had AoE normal attacks. However, they were merely created by the <u>Atlman</u>. Indeed, the minions were cleverly designed to be troublesome, to ensure that time was wasted on them more than anything else, but the first "customers" they picked up were the four strongest dungeon teams of China. The minions fell flat on their faces before they could even hinder their quarry.

20 minutes later, Zhang Yang's team was the first to reach in front the third boss.

["Musician" <u>Beeshoven</u>] (Gray-Silver, Spectre)

Level: 68

HP: 7,000,000

Defense: 700

Note: Leader of prisoners in third prison.

Beeshoven with a name that was not unlike a certain musician was simply charming to look at in a Tim Burton way. It's movements were otherworldly and graceful, its fingers light and deft, and it was dressed in dark tuxedo. It held a violin in its left hand and it was drew a bow along the violin's strings with its right hand which produced beautiful music. If it was not for the fact that Beeshoven himself was a skeleton, it would definitely have the style of an artist.

A circle 20 meters away from Beeshoven, there were seven colorful small circles, some were colored in red and some were colored in green.

However, there was a milky-colored opaque barrier a hundred meters behind Beeshoven. They could not see past it, but they believed that this barrier would automatically break once Beeshoven is killed, and that the final boss awaited behind this barrier! "After defeating this boss, then we can fight the final boss, right?" everyone was a little excited although fighting the final boss did not mean they would get the First Clear. Because of the special system of this dungeon, it also meant that the other three teams would not have the chance to challenge the final boss.

Zhang Yang nodded and replied, "That's right! However, on the condition that we are the first one to defeat this boss!"

Zhang Yang looked at everyone and continued, "Because of this dungeon's pain-in-the-ass system, the third mini-boss only slightly easier than the final boss, which means that those if we can defeat the third mini-boss, we can easily defeat the final boss as well!"

"Little Yang, don't scare me on purpose!" Fatty Han patted his chest and pretended to faint.

"And...exactly how difficult is this boss?" everyone gazed at Zhang Yang, the "beta version" player.

"It won't kill us as long as we work as a team!" Zhang Yang let out of a sigh in his heart, some of dungeons only required powerful teammates, while some dungeons required good cooperation. Undoubtedly, this dungeon which required both, was really annoying!

"There are seven circles on the floor; they represent the seven vocal notes in sheet music. The red color is Do, yellow is Re, blue is Mi, green is Fa, purple is So, orange is La and white is Ti. When the

battle is initiated, Beeshoven will 'play a song'. Yeap, play a song. That's its ultimate skill. When playing the song, the colored circles on the floor will flash in line with the song. When the song is finished, we must strictly follow the order and step into the circles in the right order and 'replay' the song!"

Zhang Yang looked at everyone and said, "If we 'play' the song correctly, then the battle continues, otherwise, Beeshoven will turn into his rage mode. At that time brothers and sisters, all of us will rest in peace!"

"Isn't this like the dancing machine you see in arcades? I'm a professional at those!" Han Ying Xue was fired up.

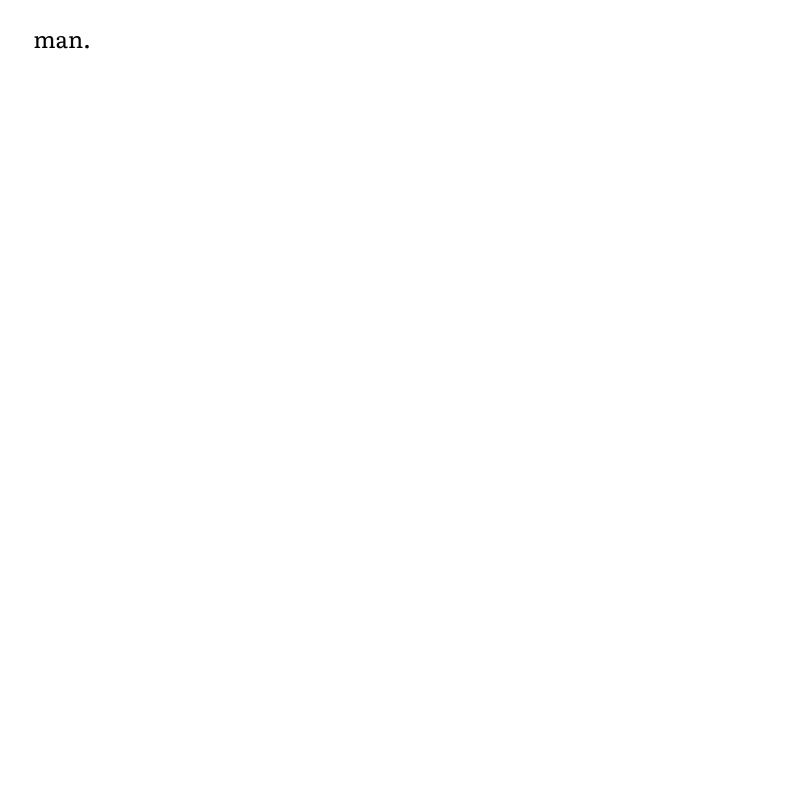
"Me too!" Wei Yan Er immediately popped up and spoke.

Daffodil Daydream also raised her hand and said, "I'm also good at playing this!"

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "That's good. But this 'dancing machine' is a bit too big. Each time after a vocal note is played; we must repeat the note within 1 second. Otherwise, it will be considered as fail. Thus, each person would be responsible for a vocal note scale. After a person has played the vocal note scale, he or she must leave the circle immediately to allow the corresponding second person to quickly fill in their own circle!"

Beeshoven directly translates from贝少芬, which is different from Beethoven (贝多芬).

Atlman directly translates from 奥特曼. In German, Altman is a Jewish surname and the meaning of the name Altman is: Wise



Chapter 262: Dancing Machine

"This is fun!" Wei Yan Er clapped her hands and said, "I'm responsible for Do!"

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "It actually tests the players' memory! It will also turn into Rage mode if we don't defeat it within 8 minutes!"

"We need to memorize the order of stepping into the circle we are responsible for, at the same time, we need to attack the boss at our best effort! It's going to get quite messy!"

Zhang Yang assigned the gang, "Currently, little brat and ice cube are the strongest attackers, so both of them will attack throughout the entire battle and will not participate in 'playing the song'. I will tank Beeshoven and the remaining seven will responsible for a vocal note scale each person!"

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Also do not expect to pass this at once! We have to start with 'playing the song' until we are able to cooperate without any mistakes before we can really unleash our DPS! Don't bother drinking potions, we're going to test it out first!"

Zhang Yang took out his axe, raised his shield and ran towards Beeshoven.

"Vulgar hillbilly, you actually dare to disturb an artist in the midst of composing a masterpiece, such insolence must be punished!" "Musician" Beeshoven snarled angrily, as it grabbed hold of the violin's strings in its hand and lashed them out at Zhang Yang like a whip.

Battle was initiated. Except for Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu and Wei Yan Er who were slashing furiously at Beeshoven, the rest of the party had stepped behind the vocal note scale circles. They paid no attention to Beeshoven, only keeping their ears open and their eyes on the circles, learning how to 'play the song' smoothly without any mistakes.

30 seconds later.

"You are boors, tremble before my "Stringer Requiem"!" Beeshoven growled loudly, ignoring Zhang Yang and started playing its violin.

The seven vocal note scales on the floor immediately flashed according to the melody of the music. The colorful lights blinked repeated like a nightclub.

Beeshoven 'played the song' for 15 seconds in total, and once again it wielded its violin's strings and attacked Zhang Yang.

Han Ying Xue and the rest immediately followed the order of the notes, hopping in and out of their circles. Those players who had some understanding of music certainly had the advantage, but the others had their own methods of playing along. At worst, they just numbered the circles from one to seven and repeated the sequence by numbers, such as "371625263" for instance.

15 seconds later, the teammates successfully 'played the song'. The battle resumed without the boss raging.

Another 15 seconds later, Beeshoven stopped attacking once again and played the second "Stringer Requiem", but this time, it was "Part II" which was a completely different melody!

This was purely a memory test and it was not too difficult for the team members. All of them successfully 'played the song' once again and resolved Beeshoven's ulti.

They repeated this back and forth, and eight minutes rapidly passed.

"I've had enough all of you idiots, go to hell!" Beeshoven roared ferociously. Its body instantly became bigger as it flashed red.

'Ding! "Musician" Beeshoven has entered rage mode!'

Bang!

A beam of black light radiated from underneath of Beeshoven's feet, '-10,000' damage texts appeared on top of everyone heads, right after a second later, another round of '-10,000' damage texts pooped up once again. Other than the two tanks, the others were killed instantly!

Zhang Yang quickly used {Shadow of the Void}.

"Boss, not this again! You should be following us, in sickness and in health!" Endless Starlight rasped, as he took a few more hits and was sent tumbling to the ground, his heavy armor clanging.

The battle ended, and "Musician" Beeshoven went back to its original position, elegantly played its violin.

"33%!" Zhang Yang spoke in the party channel, "Beeshoven was still left 33% HP, we were still far away from killing it!"

However, it was not a big deal. The first round was to let the team members practice with their 'song playing'. The ones who were preoccupied with the circles could actually join in on the attack, as long as they ran back to the circles on time.

Everyone started to run back after resurrecting.

A benefit of this dungeon was that once they released their corpses, they would automatically be resurrected at the entrance of dungeon. They only had to run from there instead of having to retrieve their corpses. When everyone had restored their conditions, the battle started once again.

Eight minutes later, Zhang Yang's team was annihilated by Beeshoven once again. But this time, Beeshoven's HP was reduced to 21% which was an improvement.

All of them ran back after resurrecting. Similarly, they were annihilated again after eight minutes while Beeshoven's HP was reduced to 12%!

• • •

"Boss, it seems like Lone Desert Smoke also trapped at this stage!" Ghostly Leaf said to Sword of Light.

Sword of Light, Radiance's guild master, male Dwarf, Guardian, Level 60. In Zhang Yang's previous life, Sword of Light was also one of the China's Top 10 Tanks, ranked third! There was no argument that both Guardians and Defenders were tanks, but eventually those who made it in the top 10 tank list were the Guardians, except for Hundred Foot Icicle who was ranked ninth as a Defender!

Sword of Light nodded and said, "That's right. They had a five to six minute lead earlier on, and we've already been wiped out by the third mini-boss, they've yet to get past it either! The other two teams should be in the same situation. It seems like the real competition actually started here?!"

"We must surpass them!"

Radiance's 10-man team yelled loudly!

• • •

"Annihilated again... 34%!" One Sword Stroke frowned, "This boss is kind of special, eight minutes is not enough to defeat this boss. We are distracted by memorizing the 'sheet music', all this running back and forth is really throwing us off our game!"

"Guild master, I'm sure the other teams have the same problem?" Fire Fountain smiled.

"That's right. There's no point rushing earlier on. This boss would actually determine it all!" Blooming Ichor nodded in acknowledgment.

One Sword Stroke expressed renewed hope, "Let's us prove to Lone Desert Smoke that they are not the strongest guild in China server! The strongest title belongs to us, Imperial Sky!"

"ROOOAR!"

• • •

"Sister Snow, this dancing machine boss is most advantageous to us ladies. We already managed to reduce Beeshoven's HP to 20%, we'll get familiar to it soon!" Flirtatious Lady clenched her fist, nodding vigorously.

"That's right, that's right. Zhan Yu has already taken away so many First Clears, this time should be our turn!"

"Sisters, if we are the first to defeat the bosses, I will treat

everyone to a seven-day trip to Thailand!"

"Little Pearl, are you kidding?"

"My words are more genuine than any pearl you can find in the ocean!"

"Wow, sisters, all of you heard that right? In the name of vacations, let's fight!"

"Let's fight!"

• • •

Lone Desert Smoke's team had already managed to reduce Beeshoven's HP to 7% on the forth attempt!

All of them sat on the floor and ate health recovery cakes to restore their conditions. Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Everyone is doing well! This time, we must defeat this boss! Guys, drink all the potions and activate all the long cool down skills!"

Everything was ready, all sorts of aura were activated, Zhang Yang swung his axe and said, "Let's start!"

Another round of the battle was initiated.

Seven minutes later, Beeshoven left only 19% HP. The attackers had some sort of skill like {Killing Cleave}; all of them had activated this kind of skill.

Although {Killing Cleave} did not utilize much Rage, it caused a shortage of rage which prevented use of other skills that had already cooled down completely. As long as {Blood Rage} cools down however, {Killing Cleave} could always be activated.

For Guardians, as they often receive the brunt of the attacks, such as this battle with Beeshoven, they would not experience such a thing as insufficient Rage!

'-36,948!'

After Wei Yan Er activated {Indiscriminate}, she drank a bottle of Power Potion, and with her full bar or Rage, her {Killing Cleave} caused terrifying damage!

"Ha ha ha, noob tank, did you see that? My {Killing Cleave} caused almost 40,000 damage at once, I'll kill you easily! Sigh, you are really noob, you can't even withstand an attack from me!" little brat laughed smugly.

18%, 17%, 16%... Beeshoven's HP dropped continuously!

Eight minutes later, Beeshoven's HP remained only 4%!

"Alright guys, get over here, leave those circles. I will use

{Vanguard's Aggression}!" Zhang Yang shouted loudly, throwing the {Vanguard's Aggression} protective barrier on top of everyone heads, while at the same time, also activating {Shield Wall}!

'-1,000!'

'-3,006!'

'-1,000' damage texts floated above everyone heads while Zhang Yang's HP kept on reducing by 3,000!

Beeshoven's rage mode was really powerful, although everyone had 90% immunity, they still received 1,000 Darkness damage every second which was really terrifying!

"Snow b*tch, Fantasy Sweetheart, heal the rest of the people, leave me be!" Zhang Yang said loudly, "Attack Beeshoven with your full force!"

Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart cast {Healing Shower}, {Mending Prayers} and the other AoE healing magic to maintain everyone's HP!

10 seconds later, {Vanguard's Aggression}'s protection barrier ended and Beeshoven's HP remained at 1.5%!

{Berserker's Heal} instantly recovered the HP to full!

'{Rearm}!'

{Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier and {Shield Wall} activated once again!

70,000! 40,000! 10,000! 5,000!

"No, no! I will be the greatest musician in history, my name has not yet been known across the continent yet. I cannot die yet!" Beeshoven growled angrily, fell defeated and dropped its battle loot all over the floor.

"Hu! Finally we defeat Beeshoven!"

Everyone sat down, exhausted.

Zhang Yang thought in his heart, if not for this dungeon's competitive nature, they could have taken their time, practicing like how they did with Master Waller in Shadowmoon Castle, doing it over and over again for several days before they defeated the boss.

However, under the right circumstances, true human potential can be unleashed. Out of fear of being overtaken by the other teams, his members had actually unleashed 200% or even 300% of their capabilities and they had defeated Beeshoven after only five tries!

Seems like I'll have to keep the pressure up!

Zhang Yang smiled evilly, sending a shiver down their spines.		

Chapter 263: Childhood Idols

Right after 'Musician' Beeshoven was slaughtered, the white, opaque barrier right behind him also collapsed, and a vast square was presented right before their eyes.

There was a total of four entrances, but the other three entrances were still blocked by barriers. So, Zhang Yang and the gang could not enter the territories of the other parties to snatch-kill their bosses.

Right in the middle of the square stood a beautiful woman with an extremely graceful, slim body, a waist that begged for men to grab hold of, and a shapely butt, with a pair of breasts that had extremely pronounced tips, with a full head of blonde hair that came together with sex appeal that gushed out all around her. She was literally a standard 'femme fatale', judging from her weapons. She held a a saw in her right hand, and her left arm stopped resembling human altogether at the wrist, instead ending in a long, spiraling tentacle that dangled straight down to her heel!

[Warden Mariya] (Gray-Silver Leader, Undead)

Level: 69

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 700

Cautious: Mariya was the most brutal warden in the history of Thunderbolt Prison, known for hacking the inmates into pieces with her saw, as she bathed in their blood, enjoying the pleasure of their screams.

"What the f*ck, female sadist!" Even a prurience person like Fatty Han would only dare to show his admiration towards her from a far distance, fearing that saw that dangled dangerously from her hand, knowing that she would very well hack him to pieces with it, especially the organs that mattered the most!

"Haha, Fatty Han, I can't believe you would turn away from such a lady!" Zhang Yang could not hold himself from laughing.

"Hey hey, it's true I'll never turn anything down, hot or cold, but this, this is obviously an outer space organism!" Fatty Han shook his head continuously.

"So how do we fight this battle?"

"It's going to be easier than boss number three!" Zhang Yang nodded and said, "The boss will summon a jailer out every once in a while. So Endless Starlight will kite the jailers who pop out, and everyone should just swarm up and kill it. As long as not more than two jailers appear at the same time, there shouldn't be any problem!"

"Alright! Let's go in together, when the battle begins, the barrier behind us will reactivate, locking out anyone who's outside till the battle is over!"

The gang walked straight in to the interior square, with Zhang Yang leading the gang, charging swiftly towards the boss.

"Ara, ara, another batch of new toys!" Warden Meriya moaned out loud with excitement, waving the saw in her right hand while lashing out with her long tentacle, her attention on Zhang Yang.

'Ding! The Blue Team has entered the Central Square!'

The moment they triggered the boss, the voice message alert tone rang in the ears of all 40 players in the four parties.

The other three parties all lost focus at the same instance. Those who were still playing on the 'Dancing Machine' messed up their rhythms, immediately triggering the explosion of the boss which wiped out the entire party!

"They've beaten us to it again!"

"Sigh, the First Clear of the dungeon is going away again!"

Everyone was groaning and sighing.

The guildmasters of the other three guilds all said, "Boss number three is already so difficult to kill, the final boss must be even harder! Even Lone Desert Smoke had been annihilated a couple of times at the third boss, so there is no way they can clear the last boss in just one attempt! Also, there is only one attempt for the final boss, once the party fails to kill the boss, the boss will disappear! So, even if we cannot see the final boss, Zhan Yu and his gang may not be able to get the First Clear title as well!"

"Do it nice and easy now, let's familiarize ourselves with boss number three. When the dungeon is refreshed, we'll be the first to reach the final boss!"

• •

Zhang Yang had a solid grip of the boss' aggro, while the gang unleashed their full power, swiftly reducing the health points of the boss with their assault.

30 seconds later.

"Guards! Guards! Quickly, help me destroy these disobedient toys!" Warden Meriya started shouting for help!

'Ding! Warden Meriya has summoned Jailer!'

Pak! Pak!

Two large skeletal hands broke out from the ground, followed by a large Skeleton soldier breaking out from the ground, holding a large mace in its hands. [Jailer of Thunderbolt Prison] (Elite, Summon)

Level: 65

HP: 500,000

Defense: 350

The moment this Skeleton Solider appeared, a stream of dark light radiated from beneath its legs, and the gang was instantly inflicted with the damage of '-1,000', the numerical values flashing right above their heads.

'Ding! You have been affected by the effect of the {Death Corruption Aura}', experiencing 1000 dark shadow damage once every 2 seconds!'

Endless Starlight immediately stepped forward and engaged, activating {Provoke} to grab the monster's attention, swiftly kiting the monster away.

The gang ran after him and swarmed around the Jailer, dealing a massive, humiliating beatdown.

"Guys, why do you think that the weapon of the Jailer is a mace?"

Fatty Han suddenly smiled with his wretched face.

Endless Starlight was indeed his best buddy, instantly his face turned pale and answered, "Is it because 'the petals of the chrysanthemum tore through everything as he tugged it out'?"

"What the f*ck, you two wretched beings, stop talking about assh*les and enemas and whatever random sh*t whenever you open your mouths, in front of so many pretty ladies! You guys are just too much!" Lost Dream spoke up furiously.

"It's not just two, it's three wretched men!" other than Sun Xin Yu, the ladies were denouncing the men in unison!

"Oh yea, sister, what 'chrysanthemum' are they talking about, to have petals that can tear through stuff?" Wei Yan Er turned her head around, with her face filled with the desire to seek for knowledge.

Under the extreme fire power form the gang, the Jailer was left in a heap of useless bones after merely 30 seconds, returning back to the ground where it came from.

Every minute, the boss would summon a Jailer once. If the combined fire power of the party is not powerful enough, the players would definitely be spending most of their time dealing with those Jailers, draining their energy and potions, eventually wearing themselves out! That was the intended design of the boss, and it would have definitely been a lot of trouble for the regular player! However, with the equipment of this party, all the players

had to do were to attack the boss, then the monster, and then the boss again, and then the monster again. It was a matter of time before the boss fell.

About ten minutes later, Warden Mariya agonizingly screamed and collapsed onto the ground, dropping a large pile of loot!

The gang was at ease. None of them were out of breath. This boss was much easier than the previous one. Since victory was already a certainty, there was nothing to be excited about.

"Witchy Snow, are you sure you don't want to consider changing the advertising phrase of your company?" As he was staring at the key-in window after the First Clear achievement, the face of Zhang Yang began to twitch again.

"No!" Han Ying Xue shook her head with determination.

"Little girl?" Zhang Yang turned his sight toward Wei Yan Er.

"No! Not one bit!" Wei Yan Er was also shaking her head without any pause.

Zhang Yang sighed with resignation, who told him to sign a contract with Silky Soft Holdings in the first place?!

'Server Announcement: Silky Soft Bra, giving you the most personal care! Lone Desert Smoke has succeeded in acquiring the Thunderbolt Prison (Hardcore Mode)First Clear Title, their great deeds will be published on the list of the Hardcore Mode First Clear title (China Region). Please cheer for them!'

"Hahaha!" the heartless laddies were beginning to laugh out loudly.

After the distribution of the equipment, they tore off their respective teleportation scrolls and returned to Thunderstorm Castle, and then went through the portal to White Jade Castle. It might have cost them a bit of gold, but... time is gold!

After securing the First Clear title of the dungeon on hand, Zhang Yang had lost his interest in the Thunderbolt Prison. After the dungeon got refreshed, he would only let Endless Starlight lead the party, giving the opportunity for his fellow members of the guild to upgrade their equipment and prepare themselves Soaring Swords.

Time truly flew, and it was already the first day of December, the Soaring Swords competition! The atmosphere was thick in excitement, with the players rearing for action!

Since 12 o'clock last night, the convention had stopped accepting applicants, and after a night of statistical analysis, each party was given a number of their own. White Jade Castle had a total of more than 240,000 parties enrolled in the competition. Each party needed to beat 16 other parties consecutively in order to secure themselves one of the four qualifying places in the event.

For convenience sake, the competition was held during night

time. In the first round, some lucky parties proceeded straight into the next round without any engagement as their opponents did not show up. The first six rounds will be adopting the single knockout system that base on single outcome, while the seventh round would adopt the 'Two out of three wins Elimination system'.

Everyone was leveling up on their own in the day, and when the clock struck seven at night, everyone hurried back to the main city, waiting for the competition to begin!

As the competition had rules, only players who were in the main city could teleport straight to the Simulated Arena to take part in the competition.

Players get to enter any simulated arena to spectate the competition. However, there were way too many matches in the first round, it would be impossible to follow all of them!

Zhang Yang's small party of five men had waited until seven forty before they could hear the system notification that came to them, 'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party, your match will begin in 5 minutes time, now you and your party members shall be teleported into the arena!'

Shoof! A blur passed over their visions for a moment, in the next second, they already found themselves in the vast arena where the competition was held. However, there was an invisible air wall right in front of them, and they could only see that, about a hundred meters from the opposite side from them, their opposing party of five members had spawned at that spot at the same time. There was a blue flag that stood out of the back of every single

member in Zhang Yang's party, while the members of the opposition party were equipped with red flags. As these flags were actually just projections of light, they would not affect the movement of the players, nor would they block attacks.

'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS Childhood Idols party is about to begin in 5 minutes, please make ready!'

Although they could not go through the invisible air wall, that did not interrupt them from observing their opponents. It would be useless even if players try to hide their personal information, as the basic information of each member of the party of five were visible in the opponent's information page.

Madoka Ozawa, Male Beastman, Berserker, Level 52, HP 5,220.

Rei Saijo, Male Elf, Sniper, Level 54, HP 5,310.

Anri Okita, Male Elf, Bandit, Level 53, HP 5,610.

Sora Aoi, Male Dwarf, Holy Knight, Level 52, HP 5,280.

Kaede Matsushima, Male Human, Cryomancer, Level 53, HP 5,150.

"Why do they name themselves after names of women when they are all in fact males? And those Japanese names too?" Wei Yan Er blinked her large eyes, turned to Zhang Yang with a confused look.

Zhang Yang replied in a hush, "Take a good look at those names... and the name of their party? Childhood Idols, it's obvious that these names represent the women that enriched their lives with meaning!"

"Oh!" Wei Yan Er had caught only a hazy, misguided notion.

"These players are only equipped with Copper-Green equipment. Little girl, you go on ahead alone and handle them!" Zhang Yang told Wei Yan Er.

"Yes! Yes!" the little girl immediately felt excited, pulling out her axe with a murderous glint in her eyes. "Unfortunately, this location does not allow us to summon or use [Pet Mounts], otherwise, if me and my Little Petal worked as one, we can kill them all within 10 seconds!" she twitched her mouth.

4 minutes... 2 minutes... 50 seconds...

10, 9, 8... 3, 2, 1!

'Ding! Let the match begin!'

Wei Yan Er let out a shrill warcry, and she charged out into the arena carrying her axe without hesitation, like a little dangerous fuzzball of a Berserker.

When the opposition saw that the party of Zhang Yang had only sent out one player to engage in battle, they were furious!

"Sh*t! To look down on people to this point, this is just too much!"

"So Lone Desert Smoke acts so arrogantly?"

"Haha! Arrogance is good, we can take the opportunity to take them down one by one! Brothers, we can become famous after one match by taking down the core party of the Lone Desert Smoke!"

"That's right, kill them and show no mercy!"

Wei Yan Er snorted and said, "Cut the crap, just come at me already!"

{Concussion Shot}!

Rei Saijo immediately shot a Status Effect Skill, reducing the movement speed of Wei Yan Er. Afterwards, he began his assault together with Kaede Matsushima, while Madoka Ozawa and Anri Okita charged in.

{Charge}!

{Charge}!

Both Madoka Ozawa and Wei Yan Er used {Charge}, clashing into each other.

```
'-803!'
'-1,402!'
```

'-2,103!'

Rei Saijo and Kaede Matsushima had collided into her! The attack of the hunter was still manageable as the 200 defense of Wei Yan Er was not there for nothing. However, she had no way to protect herself from the assault of the Cryomancer, therefore, she could only forcefully take in all the inflicted damage!

But there is still a silver lining over the cloud when a warrior class character like Drizzler takes damage. The rage gauge of Wei Yan Er had been filled up to 100 points in just an instant!

In one second, Wei Yan Er and Madoka Ozawa recovered from their stuns and turned around at the same time, while Anri Okita had weaved through, ready to stab her in the back!

```
{Tornado Cleave}!

'-7,684!'
```

'-7,329!'

Wei Yan Er swung her axe like swinging a board, Madoka Ozawa was instantly killed, while Anri Okita was smacked out of his stealth state before he could even do anything!

"Holy... what is this damage, this can't be real!"

"Quickly, scatter, this little girl hits like a piledriver!"

Wei Yan Er pursued Kaede Matsushima. As spellcasters basically had to act as stationary turrets to cast their spells, all she had to do was to force her opponent to flee while swinging her axe away. Kaede Matsushima only offered his back to her freely!

If they were more competent players, all Kaede Matsushima had to do was to kite Wei Yan Er that little girl around while Rei Saijo could in turn, attack Wei Yan Er's back to his heart's content. Unfortunately, they were all but competent. They were just a bunch of casual players who probably drew inspiration from their childhood idols every single day. These 'Childhood Idols' were obviously casual players!

Kaede Matsushima suddenly stood still and began to cast his spells while facing Wei Yan Er. He had decided to go out with a bang, dealing as much damage as he can on Wei Yan Er!

'-812!'

'-1397![']

'-1402!'

Wei Yan Er took another volley of spells, but unfortunately, this little girl was currently equipped with a full set of Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment. Her current health points had reached 16,800, and she had not yet even lost half of her hitpoints!

{Ice Ring}!

Kaede Matsushima was not an idiot either, immediately he froze Wei yan Er to the ground, and started to gain further distance.

[Ice Ring]: Freeze all targets within the radius of 10 meters from the caster, targets in frozen state cannot move, the effect lasts for 8 seconds. However, the durability of the frost will be reduced if the target is attacked, shortening the duration of the Freeze. Cool down: 30 seconds.

{Warrior's Will}!

With her front leg frozen, she kicked at it with her other leg instinctively, breaking the ice. This ingrained reaction was probably developed after multiple engagements against Sun Xin Yu and Daffodil Daydream!

'-14,400!' {Destructive Smash}, critical attack!

Kaede Matsushima was also instantly killed!

Rei Saijo and Sora Aoi were both left with their mouths opened wide, that was just too much to bear! 14,000+ damage was an overkill of an overkill!

Wei Yan Er turned around and continued to pursue Rei Sajio.

Rei Sajio was so terrified that he turned around and started to run!

Although the attacks of Hunter did not require any casting progress, the player was required to stand still like a turret, similar to spellcasters. After attacking, they would be locked briefly in an animation before they could run again, thus, he would only be able to attack two or three times before Wei Yan Er catches up to him! Therefore, he did not even dare to attack before his speed-reduction skill was cooled down!

Under the current circumstances, they had given up defeating Zhang Yang's party, their current goal was to at least take out Wei Yan Er and make things look slightly better for themselves.

However, even though the arena is vast, it did not mean that there was no end to it. After running for awhile, Rei Saijo turned in front to realize that he was running into a wall!

He quickly turned around, but the pursuant could easily intercept his new path. The little girl was gaining ground every

passing moment!

And finally, his {Concussion Shot} had finally cooled down completely! Immediately, he stopped and turned around, giving Wei Yan Er a {Concussion Shot}!

4 seconds of movement reduction.

Rei Saijo backpedaled while shooting at Wei Yan Er, and the health point of this little girl began drop from 11,000 to 7,000 over time!

{Charge}!

The cool down for Wei Yan Er's {Charge} was also completed. Instantly, she clashed head on onto her opponent, and with a swing of her axe, she activated {Tornado Cleave} and inflicted a damage of '-7646' on her opponent, another instant-kill!

Sora Aoi saw that the little girl grinning sadistically with her axe in her hands as she came for him. He quickly raised up both of his hands and said, "I, I quit! I admit defeat!"

With a flash of his shadow, he was teleported out of the arena.

Femme fatale: a seductive woman who lures men into dangerous or compromising situations

Chrysanthemum remnant, injuries everywhere: A lyrics in Jay Chow song 'Ju Hua Tai'. Author implied chrysanthemum as the anus, so it literally meant the scattered petals of an anus after

being brutally injured by a chrysanthemum.		

Chapter 264: Unobstructed Flow

'Ding! Your party has defeated 'Childhood Idols', the Lone Desert Smoke First Party has proceeded to the next round! Please remain in the main city, the next match is beginning in 40 minutes!'

Following the sound of the system notification, Zhang Yang and the gang were teleported out of the arena.

Zhang Yang smiled lightly and said, "The little girl spent a total of 47 seconds to secure the victory of our first round, let us compete to see who can take down the opposition party in the shortest time, shall we?"

"Hmph!" Wei Yan Er put her hands on her hip joints and said, "You are so wicked, if I had known we were racing, I could have did it faster! 30 seconds, no, 20 seconds would have been enough to take them all out!"

Han Ying Xue pinched the little girl's face and said, "Keep puffing hot air, little prick!"

Wei Yan Er flung her head in a huff and said, "Cousin sister, even you're being mean! I am finally seeing through your entire being, your heart, spleen, lungs and kidneys!"

"But we must not be too negligent, it is possible that we might encounter a strong party in the future!" Daffodil Daydream reminded all of them. "Yes!"

The other four of them, including Zhang Yang nodded to express their agreement. As the saying went, an army puffed up with pride is bound to lose, but with enough confidence in themselves, they may conquer the world!

"Little Yang, we are in for the next round!" In just a short period of time, Fatty Han shouted into the guild channel.

"Guildmaster, we have also proceeded into the next round!"

"Boss! Boss! We're in the next round!"

The guild channel was constantly filled with the triumphantly news of many parties in the guild. Of course, some people were happy, and naturally some people were crying as there were also many parties brutally, or forcefully eliminated from the competition in the first round. However, many of them were reporting victories. At the end of the first round at 8.pm, out of a total of 2,176 parties from the Lone Desert Smoke that participated in the competition, 1,847 parties had managed to secure their spots into the next round, leaving the elimination rate down to only 15%. With such great results, it reflected the elite superiority of the guild, thanks to Zhang Yang's strict selection of members.

At 8.pm, the second round of the Soaring Swords competition closely followed right after the first round, there was a total of 131,072 parties, and the competition was divided into three

different sessions.

This time round, Zhang Yang and the others had to wait a little longer, only being teleported at 8:40.pm.

Their opponents seemed to be pushovers again, with an average level of 53. It seemed that they had engaged with a similarly weak party in the first round, in order to proceed to this round smoothly. There was one Berserker, two Beastmasters, one Pyromancer and one Priest.

So, Sun Xin Yu pulled out her daggers and jabbed a thumb in her bountiful chest, claiming this round as hers and hers alone.

The five-minute preparation time passed very quickly, and Sun Xin Yu dashed forwards, disappearing into thin air as she went straight into her stealth mode.

"Wait, wait!" The five members of the opposition party had charged forward a few steps forward as the Berserker who seemed to be their party leader immediate raised up his hand and said, "They must have some trick up their sleeves! None of them are moving!"

"That's right, they are the core party of the Lone Desert Smoke!"

"Such rotten luck, to meet these lunatics in the second round!"

"Boss, you said they might have something up their sleeves,

right?"

"I don't know, but the battle has already begun, and their assassin is in {Stealth} while the remaining four members are just standing there. They must be conspiring something!"

"We must not act lightly. Let's stay in position, spread out a little, and flank them. Whoever charges over first, we'll just instant-kill that player!"

"Right! Let them have a taste of our strength, the Five Immortals of the Peach Valley!"

"It's a long shot, but we might even slaughter them and get our asses elevated!"

"Hahaha!"

The five of them started to laugh as their heads were filled with fantasies.

Pak!

The Pyromancer who stood at the rear of the party suddenly swayed on the spot, a circle of flying stars that indicated a stun effect appeared right on his head, followed by the shadow of Sun Xin Yu slowly revealing herself out of thin air, getting to work with her two daggers that glittered like frost and snow right behind him without a pause.

```
'-2,040!'
```

'-710!'

'-4020!'

The regular attacks of the main weapon and the secondary weapon, with the addition of consecutive chain of a back attack, along with an additional 10% damage while appearing out from stealth mode -- instantly, she inflicted a total damage of up to 7,000! The Pyromancer did not stand a chance, it was a total instakill, with no chance of activating any emergency life-saving skills!

A true assassination, to suddenly emerge out of the shadow and instantly hammer out a series of terrifying attacks!

Sun Xin Yu immediately turned her focus towards the Priest and started running at him.

"What the hell! That was deadly shit!"

"Focus fire on her, take her out!"

The two hunters had sent their pets to attack Sun Xin Yu while shooting out their {Concussion Shots} to reduce her movement speed. Clearly, they lacked tacit understanding among each other, they were casting redundant skills at the same time!

Her body trembled, and Sun Xin Yu became translucent --- {Blur} !

Missed!

Missed!

The two {Concussion Shots} missed at the same time. As an assassin, Sun Xin Yu moved far faster than a priest. The movement speed boost could go up to 20% at most, and it was considerably fast! In a flash, she had reached her opponent who was 10 meters away!

{Shadow Step}!

"Old Ox, look out! She is right behind you!"

"Quickly! Use {Petrifying Shriek}!"

"Turn around, don't give her the chance to stab you in the back!"

The other three players were busy spouting various advice! However, it was already too late!

'-1,832!'

'-692!'

'-3632!'

Although there was no additional 10% damage, Sun Xin Yu was the ice queen. Her opponent only had a full body of Green-Copper equipment, with 5,000+ health points, how was it possible for that fellow to survive so many violent attacks of hers! He died instantly!

{Holy Shield}? Sorry, that rare skill book was not available to any hillbilly!

"F*ck! They did not play any tricks on us, they really thought one assassin was enough to take us all out!"

"This level of looking down on people is too much!"

"... It seems like we are no match to them though!"

After Sun Xin Yu had torn up the priest's *ss into ribbons, she immediately waved her hand -- {Vanish}.

The battle had just commenced for 16 seconds!

17 seconds, 19 seconds, 21 seconds!

Shoof! The shadow of Sun Xin Yu reappeared once again, and a

hunter dropped dead!

"Sun of the beach! Kill one of them at least!"

"At least take some of her HP out!"

The two remaining players of the opposition party lamented.

Everytime Sun Xin Yu activated {Blur}, she was so lucky that every single attack 'Missed'! After killing three players consecutively, she was actually still at full health, it simply made her opponents feel horrible!

Shoof! Small cyclones formed beneath her feet, and her movement speed was instantly boosted like crazy!

{Sprint}!

Sun Xin Yu flew at the other hunter at twice her usual speed!

'-982!'

'-1632!'

The two damages were inflicted on Sun Xin Yu at the same time, a combination of a regular shot and {Take Aim}!

Finally... a Reduction of health points!

The hunter revealed a triumphant smile on his face! He managed to draw some Lone Desert Smoke blood!

26 seconds!

Sun Xin Yu continued to charge forwards, and with amazing footwork, she positioned herself behind the hunter. Immediately after that she charged at the Berserker.

The hunter, dead but yet to even fall, had already been abandoned by its killer!

"Argh!" the Berserker charged straight at Sun Xin Yu, swinging his axe wildly but unfortunately, it only struck air. Witnessing his party members getting slaughtered one after another, it had left him infuriated! The outcome of the match did not matter anymore, he only wanted to strike Sun Xin Yu in order to at least regain some dignity!

Sun Xin Yu lifted a leg up casually, and the axe swung harmlessly beneath her!

Normal attacks were easily telegraphed, therefore, any skilled player could easily anticipate and evade attacks as they would in real life.

Sliding between the legs of her opponent, Sun Xin Yu flitted to

the back of her opponent with amazing flexibility, and finished him off!

32 seconds!

The battle has ended!

Shoof, Zhang Yang and the party were teleported out of the arena at the same time.

"Little girl, you lost your position so easily!" Zhang Yang ridiculed her.

Wei Yan Er was instantly provoked, gnashing her teeth at Zhang Yang with an audible snap.

"Born in the year of dog?"

"No! Tiger! Rawgh!"

After the second round of the competition ended, 1,293 parties of the Lone Desert Smoke remained in the running. The chat was once again filled with a mixture of joy and sadness.

9 pm, and the third round began.

This time around, Zhang Yang and his party members were one

of the first to be teleported into the arena. At the opposite side, the party was still vastly inferior, but their average Level had reached up to Level 54, and they glittered with a few gray-silver equipment!

"This time, let Daffodil handle this, don't get killed!" Zhang Yang smiled while teasing.

If players are killed in the arena, they will not lose any experience points or equipment, but their equipment durability will still be reduced.

At first, Wei Yan Er wanted to give it another try in order to get herself back to number one in place, but when she saw the excitement on the face of Daffodil Daydream, she felt that it was not good to steal her spotlight, so she could only give up bitterly.

Five minutes later, the battle began!

The moment when Daffodil Daydream activated her {Heart of Flame}, pak pak, she had already instantly-killed one of her opponents the moment she laid her eyes on them. After a series of weaving and rolling, she killed the final opponent at the expense of having 872 health points remaining. It was understandable as she was a Spellcaster with lower defense and HP. The whole battle took one minute and 12 seconds!

She had no other way, as she could only cast {Fire Blast} again and again, other spells would have required an interruptible casting time. To fight against five opponents by herself was not easy, let alone winning the match!

A pyromancer truly shone in team battles, where behind their allies, they will be able to cast their hard-hitting skills at leisure and inflict series of extremely terrifying damage!

In the third round of the competition, there was no doubt that the second party of the Lone Desert Smoke with Fatty Han and the others in it would proceed to the forth round.

Meanwhile, a total of 902 parties from Lone Desert Smoke still made it into the next round. Compared to the 487 parties of the Crimson Rage and the 309 parties of the Imperial Sky, it was three times more than them in number! As everyone could see, Lone Desert Smoke was truly elite!

Only three rounds of the competition were held today, with another three rounds the next day, and then another three rounds on the following day, with only two rounds on the forth day, while the remaining six days will only hold one round each.

Although there were many inferior parties eliminated thorough the first three rounds, but 16,384 parties still remained in the competition, and the quality of the parties still varied greatly. On the second day of the competition, Zhang Yang and the gang were still able to send one representative to claim victory for them. Progress was smooth.

When it was Zhang Yang's turn to step up, he had his pet join the battle to aid him, engaging in a fortunate match-up against a kitchen-knife-kind of party that consisted of two berserkers, two

thieves and one sacred knight. In the end, he had purposely allowed the thief to activate {Ambush} successfully, while waiting for the four damage channel players to round up on him. When the time was right, he activated his {Warrior's Will} to get rid of the {Kidney Shot}, and did a perfect instant-kill on all four opponents with a combo of {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike}!

He then activated a {Charge} at the last sacred knight left on the arena and killed him with a series of explosive blows. The whole battle only took 19 seconds!

Chapter 265: 'Fire Phoenix' Party

There was no chance of breaking Zhang Yang's record, not anymore!

Wei Yan Er glared at him dejectedly, and she said, "Noob tank, you got real lucky, engaging four melee profession players at a time, if only I --- Hmph!"

Zhang Yang shrugged and said, "It could not be helped, luck is also a part of strength!"

"How ostentatious!" Han Ying Xue rolled her eyes at him. Sun Xin Yu was on fire, constantly rubbing her daggers against each other everytime they stepped into battle. However, after the sixth round, only 4,096 parties managed to proceed to the seventh round of the competition.

Maybe they could still managed to send one player each for the coming rounds, but naturally, these parties were the cream of the crop, possessing greater strength than their previous encounters!

As a safety precaution, Zhang Yang would have his party charge out as one starting from the next day. They cannot risk any 1 VS 5 battles anymore!

Lone Desert Smoke had a total of 227 parties who entered the next round, taking up a total of 5% of the remaining parties of White Jade Castle in the competition, it was definitely astonishing! It was far better compared to the Crimson Rage who had only 132

parties remaining and the Imperial Sky who had only 96 parties remaining in the competition!

"Let's go, we shall level up to achieve Level 70 at a faster speed!" Zhang Yang was already currently Level 64, but to race against other players and also spend time on the competition was an uphill battle. However, Zhang Yang naturally had the uttermost confidence to secure the championship of this competition!

Let's set aside other circumstances, by just booking the dungeon where the Demonic Treant King is, Zhang Yang and the gang had already acquired a total of 12 pieces of [Aura Stones]. The Aura skills of Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue had already reached Level 4 while the Aura skills Wei Yan Er, Hundred Shots and Fatty Han had also reached Level 3. The whole gang had grown far stronger than before!

As five of them were about to tear their own [teleportation scroll] to return back to Thunderstorm Castle, when they saw Humbly Gentleman and his big gang walking by with thier annoying swagger. The hypocrite glanced at Zhang Yang, and he said, "Zhan Yu, I heard that you guys managed to make it into round 7! Hehe, you guys better burn more incense and pray that you never engage with us tomorrow, or else, that would be the end of your streak!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Hypocrite, have you taken the wrong medicine today as well?"

Humbly Gentleman snorted and put his hand over one of his men's shoulder. "Zhan Yu, allow me to introduce you to a person! Millenial Wanderer, profession, Cryomancer, and he is a new recruit of The Dominators and also our Ace!"

The Millenial Wanderer was a male elf spellcaster, who did not hide his personal information. He was Level 58, health points 8,320, mana points 4,120. With his hands folded across his chest, he gazed and them lazily and said, "I heard that you guys are strong? Unfortunately, that was before you guys met me!"

Han Ying Xue and the ladies exchanged a look, trying to hold back their laughter. Wei Yan Er rubbed her forefinger against her cheek and said, "Goodness, the mental hospital is so irresponsible this year round, how could they let a patient run wild without giving him proper medication!"

Zhang Yang smiled nonchalantly, but his heart skipped a beat. Millenial Wanderer -- he was bad news. His past life told him of that!

--- Millenial Wanderer, he was indeed the core player and ace of The Dominators in the S Rank Competition! Being the seventh in the top 10 best spellcaster list, his strength must not be underestimated!

In this life, Millenial Wanderer had also sided himself over to The Dominators, despite their downfall.

"You b*tch, just wait until you meet me in the arena, I shall show you just how much of a toad under the well you are!" Millenial Wanderer slammed his fists together, a most belligerent look on his face.

Wei Yan Er burst out, "He's driving me mad! I really wish that our first opponents will be them, I am going to cut his head off and kick it like a football!"

"Yan Er, how can you be so violent? But, I do support you this time round!" Han Ying Xue pinched the cheek of Wei Yan Er again.

"Humph, while you're still at it, be pleased and enjoy the moment!" After Humbly Gentlemant finished with his demonstration of power, he waved his hand and led his men away from the scene.

"That was a really annoying person!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue, "Noob tank, raise their teleportation fare up 10 times more!"

Zhang Yang laughed loudly and said, "Alright!"

One day had passed, the Soaring Swords competition had entered its third day.

'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS 'Fire Phoenix' party is about to begin in 5 minutes, please make ready!'

It was already 7 pm, Zhang Yang and his party members were teleported to the arena at the same instance again, and there marked the beginning of their round 7 battle!

Fire Phoenix was an unconventional party formed out of five female Pyromancers! The average level of the five was Level 56, which was considerably quite high. Plus, they were pretty well-equipped, most of them glittering in gray-silver light. All of their health points were over 7,000!

A vicious party of glass-cannons! Focus fire, instant-kill, simple, violent, effective!

"How do we do this?" Wei Yan Er asked.

"We split them up into individual battles. Each of us take one. Their health points are not that much, if we can get near them, we can kill them! We must really close the gap before they start bombarding us! Five 'Fire Balls' flying at us all at once is no joke!" Zhang Yang said.

"Then I shall take on Phoenix Subzero!" Wei Yan Er said.

"I'll take on Phoenix Foam!" Daffodil Daydream said.

"Iced Tea!" Sun Xin Yu was brief and straight to the point as usual.

"Then I shall take Phoenix Jasmine, while Whitey shall take Phoenix Babe!" Zhang Yang shall cover the remaining two opponents.

On the other side of the arena, the Fire Phoenix were also having

a discussion.

"They will definitely start with Zhan Yu in front! You have all seen it, that lunatic has like 28,000 HP, and our first volley could theoretically do 30,000. But he'll definitely have some passive damage-reduction skills, he won't go down from that! Furthermore, once they close in, their melee attackers will deal serious damage!" Phoenix Foam said.

"The damage of a tanker is limited, he won't be a priority! The thief will definitely go into stealth mode immediately. So, we should really focus fire on Drizzler or Daffodil Daydream!"

"Subzero, Iced Tea, Jasmine, you three focus fire on taking out the Drizzler, while Babe and I shall take on Daffodil Daydream! Try to kill them off in a one volley, and then if the thief is still in stealth mode, we shall hit the priest first. If the thief reveals herself, we shall take out the thief first! The Guardian shall be our the last target!" Phoenix Foam assigned their objectives.

"Alright!"

Five minutes passed in the blink of an eye!

The battle had begun!

All five members of Zhang Yang's party charged at the same time. As Zhang Yang was the tanker, naturally, he was at the forefront, while Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream followed closely behind him. Sun Xin Yu had long vanished out of sight.

The three members of the Fire Phoenix party took aim at Wei Yan Er, while two of them aimed at Daffodil Daydream. At the same instant, they activated the skill that temporary increased their damage, the {Heart of Flame}, and they began to cast their {Explosive Flame} that had the highest damage output among all their skills!

{Counter Magic}!

Daffodil Daydream put up her hand and waved, immediately sealing up the {Explosive Flame} that was about to be activated by Phoenix Foam. At the same instant, she activated her own {Heart of Flame}. Afterwards, she gulped down a bottle of [Beginner Power Potion] and activated her accessory, the Magician's Brooch, and began casting her own {Explosive Flame}!

```
Just two seconds later ---
```

^{&#}x27;-2,926!'

^{&#}x27;-1,646!'

^{&#}x27;-2911!'

^{&#}x27;-153**4!**'

'-3012!'

'-1621!'

Six damage values appeared right on top of Zhang Yang as the attacks struck him, taking away approximately 14,000 of his health points!

The Fire Phoenix party reeled in shock! As these attacks were supposedly thrown at Wei Yan Er, how did Zhang Yang become the one who sustained all the damage?

[Sacrifice]: Protects an ally, taking all damage done to the ally instead. Cool down time: 1 minute. Distance: 30 meters

'-4,592![']

'-1,541!'

Phoenix Babe managed to inflict some damages on Daffodil Daydream, taking away 6,000+ of her health points. However, Daffodil Daydream bombarded Phoenix Foam with only one {Explosive Flame} that inflicted a damage value of '-9360!', instantly killing her opponent on spot!

'-3120!'

Daffodil Daydream answered with a {Fire Blast}, taking away a

third of her other opponent's health points!

Zhang Yang was grinning as he entered the range of {Charge}. Immediately, he charged head on at Phoenix Jasmine. At the same time, Whitey activated {Wild Charge} and clashed onto Phoenix Babe! Shoof! Sun Xin Yu used her {Shadow Step} to draw herself to the back of Phoenix Iced Tea -- {Ambush} activated! Wei Yan Er had also used {Charge} to clash into Phoenix Subzero!

{Flash Out}!

The four remaining members of the Fire Phoenix party activated their {Flash Out} at the same instant: Instantly move 10 meters forward, cancels all movement restriction skills!

Zhang Yang, and the other two party members immediately pursued their opponents, while Han Ying Xue was frantically healing Zhang Yang.

Their distance gone, and positioning greatly disrupted the weaknesses of the spellcaster profession were revealed thoroughly. The remaining four members of the Fire Phoenix party were instantly nailed by Zhang Yang who smacked their asses with his huge axe. After just a few attempts, they were forced into despair. After lashing out for awhile, they were sent to their demises one after another.

Round one, Lone Desert Smoke First Party acquired victory!

The second level started immediately right after, it was the same 5-minute preparation time. Fire Phoenix party made the best use of the time to revise their tactics.

"Their guardian has {Sacrifice}, it totally messes up our plan!" Phoenix Babe frowned.

"This time, we shall focus our assault on Drizzler, let Zhan Yu use his {Sacrifice} on Drizzler first. Then we shall immediately use our second volley on Daffodil Daydream, it should immediately kill her!"

"But once we let them get near us, their damage outputs are just as terrifying!"

"That's right, they are all individual freaks of their own! The parties that we encountered in the first few rounds could only focus fire on one of us at a time. We only needed to activate a {Ice Frame} to protect ourselves, while the other four of us will just wipe them out! However, they're spreading out to deal with us all at once!"

"Argh, why did it have to be Zhan Yu! It could have been any other!"

"Hehe, or Iced Tea, you go on ahead and seduce Zhan Yu, let him turn his coat around and betray his party!"

"You b*tch, you are the one who should go and seduce him! With

your two papaya sized titties, men are bound to drool!"

"Stop messing around, think of something now!"

"... Nothing on mind now!"

"...Let's just do it then!"

The match began with the end of their unproductive discussion!

The five cyromancers did as they had roughly improvised, focusing fire on Wei Yan Er, trying to trick Zhang Yang into activating his {Sacrifice}, and then they turning to Daffodil Daydream immediately. Daffodil Daydream immediately went down!

However, Phoenix Foam was also killed by the {Explosive Flame} coming from Daffodil Daydream, turning the battle into 4 VS 4!

The prime advantage of a 5-spellcaster party was that all five of them could focus fire and take out their opponents, one at a time! As their numbers dwindled, their firepower would drastically drop, and the moment they fail to kill any of their opponents in a single hit, the healer's role which was meant for long-term combat would start to shine!

Fire Phoenix lost to Lone Desert Smoke First Party with the result of 0:2 by the end of the match.

Chapter 266: The Strongest 4 Of White Jade Castle

Right after the end of round seven, only 2,049 parties remained. 106 parties of Lone Desert Smoke managed to proceed to the upcoming round, still taking the lead in White Jade Castle.

At 8 pm, the eighth round of the Soaring Swords competition followed closely after the previous session, and the opposition standing before Zhang Yang's party was the second party of The Dominators!

When the enemies come face to face, heads will fly! Zhang Yang and his party ruthlessly hacked away, proceeding to the next round with ease.

There were only two rounds of matches on the third day. Only 1024 parties of White Jade Castle were able to stay in the competition so far, with 61 parties of Lone Desert Smoke remaining, far exceeding the 33 parties of Crimson Rage and the 24 parties of Imperial Sky.

As for The Dominators who fell under the category of larger guilds, only 12 parties remained in the competition thanks to the recent event of members withdrawing from their guild. Their results just barely did them justice as a major guild.

After the forth day of the competition, the 1,024 parties were reduced to only 256 parties, where the chaff had been separated from the wheat, with more parties being similar in strength as

well.

As the fifth day of the competition marked it's beginning, the number of matches that a party needed to take part in had been reduced down to one match only, they only needed to secure one victory to make it to the next round.

128 parties, 64 parties, 32 parties...

The remaining number of the parties were getting smaller and smaller every time, and by the end of the ninth day of the competition, White Jade Castle only had 8 parties remaining in the list of the competition. To make sure that the competition was fair to all, all parties were called upon to draw straws in order to determine their turns for the competition tomorrow night.

The names and who they are going up against among the eight parties were as follow ---

Lone Desert Smoke Second Party VS Sword and Fire Mercenary First Party.

Crimson Rage First Party VS Lost Paradise First Party

Imperial Sky First Party VS Bloodbath Alliance First Party.

Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS The Dominators First Party

"Haha, you are just so unlucky, you're actually matched up against us!" Humbly Gentleman stepped up to Zhang Yang with an arrogant look that looked like he claimed the sky above him, "What an unfortunate turn of events, if you could just push into another round... Tsk tsk tsk!"

"You ugly piece of octo-pussy! You're the ones going down!" Wei Yan Er jumped into the scene and waved her small fists furiously, "Tomorrow shall be the day you meet your demise! Sun of the beach, tremble now, noobcakes!"

Zhang Yang couldn't hold it anymore and he statrted laughing out loud, then he said, "Little girl, where did you learn this from?"

Wei Yan Er raised her head with a smug smile on her face and said, "Was I not cool just now?"

"Cool enough!"

"Humph!" Humbly Gentleman pretended to be the mature one there and lowered his face, covering it with a palm.

Millenial Wanderer, however, smiled and said, "Guildmaster, someone will learn to be a little more obedient after tomorrow's match!"

"Nicely said!" Humbly Gentleman began to smile.

Both sides were already deep-seated enemies against each other,

so there was no need to hide their hatred towards each other. The tension was rising, who knew if they actually started brawling right now!

"Just wait until then!"

After throwing those words out, both sides went away under unhappy circumstances.

On the 10th of December, the final round for the main draw match of the Soaring Swords competition had officially began!

Up to this point, the parties that were able to remain in the competition didn't just get there by dumb luck, therefore, many players had come to spectate the matches! The official management team had arranged it in such a way that, the four matches shall be held separately so that players will be able to catch all four of them!

It was 7 pm, the first match shall be against the 'Sword and Fire Mercenary First Party'.

Lone Desert Smoke Second Party members are: Fatty Han, Hundred Shots, Galileo, Fantasy Sweetheart, Lost Dream.

Sword and Fire Mercenary First Party members are: Dominating Blade (Guardian, Level 61), 44 Bandit (Assassin, Level 61), Broken Uranus (Pyromancer, Level 61), Point and Kill (Sniper, Level 61), 7 Feet Boobies (Holy Knight, Level 61).

Five minutes before the match begin, Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and the rest of the gang entered the audience stands, eager to witness the beginning of that match. Dream Technology had many ways to earn a fortune, they actually set a fare for this final day! To enter, one must hand over 10 gold pieces! Everyone could see the number of audiences in the audience on their window interface. When Zhang Yang and the gang entered, the number shown on the screen was still 5,118, but in just less than one minute, the number had shot up to 10,000, and continued increasing rapidly!

Millions of audience would mean ten times that number of gold pieces earned, it was daylight robbery by the masses!

Zhang Yang felt totally used. The players who were putting up a good show did not even get a dime, and all the benefits were seized by the game company alone!

"Silly Yu, can Sweetheart and the others win this round?" Han Ying Xue asked.

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "I have no idea, when we talk about skills in PK, I am afraid that the Sword and Fire Mercenary is slightly better! They take pride as Mercenaries after all, taking on bounties and so on! However, Fatty Han and the party have the advantage in terms of equipment, so it is still very difficult to see the outcome now!"

"I'd say Fatty Han and the gang will definitely win!" Wei Yan Er nodded strongly.

"Watch the match!"

Five minutes had passed, the number of the audiences had reached up to 208,000, and the match had finally began!

The members from both sides were instantly teleported into the arena. The moment the invisible air wall faded, the two parties immediately charged towards each other in different formations.

Both sides were showing off every skill they had, with magic spells soaring over in both directions, and arrows flying. It was just like what Zhang Yang said earlier, the Sword and Fire Mercenary had the advantage in term of skills over the match, but Fatty Han and the party had the advantage in terms of their equipment, the outcome of the match remained unclear for the moment!

Because of this, the match became far more exciting to watch compared to those one-sided matches! They did not just compete in terms their skill and equipment, but also their will!

Two minutes had passed, Fatty Han was the first to die, but 44 Bandit of the Sword and Fire Mercenary was similarly being scratched to death!

Three minutes later, Galileo was surrounded and killed after falling into a trap set up by the opposition, but at the same time, Dominating Blade was slaughtered as well.

3 VS 3, the fire power from both sides had been sharply reduced, the healing effects from both sides undoubtedly became obvious than ever. The two opposition parties went into a stalemate, the circumstances became 'I can't kill you, you can't kill me either'. After shooting at each other fruitlessly for a while, both sides understood that the key to obtaining victory was to kill the opposition's healer! Whoever kills their opponent's healer first, would secure the victory of this match!

Lost Dream was indeed the future king of thieves. With a wave of his hand, he vanished into thin air, entering stealth mode by activating {Vanish}. He crept up to the Holy Knight that was hiding behind his team mates and activated {Blur}. Taking the advantage of the time while the skill of 7 Feet Boobies was cooling down, he held on against all the assaults from Broken Uranus and Point and Kill with his {Blur}, and killed their healer with sheer brawn!

Right before 7 Feet Boobies died, an attempt to kill Fantasy Sweetheart was made as a final struggle, however, the attempt was made futile when Fantasy Dream activated {Blind} to hold the spellcaster for a full eight seconds. Lone Desert Smoke managed to shakily claim victory this time!

First round, Lone Desert Smoke Second Party won by a narrow margin!

Five minutes later, the second round of the match had begun!

At the beginning of the match, Fantasy Sweetheart made a fatal mistake, activating {Holy Shield} a little too late, giving their opponents the opportunity to kill Lost Dream! After losing their super thief, it was a landslide loss.

Another five minutes had passed, and the final round of the match has begun!

Both sides were back into the pace of the first round, and finally, they depended on the outstanding performance of Lost Dream, narrowly achieving the victory in the last round!

Lone Desert Smoke Second Party defeated the Sword and Fire Mercenary First Party with the score of 2:1, being the first to secure one out of the four tickets of White Jade Castle to get into the semifinals of the competition!

The next match was closely followed after the first match, 'Crimson Rage First Party VS Lost Paradise First Party'. Crimson Fire and his party were able to remain in the top eight, partly because they had been rather lucky, for up until this point, they had not engaged with any parties that had been too much for them to handle. However, now that they were up against Crimson Rage, their strength was tested and broken, and they were soundly defeated, losing twice in a row.

In the following match, Imperial Sky also obtained a clean win against the Bloodbath Alliance, acquiring the third ticket to proceed into the Shang Hai Finals.

Lastly, it was the most anticipated match between Lone Desert Smoke First Party and The Dominators First Party! Both parties were teleported into the arena, separated by the invisible air walls, observing their own opponents and their formations.

The Five members of The Dominators: Humbly Gentleman (Cryomancer, Level 60), Millenial Wanderer (Cryomancer, Level 60), Traveling Piglet (Guardian, Level 60), Top Class Bad Guy (Assassin, Level 60), I'm No Healer (Holy Knight, Level 60).

The Five members of Lone Desert Wolf: Zhang Yang (Level 65), Sun Xin Yu (Level 63), Han Ying Xue (Level 62), Wei Yan Er (Level 62), Daffodil Daydream (Level 62). As Sun Xin Yu had the [Heaven's Pearl], providing a huge 50% experience point boost, she was slightly ahead of the others.

Zhang Yang and his party had the superior equipment and levels. However, The Dominators were pumped with endless confidence over the recruitment of Millenial Wanderer, as they deeply believed that they could rely on Millenial Wanderer to secure their victory over Zhang Yang and his party.

"How do we do this?" although Wei Yan Er looked down on her opponents, but she acknowledged the fact that they were still a major guild, never foolish enough to underestimate their abilities.

Zhang Yang gave it some thought and said, "Icy will go get their thief, if he doesn't reveal himself, that's fine, if he ever reveals himself, wipe his face on the dirt! We shall aim for their spellcasters. Whoever charges forward, we shall focus our assault on him and quickly force them to use their {Ice Frame}. They're as good as dead after that!"

'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS The Dominators First Party, the match will begin in 10 seconds!'

The air wall had faded!

As the tip of an arrow, Zhang Yang led the party and charged forward, while the opposition did the same, with Traveling Piglet leading the front to absorb any damage going their way. Others were following about seven or eight meters behind him.

30 meters, 20 meters, the distance between the two parties was getting shorter by the moment, 11 meters left!

Zhang Yang stopped abruptly, allowing Whitey to pass him and take the front!

10 meters, the maximum range of {Charge}!

Traveling Piglet hesitated for a moment, should he use his {Charge} on that big white bear? {Charge}, could stun an opponent for a moment, it was extremely handy, and to waste it on a [Pet]...

Just as he was hesitating, Whitey had already charged over with a {Wild Charge}, sending Traveling Piglet into one second of stun. Zhang Yang did not use {Charge} on him but instead, dashed over

towards Millenial Wanderer. Whitey turned from Traveling Piglet and instead charged at Humbly Gentleman.

Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream ran past the swaying Traveling Piglet and started assaulting Millenial Wanderer!

Guardians had high damage immunity and high health point value. If the party focused fire on him, he could have easily make it through by just activating a {Shield Wall}! Also, they were not as dangerous offensively, so trying to kill them first was folly!

However, one must not leave a guardian unattended, because this profession was not only hard to kill, but also had party-saving skills such as {Sacrifice} and {Vanguard's Aggression}. The area attack skills such as {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike} also had crowd control effects, along with {Destructive Smash} which nullified healing! Therefore, guardians played a major role in party battles, especially in the League Championship that was to come in the future!

The opposition ignored Zhang Yang as well, as Millenial Wanderer locked his target on Wei Yan Er and began to cast his {Frost Dragon}!

{Charge}!

Zhang Yang charged at Millenial Wanderer, while activating his {Blood Rage}. However, before Zhang Yang even reached Millenial Wanderer, he had already activated his {Flash Out}, moving 10 meters forward, and resumed casting his {Frost Dragon}!

Millenial Wanderer was indeed outstanding. This {Flash Out} of his had landed him exactly 30 meters from Wei Yan Er, the maximum range of {Frost Dragon}. The {Frost Dragon} would definitely hit Wei Yan Er before she could activate her {Charge}!

{Counter Magic}!

Daffodil Daydream waved her hand and once again interrupted Millenial Wanderer. At the same time, she activated her {Heart of Flame}, emitting out a charge of flame on Millenial Wanderer, inflicting him with a damage value of '-2,612' which appeared right on top of his head! She proceeded to cast a {Explosive Flame}.

Millenial Wanderer had also used the same skill -- {Counter Magic}, interrupting the casting of Daffodil Daydream. After being countered, all his spells related to frost and ice would be forced into a cool down of 3 seconds, so he could only dodge and roll to avoid Zhang Yang.

Traveling Piglet had recovered from stun at that time, and came at Wei Yan Er with a {Charge}, knocking the little girl into stunned state. He followed up with a stomp on the ground -- {Thunder Strike}, further hindering the little girl with a speed reduction effect.

Three seconds later, Millenial Wanderer's ice spells were available again, so with an instant {Ice Ring}, he froze Zhang Yang who tried to pursue him. Then, he went back to casting his {Frost Dragon} at Wei Yan Er!

{Warrior's Will}!

Zhang Yang shook the frozen state off himself and continued pursuing Millenial Wanderer.

Switch!

'-5,820!' {Destructive Smash}, critical attack!

'-180!' Regular attack.

The two attacks that Zhang Yang had dealt landed on Traveling Piglet intead! This was because Traveling Piglet had used {Sacrifice} at the right moment on Millenial Wanderer, taking all damage on his behalf instead!

"Focus fire on the hypocrite!" Zhang Yang immediately said.

'-5,412!'

Humbly Gentleman had been preoccupied with Whitey, he could have finish casting the {Frost Dragon} in 2 seconds, but instead, he took 3 seconds to do it, and finally, he manged to land a heavy attack on Wei Yan Er.

Millenial Wanderer was also trying to recast his {Frost Dragon} on Wei Yan Er, while Traveling Piglet stood in her face,

continuously hacking away!

Zhang Yang activated the same skill {Sacrifice} on Wei Yan Er and began to charge towards Humbly Gentleman.

The Dominators instantly switched their fire power towards Daffodil Daydream, setting her as their primary target.

'-1,832!'

Zhang Yang swung his axe at Humbly Gentleman, hurting him!

Shoof, Wei Yan Er had finally managed to use {Charge}, waving her big-ass axe at Humbly Gentleman.

{Flash Out}!

Humbly Gentleman instantly reacted, befitting of a professional player, and the axe hit nothing but air!

Zhang Yang kept the pressure on, chasing after Humbly Gentleman, activating his {Blast Wave} when within range, causing '-830' damage while at the same time, stunning him for 4 seconds!

At the same moment, Traveling Piglet waved his hand and instantly activated {Vanguard's Aggression} onto Humbly Gentleman, covering him up with it!

This party of The Dominators was obviously well-trained with their cooperation tactics. With the {Vanguard's Aggression} thrown out, other members of the opposition party ran into the area of the Vanguard, and they began to throw their attacks onto Daffodil Daydream

Sun Xin Yu and Top Class Bad Guy were still sneaking around, playing hide and seek!

"Switch fire on to Traveling Piglet!" Zhang Yang told the party while he activated his very own {Vanguard's Aggression}. The two parties were in such close proximity now that the two {Vanguard's Aggression} were more or less stacked on top of each other.

Both parties were forced to focus fire on the Guardians now instead.

Chapter 267: Progressing Into Shanghai

Upon activating {Vanguard's Aggression}, the tankers started to receive double damage. Thus, under the concentrated fire of the enemy, both Zhang Yang and Traveling Piglet activated their own {Shield Walls} concurrently, and they began slashing at each other like crazy.

At this moment, the difference between the strength of the tankers were their equipment. Even the with their {Shield Walls} activated, the health points of Traveling Piglet were falling much quicker than Zhang Yang's.

Afterall, Lone Desert Smoke had the upper hand in both defense and offense. Even the [Gold-Eared Bear King] alone could have made things difficult for The Dominators!

After 3 seconds, Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} had finally cooled down. Immediately, he threw another {Destructive Smash} onto Traveling Piglet, reducing 75% of the healing effects on him. He had basically taken the healer out of the battle!

Traveling Piglet was only equipped with Gray-Sliver equipment, and had total health points of not more than 14,000. How would he be able to sustain the powerful damage output of the trio, Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream? He had held his own well enough before {Destructive Smash} took away his healing support. Before the duration of his {Shield Wall} even ended, he was already dead!

{Vanguard's Aggression} vanished along with his death.

Not giving any chance to those opponents within the barrier to respond, Zhang Yang unleashed his {Blast Wave}, knocking the three opponents closest to him into stunned states.

Focus fire on Millenial Wanderer!

Pak!

Millenial Wanderer was fast, immediately he had created an {Ice Barrier} and entered an invincible state, stationary state.

Switching fire power onto Humbly Gentleman!

Pak!

Humbly Gentleman panicked and immediately entered his {Ice Barrier}.

Switching fire towards I'm Not Healer!

I Am No Healer quickly activated his {Sacred Protection}, entering an invincible state of 5 seconds. At the same time, he was healing up the health points of all three members of his own party, including his own.

Within just a few seconds, the three members of The Dominators were forced into activating their life-saving skills.

It was only a stop-gap measure, things were not looking good for them, Millenial Wanderer quickly snapped into the party chat. "Bad Guy, stop playing hide and seek with that thief and start attacking Daffodil Daydream. We will remove our Ice Frame immediately. My {Ice Ring} is still under cool down, so the Guildmaster will freeze them first, then we can finish her off. When their spellcaster dies, the remaining battles will all be melee, we can slowly kite them until they die!"

"F*ck you, *sshole! Call me 'Top Class', not 'Bad Guy'!" Top Class Bad Guy retorted.

"Okay, okay! 'Top Class', go ahead and use your {Ambush} on Daffodil Daydream, now!" Millenial Wanderer was getting impatient.

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds...

Pak!

Top Class Bad Guy burst into the visible spectrum, but it was not because he was about to use {Ambush} on Daffodil Daydream, but it was because he had been busted out by Sun Xin Yu! His body swayed with stars over his head, and the ice queen got to work with her daggers!

However, I Am No Healer only cared for hmself and took no action, as his {Sacred Protection} could only last for 5 seconds. The moment it passed however, he was once again attacked by Zhan Yang and the party. He started healing himself, but was quickly interrupted as Zhang Yang used {Crash Magic} on him! He could not use his skills for another three seconds!

"Let's go!", Millenial Wandered grit his teeth, they would not stand a chance against them in a drawn-out battle of attrition!

Millenial Wanderer and Humbly Gentleman removed their {Ice Barriers} at the same time. Humbly Gentleman immediately used his {Ice Ring} to freeze Zhang Yang, Wei Yan Er and Whitey so that I'm Not Healer would have an opportunity to escape for the moment!

{Thunder Strike}!

Zhang Yang stomped on the ground once, immediately reducing the movement speed of I am No Healer for 5 seconds, slowing down the slinky shadow who was trying to escape. It delayed him for an extra second, which was enough.

'-2,102!'

Zhang Yang stuck his back, bringing his hitpoints below 20%. Wei Yan Er whistled and unleashed her assault. Although she had only accumulated 32 points of rage, it was enough to do it!

'-528o!'

I Am No Healer immediately collapsed!

{Dispel}!

Han Ying Xue freed Wei Yan Er from the {Ice Ring} first. A second after, the skill had cooled down, so she freed Zhang Yang from the {Ice Ring} as well.

"Argh!" Top Class Bad Guy let out a miserable cry as he fell to the knifework of Sun Xin Yu!

Three out of five of the Dominators had been eliminated, leaving only two of them behind, struggling for their lives.

Zhang Yang pursued Humbly Gentleman. As the hypocrite knew that he could not beat Zhang Yang, he snarled and began to cast his spell in anger, hoping to cause some damage before he went down. Zhang Yang laughed out loud as he hacked away. Humbly Gentleman went down like a rotten tree under the repeated hews of a woodcutter's axe!

Zhang Yang placed a foot on Humbly Gentleman's chest and grinned. "Hypocrites, you shouldn't have provoked me!"

Humbly Gentleman was filled with hatred. Such humiliation! Although he was thick-faced and all that, but this, this was just too much to bear, for anyone! Who knew how many spectators were

watching this match? A prideful man like him getting humiliated in such manner was just too much! This would mentally scar him for life!

It was so frustrating! They had overlooked Lone Desert Smoke's potential when they were much smaller! Now, the roles had been completely switched, Lone Desert Smoke is indisputably the strongest guild in the whole of China while The Dominators have fallen far below grace!

"Humph! You have only won one match, do not think that..."

Shoof, before Humbly Gentleman could even finish his last word, he was axed by Zhang Yang right in the face, forcibly sent out of the arena.

On the other side, despite Millenial Wanderer's skills, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream made quick work of him! Bear in mind that Sun Xin Yu is the future number one thief queen while Daffodil Daydream will be the top 10 spellcaster, ranks that were equal to his! Even though Wei Yan Er did not attain any fame in Zhang Yang's previous life, she was obviously on equal caliber, with her reflexes and abilities!

First round, Lone Desert Smoke First Party obtained victory!

Second round competition would start immediately after 5 minutes.

"Ice queen, forget about the thief. Other than wasting your time, he's basically useless!" Zhang Yang decided to change the tactics for the second round, so he said, "We shall steamroll them this time round!"

"Good, good! I like it!" Wei Yan Er raised her hands up with joy..

'Ding!, Lone Desert Smoke Vs The Dominators, the second round of the match will start in 10 seconds!"

The invisible air walls faded. Zhang Yang and his other four party members immediately charged towards their opponents.

Coincidentally, their opponents were using the same tactic as well. Top Class Bad Guy remained visible, charging alongside his partymates. Only when he was 30 meters away from Daffodil, did he enter stealth. Zhang Yang instructed Whitey to engage Traveling Piglet while he ran at Millenial Wanderer himself.

Pak!

Zhang Yang was ambushed by their thief, and a circle of spinning stars appeared on his head.

The Best Bad Guy appeared behind Zhang Yang and started working with his blades, but even without the defense value of his

shield, the damage was absolutely pathetic!

Has he lost his mind? Because assassins use the fastest weapons, daggers, their low damage was the least effective thing against tanks. 90% of his efforts would be wasted on Zhang Yang's clothing!

After 1 second, Traveling Piglet recovered from his stun. He immediately activated {Vanguard's Aggression} on his own party members..

--- Every time upon entering the arena, all skills will be cooled down. The same goes to the skills when players leave the arena.

The Dominators instantly focused their fire power on Wei Yan Er who responded with {Charge}.

Zhang Yang suddenly understood the tactic that The Dominators were using: The main focus was to control Zhang Yang and stop him from activating his {Vanguard's Aggression}. After that, using the 10 seconds of their own {Vanguard's Aggression}, The Dominators will try to take out one or two of the hardest hitting Lone Desert Smokes!

It was a good idea, if Zhang Yang uses {Warrior's Will} to remove the stun inflicted by {Ambush}, then Top Class Bad Guy shall continue to stun him with {Kidney Shot}. It would keep him stunned for another 3 to 4 seconds. That time was enough to kill Wei Yan Er already!

Zhang Yang smiled in his heart. These idiots had paid too much attention to him!

Pak!

Sun Xin Yu had slunk over and activated her {Ambush}, immediate stunning Millenial Wanderer. At the same time, her left hand flicked out, throwing a small cloud of dust that sent Humbly Gentleman into 8 seconds of confusion --- {Blind}.

{Vanguard's Aggression} only reduces 90% of the damages received, it did not grant full immunity. Status Effect Skills would still take full effect. The strategy of the opponent was instantly being pushed off the cliff by Sun Xin Yu with ease.

"Sun of the beach!"

Both Humbly Gentleman and Millenial Wanderer contorted in anger. God damn it, do they waste their {Ice Barriers} to rid off the control skill or not? They would lose the best opportunity to unleash their focus fire onto their target. But if they did... Sh*t, it would be a joke to activate their life-saving skills even under the the protection of {Vanguard's Aggression}!

Dilemma!

Extreme dilemma!

Where did this assassin come from? Such great combat instinct, striking where it hurt the most, it totally disrupted their plan! Sh*t! to think that such a skillful thief existed. Comparatively, Top Class Bad Guy was totally trash!

1 second, 2 seconds, 3 seconds, 4 seconds!

The duration of stun effect caused by {Ambush} had finally passed, there was no other alternative for Top Class Bad Guy, but to continue on with his plan of activating {Kidney Shot}, suppressing Zhang Yang for just a little longer!

Zhang Yang had not used his {Warrior's Will} yet, as out of three attackers in the opposition, two were manipulated by Sun Xin Yu while the remaining one was giving Zhang Yang a gentle back scratch. Furthermore, they were all under the protection of {Vanguard's Aggression}, there was no rush!

Humbly Gentleman could have used {Flash Out} to remove himself of the stun state, but he will be moved out from the protection of {Vanguard's Aggression}, and he would be killed almost immediately. Millenial Wanderer was still in the confused state. If he forced his way out now and helped Top Class Bad Guy, they would still be outnumbered, three-to-two against the attackers of Lone Desert Smoke!

Like her counterpart, Sun Xin Yu activated her {Ambush}, followed by a {Kidney Shot}, the classic supressive combo employed by all thieves. She intended to burn away the remaining

time of the opposition's {Vanguard's Aggression}.

```
5 seconds, 6 seconds, ... 10 seconds!
```

The {Vanguard's Aggression} finally vanished. Every player stunned and confused, recovered, just in time to face the music.

```
{Blast Wave}!
```

That instant when the {Vanguard's Aggression} vanished, Zhang Yang unleashed an attack to his front, stunning all his opponents except for Top Class Bad Guy!

As the {Vanguard's Aggression} was vanishing, the four members of The Dominators had already started spreading out, but Zhang Yang had cut them off!

In that instant, Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er began to unleash hell!

```
{Horizontal Sweep}!
```

{Tornado Cleave}!

All four of them were inflicted with two damage values of '-4200' and '-6400' each!

Humbly Gentleman was instant-killed! Millenial Wanderer was instant-killed! Top Class Bad Guy was instant-killed! I'm Not Healer was instant-killed!

The only survivor in the arena was Traveling Piglet. The joint attack by Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er was so sudden that the opponents were unable to activate any life-saving skills to defend themselves!

Traveling Piglet let his arms fall to his sides, accepting his fate. He too, fell soon after.

Lone Desert Smoke First Party had defeated The Dominators with the score of 2:0, progressing into Shang Hai's top 32 Finals, with their heads raised high!

Chapter 268: Rescue Our Men!

After the 10 preliminary rounds, the name list of four battle teams was displayed in White Jade Castle. Lone Desert Smoke took up two slots out of the four finalists. Their excellent performance had caused a heated discussion in the forums. The superguilds in the other cities also performed as expected. The result was pretty predictable. Big names appeared up there, as expected. None of them emulated Lone Desert Smoke's achievement, however, to take up two slots like that.

The atmosphere in Lone Desert Smoke was jubilant! Even though only 10 of them made it, the glory and pride was still shared among all the members in the guild! Two days after the local competition ended, Zhang Yang had received a call from the Soaring Swords program committee. He was told to be at the Empark Grand Hotel in Shanghai by 20th and register there. All transportation and accommodation fees will be covered by the program committee. If the selected participant is willing, they could even choose to head over there right now. The program committee was rather generous at this. They did not mind you freeloading there, as long as the participant was present on the date of the launch.

It was all due on the 20th of December, where the committee will start the launching ceremony in Empark Grand Hotel. All 32-party leaders would have to be present on the launch date to draw for their matches.

Just as Zhang Yang logged into the game, the little brat's voice came bombarding his ears. "Hey hey hey hey hey! Noob tank! Q-Q-Q-Quickly pack up your stuff! We're heading down to Shanghai this evening!"

"...Is it because it's all paid for?"

"Exactly!"

Zhang Yang sighed. However, as long as he had the gaming helmet with him, he could play anytime, anywhere. It made no difference to him if he did it in his room, or in the hotel. "Ok. Go inform Daffodil, Hundred Shots and the others! We'll gather there!"

The little brat hung up without another word. After informing everyone, they all agreed to stay in Shanghai for a few days.

However, since some of them were staying much further away, they had to book flight tickets to get to Shanghai! For Zhang Yang and his merry friends, the distance between Zhou Su City and Shanghai was only 80 kilometers apart! They would only need half an hour to reach there via the freeway.

Out of the 10 people, Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Wei Yang Er, Han Ying Xue and Sun Xin Yu lived in Zhou Su City. Besides Sun Xin Yu, who had to work and could only take a leave on the 20th, the rest of them gathered at the freeway toll gate. Fatty Han drove Zhang Yang while Hang Ying Xue drove Wei Yan Er, and the four people in two sports cars sped off to Shanghai.

"Dude, I really think that you should get a car already!" said Fatty Han out of the blue.

Zhang Yang chuckled. "If I owned a car, you can drive mine and yours separately and show off. Isn't that right?"

"Hah! You know me best, Little Yang!" Fatty Han laughed heavily.

Luckily, Fatty Han drove ahead, guiding Han Ying Xue who was basically a broken compass. After half an hour, both of them entered Shanghai and with the G.P.S guidance, they had safely arrived at the Empark Grand Hotel. After parking their car in, Zhang Yang made a call. A committee member came out of the hotel and helped them to register. The four of them got into two separate rooms. They didn't exactly get first class suites, but at 888 a night, it was rather luxurious.

After settling in for a while, Wei Yan Er came knocking on the guys' room. Zhang Yang got up and let her in. However, the young, petite little girl stood at the door entrance, stroking her flat tummy, she said, "Noob tank! Pervy bro, let's go eat!"

Zhang Yang frowned immediately. "I don't supposed you guys were starving yourself just to have a fancy meal here?"

"Nyehehel!" The girl snickered happily. "Not to the point of starving. We did have a little snack!"

"Hoho! Oh my little Yan Er, you look lavishing! Astounding!" Fatty Han grinned and stared at the little flowery and cheerful girl.

"Hey! Pervy bro! Keep your eyes off Wei Er, you pervert!" Han Ying Xue appeared right beside her and scolded Fatty Han.

Fatty Han froze when he saw Han Ying Xue for the first time. Like being kicked in the buttock by a horse, Fatty Han rose to his feet and pointed his trembling fingers at Han Ying Xue in disbelief. "Y-Y-You are Little Snow!?"

Zhang Yang could not helped but laughed at his over-exaggerated reaction. This devilish Snow had purposely tweaked her settings to look as plain as possible in the game. No one could possibly compare her real look and in-game look! Since Han Ying Xue was wearing sunglasses and wrapped in a scarf ever since they got out of the car, Fatty Han had now only just witnessed her true appearance.

Fatty Han turned over to Zhang Yang, almost in tears. "Little Yang...Is she really Little Snow? The Little Snow in our guild?"

Zhang Yang nodded happily and said, "The one and only."

"Sii!" Fatty Han sucked a long breath through his teeth. He cried pitifully, "Argh! I'm so freaking jealous! Little Yang! D*mn son! How could I, a modal citizen, a handsome man, a man of talent never ever have encountered someone as beautiful as her!"

[&]quot;Enough, enough! Let's go eat!"

Knowing that they wouldn't have to pay anything, Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were rather barbaric. You can just ignore the fact they are both women, they had monstrous appetites! Zhang Yang felt truly suspicious. Did these sisters starve themselves since yesterday when they knew that they were about to get free food, and let themselves go all out today?

The hotel system used a tab system. The bill would be accumulated until the customer checks out. Of course, they need not worry since the person who will pay for their meal would be the committee of the program.

Having stuffed themselves with luxurious food, the four of them went back to their rooms and logged into the game.

Zhang Yang departed from Thunderstorm Castle after stocking up on necessary supplies, and headed to Kalojar Highlands. He had been chasing after all quests in the maps around the area, and had been searching for more quests in further places.

The experience points gained by questing was almost as good as grinding itself. After all, most of the time questing was spent in traveling here and there. Since killing monsters all day was rather dull and boring, it was better to do some quest since, sometimes, they will get good rewards! Especially if the quest was a hidden quest that triggered the main story quest! The rewards of those quests were several times more lucrative than fighting monsters all day long!

Zhang Yang was just a normal human being, ignoring the fact that he was reincarnated, he had a regular human's memory. He could not remember all the hidden quests and main story quests. Sometimes, those memories were all jumbled up that he would only recall them once he actually encounters a certain place or NPC.

After spending some time climbing mountains and crossing rivers, Zhang Yang arrived at a small village. Where there is a village, there must be villagers! When there were villagers, there could be quests!

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear and moved inside. There were just a few houses in this village. A few lonely women were seen bustling in and out of the house while children were playing merrily in the streets. As Zhang Yang approached closer, the children started to surround him and looked at the bear with admiration and curiosity.

This time, the women noticed Zhang Yang presence and screamed loudly at the children to get away from Zhang Yang. One by one, the women wielded broomsticks and approached Zhang Yang as if he was an enemy.

[Villager of White Lambs Village] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 130,000

Defense: 350

Judge not by the weapons that these women wielded, they were all elite tier! If Zhang Yang were to face one or two villagers, he would not mind forcing his way in. However, when there were more than 10 of them grouped together, it would be like poking your hands into a swarm of wasps!

Hurriedly, Zhang Yang spoke. "I am an adventurer from White Jade Castle! I am just passing through! I mean you no harm!"

Zhang Yang pointed at his badge in his chest. After Level 10, players could select which city to be based in. The badge would then indicate their city.

"Y-You...you're not a bandit?" One of the elder woman cried.

"No!" Zhang Yang shook his head. "Where are all the men in the village? Why are there only women around here?"

"Thank the gods!" All the NPCs sighed a breath of relief. After they lowered their guard down, the same elderly woman spoke. "Two months ago, our men started to go missing! Three days ago, the last man in the village had went out hunting and never came back! Adventurer! I'm telling you! It must be the work of those bloody mountain bandits! Please help us! Vanquish those evil bandits and rescue our men!"

'Ding! Villagers of White Lamb Village have a quest for you: Rescue Our Men! Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Rest assure, I will try my very best!"

"Adventurer! Please exercise caution! Oh right! We have right here, homemade Hawthorn Biscuits! Please take them and help yourselves whenever you're hungry!" said the older woman as she hand over a bag.

[Hawthorn Biscuits] (Useable)

Use: Restores 10% HP and MP every second, for 10 seconds. Can only be used in non-combat status. Unable to execute any other actions during consumption, or the recovery process will be interrupted.

Duration: 36 hours.

Level Requirement: 60

The bag was filled with three stacks, or 600 counts of Hawthorn Biscuits. Enough for Zhang Yang to last for a very very long time!

This recovery snack which healed based on percentages were extremely efficient for players with high HP and MP! It was a pity

that the snack would expire in 36 hours, or else he could use this all the way to level 300, where its effects would only be more potent!

Zhang Yang left the village and headed to the west.

[Rescue Our Men] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: Our men have been kidnapped by bandits! Please rescue them! According to the villagers of White Lamb Village, the men were taken away by the bandits from Evil Wolves Fortress! The fortress should be located at the west, in the Mountains of Evil Wolves! Warrior! You must make haste! You not only rescuing the men of White Lamb Village, you're also rescuing countless roosters!

Progress: Find the clue about the missing men from the village 0/1

Luckily, the little brat was not following him. Zhang Yang laughed a little. This little brat would have relentlessly asked him about what rescuing men had got to do with roosters!

The Evil Wolves Mountains was not far away from White Lamb Village. Zhang Yang only took about 20 minutes before reaching his destination with the bear. Even though the name of the place bore the word: mountain, in actuality, the place was just a slightly steep hill. From afar, Zhang Yang could easily spot a fortress built on the side of the hill. The surrounding was protected by some

large, round pillars of wood, forming a barrier around the fortress. The entrance was two large wooden doors.

Without delaying any further, Zhang Yang took out his axe and shield and prepared for a huge battle. When he rode close to the fortress, he found the doors wide open with no one aroundit. He went inside to search, expecting an ambush, but no one was present. The entire fortress was as silent as a graveyard.

He rode around the entire fortress and could not find any living being! There was only one thing present, an ominous aura. A cold wind blew by and sent shivers up Zhang Yang's spine.

Chapter 269: Eliminate The Spider Queen

'Ding! You have search the Evil Wolves Fortress and found no traces of men from White Lamb Village. Perhaps you should return to the village and inform the villagers. Perhaps they have some insight on the manner.'

After the system notification rung in his ears, Zhang Yang turned back and hurried his way back to the village. The place was hauntingly eerie; Just by standing in there could give anyone nightmares!

After another 20 minutes, Zhang Yang returned back to White Lamb Village. The rest of the villagers had already dispersed and went back to do whatever they were doing. The only NPC left standing at the entrance was the same old woman.

"Adventurer? Why did you come back?" said the woman looking unhappy. She had a face that practically said, "You've eaten and taken everything, yet you have nothing to show for it!".

Zhang Yang explained, "I have searched the Evil Wolves Fortress and have not found anyone from the village! Moreover, the entire fortress was completely empty! Not even a single bandit was found!"

"What?!" The old woman was in shock. After a few moments of silence, she said, "I think you should head over to the White Fox Mountains and search there! Alaska, the man who went missing three days ago, went there to hunt and did not come back. I think

you can find something there! Ah! White Fox Mountains is located in the south. Alaska had always hunted for food in the forest, north of the mountain."

Zhang Yang nodded and rode towards the south and arrived in no time. White Fox Mountain was so much larger than Evil Wolves Mountain. The silhouette of the mountain looked like a fox lying down on its belly. Since the entire mountain was literally covered in white Camellia flowers, the entire mountain looked like white fox from afar. That was probably why the mountain was named that way.

Zhang Yang made his way towards the north of the White Fox Mountain and went through the forest. There, he found trails of a man's steps which was probably belonged to Alaska. After venturing through the thick forest, he found himself arriving at an large open area within the forest. There was a huge clear lake and in the middle of the lake was a small island measuring around 60 to 70 square feet. There were only small plants growing on the small island, and in the center, sat a young man who looked like he was in his twenties, with a petrified face.

Zhang Yang looked around and found the reason why the man was so afraid. Surrounding the entire lake, were red and black striped spiders as large as cows; enough to scare a weak-minded man!

In reality, spiders can float on water. But since this was a game, and the spiders were so large in size, that they probably couldn't walk across water!

Zhang Yang observed the man's name tag and found the missing target, Alaska.

[Alaska] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 65

HP: 321 / 6,500

Defense: 60

Zhang Yang patted the bear, and it growled fiercely in respond. Both of them charged bravely into the crowd of monsters.

The spiders were just normal tier monsters. Zhang Yang was not afraid even if though he was greatly outnumbered.

[Flowery Striped Spider] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 65

HP: 6,500

Defense: 60

The white bear quickly made its way into the aggro range of the spiders. Almost instantly, three spider had quickly caught on. Zhang Yang did not immediately start fighting, instead, he began to run around and manage to kited around 30 spiders. He continued on and only got down from the bear and started attacking after luring the monsters away so far from their spots that he risked them resetting.

<Charge>!
<Horizontal Sweep>!
<Thunder Strike>!
<Blast Wave>!

After four chained skills were unleashed, the spiders at the frontmost had only 1,000 HP left. Zhang Yang rode back up the bear and kited more monsters around the lake. After he had collected a trail of more than 30 monsters again, he used <Horizontal Sweep> to bring more than 4,000 damage to all the spiders around. The first few spiders immediately flipped over and perish, while the second wave of spiders from behind caught up to the front and received heavy damage.

Zhang Yang continued around like this for quite a while and had cleared up all the remaining spiders. It was a pity that the AoE of <Horizontal Sweep> was only two meters around him. He could

only damage around 10 monsters at a time, unlike Spellcaster or Hunter class skills that could easily cover a super-large area! That being said, Zhang Yang only took over two minutes to kill more than a hundred spiders, cleaning the place up.

"You're so strong! Hero!" Alaska swam from the island towards the mainland gave a thumbs up at Zhang Yang, with a face of admiration. "I don't think even the mightiest warrior in our village, Bagon would be a match to you! You know, I was once an adventurer like you, until I took an arrow to the knee!"

Zhang Yang smiled weakly and said, "Are you from White Lamb Village?"

"That's right! I'm Alaska! Thanks to those d*mned spiders, I was stuck there for 3 days and 3 nights! I would be dead if there was no water around! Hero! Do you have anything to eat? Could you spare me a some? I will never forget your deed!'

The face Alaska was wearing now, the expression that expressed immense gratitude, was exactly like Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er's faces when looking at the free meal menu!

Zhang Yang took the [Hawthorn Biscuits] from his inventory and gave them to him. "My name is Zhan Yu. I am an adventurer from White Jade Castle! Not long ago, I had passed through your village and had heard from the villagers there that all the men had gone missing mysteriously!"

"Oh! Thank the gods! These are my favorite Hawthorn Biscuits!"

Alaska gobbled the food in front him. After healing himself back to full health, he patted his tummy and said, "My guess? All the men from the village have been eaten by the spiders! Hero! You don't know it, but back then, the spiders were just one finger length away from my butt! I was almost eaten myself! By the gods! I was so frightened! If those nasty spiders had taken a bite off my butt, I would be d*mned! I'm sure that Marianne would not want me anymore..."

This NPC was a talkative person. Like a thousand ducks quaking away noisily beside him, truly a source of headache.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Rescue Our Men! Obtained 2,000,000 Experience Points!'

The quest ended just like that?

"Hero! Could you escort me back to the village? I'm worried that the spiders might chase after us and eat me! I will pay you luxuriously! I can't die now! I'm marrying Marianne next month! She is carrying my child in her womb! You must help me!" Luckily, Alaska started to talk again.

'Ding! Alaska has a quest for you: Escort Me Back to White Lamb Village! Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang nodded and said, "Fine! I'll take you back home! But! You must keep your mouth shut! Or else, you won't have to worry about the spiders, I'll hack you to death myself!"

Alaska nodded obediently and added one extra line, "but what if I am attacked by a monster? What should I do then?"

" "

[Escort Me Back To White Lamb Village] (Difficulty Level: C)

Quest Description: You're hired to escort Alaska back to White Lamb Village! Note: You have an agreement with Alaska. In case where Alaska is hurt in the journey, you will not receive a single copper coin and will have to compensate Alaska by on the damage he received. Please refer to [Alaska Contract Agreement].

Progress: Arrived to White Lamb Village with Alaska 0/1

Zhang Yang open his inventory window and saw a book in it. He took it out and read the contract. In the book, it was stated explicitly how much gold coins Zhang Yang should pay depending on the type and amount of damage Alaska received. For example, a broken finger would require 20,000 gold coins for compensation.

This had to be a prank!

Zhang Yang rode the bear and yelled crossly. "Let's go!"

As they made their way back to White Lamb Village, Alaska's

silence was only momentary, in just a few steps, he had started to "quack" endlessly. He had started to tell stories of him wetting his bed since he was three, to the point of the kind of nightmares he had! Zhang Yang was so annoyed that he almost lifted his axe to hack the man's mouth off!

Luckily, there were very few monsters on the way. The only annoying part of the journey was the distance, and the fact that Alaska was always asking for a rest after a few moments. They had spent more than one hour just to return to the village.

"Oh! Marianne! That's my Marianne right there!" As they entered the village, Alaska cried out and pointed to a young woman. He then jumped to his feet and ran over to her.

"Alaska! My husband!" The NPC woman rushed to Alaska and embrace together as both of them cried tears of relief.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Escort Me Back to White Lamb Village! Obtained 1,000,000 Experience Points!'

"Adventurer! You have rescued Alaska!" The previous NPC that had issued the quest for Zhang yang had appeared out of nowhere. "According to the boastful, good-for-nothing Alaska, he was almost eaten by spiders! Is that true?"

Zhang Yang nodded. "Yes. When I found him, he was trapped in an island surrounded by a large group of spiders!"

"Looks like my previous assumption was right! It wasn't the bandits who kidnapped our men, it was the bloody spiders that had eaten them!" The older woman NPC bellowed furiously. "Adventurer! You need to help us exterminate the spiders! You must not allow them to hurt others!"

'Ding! Villager of White Lamb Village has a quest for you: Exterminate the Spider Queen. Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang accepted the quest and the old woman said, "I remember something. To the south, there is the Spider's Valley. I heard that there was an extremely strong spider monster. Rumor has it that it was the God of Spider's daughter! Due to her violent outbreaks, she was banished by the God of Spider out of the Kingdom of Spiders. Eventually, a powerful magician had sealed this monster away. Perhaps, the seal was broken and the monster now runs free, wrecking havoc to all living beings! Adventurer! You must go there and see!"

[Exterminate the Spider Queen] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Kill Catalina, the spider leader in the Valley of Spiders and earn justice for all! Valley of Spider is located to the south of White Lamb Village.

Progress: Kill Catalina: 0/1

Zhang Yang left the village and rode the bear down towards the

south. He had spent more than one hour to search for the Valley of Spiders. Similar to White Fox Mountain, this clump of hills brought out the shape of a spider through the deep parts of the valley and the blackened sky around it, making it look as if a large spider was crawling out of the mountain.

Zhang Yang pulled the reins of the bear hard and charged into the valley. Along the way, he kited many spider monsters that chased after them with their eight freaky legs.

The valley was large beyond explanation. It was so large that it could even fit a huge palace somewhere in the valley! The construction of the palace was very odd. It did not resemble the architecture of any man or elf, dwarf, or beastman; the palace was literally filled with many statues of spiders. The palace only had one floor, but the floor was so huge that it stood as tall as a hundred meters and more, displaying power and dignity!

Just as Zhang Yang was surveying the palace, the spiders that were chasing after Zhang Yang had caught up. Zhang Yang hurriedly turned around and jumped down from the bear to begin his massacre. <Thunder Strike> cannot be used while the user is on a mount. The skill was different from normal single attack skills, since it was an AoE type that can only be cast by blasting waves of lightning on the ground.

Once Zhang Yang had cleared all the spiders around him, he went up to the palace entrance.

Four elite tiered spiders were guarding the entrance with heads as big as vans! Their bright, threatening red and black stripe made them look extremely dangerous, implying some deadly venom at play.

[Flower Striped Venomous Spider] (Elite, Beast)

Level: 67

HP: 134,000

Defense: 700

Zhang Yang controlled the bear and charged into them. The spiders noticed Zhang Yang approaching and quickly surrounded him to attack.

Ding! Ding! Tang!

The spear-like legs of the spiders struck Zhang Yang's metal armor.

'Ding! You have received the effect <Spider's Venom> (1 Stack). Received 500 natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!'

'Ding! You have received the effect <Spider's Venom> (2 Stack). Received 1,000 natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!'

The monster's normal attack were rather average, around 3,000 damage or so. Their attacks were reduce greatly and only damaged Zhang Yang at 1,400 after being deducted. However, their normal attacks had a chance of inflicting the poison DoT effect on him. If the stacks were low, it would not matter for Zhang Yang. But, the poison could be stacked on endlessly; and when the stack count reaches above 10, Zhang Yang would never endure it even with <Shared Life> was active!

The only way to survive this was by speed-killing!

It was fortunate that these spiders had only 130,000HP, Zhang Yang only needed 30 seconds or so to kill them. After he had taken care of two spiders, Zhang Yang had already racked up 16 layers of <Spider's Venom>, taking 5,406 HP every three seconds. Unable to take it anymore, Zhang Yang quickly activate <Warrior's Will> and remove all the negative debuffs on him. He quickly ended the battle soon after.

Instead of the regular snacks, Zhang Yang sat down and ate the [Hawthorn Biscuit] and waited until the DoT effects on him wore off before moving on.

The monsters in the palace was spread all over the grounds. Sometimes, he had to deal with two more, some time he could deal with one less, either way, Zhang Yang had only stacked up seven <Spider's Venom> before killing the group of spiders without activating <Warrior's Will>.

The palace had five stages, and after three hours, he came to the end of the first stage. He was shocked to find this Spider Palace was just the same as a regular dungeon, with mini bosses and all!

After proceeding through two floors of the palace, he encountered some huge-*ss spiders! Those eight legs were at least 10 meters in length and were as long and sharp as spears. On the legs of the spiders were hairy thorns that gleamed with a dark blue light, and looked as sharp as daggers!

That being said, the weirdest, out-of-this-world, WTF fact was that the spider had a face, of a human male!

[Marzarrock] (Gray-Silver, Beast)

Level: 67

HP: 2,000,000

Defense: 700

Note: Catalina fourth child. Naturally violent. Favors fresh blood!

Chapter 270: Liu Wei

Zhang Yang gave the boss a single attempt. Since he could not ride the battle mount in an indoor environment, the maximum healing amount of <Berserker's Heal> was only at 30,000 HP at most. Moreover, Marzarrock's <Spider's Venom> was too strong for Zhang Yang, or practically anyone else! One stack could deal close to 2,000 damage every 3 seconds, no one, not even Zhang Yang could handle it when the stack count got higher than three or four!

The boss's physical attacks were nothing to be afraid of, however, Zhang Yang had no way of continuing the fight without a Priest or a Sacred Knight supporting him with <Dispel>.

Just as he was about to contact Han Ying Xue to join his party, he felt a sudden nudge on his physical body's shoulder and Fatty Han's voice muffled in his ear. "Ooi! Hello! Time for dinner yo!"

Zhang Yang found himself a safe spot and logged out. He tossed the gaming helmet aside and got ready for dinner. Just as he was combing his hair, he realized something and asked Fatty Han. "Why didn't you bring Yun Yun along with you?"

"Sigh!" Fatty Han sighed heavily. "We broke up!"

Zhang Yang was stunned. "When did that happen?"

"Just a few days ago!"

"Did she found out about your other girlfriend?"

"No!" Fatty Han raised an eye brow. "In order to have a threesome with Hai Li, I have been trying to "educate" her to have an open mind about it, to look at the world in a new perspective! In fact, just a few days back, she agreed to try to ride the tricycle! She had even insisted on calling someone on her own."

"Isn't that what you always wanted? So, how did you guys break up?"

"Know this, I had never mentioned to Yun Yun anything about Hai Li!" Fatty Han frowned again. "At first, I didn't give a damn who the third person would be, I've never experienced riding the tricycle with a stranger anyway! In the end, as I was already puffing with steam, I arrived home with Yun Yun, ready to go. She had even mention the surprise guest was already waiting in bed. I was raging hard, rearing to go! I carried Yun Yun into the room and saw the most disgusting thing I had ever seen in my life. A fully naked man in my bed!"

Zhang Yang stopped styling his hair and burst into laughter. He laughed for a good long time, wincing in pain as he grabbed his sides. "Fatty, you dug your own grave this time! Threesome? No one had ever set the rules that it had to be one man and two women!"

"F*ck you! Why are you still laughing! F*ck you man!" Fatty Han grimaced. "D*mn! My *ss almost got stabbed! Now that I think

about it, I almost fell ill the next day! Sigh...why did I have to face such a tragic event!"

"Relax bro...you'll heal in no time! Plus, your face is as thick as a city wall! You'll be back on your feet in no time!" said Zhang Yang as he patted Fatty Han's shoulder.

Just as Zhang Yang pulled the door open, Wei Yan Er was standing there with her fist raised, ready to knock on the door. The little girl jumped in delight. "Just in time! This lady was about to pester you two lazy bums!" she said, pointing to her cousin who stood behind her.

Zhang Yang said nothing and rubbed the little girl's head furiously.

The four of them came into the restaurant. As expected of Han Ying Xue the beauty queen, her sensual eyes were capable of sending any men to their feet with just a simple wink. Almost everyone in the hall had their eyes locked on her as she came to her seat. Luckily, the woman was naturally a weak against cold. Even though the hotel was slightly warm, she had covered her voluptuous, bombastic body of a devil with thick clothing. If she had not done so, the entire restaurant would probably be flooded with saliva!

Since they knew that their meals will be paid by the event committee, they had purposely picked and ordered the expensive dishes. If the committee had not limited the food expense to 2,000 dollars a meal, and participant would have to pay for any excess, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er would have already ordered more

than that.

Zhang Yang laughed at their extreme comical behavior and said, "You know what they say, you are what you eat. I don't want you two to end up as sows!"

"Hehe! This girl was born skinny as a stick! I won't get fat no matter how much I eat! How's that? Jealous?" Wei Yan Er stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang.

Tak Tak Tak!

A crisp sound of high heel struck the hard marble floor echoed throughout the room. Those legs that wore the high heels were long and sexy, easily being mistaken for a mannequin's. Higher above those slender legs was a body that could incur sins from a thousand men! As she walked through the restaurant, the slight bumps with each step sent her tiny buttocks shaking from the left to right at a steady rhythm. A tight one-piece dress, colored violet and red adorned her stimulating body. As the dress beneath her waist was rather short, each step she took will reveal a large portion of her fair thighs, almost to the point where her undergarments could be seen! That area where it was almost exposed, just barely, was more than enough to have men locking their focus on that forbidden region.

As for her assets, they were only partially protected by the deep V-cut dress. Almost one third of her massive honkas were exposed. If she would just jump a little more, the peaks of her tatas would definitely pop out! Let's not mention the deep dark abyssal cleavage that could immediately enslave any men to her bidding!

She was wearing a set of modern sunglasses, no one could accurately guess who she was. Though her sharp chin, and jade white complexion would suggest that she belonged to the upper-class of society.

This sinful of a lady had become the center of attention the moment she had set foot into the restaurant. Countless pairs of eyes were focusing like a DSLR Camera with supreme autotracking technology. Their heads turned to follow the woman's movement, all the way till she sat down in front of a table. She then sat in such a sultry manner that when her dress was lifted up, whether it was intentionally or not, she revealed a large portion of her fair *ss. Those guys that had their sight locked on to her lost their minds to the point of one of them actually falling off his chair.

Unlike the other men, Fatty Han was looking, or rather observing the woman with a different type of lens, in a different spectrum and said, "Little Yang, dare to have a bet with me? I'm betting that woman is a total slut!"

"Not interested."

Sitting right opposite of Zhang Yang was another woman with a sinful body that could sent men killing each other just to have a handshake with her. Thus, he had only glanced at the previous woman for a second, before focusing on the dishes laying right in front of him. In fact, he was rather excited snatching food with Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er.

"Ack. Hey! That's mine! So sneaky noob tank! How dare you snatch away my shrimp!" Wei Yan Er was about to pick out a large shrimp when Zhang Yang swiftly snatched it with his chopsticks.

"First come, first serve! The early bird gets the worm! The dinner table is a battle zone where everyone sitting here is the enemy. Do you understand? Or do you want me to demonstrate it again?" Zhang Yang grinned evilly.

"Dude! Little Yang! I'm talking to you! Pay attention!" Fatty Han smack Zhang Yang at his shoulder. "No matter how many times I look at her, she just looks familiar! I can't remember who she is!"

Zhang Yang had food in his mouth and spoke carefully with his mouth full. "Which lady in this world isn't familiar to you?"

"F*ck!"

Coincidentally, the exposed-tits lady removed her glasses, Wei Yan Er finally glanced at her and said "Oh".

"That's just Liu Shi Shi!"

"Oh yeah! You're right! She's Liu Shi Shi!" Fatty Han smack his thigh forcefully. "She's the upcoming new star! She relied on her sexy appearance to be popular! I remember once that I saw her in a TV show, she was just practically swinging them boobs all over! Every time I see her in that TV show, I could not help but to bite on something to resist the lust!"

"Huh. Not bad little brat. I'd never known that you would keep up with famous celebrities!" said Zhang Yang. He turned his head over and had a good look at the woman. Indeed she was beautiful, but not to the point where men will kill each other for one night with her. Still, she was above average. She was just extremely sexy because of the way she dressed and how she dared to expose her tits out in public.

Wei Yan Er pouted and said, "No I don't! Liu Shi Shi had shot for an advertisement with Silky Soft Holdings before. That's why I recognized her. But, she's no good person! When she met my father, those eyes of hers would literally glint with greed! And there's my own good-for-nothing father! He would actually fall for that witch's trap! I was so pissed off back then!'

Han Ying Xue frowned and gently nudge her cousin sister in her cheeks. "Don't be bad mouthing your own parents!"

"Oh." Wei Yan Er calmed down and nodded. From Wei Yan Er's perspective, she treated Han Ying Xue with far more respect than her own father.

"Oh right! How and why did is the little brat staying over at your place?" Zhang Yang asked Han Ying Xue.

"Obviously! It's all my father's fault!" Wei Yan Er interjected.
"That pig is always bringing random girls over and let them stay overnight! I could not stand it any longer and ran away to stay with sister!"

Fatty Han reacted weirdly. Instead of anything else, he displayed an admiration expression and whispered to Zhang Yang. "No wonder they say an official would have to sacrifice a wife's happiness in order to gain ranks. If only I was a billionaire, I would have thousands of girls coming home with me every single day! That's what I would call, living the life!"

"Ack!" Zhang Yang continued to play snatch-the-food with Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er.

"Hey look! There's a guy sitting next to Liu Shi Shi! D*mn! They're kissing! Deep! French! Tongue! Tongue! Out in the open! Isn't that chick a superstar? Wouldn't she be bothered by the paparazzi?" Fatty Han could not find the mood to have his meal, all his attention was placed on the woman and reporting every single movement.

Zhang Yang continued "hunting" for food and did not even lift his head up. "Celebrities are different from each other. Only those really popular ones would be afraid of letting the media know of their private life. Those half-boiled celebrities would, on the other hand, expect some rumors flying around. That way, they could get their names out in the open! In the entertainment industry, without getting their name out in the open, whether on television or any form of media, would slowly drown themselves and will be, simply put, unpopular.

[&]quot;D*mn that not good piece of shameless bastard!"

Wei Yan Er picked up a piece of char siew and stuff them into her tiny mouth. She frowned while chewing. "I can't let this pass. I would have the company call her up! If she wants to have rumors about her flying around, it's her deal. But she's current the ambassador for our company! If would be a problem if our product goes down with her!"

Han Ying Xue nodded in satisfaction. "My Yan Er is getting more and more mature nowadays!"

In the end, Zhang Yang had had enough of the commotion and turned around to look at the busty chick. At her side was a young man with a rather handsome look on his face. An extreme well-fitted western suit adorned his well-built body. He was wearing a pair gold-frame glasses that brought out his elegance and class. He was nothing like what Fatty Han had just described him to be.

However, the moment Zhang Yang sight was fixed at the man, he froze. The chopsticks in his hand fell off. A sudden involuntary shiver went through his body, and he clenched his fist.

That man, was none other than his all-time arch nemesis. Liu Wei!

"Hey dummy! What's wrong with you?" said Han Ying Xue when she noticed Zhang Yang acting abnormally.

Zhang Yang immediately took in a deep breath and turned over to face her. "It's nothing!"

"It must be something! I can smell it from a mile away!" It was never easy to trick Han Ying Xue the sly b*tch. Her busy-body face turned to him and said, "Do you actually know that bastard? Ah! Perhaps, you guys had an argument before!"

"Argument or not, it's none of your business!" Zhang Yang bellowed angrily.

"Hey! What's wrong with you, noob tank! When did my cousin sister ever wrong you! Why are you yelling like that?"

"Hey hey hey, that bastard has just got up! And he's coming this way!"

Zhang Yang was stunned. According for his past life, Zhang Yang would only encounter Lin Yu one year later, and only because of her, Zhang Yang would encounter Liu Wei! However, as the event was transpiring right now, fate has taken a different path! Perhaps...the only person being reincarnated...was not Zhang Yang alone?

Just as thousands of thoughts was rambling in his brain, Liu Wei had reached their table. He gestured with absolute mannerism and said, "Are you perhaps, Lone Desert Smoke members? Zhan Yu, Slim and Handsome, Little Snow and Drizzler? My name is Liu Wei. I, too am a player of 'God' Miracle'. Pleased to meet your acquaintance. It's an honor to meet the four legends!"

If Zhang Yang had not known about this man's true nature behind that façade, he would have already been tricked by his warm welcome.

In his mind, Zhang Yang thought, "If he had been reincarnated again, I wouldn't be sitting here alive! Ah...I see. The Liu family must have tried to take this chance, to take advantage of the Soaring Swords competition to set his base in 'God' Miracle' and build their own industry within the game! They are the first mega company and pioneers in their field, that's how they were able to gain such lucrative business! Liu Wei must be searching for the first guild to set his foot in the game. Hmph. Now that Lone Desert Smoke has become China's number one guild, he must be thinking of getting his f*cking hands on me!"

Liu Wei came up to Zhang Yang with all his well-trained mannerisms but he was fated to be disappointed. How on earth would Zhang Yang be willing to cooperate with him?

Chapter 271: Hit A Corner

Liu Wei was smiling with such radiance that he was literally glowing with the main character's aura of a movie's super handsome man! Standing not far behind him, Zhang Yang noticed immediately that there two extremely well-built middle-aged man were staring at all of them with extreme prejudice. Their silent stoic stance was practically bursting with the strength of tigers. They were Liu Wei's bodyguards. If any of them made any sudden movements, these two punks would definitely drop them by the second!

Zhang Yang smiled slightly. Fatty Han, who had known Zhang Yang his whole life picked up Zhang Yang's sudden glint in his eyes. Zhang Yang pointed at the chair and said, "Please sit!"

Liu Wei bowed a little and sat down elegantly. However, with a loud "thud" he fell onto the floor hard, with his legs practically pointed up to the sky! The gentlemanly, classy, masculine image that was created was completely destroyed!

"Hahaha!" Fatty Han and Wei Yan Er burst in laughter.

"Master Liu!" the two bodyguards came dashing to his rescue. One of them lifted him up to his feet, while the other stared at Zhang Yang with rage in his eyes. Both of them saw Zhang Yang legs moving the moment when Liu Wei was about to sit. Zhang Yang had deliberately nudged the chair by half and inch to purposely make Liu Wei fall down.

"I'm okay! I'm okay! I'd just slipped! That's all!" In his eyes, there was a split-second of rage. However, his face maintained a kind and forgiving appearance, enough to fool anyone who was not observant enough. He sat back on to the chair properly this time, with less grace.

Before withdrawing, the guards threw an intense glare at Zhang Yang and stood behind Liu Wei. The two guards' mountain-like posture was truly not something you'd want to provoke.

"So, you're Zhan Yu!" said Liu Wei as he fixed his sight on Zhang Yang. "The guild master of Lone Desert Smoke! China's number one tank! The man behind the feat of leading Lone Desert Smoke to claim all of the First Clear Achievements of all Hardcore Mode dungeons! The champion who had claimed the first Territory in the game! The hottest and most popular players in Soaring Swords competition!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "You flatter me too much. I didn't even know that I'm that popular!"

"Master Liu!" The busty chick from before, Liu Shi Shi came by and looked at Liu Wei with a concerned face. "Are you alright?"

The nudge from Zhang Yang earlier was so subtle that only those with sharp eyes would know that it was his doing. Oblivious to that, Liu Shi Shi had sincerely thought that Liu Wei had slipped and fell all by himself.

"I'm fine. Thanks!" Liu Wei smiled gently and pulled out another

chair beside him. "Please have a seat."

He then turned back to Zhang Yang and asked, "Could you tell me your true name?"

Liu Wei must have some connections to the hotel staff or the Soaring Sword Committee to be able to recognize that the four of them were from Lone Desert Smoke. Even if Zhang Yang would not reveal his name, Liu Wei could easily pull a few strings to get his personal details.

Zhang Yang smiled courteously. "My name is Zhang. Zhang Yang."

"Mr. Zhang!" said Liu Wei with a tone suggesting that he was addressing an old friend. "Would I interest you a business plan with me?"

"Hmm?"

"Ah! How silly of me. I had forgot to introduce my background! I am the vice-president of Ming Sheng Technology! We want to purchase and acquire a famous guild in the game 'God's Miracle'! You should know, currently there are more than 200,000,000 players in the game! This game is a large and extremely lucrative industry! The company wishes to infiltrate the market in 'God's Miracle', and what better way than having a mutual cooperation with Lone Desert Smoke!" said Liu Wei as he revealed his plan.

Zhang Yang laughed lightly. "So, you're saying that Ming Sheng Tech would like to purchase us? The entire guild of Lone Desert Smoke?"

"That's correct!" Liu Wei nodded. "We currently have two options. One, the company will completely own the guild. Two, we could buy the guild as shares. However, the company must own 51% of the shares."

"Sorry. Not interested!" Zhang Yang downright rejected his proposal without a second thought.

"Mr. Zhang, would you please listen to my explanation before you made any rash decision?" Liu Wei kept his composure and only smiled.

On the other hand, Liu Shi Shi was frowning and angry. "Master Liu was approaching you with his grace and sincerity! How could you not behave in the same manner? Do you even know what kind of company is Ming Sheng Technology? Street thug." The last insult was said so softly that only the people around her side of the table could hear it. If they were paying any attention to her.

Fatty Han was definitely paying attention. Even though he was as huge, raging pervert, he was still a man who valued a brother and willing a take a bullet for Zhang Yang. He scoffed coldly. "Street thug? Please...what are you? Street car? Street bus? Name your price! How much does it cost me for a night with you? I've never been in bed with a celebrity."

"Y-You!" Like a cat that had just gotten its tail stepped on, Liu Shi Shi jumped to her feet and pointed her tiny finger at Fatty Han.

"Shi Shi calm down! Can't you see that he was making a bad joke? How could you not have a sense of humor?" said Liu Wei calmly. However, when Liu Wei glared at Liu Shi Shi, she froze on the spot. Immediately, Liu Wei smiled and turned over to Zhang Yang. "I understand that your current Territory is a gold mine, however, did it ever occur to you that it would only last as long as the majority of players are at Level 60. Once players start to reach Level 70, or even Level 80, the overall profit from that particular Territory will drop!"

To talk about the game development and future market, there was no one else but Zhang Yang, the man who reincarnated and possessed an inhuman level of knowledge of the game. Not even a professional gaming economist could accurately predict the outcome of the game. After a patch, they could only rely on prediction and nothing else.

Zhang Yang remained stoic, unexpressive yet he was laughing mentally. "In that case, Mr Liu, please teach me!"

Han Ying Xue chuckled when she heard Zhang Yang tried to act all humbly. She quickly rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang. That thousand-expression b*tch with a superior level seduction had even manage to one-up Liu Shi Shi, leaving her pale and frozen.

During this time, Wei Yan Er took the chance to scoop up the last piece of lobster and smiled happily as if she had hit the jackpot. Liu Wei had been paying full attention to Zhang Yang and had not noticed the other two fair princesses. Once he turned his gaze to them, he felt a sudden cold shiver that flowed down his spine. Both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were world class women; the kind that was not just beautiful but had special features that made them stand out among the rest of the world class beauties.

Han Ying Xue was like the Queen of Charm herself; her erotic eyes were her special feature that could easily stray a loyal man from his wife. On the other hand, Wei Yan Er had a petite little body that gave of an innocent look and could also easily charm an innocent man! Both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er, a mature and and blossoming top-class rarity!

It took him while before Liu Wei realized that he was staring at them. He quickly recollected his composure and reverted back to his "Humbly Gentleman" like stature. However, deep down, his lust and greed were burning violently, he knew that he must use all his methods to get his hands on Lone Desert Smoke and these two women!

He cleared his throat and said, "So, currently, you own one piece of land. That gives you a huge advantage in the game's economy. However, when the second, third or subsequent lands appear, your profits will drop exponentially. So you can earn say, 100,000,000 or 200,000,000 a month, that's great, but after two months' time, I'd say your profit will drop to almost 10,000,000. By the time players have reached Level 100 and had moved on to the new Chaos Realm, you won't be able to earn a single cent!'

Hundred million!? Liu Shi Shi had began to breath vigorously. Her rising and falling humongous chest trembled in excitement. To think that a man could easily have a hundred million dollars worth of fortune; he could easily be a piece of cow dung, but many flowery girls would be fighting for a place in that piece of excrement. Now that she knows what Zhang Yang was capable of, her view had now changed.

The latter patch of 'God's Miracle' had yet to be announced. However, there are official introduction in the main official site. When players have reach Level 100, they can enter the new area called the Chaos Realm where players from all 8 servers will join together to form a real world war.

Liu Wei spoke with much confidence and influence. "Mr Zhang, you have to place your sight further into the future! Don't let minor profits blind your eyes from the future! Right now, we can offer 1,000,000,000 dollars to purchase Lone Desert Smoke, or invest 300,000,000 dollars as investment. Of course, we will be taking the Thunderstorm Castle and the land in White Jade Castle. However, I suggest Mr Zhang Yang to take the latter offer. Lone Desert Smoke has such a fantastic and bright future ahead! Under the leadership of the Ming Sheng Group, we can definitely raise the guild to produce 3,000,000,000 or 5,000,000,000,000, perhaps even 10,000,000,000,000!"

Liu Wei looked at Zhang Yang with eyes full of anticipation, however, deep down, he was laughing maniacally. If Zhang Yang had selected the first option, Liu Wei would have to fork out 1,000,000,000. However, if Zhang Yang had chosen to go for the second option, Liu Wei would only need to pay up 300,000,000 and could eventually own Zhang Yang through the dilution of his

shares! Eventually, Liu Wei could even make Zhang Yang work for him!

While they were having that conversation, Liu Shi Shi has already lost it when she heard the number 300,000,000 and 1,000,000,000. Her hands and legs were trembling violently. She could have sworn that the region between her thighs was getting slightly damp.

On the other hand, Fatty Han was furious at Liu Wei's ridiculous offer. He knew that Little Yang's Little Merchandize Shop could easily earn 500,000 gold coins a day, which was equivalent to RMB12,000,000, and in a year, Zhang Yang could easily earn 140,000,000! Just that small land alone could be worth more than 1,000,000,000! This little bugger was being too shameless!

Zhang Yang maintained his stoic look. "I may be the guild master of Lone Desert Smoke. However, I cannot make that decision alone! Furthermore, our guild is currently in contract with Silky Soft Holdings. If we do wish to cooperate with you, wouldn't that be violating the terms of the contract?"

"That's just a small problem. There's nothing that says money can't solve a little contract penalty." Said Liu Wei as he gestured with his hand nonchalantly. "I'll personally help you take over the responsibility!"

While Liu Wei was not looking, Zhang Yang hurriedly look towards Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er and raised his eye brows, indicating that the man was trying to coax Zhang Yang away right under their nose!

Han Ying Xue responded immediately. "Mr Liu, don't you think trust is the most important thing in business?"

"Wrong! The market is like a battle field. You have to use any method you can to obtain the best results!" said Liu Wei while raising a finger and wagging it.

"That's great! The lawyers in my company could really use this." Said Han Ying Xue as she raised her phone up and showed a running recorder to Liu Wei.

Liu Wei staggered. "W-What lawyers?"

"Oh! My apologies. I've forgot to introduce them to Mr Liu." Zhang Yang pretended to be surprised and facepalmed himself. "This person's IGN is Little Snow, who so happens to be Miss Han, the largest shareholder of Silky Soft Holdings!"

"Me too! Me too!" said the little Wei Yan Er as she struggled to stand up on her toes.

"Hm. That little girl, Drizzler, is Miss Wei, the only daughter of the current president of Silky Soft Holdings!"

Liu Wei's face turned into the color of the sea. His expression was like he had actually tasted a spoonful of houseflies.

To think that he had attempted to coax someone out of their company contract right in front of their face!

To think that these two females were hiding their true selves in such manner! Liu Wei had to change his strategy. Now that he had insulted Silky Soft Holdings, he would need to get his hands on Silky Soft Holdings as well! That way Lone Desert Smoke could be in his hands!

Furthermore, Silky Soft Holdings was worth around 10 billion dollars. If they could get their hand on that company, Ming Sheng Technology would expand as a multi-platform company, becoming closer to being a multinational super company!

Besides, those two girls were extremely alluring!

Liu Wei thoughts quickly shifted and he turned his attention to the girls. How to get them hook up to Liu Wei...

Liu Wei had much confidence in his handsome face and those excellent humbly gentleman-like manners!

Chapter 272: The Assembled Weapon

"Master Liu~~" Liu Shi Shi moaned silkily. As a woman, she had a heightened sense when it comes to a male's attention. She realized that Liu Wei's attention was now directly onto someone else but not her. She tried her best to draw back Liu Wei's attention.

Compared to the manufactured charms of Liu Shi Shi, Han Ying Xue was a natural. Just her glinting pair of eyes could set a man burning with the raging fire of lust. Those two women could not be compared as they were both on a different scale! Liu Wei immediately responded to her pathetic attempt.

"Miss Liu must be tired after having to work for the entire day! Please head back for some rest!"

A direct slap to the face! A hidden command to "get lost!" so that he could court with the ladies in peace!

Working in the entertainment industry, Liu Shi Shi could easily understand how a man thought, and got the message clear and simple! With that bold statement to her face, she turned emotionless and stood up. "They say, that once you obtain a new toy, you'll forget about your past passion! Prince Liu surpasses even that statement. The first night with his wife would probably bore him already! Cough"

She turned away and placed her slim hands on her slender waist, shaking it while walking out of the restaurant.

Liu Wei turned around to glace at her. A sudden, unsatisfied emotion boiled up in him. He had not had his fun with her yet... Right now, it was not the good time to call her back. Perhaps he shall give her a call later. Something as simple as donating some money to invest in her upcoming film should suffice, that amount of money would not even faze him one bit!

Zhang Yang noticed what was going on and quickly took out a silver bank card, tossing it through the air towards Fatty Han. Fatty Han caught it midair with a questioning look. Zhang Yang whispered something in to his ears. With a straight face, Fatty Han nodded, slipped the card into his front pocket and walked away quickly.

Liu Wei did not know what were they planning, and he couldn't care less about it. Right now, the main agenda was Han Yang Xue.

"Miss Han, I'm very interested in the current development of Silky Soft Holdings. Perhaps if we could find a time to discuss this matter?"

Han Ying Xue had no spare energy to deal with him. She was busy battling Wei Yan Er over a piece of white truffle cake on the table. The only response Liu Wei got was the noisy clicking of her chopsticks.

Liu Wei frowned at her reaction. These two sisters had to be the type of generation who inherited their family's wealth, raised in an environment of surplus. Yet, they were behaving as if they had never seen anything like a cake in their life! They were actually fighting over a piece of cake! He was already tempted to just say something like, "Please stop fighting. I'll buy you all the cakes you want as long as you be my woman!"

However, little did Liu Wei know, it was not really about the cake, but the bond Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er had as sisters.

Liu Wei was always confident of his diplomatic sway, and his charm. However, this was the first time that he had encountered such a woman like Han Ying Xue. It was the first time Liu Wei would actually doubt his own ability. That, or this woman actually swings the other way.

Wei Yan Er completely lost to Han Ying Xue who was more experienced with her chopsticks. She pouted her lips and puffed her cheeks as she could only stared at Han Ying Xue slowly chewing on the last piece of cake that they had been fighting over for at least three minutes. Boiling with anger, she slammed the table with her petite little pair of hands and snapped.

"What is a stupid faced person like you still doing here?!"

Stupid face? Liu Wei's cheek twitched, Zhang Yang could have sworn he saw a vein pop on Liu Wei's forehead. Liu Wei was the vice-president of Ming Sheng Technology, the man who was bound to inherit all the fortune from his family, the man with a natural born elegance and looks that could easily attract any single woman with a wave of his hands, the man who was dubbed as "China's most eligible bachelor"!

With such grace, mannerism, and wealth, he was the perfect

woman's perfect prince charming! How could a man such as him, take an insult like "stupid face"!

Tak Tak Tak!

The sound of those familiar high heels, striking the floor, echoed through the restaurant. Liu Wei turned around to glance and was so shocked that he almost fell to the floor again.

It was Liu Shi Shi, the same woman who had flung herself to Liu Wei. The same woman that was now clinging to the fat guy like glue! The two of them were giggling and chuckling away as if they were madly in love! Anyone who was oblivious of the situation could easily mistake them for a couple that had been together for a few years!

What just happened? Not only had he yet to obtain the two fishes in front of him, but he had already lost one good fish to some fat f*ck!

Now Liu Wei had finally understood why Zhang Yang had thrown his card to that fat guy! Liu Wei's gaze turned cold and distant.

The first strike, Zhang Yang had purposely kicked his chair and embarrass him in public by having him plant his ass on the ground.

The second strike, deliberately withholding the identity of the

two important ladies and spilling his rotten self to them.

The third strike, knowing clearly that Liu Shi Shi was his woman, Zhang Yang had made the fat guy court her openly and deliberately.

As Sun Tzu said, the first and second mistake could be of natural causes, but the last strike was deliberate and intentional!

What did he ever do to offend Zhang Yang? Why must he be so blatantly against him!? Liu Wei was racking his mind, finding for a reason, but the more the thought about it, the more confused he became! He was sure that the two of them had never even met before this! He was from Zhou Su and Liu Wei was from Lin Hai, the two cities were completely far apart and passing by each other on the street was completely impossible!

"What's up bro!" Fatty Han sat down with a wide grin on his flabby face. Liu Shi Shi, she was leaning softly and gently against that fat guy's overly large shoulder, completely ignoring Liu Wei!

It was as if Zhang Yang was wielding a massive Celestial hammer and using it to pummel his emotions. The slam was so strong to his face that Liu Wei could not take it anymore.

Looking at Fatty Han's ridiculous folds of fat, Liu Wei had completely lost the intention to f*ck Liu Shi Shi anymore. He had no desire of putting on the same old broken slippers worn by that fat f*ck. Twitching uncontrollably, Liu Wei finally gave up. He knew that if he overstayed his welcome, he would only face more

embarrassing moments. He stood up abruptly, dropped a "see you later" and moved away like a centipede that had lost all its legs save for two.

"Hey! Noob tank, did you have beef with that guy? Did he offend you in the past?" said Wei Yan Er with her eyes opened wide.

Zhang Yang shrugged nonchalantly. "Oh, nothing of that. His face just pissed my off. Oh right, b*tchy snow, I want to fight a couple of bosses later, I might need you to help me. Get the Lover's Charm from Ice Cube and teleport over to me."

"I wanna come too!" cried the little girl.

Zhang Yang sighed.

"How about this? If Ice Cube isn't online, both of you girls come over. But if Ice Cube happens to be online, don't waste time and let Han Ying Xue come over alone." Zhang Yang laid down an ultimatum.

All of them finished what was left on the table and quickly went back to their room.

"Little Yang, I swear to god, whoever says that Liu Shi Shi can't act, I will personally shove his head up my *ss!" said Fatty Han as he waved goodbye to the departing Liu Shi Shi. The card that Zhang Yang had just given over to Fatty Han had over 100,000 dollars in credit, and was only used to hire Liu Shi Shi to put up a

show and act in front of Liu Wei.

Zhang Yang could not help but laugh.

Liu Wei would never be dissuaded from ruling over 'God' Miracle' in spite of failing to own Lone Desert Smoke. There were still plenty of other guilds for him to choose from. However, Zhang Yang will never allow that him to succeed. No matter which guild Liu Wei tries to buy, he will go all out and declare that guild as public enemy number one. He will never allow Liu Wei to set his foot safely in the game!

According to his memories, Liu Wei will first invest a large sum of money in a particular guild. Slowly and eventually, he will use money to buy over the high-ranking officers in the guild and execute a hostile takeover, a coup from within. He will then proceed to create a new guild called "The Myth"!

In this life, he will never allow "The Myth" to even come into fruition!

Zhang Yang arrived at his room and quickly logged into the game. Sun Xin Yu was offline, so he had to wait for Han Ying Xue and her little cousin sister to slowly take their time to reach his position.

If Zhang Yang used the [Friendship Jade] and summoned Smaug's shadow, he believed that he could easily take down the boss. However, this treasure was just too valuable to be used on this Gray-Silver boss. With its limited use, he would at least keep it

for a Violet-Platinum boss's first kill!

It took them two whole hours to reach to where Zhang Yang was. When Wei Yan Er saw the boss difficulty, she pouted. "Oh come on! It's just a Gray-Silver boss! What a complete let down, noob tank!"

"I had never thought that you had such high expectations of me!" Zhang Yang laughed.

"Well? Go on then, kick the boss's butt!"

Zhang Yang nodded and went up charging at the boss.

"I smell the scent of a man!" Marzarrock cried out excitingly as it shifted on its massive legs and turned towards Zhang Yang.

The battle started promptly. Now that Han Ying Xue was present with her {Dispel}, the boss was turned from a formidable foe to a street thug. As long as Zhang Yang had a {Regeneration} on him, there was nothing left for Han Ying Xue to do other than {Punishment Ray} at the gaps between her {Dispels}.

Within five minutes, Marzarrock wailed and fell defeated, dropping many loots.

"Hmm? Hey! Noob tank! What is this thingamajig?" asked Wei Yan Er as she poked out a piece of Gray-Silver object among the loots.

[Sword Piece of Dark Enigmatic Sword] (Gray-Silver, Weapon Shard)

Use: Assemble all seven Sword Pieces and one Sword Hilt. Able to forge a Dark Enigmatic Sword through Smithing.

Level: 60

"Assembled Weapon!" Zhang Yang was surprised. "Just as the item describes. Once you gather all seven sword pieces and one sword hilt, you can forge a weapon through the main city's Smithing Shop. This is not limited to only swords or weapons. You can also find shards of armor, rings, and also necklaces! Based on the rarity of this weapon shard, the completed [Dark Enigmatic Sword] will have the same power of a Yellow-Gold tier weapon!"

"Huh? Why didn't it just drop a Yellow-Gold tier weapon then? It's so complicated and waste of time!"

Zhang Yang laughed. He was always amazed at how oblivious the little girl was.

"Alright. Listen up. Firstly, the Assembled Weapon system was created to balance out the extreme scarcity of high-leveled bosses. However, since the Assembled Weapons require many weapon shards, it will balance out the number of weapon availability. That way, the prestige of higher leveled weapons will not be effected.

Second, its just another way for the gaming company to earn some profit. The Assembled Weapon is required to be forged through a Smithing Shop, which naturally, requires a large sum of gold coins. After that, you will need to visit the Identifier to reveal the item's hidden specs! That's gold vacuum!"

"Hmph! I already have a Level 60 Yellow-Gold axe!" she growled, waving it up high. "It's not that rare then, is it?"

Zhang Yang facepalmed in disappointment. "You...sigh...Listen closely. There are two types of Assembled Weapons. Take this sword for example. The sword pieces will most definitely be all Gray-Silver, and if the sword hilt is also a Gray-Silver tier, the final product will be the same as a Yellow-Gold tier. But what if the sword hilt was a Yellow-Gold? The final result will be stronger than an average Yellow-Gold tier!"

The topic piqued Han Ying Xue interest and she raised one of her seductive eye brows. "How so?"

"For example, if the same Level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon had 3.1 seconds attack interval, and the other had a 3.8 seconds attack interval. Which one would you choose?"

Wei Yan Er squealed. "The one with the 3.8 seconds! Not only it will be less effected by the weapon defense, skill damage will be increased as well!"

"Exactly!" Zhang Yang nodded. "Now, if this [Dark Enigmatic Sword] was forged, and if the sword hilt used was a Gray-Silver

tier, the final product would not be as good. A One handed sword would have 2.3 or 2.5 seconds attack interval, while two handed swords will have 3.3 or 3.6 seconds attack interval. It would definitely not have the slowest possible attack interval of its class! However, if the forged sword used a Yellow-Gold tier sword hilt, the final product will definitely have the slowest attack interval! Not just that, it will also have a special effect, such as {Lifesteal} effect or a special cooldown reduction effect!"

"That's very good!" Wei Yan Er crossed her arms and nodded, pretending to be a scholar agreeing to a statement.

The only loot that was worth looking at was the weapon shard, the rest of the items dropped by the boss were three counts of Gray-Silver weapon and eight more Green-Copper equipment. Zhang Yang did not even bother inspecting them and just hauled them all into his inventory.

"Those Gray-Silver equipment might not be useless to us anymore, but at least they could be worth a few gold pieces in the market."

"Hehehe!" both Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er grinned as their eyes flashed with the dollar sign.

"Let's push on!"

Being it a dungeon or an open field, the minions or none-boss monsters will still be plenty. Zhang Yang and the two others had spent more than two hours to reached the second boss. However, like taking a candy from a baby, the party killed the boss without breaking a sweat and found themselves another sword piece weapon shard.

"What a shame it didn't drop any sword hilts." Wei Yan Er sighed. The weapon shards did not come in any specific order and can be obtained by killing the same boss again and again. The weapon shard for the sword hilt was special. Unless dropped, you can never forge a complete sword even with 100 pieces of weapon shards.

Zhang Yang smiled. "It's good that the sword hilt did not show up here! Just so you know, if it did, the sword hilt will be a Gray-Silver tier! Since the last boss will be a Yellow-Gold tier, the sword hilt dropped there should be a Yellow-Gold tier! And that is what we should look forward to!"

The three entered the third floor and cleared the monsters there. However, before they could fight the boss, both sisters said that they wanted to call it a night as burning the midnight oil will affect their skin.

Without them, Zhang Yang had no means of continuing the raid. He could not possibly kill the boss alone. Since the elite monster around will respawn after five hours, he would have to expect being surrounded by them when he logs in first thing in the morning. Zhang Yang sighed and logged out as well.

The next day, at the break of daylight, Zhang Yang dragged Fatty Han to the hotel's gym for a nice one-hour workout. After having breakfast, Zhang Yang spotted Liu Wei ogling over the two sisters. When the two girls saw Zhang Yang walking over, Han Ying Xue jumped to Zhang Yang as if he was the hero and she was the damsel in distress, wailing dotingly as she went. "Hubby~~"

She dragged Zhang Yang into the guys' room and left Liu Wei standing alone outside.

"What luck! Just when I managed to get away from Luo Yang Ming, I thought I could have a few days without having any guy chasing after me, and here comes this jack*ss who thinks that all the girls in the world are obligated to grovel at his feet. D*mn! I'm f*cking pissed!" Han Ying Xue walked over to Zhang Yang's bed and fell flat on her back without any elegance of a woman, not caring for the parts of her body that would jiggle when faced with impact!

Zhang Yang turned away and said, "Perhaps the one who carries the surname Luo is already here. And if he knew which room you were in, he would sleep at the doorstep!"

"Like I care." Said Han Ying Xue as she bolted upright. She slammed the soft mattress with her hands and stood up. "That Liuwhat-his-name must have left by now, I'll head back to my room and play my game!" She dragged Wei Yan Er and scampered back to their room.

Zhang Yang shook his head and flattened the bed before logging into the game. Together, they cleared the monsters and continued raiding the Spider Palace. In his Friend List, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream's icons were blackened. It looks like they were currently in-flight towards Shanghai.

Lost Dream and the rest were supposed to arrive over the next two days. By 15th, everyone should be gathered together.

Zhang Yang and the two sisters took a whole day just to clear the rest of the palace but had yet to kill the boss. Together with the weapon shards from the two previous bosses, they had accumulated a total of five sword pieces. All that was left was just the boss.

When night fell, Hundred Shots and Daffodil Daydream arrived at the hotel and checked in.

Chapter 273: Catarina The Queen Of Spider

Hundred Shots looked like a middle-aged man despite being only 30 years old or so. He was well-built, not like the refined build of a bodybuilder, but a build that had to come from genuine, tough labor, and a full-faced beard and moustache. When he spoke, they knew he most definitely originated from somewhere far north of china. As for Daffodil Daydream, she was a cheerful woman who appeared to be in her mid-twenties. She looked like the kind of woman you would meet randomly on the street. Still there is a high chance than men, and women (if they swung that way) would turn around just to have another glance at her.

When everyone gathered and met with each other, they were extremely delighted. Fatty Han even took the chance to jump at Daffodil Daydream and give her a huge bear-like hug. Daffodil Daydream reacted unexpectedly. She allowed him to hug her and even pecked him on the cheek with a kiss. This, on the other hand, had embarrassed Fatty Han as it was never the reaction that he would get from a woman. The group had a little chat and went to their respective rooms after a while.

Sun Xin Yu had yet to log in. Apparently, she said that she would have to work for a few more days. After that, she would take a leave for a total of 10 days. Truthfully, she could just bypass all that procedure and protocol and not turn up at work as much as she wanted, and no one would dare to object, due to her stature. Still, the woman took pride in her job, and rarely ever called for favors unless the other party broke protocol first.

After a while, Zhang Yang and the two girls cleared more monsters off, finally arriving at the final boss. Compared to the final boss, the previous bosses had human faces on the full bodies of spiders. Catarina the final boss was very different. Instead of just a face, she had the upper body of a booblicious woman. It was a pity that her magnificent curves were not accompanied by a fitting human's lower-half. Below her curvy waist was the body of a huge spider with eight long sharp legs of a spider.

Right at where she was standing, there were many human remains, many of them were just bones, but some of them were fresh, with blood still oozing out of their spilled inner organs. The sight alone was very appalling, let alone the smell. The gruesome scene was enough to send brave men shivering with fear.

[Catarina the Queen of Spiders] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 68

HP: 5,000,000

Defense: 1,200

Note: The youngest daughter of the God of Spiders. Due to her insatiable hungry for flesh, she was excommunicated from the kingdom of spiders.

"Hey, silly Yu, are you sure the three of us can do this?" asked Han Ying Xue worriedly. A Yellow-Gold boss was far superior to mere Gray-Silver bosses. It was by far, the strongest tiered boss they had ever encountered.

"If she doesn't have a berserker mode, we could try and kill her off slowly." Said Zhang Yang. "Let's just give it a shot. I will call for more if we fail."

"If we do fail, you will have to compensate us with the repairing fee!" said Wei Yan Er just when Zhang Yang took a step closer to the boss.

Zhang Yang rolled his eyes and continued towards the boss. "One of these days, I swear that I will get back at you."

"Tee hee~" both the girls giggled at his joke.

"Human!? A male human!?" Catarina turned around and faced Zhang Yang. She raised her nose and took a sniff. "Ah ha!" she squeaked in excitement and grinned evilly. "What a tough man! I see that you have a strong body too! You will prove worthy enough to mate!"

After her opening speech, the boss thrust one of her long legs out at Zhang Yang's face. He thought he heard it wrong but after thinking it through, it was a female spider's habit to consume her partner after a successful mating. That was why, so many men from the village had gone missing! That was why there were so many human skeletons lying around! He finally understood why this boss was exiled from the Kingdom of Spiders by the God of Spiders. If she went on like this, the entire kingdom would run out

of male warriors!

{Block}!

Zhang Yang raised his shield to block the kick. He retaliated by swinging his axe from the right side and gave her a good blow. While Zhang Yang was fighting the boss head on, Wei Yan Er was attacking furiously from behind. While attacking, Wei Yan Er noticed Catarina's back carapace and laughed. "Hehe, the boss' buggy butt is almost the same as Liu Shi Shi butt! Both of them are round and big, not to mention they jiggle like soft pudding every time I hit it!"

What the actual f*ck! What is inside her brain? How could she think of something like that in this kind of situation!

"PSSS!"

Just as the little girl opened her mouth to further comment on the jiggling butt, the butt quivered. Catarina spun around swiftly and spewed out spider webs at Zhang Yang, the two sisters, and even the [Gold-Eared Bear King].

'Ding! You have been {Web Bound}! You cannot execute any action for 5 seconds!'

It seemed that the boss' control skill would indiscriminately target every single player around, including the pet, regardless of the party size! **'-5,406!'**

'-5,591![']

'Ding! You have received the effect {Spider's Venom} (1 stack). Receive 5,000 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds!'

In the time Zhang Yang was immobile, Catarina had attacked twice and managed to spit a green, vicious liquid out of her mouth, onto everyone, including the bear and inflict them with a DoT effect.

If another tank with slightly weaker equipment had been in the fight, they would sure be dead by now, since {Block} could not be used in the five second "stun". The biggest difference between a dungeon boss and an open-world boss was the design of their skills. Dungeon bosses ranged from extremely easy, to ridiculously difficult. Since the player count did not matter in the beginning, you can try taking on open world bosses with five players. If five players were not enough, you can even bring your entire village of 10,000 players to kill the boss with numbers. A dungeon boss was designed to fight a fixed number of players. If a dungeon required 10 players, the dungeon has to be raided with a party of 10. Since the attack power, skill, and other factor were calculated precisely, there would not be a scenario where a dungeon boss is undefeatable.

Five seconds passed and everyone was free to move again.

"Dispel the DoT on the little brat and yourself first! The bear and myself take second priority!" Zhang Yang cried. He had a 20% damage reduction passive skill and 994 damage absorption, making him slightly more resistant to the DoT effect.

"Ok." Han Ying Xue acknowledged, doing as he told. Luckily, the DoT effect skill was not as frequent, or else the boss would have been slightly annoying to deal with.

The {Web Bound} skill was used roughly every 30 seconds or so, which was enough to grate on his nerves. If a tank's HP was any lower than 11,000, it would definitely be an auto-death. The {Spider Venom} was rather frequent, being cast at roughly every 15 seconds. Even though this skill could be easily dispelled by Han Ying Xue, it proved to be tremendously MP costly.

Zhang Yang and the bear attacked as swiftly as they could. Repeatedly using [Power Potion], making sure the effect remains active, Zhang Yang had to finish the boss off as soon as possible. If the battle is dragged on for too long, Han Ying Xue would not last. It would all be over once she runs out of MP.

90%, 80%, 70%...

The boss HP dropped down rather rapidly. Even though her Defense value was high, she was practically naked when Zhang Yang hit her. With {Cripple Defense} Wei Yan Er was able to deal extreme damage with her slow attack interval Yellow-Gold weapon. Luckily, Han Ying Xue had {Divine Soul} with a 75% mana reduction for healing spells. Though the passive skill did not apply to {Dispel}, it was enough to help out with her healing. To make it

better, the equipment she had was by far, the best in all of China!

"Obey me! Or face death!" Catarina shrieked. Four blood-red webs flew across the field and latched onto everyone including the bear.

```
'-20.111!'
```

'-11,080!'

'-12,110!'

Four strong damage values was inflicted on everyone.

'Ding! You have received the skill {Blood-Web Poison}. Losing 70% of your maximum health. Damage rating is fixed and cannot be modified with any damage reduction skill!'

Zhang Yang originally had a maximum HP of 24,890, and after losing 70% of it, he was only left with 4,447 HP!

Shush!

The boss did not give room for any respite and immediately came for Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately activate {Berserker's Heal} and restored all his health. The boss' overwhelming skill was percentage-based,

regardless of defense and passive skills.

Swiftly, Han Ying Xue responded by using {Healing Bond} to heal Wei Yan Er and herself at the same time. If the boss used the same skill again, it would surely bring the battle to a close.

Luckily, the skill was only used once every time her HP dropped by 30%. This time, it showed the huge benefit of having a small party. If the party was huge, the time to dispel all of the {Spider's Venom} would surely be insufficient. With just one {Blood-Web Poison}, 80% or even 90% of players in a large group would surely perish.

Who knows, the boss might have some flesh-eating health recovery skill. If she did have it, she would be impossible to kill!

60%, 50%, 40%...Eventually, the boss used {Blood-Web Poison} again. This time, Zhang Yang managed to counter it with {Berserker's Heal}. Since the team attacking speed was not too fast, two minutes had passed and Zhang Yang's {Berserker's Heal} had finished its cooldown, ready to be used again.

Once the boss' HP dropped below 20%, Wei Yan Er activated {Indiscriminate} and hacked the boss for close to 60,000 damage in one devastating cleave.

When the boss' HP reached 10%, she used {Blood-Web Poison} again. Still, she failed to kill anyone and keeled over, dead.

Shoom!

A dark light beamed out of her corpse and reveal a twin-horned, devil like figure with bat-like wings protruding out from its back. The shadowy figure screeched, "Curse you humans! You have ruined my plans! I will return! I will be back!"

The black light then dispersed into nothingness. Following closely after, a translucent image of Catarina stood up. She looked just the same as she did in live. However, this time, she was slightly different. The greatest and most obvious difference was that, her body was completely human. Unlike the, bloodthirsty, battle-crazed version of her, her ghost form was kind and demure. There was a calm and serene atmosphere around her now.

[Catarina's Soul] (Normal, Summoned)

Level: 1

HP: 0/50

"Humans. Please do not be afraid. I am the real Catarina. The one that had just fought you was possessed by a demon." Catarina waved her hands, trying to assuage their fears. "Many years back, I ventured out of the Kingdom of Spiders and was unfortunately taken over by a demon. It controlled me and invoked some sort of demonic frenzy, turning me into a blood thirsty beast. Because of my sudden change of behavior, father had thrown me out of the

kingdom. Eventually, a human sage who came to seal me away. However, the seal was broken recently and the demon in me was revived and wreaked havoc upon this land."

"Woohoo...poor soul!" Wei Yan Er started to tear up.

"That demon had planned to use me to build an army of spiders to serve the demons! However, thanks to your bravery, you have stopped their plans. Nevertheless, he will be back again! Human, listen my plead. Head over to the Kingdom of Spiders and inform my father, the god of spiders, about everything that had happened to me. You must tell him to stop the invasion of the demons!"

'Ding! Catarina's Soul has a quest for you: An Urgent News. Do you accept it?'

Zhang Yang, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er exchanged a look and accepted the quest without a second thought.

"You have my greatest appreciation adventurers!" Catarina voice was filled with gratitude. Her sincerity was reflected on her warm smile. After nodding in acknowledgment, her projection faded away and eventually became one with the wind.

Chapter 274: Dark Enigmatic Sword

"Woohoo..." the little girl cried her eyes out. "Why didn't you spare her? It's so pitiful!"

"Okay. My bad, in that case, I'l take full responsibility. I guess I should be the one taking all the loot then..." Zhang Yang whistled as he pretended to pace towards the battle drops.

"Ayyy! That won't do." Wei Yan Er jumped to her feet and headed straight for the drops.

"Aw yea! There's three Yellow-Gold items here!" said Wei Yan Er as she pulled a piece of accessory out. "This one's mine! You're not allowed to take it!"

[A Spider's Kiss] (Yellow-Gold, Accessory)

Equip-Effect: Grants your weapon a poison coat. Grants a certain chance to an attack to inflict the target with 1,000 Natural damage. The success rate is increased if the attack interval of the weapon is longer.

Level Requirement: 60

Zhang Yang nodded. "No problem. That's just a trinket with some minor bonuses."

Wei Yan Er grinned. She immediately put it on. Female accessories are mostly worn on the ear like an earring. The [A Spider's Kiss] hung at the lowermost part of the ear lobe. It looked like a green, tiny little spider dangling down. It was too tiny to be repulsive, rather it had a cute, delicate quality.

[Blade of Spider's Fang] [Yellow-Gold, Dagger]

Weapon Attack: 411 – 611

Attack Interval: 1.9 seconds

DPS: 269

Equip Effect: 20% chance to inflict {Poison} to a target on attack. Causes the target to receive 70 Natural damage every 3 seconds for 30 seconds. Maximum 5 stacks.

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

"And this is for Sister Sun! Right now, she only has a Level 50 Yellow-Gold secondary weapon! If she equipped this as her main weapon, her DPS would soar beyond the clouds!"

"No arguments there. What's the last Yellow-Gold item?" Zhang Yang asked.

"Hehe! You're in luck! Speak of the devil, it's really a Yellow-Gold sword hilt!" Wei Yan Er pulled out a shiny golden sword hilt and passed it to Zhang Yang.

[Sword Hilt of the Dark Enigmatic Sword] (Yellow-Gold, Weapon Shard)

Use: Assembles all seven Sword Pieces and one Sword Hilt. Able to smith a Dark Enigmatic Sword through Smithing.

Level: 60

"I wonder how strong will the sword be..." said Han Ying Xue curiously.

"Little brat! Look again, I'm still lacking two more sword pieces!"

"Ok." Wei Yan Er pulled more drops out one by one and smiled happily. "Haha! I found one! Noob tank! You're really lucky today! The boss actually dropped two pieces of sword pieces."

At last, Zhang Yang gathered the sword pieces from Wei Yan Er

and kept them all nicely in his inventory. Staring in satisfaction, he knew that this time, he was able to gather all seven pieces of sword pieces and one sword hilt because of it being the boss' first kill, and Zhang Yang's 9 points of Luck. All these factors had worked together to give him everything he needed in a single run.

"Noob tank, are we going to finish up the questline?"

Zhang Yang shook his head slightly. "No, I have to return to the village to submit my current quest. Could you guys help find out where the Kingdom of Spiders is?"

"Ok!"

The two sisters tore their [Teleportation Scrolls] and went back to Thunderstorm Castle. Zhang Yang unequipped all his gears and ran to the fourth floor of the Spider Palace and killed himself by jumping into the herd of monster. He then revived himself at the graveyard and went to the Village of White Lambs.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Eliminate the Spider Queen. Obtained 2,000,000 Experience points!'

'Ding! You have obtained: Chaos Gem x2!'

Zhang Yang went to the elderly woman NPC who had given him the quest and completed the quest there. Other than the mountainload of experience points, he also obtained two [Chaos Gems] which were used to increase his inventory slot from 80 to By the time he was just done with business, Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er chirped on the party channel, pestering Zhang Yang to return to city to forge the sword. Zhang Yang laughed and used his [Teleportation Scroll] to return to Thunderstorm Castle, and traveled to White Jade Castle from there via the Teleportation Point.

"Come on! Quickly! We are waiting for you at the Smithing Shop!"

Zhang Yang summoned his bear and rode like the wind towards the Smithing Shop. Itching with curiosity all the way, he went up the Smithing NPC, Smithing Master Dwarf Banderash. He too wanted to know the power of the first Assembled Weapon in the game.

"This is..." Banderash examined the sword pieces one by one with an intriguing eye. "I can feel it...The ancient power that radiates from these weapon shards! This weapon had seen battle in one piece during the ancient times, in the hands of figures who walked among legends, if not legends themselves!"

Zhang Yang asked, "Great master, could you fix it?"

"It's not that I can't...But, the ancient art has been long forgotten. Even if pieced it back together, it will never be as powerful as it once was!" said Bandarash as he caressed the weapon shards as if it was his own daughter.

"In that case, I have the highest of faith in you, Grand master!"

"10,000 gold coins!" said Banderash as he lifted his head up. The grand master of smithing was now gone, what that stood in front of Zhang Yang was a typical, greedy, old Dwarf. The legends were so true about Dwarves and Dragons being equal in greed!

Still...f*cking hell! 10,000 gold coins! Expensive as f*ck!

The developers had already implemented the Identifying system that would cost a few hundred gold coins, yet now they introduce another method to rob players of their hard-earned cash! 10,00 gold coins!? More like day-light robbery! Might as well point a gun to my f*cking face and I'll sh*t out 100,000 worth of gold coins for you!

Zhang Yang turned back and said flatly to Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er. "If both of you were to become the presidents of Dream Tech, I'm sure you'll be in cloud nine!"

"Hmph!"

"Bleh!" Wei Yan Er stuck out her tongue.

Kaching

After a successful transaction, Banderash started hammering.

After 10 minutes or so, a bright golden light ray beamed, and the completed form of the sword formed in Banderash's hands.

'System Announcement: The first Assembled Weapon has been found in White Jade Castle! Behold of golden luster of the sword! Beware of the ancient power! Please refer to the official site for more information on Assembled Weapons and how to acquire them.'

"Take it young man! Treat the sword with care, and it shall do the same for you! The ancient power that once dwelled in it may be a shadow of its former self, but the blade itself still has tremendous attacking capability." said Banderash as he carefully handed over the sword to Zhang Yang.

He quickly examined the sword's properties.

[Dark Enigmatic Sword] (Yellow-Gold, One Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 652 - 852

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 269

Equip Effect: Grants a 1% chance to attack one more time after an attack. The mirrored attack will be the same as the previous attack. {Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 60

OP! Super OP!

Do not look down on 1% chance, after being Identified, the rate will most likely be 2%! Still, that was not even the main point, the reason behind this item being so OP was the fact that it would generate another same attack! Fighting just one monster wouldn't change much, however, what if the targets were a huge bunch of monsters?

One {Horizontal Sweep} could hit at least 10 monsters! As long as one of the strikes proceed the sword's effect, it will generate another wave of {Horizontal Sweep}! Instantly! If your luck is superbly good, the sword could be proceed again repeatedly! A killing machine! An OP, killing, godly sword!

Since the sword was a Level 60 Yellow-Gold tier, Dark Enigmatic Sword's DPS was about the same as all other Yellow-Gold tier swords. The one thing that split the gap a million kilometers wide was the effect it carried!

"Hey! Stop drooling over it! Let us see it as well!" Wei Yan Er smacked Zhang Yang's back.

Zhang Yang smiled from ear to ear and posted the Dark Enigmatic Sword's properties on the party channel.

"Hmm? Just one extra attack? What's so good about it? It's only 1% chance. Why would you smile like you just popped your cheery." said Han Ying Xue while pouting her lips.

Zhang Yang did not bother explaining. He went to the Socketing Shop and told her, "Give me a few Vampiric Rune Stones."

After paying 120 gold coins, the final stat of Dark Enigmatic Sword was revealed.

[Dark Enigmatic Sword] (Yellow-Gold, One Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 975 - 1175

Attack Interval: 2.8 seconds

DPS: 384

{Level 2 Socket 1}

{Level 2 Socket 2}

Equip Effect: Grant a 2% chance to attack one more time after

an attack. The mirrored attack will be the same as the previous attack.

Zhang Yang hurriedly put on the Dark Enigmatic Sword. Even though he would lose his 5% damage increase, and 5% Critical rate from the passive skill, {Axe Mastery}, the Level 60 sword was enough to compensate for his old Level 50 axe. Especially since that the Dark Enigmatic Sword had the super OP multi-kill effect!

He then inserted the runes into the sword, giving an additional effect of {Vampiric +2}. Even though the {Lifesteal} effect was weak, it was still better off than not having any extra effect!

"Noobie tank! I had just gone through the official site. The Kingdom of Spider is located in the Chaos Realm!" said Wei Yan Er. She had logged out of the game for a brief moment before reappearing again.

"That's too bad. We cannot continue the quest until we get to Level 100 then," said Zhang Yang.

The Chaos Realm could only be accessed by players over Level 100. So, as of now, there was nothing much that Zhang Yang could do. However, having the new sword in his hand, Zhang Yang had a sudden desire to test the weapon out. He traveled to the Thunderstorm Castle and rode the white bear and search for monster to kill. Around the area, there were many Level 60 players around. Tanilla Forest had become a popular spot for grinding now. For Zhang Yang to find a quiet place for him to test his new sword had become a sudden chore.

Left with no choice, Zhang Yang had to move on. He came into the Didier Flatlands and found himself a large valley with a huge number of Elemental monsters. He circle around the valley and started "collecting" as many monster as he could. After being tailed by a hoard of monsters, Zhang Yang jumped down from the bear. He activated {Blood Rage} and activated {Horizontal Sweep}.

WHAM!

More than 10 damage texts, all with 4,000+ damage popped out. Following closely was a glow of golden light, and another blast of 4,000+ damage. But, it did not stop there, after the first proc, the sword effect proc again and caused another blast of 4,000+ damage to the monsters! To Zhang Yang's surprise, the sword's effect was triggered four times in a row. He had dealt more than 200,000 damage in just a span of a few seconds! His DPS could easily exceed more than 50,000!

Thud! Thud! Thud!

One by one, all the Elementals dropped dead and turned into a pile of dead bodies.

{Blast Wave}!

Zhang Yang tested it out again. This time, he used {Blast Wave} and stunned more than 20 monsters around him while dealing only around 700+ damage to them. The chain started again; another blast boomed out and proceed for a total of five times. The

effect would only be triggered by melee skills. It was all good, but the copied attack would only mirror the damage and not the skill effect. For example, {Blast Wave} was copied 5 times, but the monsters were only stunned for the first time. It was a pity but, how could he ask for more? Those repeating attacks were far too good to be true!

Chapter 275: Divide And Conquer

As the 20th slowly approached, many more players had started to flock the hotel. On the 14th, Lost Dream, Galileo, Fantasy Sweetheart had arrived and exchanged greetings with Zhang Yang and the rest. Naturally, everyone was excited. Lost Dream was an ordinary looking youth of average build. Not too shabby, nor too bulky. Galileo was just a high school student. Zhang Yang wondered about how he managed to get his parents approval to come all the way to Shanghai all by himself.

The best way to describe Fantasy Sweetheart was: big-boobed baby face. She was 20 years old, however, her cute appearance totally went against her age that everyone had to agree that she was just too "kawaii". Her big juggling breasts were firm and large, on par to Han Ying Xue's perfect genes! Lost Dream and Fatty Han were openly drooling at her. Galileo was the only innocent young boy, he had to hide somewhere else to hide his blushing red face.

The rest of the team members had also arrived, however, due to the fact that they had altered their appearance in the game, some of them had a hard time recognizing the real person based on their characters, while other were simply beyond recognition altogether.

Zhang Yang had received a private message in the game from Snow Seeker, saying that she had arrived along with the other team members of Crimson Rage. Both side had set an appointment and agreed to have dinner together later at night. Around 6.30pm, nine members from Lone Desert Smoke and five members from Crimson Rage had gathered at the hotel's restaurant and sat down together in a large dining table.

The players from Crimson Rage were as such: Snow Seeker, Perfumed Water, Thorny Rose, Mellow Venom, and Prima Ballerina. All of them were absolutely stunning. The one that stood of the most was Snow Seeker and Prima Ballerina. One was the epitome of gentleness and elegance, while the other was a stunning beauty with glasses that brought the ultimate lust in men. With both of them joining forces, many men around were stopped in their tracks at such beauty.

There was a total of 14 of them, and nine of them were female. Each of them had their own charm and specialty, but their variations were so contrast that it was like an art gallery! Both Fatty Han and Lost Dream were restless the entire time. Neither of them could stop making indecent jokes that indirectly made the atmosphere a little livelier.

Poor innocent little Galileo was the center of attention among all the girls. Some of them even asked questions like whether or not he had a girlfriend, whether he had his first kiss, first love, first this and that. Poor little Galileo could not answer the older sisters those embarrassing question and cowered quietly in one corner, with his face all flushed in red. On the other hand, Fatty Han and Lost Dream were itching to have such treatment as well. They were dying to swap places with Galileo to help him take over the role.

On the 19th of December, all 32 teams of 160 players had arrived. Sun Xin Yu was the last one to join the fray. Fatty Han and a few others were dying to see how does the person behind the mask would look like. Their wish was granted when Sun Xin Yu arrived. Everyone was left flabbergasted when they could finally see the

absolute beauty behind the mask of that stone-cold Assassin.

On the night of the 20th, the organizers had sent all the players to the hall of the hotel that could easily fit in more than 10,000 people and started the launching ceremony live while also streaming the event into the game at the same time. The ceremony was so huge and grand that the organizer had also invited a few popular celebrities to host the event. The emcee of the event was none other than the famous, super sexy, local super star Liu Wan Fei. Her 36D sized bust was tightly held in her black low cut dress that only covered two thirds of her almost bursting meat sacks. That being said, this rare specimen of a female loved to jump around ever so energetically. Her dress was already too low to begin with; perhaps she had the utmost confidence that her assets would never "jump" out of her dress. Still, each time she jumped, her bouncing front was so alluring that 99.99% of all the men around could not stop their auto-focus feature from activating.

"Nice right?" said Han Ying Xue as she followed Zhang Yang's gaze.

"Yeah. It's good." said Zhang Yang unconsciously.

"Pervert!" Several girls that sat at the table cried out playfully.

Zhang Yang reacted quickly to save his own skin. He laughed. "Don't get me wrong. The entire performance was great. The choreography, the lighting, the music."

"You can make up all sorts of excuses, but we all know where you

were staring at..." Han Ying Xue grinned evilly. Zhang Yang turned around and saw Fatty Han and Lost Dream, lost in their own world. Zhang Yang pointed at them and said, "Why don't you ask them?"

"Them? I don't know those guys?"

After jumping around and pitching tents in 99.99% of all the men, Liu Wan Fei moved on to the next agenda of the event, that is, the selection of all 32 battle teams. All 32 teams will go through eight elimination rounds to determine the 16 teams that will proceed to the next round. The battle system will be the same as before. The teams will have to win two out of three matches. To prevent any method of cheating, all four teams who were from the same city would not be facing each other, in the event of match fixing.

At the center of the stage, there were four draw boxes with four holes, allowing four team representatives to draw their lots at the same time. Each team's captain will be sent out as the representative and will draw the lots in a linear order. The representative will then have to pick out the lotto number. The first box had team A and B numbers, the second box have the C and D team numbers, the third box have the E and F and the last box will have the G and H team numbers.

The elimination rounds ground rules were as follows: At will fight A2, A3 will fight A4. The victorious team will join the victory side while the losing team will join the losing side.

The victorious team will have another match and the losing team

of the victory side will fight with the winning team from the losing side's own match. The winning team from the first match will automatically be the first while the winning team from the second match will be the second.

Since the battle will be decided with a two out of three match, the battle style was called the "Double Lost Elimination". Compared to the regular fight and win style, this method was fair and will not have any scenarios of two teams ending up in a draw. The disadvantage of this method was the fact that one team would be given ample time to counter another team's class composition. There will be cases where a team might face consecutive losses and will be eliminated from the battle.

The battles between Team A,B,C, and D will be conducted in the first half of the event and team E,F,G and H will be conducted in the second half of the event. Any team that wishes to fight till the end will have to survive the elimination rounds until the final battle.

The top 16 teams that survive the elimination rounds will be rewarded with a single level up.

The top eight teams that survive the subsequent battles will be rewarded as follows: Level +1, one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward will be a Green-Copper tier equipment, and a 10% chance of drawing a Gray-Silver equipment.

The top four teams will be rewarded as follows: Level +2 and one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward possible will be a Gray-Silver tier equipment along with a 10% chance to draw a

Yellow-Gold equipment.

All members from the third-place team will be rewarded with: Level +2 and one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward will be a Green-Copper tier equipment, and a 10% chance to draw a Gray-Silver equipment.

All members from the second-place team will be rewarded with: Level +3 and one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward will be a Yellow-Gold tier equipment, and a 10% chance to draw a Platinum-Gold equipment.

All members from the champion team will be rewarded with: Level +3, Skill Point +1, and one Lucky draw chance where the lowest reward will be a Yellow-Gold tier equipment, and a 30% chance to draw a Platinum-Gold equipment.

On the side note, there will be a selected MVP of the day chosen from one of the member of the winning teams. The MVP will be rewarded with Level +1, a second Lucky draw chance with Yellow-Gold equipment as the lowest tier and a 50% chance to draw a Platinum-Gold equipment!

That aside, all participants here today will be receiving a cash reward ranging from 20,000 dollars to 1,000,000 dollars. Even though the reward was already stated in the official site, everyone's desire was peaked when Liu Wan Fei was the one announcing it.

After giving an opening speech of encouragement and fervor, Liu

Wan Fei started to cried out in enthusiasm. "Ladies and gentleman! We have now arrived to the main event of the day! At the center of the stage, lies a box that will determine the outline of the 32 teams! May the odds ever be in your favor! Now, put your hands together for the Team Captain of Radiance, from Black Dragon City! A round of applause for Sword of Light!"

claps

Other than the 32 teams of 160 chosen players, the organizers had also invited a few lucky players to spectate the event. Many more players that had voluntarily come to Shanghai on their own accord, at their own expenses. The large hall was completely filled, with many spectators standing behind the seats, carrying flags of the team that they were cheering for. The atmosphere was very hyped up and feverish.

Just as Sword of Light moved up the stage, thunderous applause filled the hall. The guild Radiance was the nation's old dog in the gaming community with an extremely large group of supporters and fans. Sword of Light was a young man, slightly older than Zhang Yang. As he walked to the center of the stage, he carried himself with nobility and elegance, and many women in the hall could not help but scream in excitement.

Sword of Light came up to the box labeled "1" and drew out a red cue ball, with B2 written on it. He then raised it high up and displayed it to everyone before passing the ball to one of the stage helpers.

On the far side of the hall was a huge LED signboard. On the B2

slot of the now still empty battle outline, the stage helper then moved behind somewhere and keyed in Radiance.

Sword of Light descended down the stage and Greensleeves Prince, the captain of Sunset Amber guild, walked up to the stage and drew C4 from the box labeled "2". This continued on for a while. Hundred Shots was the captain of Lone Desert Smoke team 2. He was the sixth person who went up the stage and drew a D2.

There were plenty of female players among the team, however, Snow Seeker was the only female captain. When she ascended the stage, claps roared and cheers filled the hall. With two absolute beauties on the stage, many men felt extremely blessed, ready to drop dead right there and then. Some even jizzed in their pants.

"Alright now! Let's welcome the captain of Lone Desert Smoke's other team, Zhan Yu! Lone Desert Smoke was the only guild among all 32 selected participants to send in two teams! Their achievement is second to none! Please give him a round of applause!" Liu Wan Fei announced as she clapped her hands as well.

Lone Desert Smoke was by far, China's unofficial number one guild. Zhang Yang himself was currently sitting on the throne that stood up above all else. His presence on the stage caused a huge uproar. The moment his right foot stepped on the stage, the crowd roared and cheer louder and ever before. Flowers, handkerchief, and even scarves were thrown on to the stage! The most bizarre item among the tributes laid on the stage was a black-laced bra... and it was still warm!

Zhang Yang remained stoic and walked towards the box and drew a ball reading F2. Zhang Yang passed the ball to one of the stage helpers and returned to his seat swiftly. The name Lone Desert Smoke appeared on the board, in the F2 slot.

The drawing event lasted for only half an hour until all 32 teams were properly placed. There was nothing to really be excited about, as the real battle would be starting tomorrow, and will continue to do so every day. If all battles continued on as planned, 25th and 26th of December will be the two days that will have the top eight battles. The top four battles will be held on 27, and 28th will host the semifinals. The final round will be held on the 29th, as well as the closing ceremony and the Lucky draw session.

The four teams from White Jade Castle were arranged in such a way: Crimson Rage will be in A, Sky High will be in H, the second Lone Desert Smoke team, led by Hundred Shots will be in D. Zhang Yang and his own team will be in F. Technically, if Hundred Shots remained undefeated, both Lone Desert Smoke team will have a final showdown.

However, Zhang Yang highly doubted that will happen. The first-half of the competition had several "in-the-future" strong S-class Professional League battle teams, such as Crimson Rage, Radiance, Imperial Sky, and Blue Sea. These guilds are all super strong, even as of now! It would be extremely difficult for Hundred Shots to remain in the competition.

That being said, the second-half of the competition had a few worthy opponents as well. Guilds like Brilliant Star and Breaking Dawn were as strong as Crimson Rage as well. It will take some effort for Zhang Yang to win the battle.

After the opening ceremony ended, the hall was cleared and everyone went back to their own room. Zhang yang could not find anything else to do, so he chose to log into the game. When he connected, he saw the in-game notice board was streaming the Soaring Swords competition live, with more than 50,000,000 viewers watching. The system announcement was constantly flashing red colored text messages in the comm channel.

24 hours was rather short when it comes to waiting. The competition started at 7pm, the 21th of December. Group A battle started and ended within expectations. After five intense matches, Crimson Rage emerged victorious at the first place, with Rolling Rocks at the second place. Group B battle started at 8.30pm, and Radiance won the first place, followed by Storm Riders. The battle competition continued on 22th December, 7pm, the night after. Group C's battle was won by Imperial Sky and Sunset Amber. Group D's battle started at 8.30pm with Lone Desert Smoke fighting against Ocean's Moon.

"Hey dummy, can they win?" Han Ying Xue gently nudged Zhang Yang. They were standing among the other spectators. The screening of the game was broadcast live on the big notice board. There were even commentators explaining the situation going on both sides. There were talks about the team's strongest players, the possible strategies that they could use, the formation of their battle plan, and even who was likely to be killed first. The battle teams were ready, assembled on the two far ends of the battle arena.

Zhang Yang could not immediately answer Han Ying Xue's question. He pondered for a bit and finally opened his mouth. "It's...hard. I can't say really. Only Lost Dream is considered to be a pro in the team. Galileo and Hundred Shots could still make some effort, and Fatty Han's DPS is still only above average. Fatty Han... if anyone gangs up on him, he will panic and forget to activate any escaping skills. Which makes him a sitting fat duck! I don't know much about the other team so, I can't predict anything for now. We can only rely on luck this time."

The battle started and unfortunately, Fatty Han's dumbstruck face made him the first target to be focused fire upon. Even though Lost Dream had managed to activate {Ambush} at the last minute and controlled two of the opposing attackers, he could only hold them back for a brief period before a volley of attacks ended Fatty Han life. The opponent won the match with two surviving members.

Team 2 of Lone Desert Smoke had fallen into the losing division.

In the other match of the same group, Blue Sea had easily defeated Rebirth Flames and also defeated Ocean's Moon in the victory division. Blue Sea was Group A's champion.

In the losing division match, Lost Dream went all out and managed to summon all his skills to display a wild performance like no one had ever seen before, bring a ray of hope to the team.

The final battle was Lone Desert Smoke's Team 2 vs Ocean's Moon.

After tasting the sweet taste of victory, Ocean's Moon repeated their previous strategy again. They laid down the pressure on Fatty Han. Knowing that they had lost the same way before, Hundred Shorts had revised their battle plan. Fool me once, shame on me. They had used Fatty Han as a bait to tear apart Ocean's Moon's battle formation. In the midst of the chaos, Fatty Han had even managed to kill one of them as he went down.

After another rough tussle, both sides lost another member. At such a critical stage, only the strong would stand out. Lost Dream performed as how Zhang Yang had expected him to. He moved around, fast and agile, coupled with Lost Dream's trash talk, forcing the opponent to make a mistake, costing them their healer.

With no healer and only two members left to face three of them, Lone Desert Smoke emerged victorious. Team 2 of Lone Desert Smoke had managed to survive the match and earn their revenge on Ocean's Moon and entered the Top 16 teams.

On the third night, group E's battle started. Genesis and The Glory emerged victorious.

8.30pm, group F battle started. Lone Desert Smoke main team vs Youthful Era.

The opponent's team lineup were as followed:

Divinity's Son, Level 62, Male Dwarf, Sacred Knight, 15,230 HP

Cloud Dancer, Level 61, Female Human, Berserker, 13,980 HP

Frozen Starburst, Level 62, Male Beastman, Berserker, 14,260 HP

Prosperity Puppet, Level 62, Male Elf, Beastmaster, 13,650 HP

Gentle Flare, Level 61, Male Human, Assassin, 14,520 HP.

Chapter 276: Group Battle

5 minutes before the battle started, both teams had entered the mock arena. Lone Desert Smoke was represented by the color red and Youthful Era was represented by the color blue.

"Our opponents are mostly physical attackers," said Zhang Yang as he observed the opponent's team line up and class composition. "Do not underestimate the enemy. To stand here, facing us, they have no doubt earned the spot. We cannot afford to be careless."

"Alright then, what's the battle plan?"

"Focus fire on one guy at a time."

• • •

"You call that a battle plan?!"

Everyone else other than Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu rolled their eyes.

"There was never a battle plan to begin with. It all depends on how the enemy reacts and we will react accordingly. I'm just reminding you to be careful. Never let your guard down!"

"You don't say..."

"They have two Berserkers in their party. My guess is they intend to spam {Blast Wave}. They will prolly split up and fan out. Be careful not to stand in between those two Berserkers, or you will be stunned till kingdom come."

{Blast Wave} was a rare skill when players were still in the Level 40 stage. But three months after that, many players had known about the skill book from Kukulo Centaur tribe reputation shop. The higher the level, the easier it was to farm Reputation Points. Basically, almost all Level 60 players around had already possessed the skill.

"Hey noob tank, you go on and on like an old grandma," said Wei Yan Er.

"This grandma is gonna slap your naughty butt!" said Zhang Yang, pretending to be angry.

"Ayy! You stinky pervert!" cried Wei Yan Er while blushing like a ripe peach.

"Pervert!" Han Ying Xue, Daffodil Daydream, and even the ever silent Sun Xin Yu scolded him in unison.

Zhang Yang cried a river. The way he treated Wei Yan Er was like a big brother teaching his young sister. It was just a sibling-like relation! Nothing more! Even if he wanted to get himself some loli, he would be picking someone else with a curved front! Not this little flat ironing board! 'Ding! The battle of Team 1 Lone Desert Smoke vs Youthful Era will begin in 10 seconds!'

The green lights was lit and the invisible wall of air was removed. Both sides started to rush towards each other with the intention to kill.

Zhang Yang and his bear sticked together like bread and butter and rushed, at the foremost of his party like a knife straight through the enemy's heart.

{Wild Charge}! {Charge}! {Charge}! {Charge}!

Wei Yan Er, Cloud Dancer, Frozen Starburst, and Zhang Yang's [Gold-Eared Bear King] all activated their {Charge}. Stuns appeared on both sides. Zhang Yang had been taking cover behind the bear and had remained unscathed. He swung the Dark Enigmatic Sword in his hand and struck Cloud Dancer.

His gained some Rage points, enough to cast a {Horizontal Sweep}!

^{&#}x27;-4,452!'

Divinity's Son was startled. He had never seen anyone with such destructive power before. Zhang Yang, as a Guardian could actually damage Cloud Dancer for more than 6,000 HP! He quickly chanted a healing spell to save her.

In the nick of time, Daffodil Daydream {Apparated} right into range and cast {Counter Magic} to immediately interrupt Divinity's Son casting of {Divine Ray}, also forcing all of his Holy attribute skills to enter a cool down period.

"I've been silenced! Guys, hurry up and target their team's Spellcaster!" cried Divinity's Son to his team.

Divinity's Son was positioned in the rear. He had never anticipated that Daffodil Daydream would actually {Apparate} right in midst of the team just to cast {Counter Magic}! A Spellcaster was naturally weak in Defense, and with Cloth armor, they were extremely weak to physical attacks. That was why they would normally hide behind the team and attack. Her sudden unforeseen action had confounded Divinity's Son! However, now that Daffodil Daydream had appeared in the mouth of the tiger, she had become the clear target for attacking!

Poof

Gentle Flare, the enemy's Assassin had appeared and stunned Daffodil Daydream with {Ambush}. However, before he could even move the dagger in his hands, Sun Xin Yu appeared behind with a

poof as well. Similarly, she cast {Ambush} on him and started to bleed him out. What better way to describe this, than out of the frying and into the fire.

Wei Yan Er, Cloud Dancer, Frozen Starburst, and Zhang Yang's [Gold-Eared Bear King] all recovered at almost the same second. The two enemy warriors swiftly turn around and headed towards the still swaying Daffodil Daydream. Prosperity Puppet was drawing her bow on the other end, ready to release a volley of arrows towards Daffodil Daydream.

"Kill Cloud Dancer first!" Zhang Yang cried. Right before an enemy's attack was about to land on Daffodil Daydream, he quickly cast {Sacrifice} and protected her.

Transferred!

Transferred!

Transferred!

Cloud Dancer and Frozen Starburst and struck Daffodil Daydream with {Destructive Smash} and a normal attack. Prosperity Puppet had attacked with a normal shot and a {Take Aim}. Though she might seem to be taking the hits, the damage was all transferred to Zhang Yang.

"What a turn of events! Player Zhan Yu was able to protect player Daffodil Daydream with {Sacrifice} in just the nick of time! Look at

that! It was in fact a 0.01 second before the attack had landed! The blue team attackers could not cancel their attacks in time and had just wasted a volley of skills!"

"Change target! Attack Drizzler!" Cloud Dancer and Frozen Starburst communicated in the party channel and they all wheeled around to Wei Yan Er at the same time.

Even though their first attack had failed, it had managed to force Zhang Yang to cast {Sacrifice}. They deemed it a fair trade.

It was hard not to notice two men running to you; Wei Yan Er saw them coming to attack her and grinned knowingly. She activated {Blood Rage} and swung the huge battle axe.

```
'-8,016!'
```

'-8,212!'

{Tornado Cleave}.

Unlike the other two guys that were about to attack her, Wei Yan Er had a level 60 Yellow-Gold weapon, and also plenty of skill points to spare. She had used those extra skill points and raised {Tornado Cleave} to Level 10, pushing the skill's attack power to 170% melee damage. It may seem little but the final output was far stronger than their 150% melee damage - {Destructive Smash}.

Zhang Yang charged towards Cloud Dancer and used {Destructive

Smash}, dealing a satisfying number of 4,444 damage. Even though Cloud Dancer had consumed a bottle of [Level 3 Healing Potion], he was unable to escape death.

Right then, the {Counter Magic} on Divinity's Son had just ended. He was halfway through casting a healing spell when the target had dropped dead, automatically cancelling the spell.

He then quickly changed his target to Gentle Flare. Being attacked by Sun Xin Yu continuously, his HP was already dropping down like fully open faucet. She had equipped the new [Blade of Spider's Fang], which gave her a huge boost in attack power, and the blade had a powerful DoT effect.

However, just when he started chanting a spell, the white bear pounced on Divinity's Son. With a swift blow from the bear's claw, his spell casting was instantly dragged longer.

In the game, whenever a player receives an attack while casting a spell, there's a 70% chance that the casting duration would be extended. The limit was that it could not be extended to twice the original duration. Which meant that, a 2 second casting skill could be extended to at most only 4 seconds.

Divinity's Son was left flummoxed. He could grant himself the opportunity to finish his cast with a {Holy Shield}. But, it was just an attack from a pet! To use an important surviving skill just to cast a healing spell would be a complete waste! But, if he did not use {Holy Shield} he would not be able to save Gentle Flare.

The tide of war has turned, and the atmosphere was filled with confusion. With the healer left there standing unable to do anything at all, Sun Xin Yu's dagger slashed on swiftly and relentlessly, without giving any chance to Gentle Flare to retaliate. She only stopped attacking when Gentle Flare dropped dead.

5v3!

Youthful Era quickly admitted defeat to prevent themselves from being put through more shame. That being said, losing a match would not mean that they will lose the next match!

With that, the match was concluded with Lone Desert Smoke moving on to the victory team.

"Sigh...What a let down!' said Wei Yan Er as she removed her gaming helmet while blowing raspberries towards Zhang Yang.

In truth, Zhang Yang felt the same way. Even though everyone had experience with PvP, he had not expected to find such sore losers in such a professional match.

Even though there were preliminary rounds in the city, there were only 16 matches in this event. Back then, random parties were matched with random parties, and players could not come up with solid strategies in time, nor proper team lineups to counter the other parties.

After all, the professional league will only be held after this

Soaring Swords competition. That was why the average capability of the players was still low. Unlike Zhang Yang, who had already been fighting in the professional league for at least two years! Recalling back the days when he was actually fighting professional players, it made him feel slightly melancholic.

The second battle started just after 10 minutes, featuring the fight between Angel Wings and Emperor's Return. The two battle teams were strong, but the that team emerged victorious was Angel Wings. Emperor's Return was sent off to the losing division, to go through further battles. Lone Desert Smoke will be facing Angel Wings in just the next 10 minutes.

Zhang Yang had spent his time carefully observing each of the team's equipment and status. "I think they might be using all Vitality type gemstones." Zhang Yang scratched his chin. "That has to be the explanation. How else could they all have more than 15,000 HP?"

"Hey hey! Noob tank! Look! Their Guardian seems very strong!" said Wei Yan Er as her eyes glinted with interest.

In the previous battle between Angel Wings and Emperor's Return, the Guardian from Angle Wings, Mei Chao Fung performed rather well. With skills executed at precise timing and accuracy, he managed to use {Thunder Strike} to slow, {Blast Wave} to stun, {Sacrifice} to cover a teammate, and other heroic acts that had made him stood out like sore thumb...or a hero to aspire for, depending on whose side you were on. It was safe to say that without Mei Chao Fung, Angel Wings would definitely be far inferior to Emperor's Return.

Zhang Yang nodded his head and agreed with Wei Yan Er. Zhang Yang could see his past self in Mei Chao Fung. Back then, in his previous life, he was person who led the team. Lacking strong team mates and a good leader, Zhang Yang had to take the mantle and had dragged the team to survive in the Class A Professional League.

He laughed. "Leave this man to me. I'll personally handle him myself. I'll leave the rest of his team to you guys, yeah?"

"Hehehe! You betcha! I've got no interest in hacking away at an empty turtle shell anyway! I'll take care of the rest! Leave it to this young lady!" said Wei Yan Er confidently as she patted her flat chest.

"Hey! Stop hitting that spot! You're gonna iron yourself flat-ter! At this rate, you'll end up inverted!"

"What!?"

'Ding! The battle of Lone Desert Smoke Team 1 vs Angel Wings will start in 10 seconds!'

After the 10 seconds countdown ended, Zhang Yang sent the white bear to target the opponent's healer while he targeted Mei Chao Fung.

{Charge}! {Charge}!

Two Guardians slid through the floor, dragging their swords and clashing into each other, sending both of them into a state of stun. In just 1 second, both of them recovered. Mei Chao Fung felt that it would be rather meaningless, fighting against a hard tank. He might have a strong defense, but his attack was weak. Facing another opponent with a strong defense and attack, it would be a questionable act if he could even damage Zhang Yang.

A Guardian's main role in a PvP match was rather fixed.

- 1. To provide {Sacrifice} and {Vanguard Aggression} to help with the survivability of the entire team.
 - 2. To use all crowd control skills to help maintain the tide of war.
 - 3. To disrupt healing efficiency with {Destructive Strike}.

In the end, Mei Chao Fung turned back around and targeted Wei Yan Er instead of Zhang Yang.

Chapter 277: Just As Easy

Just when Mei Chao Fung thought that he had shaken off Zhang Yang and moved to Wei Yan Er, a sudden figure appeared in front of him, blocking out his unfocused vision. It was Zhang Yang himself. He too had moved and blocked Mei Chao Fung from trying to change his target. If he still persisted on moving forward, he will clash into Zhang Yang.

Mei Chao Fung clearly understood the difference in power between him and Zhang Yang. One simple glance at Zhang Yang's HP would tell all about the immense gap between the two of them. He had only around 18,000 HP while Zhang Yang had over 29,000 HP! The gap was ridiculous! If the two of them did crash into each other, the person who would be knocked back would be Mei Chao Fung!

He did not want to fight him, it would be a stupid decision. He sidestepped swiftly and tried to maneuver around Zhang Yang. But every single time he tried to move, Zhang Yang would be there to block his path. A step to the right, Zhang Yang was there. A step to the left, there he was again! Zhang Yang was behaving just like an annoying mirror!

A pro!

If Mei Chao Fung solely relied on his skills, he would not be able to out-maneuver Zhang Yang. He had to use his active skills!

"Tch!" Mei Chao Fung clicked his tongue. He lifted his battle axe

and swung it hard at Zhang Yang. Zhang Yang strafed aside swiftly and avoided the attack. At the same time, he swung his axe up. Mei Chao Fung's movement were as agile as Zhang Yang. He traced Zhang Yang's movement and swiftly took a step back--the sword sliced the air in front of him.

From the perspective from professional players, avoiding a normal attack would be as easy as stepping away from a speeding bicycle rider, since normal attacks were easily telegraphed. When two professional tanks fought each other, both of them would left in an extremely awkward situation. Normal attacks would simply miss again and again. Both of their Rage gauges were slowly dropping down at 2 points a second. How long would it take for them to finally realize that their action were like watering the sand in the Saharan Desert?

This was why tank class players would not simply rush into a fight. Just when it took an eternity to attack the enemy, the warrior class player could easily be healed back to full health with a simple click of {Berserker's Heal}. The cycle would then start over and loop endlessly.

F*ck it!

{Blood Rage}!

Mei Chao Fung decided to go all out. At that moment, he had completely forgotten about the competition. He only wanted to go all out with this Zhan Yu!

```
{Thunder Strike}!

'-o!'
```

He stomped the floor and slowed Zhang Yang down. Even though he may not receive any damage at all, he was slowed. That was the main point of the skill in PvP! Those with higher movement speeds would definitely have the higher ground in battle!

With a quick slip and slide, Mei Chao Fung made his way to Zhang Yang's back. He lifted his axe to slash Zhang Yang's back! If an attack landed on a tank character's back, the effect of the shield will be muted.

However, just as he thought he could land a perfect slash, Zhang Yang had already spun around, with a big grin on his face!

```
{Block}!
+30 Rage!
{Horizontal Sweep}!
'-2,402!'
```

Mei Chao Fung was stunned. As if he had just witnessed a miracle, both of his eyes almost popped out of their sockets! Once a player was hit with a slow effect, the turning speed was also

reduced. To keep up with his speed, Zhang Yang must have predicted his movement and destination before moving around! This level of observation and decision making would require a monstrous level of athletic skill and insight to pull off! No amount of equipment or skill would be able to help you with that! It was all in the blood of the player!

"Hehe. Ha ha! HAHAHAHAHA! Good one! As expected from China's number 1 tank! You have not let me down! Alright! Come on! Come at me, bro!" roared Mei Chao Fung.

Zhang Yang's grin morphed into a satisfied smile. Mei Chao Fung had acknowledged his strength and to respect that, Zhang Yang decided to show him his all-out skill!

{Thunder Strike}!

It was Zhang Yang turn to slow down Mei Chao Fung. Once his movement speed was reduced by 50%, he then proceeded to display a performance, cultivated from all five years of his gaming experience! His movement and attack were so quick and elaborate that Mei Chao Fung could not even catch his after image! In the front? In the back? The only place Zhang Yang could not be at was below him! The rest of the time, he was everywhere!

"Am I seeing things? I haven't even started drinking. So what am I looking at?! Player Zhan Yu is displaying some insane footwork while attacking Player Mei Chao Fung! Oh my lord! I have never seen anything like it! I would never even dream of such a thing being possible if I'm not witnessing it myself! This is something no one could even imagine! My word...I believe that this is an art! A

dance! What a spectacular view. I truly believe that PvP will never be the same again! Take a look at that movement! I mean, no one could have known that PvP could involve something like that!"

The commentators were busy commenting as if they were two ESPN newscasters, busy praising a football star's goal kick.

Yet, it was not weird that the commentators were shocked. Their mouths and voices were working. Unlike the audience who were watching the match. Almost all of them had their jaws touching the floor!

Back in the stage, Mei Chao Fung wanted to find a chance to stun Zhang Yang with {Blast Wave} to regain the upper hand, however, just as he wanted to activate the skill, Zhang Yang was all around him. {Blast Wave} effective area of attack was only a small conical shape area in front of the caster. How could he land a clean hit when Mei Chao Fung could not even catch his freaking shadow!

Relying on {Destructive Smash} and {Horizontal Sweep's} destructive damage, Mei Chao Fung was reduced down to only 20% HP after 20 seconds! Mei Chao Fung swiftly activated {Berserker's Heal} to prevent Zhang Yang from using {Killing Cleave}. However, carrying the debuff of {Destructive Smash}, {Berserker's Heal} had only healed him by 4,640 HP. Mei Chao Fung immediately took action and activated {Shield Wall}, struggling to survive. That being said, the skill had only provided him with a 10 second window.

'-5,240!'

crack

Mei Chao Fung fell down to the ground and heard the system notification ringing in his ears.

'Congratulations to Lone Desert Smoke Team 1 for obtaining two consecutive victory! You are now the champion of Group F!'

Just then, he realized that he was the last surviving member of his own battle team. With a calm heart, he accepted his fate. However, when he turned his head to survey the battleground, he heart sank when he noticed that Zhang Yang's entire team was still standing. All four female players were still standing and chilling as if the battle was nothing to be worried about.

Even though the power gap between Zhang Yang and him was large, but it could not have been at the point where his own team could not even kill a person from Zhang Yang's team! It was impossible! That left him with only one explanation, Zhang Yang had been protecting his team mate with {Shield Wall}, {Sacrifice}, and other protecting skill, while fighting Mei Chao Fung at the same time! Just how strong was this man is?! While spinning around Mei Chao Fung like a hurricane, Zhang Yang could still find the time to protect his team mate on the other side of the battle field!? Was the gap between Zhang Yang and him, that huge?

Negative thoughts started to flood his mind as his self-esteem started to plummet.

"Don't feel bad, crazy f*ck. Our opponent was Lone Desert Smoke's main attacking team! There is nothing to be ashamed in losing to them! Besides, we can still fight as long as we win in the losing division! It's not the end of the world!" The guild master of Angel Wings, Angels Are Demons consoled him.

Without much rest time, the losing team battles started off. After the battle with Lone Desert Smoke, Angel Wings next opponent was Emperor's Return. Sadly, unlike Lone Desert Smoke Team 2, Emperor's Return lost and was eliminated from the competition.

24th of December, the last two groups had went up the stage to fight for the Top 16th position. In the end, Group G was led by Mugen and Breaking Dawn, and group H was led by Brilliant Star and Sky High.

The Top 16 battle outline were as follows:

First half:

Crimson Rage vs Storm Riders

Radiance vs Rolling Rocks

Imperial Sky vs Lone Desert Smoke Team 2

Blue Sea vs Sunset Amber.

Second half:

Genesis vs Angel Wings.

Lone Desert Smoke Team 1 vs The Glory.

Breaking Down vs Sky High.

Brilliant Star vs Mugen.

On the 25th of December, the first half of the battle took place at 7.30pm. Crimson Rage performed exemplary feats against Storm Riders and won the battle with a straight 2:0 victory.

8pm, the match between Radiance and Rolling Rock was held. The guild Radiance was able to perform on an entirely different level and overwhelmed their opponents with the score 2:0, eliminating them from the competition and being the second group to enter the top 8.

8.30pm, Zhang Yang and his team 2 members came to watch the match between Lone Desert Smoke Team 2 and Imperial Sky. The main problem they were facing in the match was the fact that Imperial Sky had already understood that Lost Dream was the main driving force of Team 2. One Sword Stroke was smart. He

had cornered Lost Dream and kept him occupied. His team then killed the other members with relative ease.

2:0!

Lone Desert Smoke Team 2 faced an indiscriminate loss!

9pm, Blue Sea vs Sunset Amber! This battle was the first time a losing team had managed to stand out and won the battle. After three excruciating fights, Sunset Amber won the battle with a 2:1 score. So far, both teams in D group had been eliminated from the competition.

As the last battle of the night ended, everyone returned to their rooms to rest. Back at his own room, Zhang Yang saw Fatty Han sulking. He could not ignore the fat f*ck and patted his shoulder. "Chill Fat*ss. Hey! At least you get to be in the top 16! There's still the 40,000 dollars reward!"

Fatty Han turned to Zhang Yang and back to the floor. He sighed loudly. "At first, I could not accept defeat. My DPS was high...How could I lose?! However, after these few days, I realized something. Especially after losing to Imperial Sky, I realized that PvP is not just about having the higher damage. PvP requires a strong sense of control, skill, insight and maneuverability! And I have none of those! I better go back to the secondary raiding party and be a pro there instead! I don't want to have my self-esteem go any lower!"

Zhang Yang gasped sarcastically. "Dayum bro! You finally admitted that you're just a sucky noob! How rare it is for you to

admit that!"

"F*ck! Come on bro! I'm already heartbroken here! How can you call yourself my bro if you keep on attacking me like that!"

"Hahaha! Alright, how about this? I'll leave this room to you alone. I think this hotel would have those kind of service that could satisfy that one particular desire of yours?" Zhang Yang winked.

Fatty Han turned his head over to Zhang Yang. "Tsk. Tsk. ...I don't ask for much. Just have Liu Shi Shi to come here and I'll handle the rest!'

" "

Dream Technology was rather generous, even after losing, the organizers did not force the losing teams out of the hotel. They had allowed them to stay until the end of the entire competition, complete with the expenses.

On the side note, Zhang Yang's mystical footwork had cause a major stir up in the social media and the gaming world. Players had started to conduct their research, tracing Zhang Yang steps through the recorded video and trying to imitate him! Players had dubbed Zhang Yang footwork as the Butterfly Steps, because of Zhang Yang's wide area of movement which resembled the wings of a butterfly. Without a doubt, the Butterfly Step had proved to be too advanced for the current stage of the game. Not only were the general players tirelessly trying to learn the steps, even the

professional players in the current competition could not stop thinking about it. However, since time was not as luxurious for them, they could not have learnt about it.

The night of 26th of December, the second half of the battle had eight teams being reminded to fight for their chance to be in the last remaining four teams to move on to the next stage of the competition.

7.30pm, the first battle between Genesis vs Angel Wings started.

A landslide victory was expected, based on forecasts and analysis.

Genesis was a popular team and was one of the team that had high odds of entering the finals. Their prowess was well proven. However, things had taken a different turn. Even though Angel Wings had only managed to enter the top 16 battle team, their capability was nothing to be taken note off. However, they had still managed to perform beyond expectations and managed to win the match with a 2:1 score, successfully eliminating Genesis from the competition!

Chapter 278: Quarterfinals

Eight o'clock sharp, the second contest started, Lone Desert Smoke versus The Glory.

Lone Desert Smoke's team won the loudest cheers. The official battle bets offered odds of 1.05 to 4.7 for Lone Desert Smoke to The Glory, respectively! However, many more fans placed bets for Lone Desert Smoke.

Easy as a pie!

Zhang Yang's team did not give The Glory any chances of winning. Regardless of levels, equipment, controls and teamwork, Zhang Yang's team reigned superior in all. Zhang Yang's team won an overwhelming victory in two matches and successfully broke into quarterfinals, showing their well-earned, prevailing dominance!

All eight qualifying teams were announced after 9.30 pm.

The first few matches were: Crimson Rage versus Sunset Amber; and Radiance versus Imperial Sky.

The second batch of matches were: Angel Wings versus Breaking Dawn; and Lone Desert Smoke versus Brilliant Star.

On 27th December, at 7.30 pm, Crimson Rage started the event, raging against Sunset Amber. The ability and strength of both

teams were almost similar. Currently, both teams had won one round each at 1-1, and were now putting extra effort in the third and most crucial match.

The final round ended with both teams only left with an attacker and a healer each, an excruciatingly long, final phase of the match. The final phase lasted for more than seven minutes. Crimson Rage's healer, Perfumed Water was a Priest who was not as efficient in single-target healing as her counterpart, Sunset Amber's Sacred Knight. Perfumed Water ran out of MP first, and sadly, that was the end of Crimson Rage's stint!

It was a regrettable 1-2 loss.

The elimination of this beautiful all-girl team had left a lot of male players heartbroken and furious at Sunset Amber!

Due to the lengthy match, the following match between Radiance and Imperial Sky was affected, starting late at 8.20 pm.

That match too, was a close battle, with the third match beginning at a score of 1-1. However, Radiance made unexpected mistakes, and their Spellcaster was immediately killed under the combined attacks of the enemy. The Spellcaster had mistimed his {Ice Barrier} and left himself open to the enemy!

The balance broken, Imperial Sky's team members grabbed the chance and in one stroke, defeated their opponents soundly and proceeded to the semifinals!

Due to the long battles of the first two matches, the match between Angel Wings and Breaking Dawn did not happen until 9.00 pm.

"Noob tank, the Spellcaster threw the match!" Wei Yan Er looked at the Radiance members who had walked off-stage, bickering among each other, most of them clearly berating the Spellcaster.

Zhang Yang frowned and said, "Maybe it was just a one sided contest!"

Such careless mistakes were not supposed to happen in any team who had made it to the quarterfinals, thus, the circumstances definitely looked dubious.

"Guild master Zhan Yu!" Snow Seeker led her four team members elegantly towards them, "It's almost your turn! You guys are the only team left from our White Jade Castle, be sure to fight hard!"

"Sister Snow Seeker, please do not worry. I will lead the team and our team will surely steamroll over all obstacles, we are brave and skillful in battle, we shall conquer everything... we are undefeatable like The Legend of the Swordsman!" Wei Yan Er initiated some sort of poorly worded, ancient oath from the battles of the olden days.

"Little brat, drop those drama series and start reading some books!" Zhang Yang reached out and waved a hand in front of Wei Yan Er's face like he was shooing off an annoying fly. Zhang Yang replied, "Guild master Snow Seeker, if your healer was a Sacred Knight, the outcome would have been really different!"

"Oh, I'm sooo sorry for being a Priest!" Perfumed Water growled, rolling her eyes.

Snow Seeker smiled graciously and said, "Being able to enter the top eight ranking is more than enough for us! We'll leave the rest to you guys! Guild master Zhan Yu, although you guys have the most support out of all the fans, please does not underestimate Sunset Amber! They are definitely not weak. I even believe that they were holding back against us, trying to mislead the other teams!"

"Oh?" Zhang Yang muttered, genuinely surprised. If it was like what Snow Seeker said, then Sunset Amber's leader definitely took a great risk, but with convincing results! All these were semifinal teams, if Zhang Yang got careless, he might even get his team eliminated!

"Hmph, it doesn't matter, we'll just defeat them all!" Wei Yan Er clenched her fist as she said.

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little brat, that's a bold statement, I like it!"

"Silly Yu, I'm warning you, don't you dare have any thoughts towards Yan Er!" Han Ying Xue moved in between the two of them.

Zhang Yang let out of a sigh, simply waved his hand and said,

"Take it easy, I have no interests in flat-chested lolis!"

Han Ying Xue immediately turned flirtatious and said, "Oh! So you do have the hots for me! Sigh, it's not like I chose to be born gorgeous!"

"Earth to Han Ying Xue!" Wei Yan Er furiously shook her out of her reverie.

As they spoke, the first match between Angel Wings and Breaking Dawn had started and Breaking Dawn's team completely mopped the floor with their opponents. The next match was no different. So much for Angel Wings writing a story for underdogs.

It was getting late, so the matches between Lone Desert Smoke and Brilliant Star started right away.

Both teams went up to the stage one after another and entered the battle arena. As the team leader, Zhang Yang went to the middle of the stage to shake hands with Brilliant Star's leader, Hawk Striker.

"Zhan Yu, from today onwards, we Brilliant Star will replace Lone Desert Smoke as China's Top Guild!" Hawk Striker hissed through his smiling teeth. Other than those words, onlookers would only see two men shaking hands in mutual respect, with no tension between the two.

Zhang Yang returned the smile evenly, knowing that it was to be

expected. Currently, Lone Desert Smoke was indisputably the strongest guild in China. Naturally, they would be targeted by everyone. If Zhang Yang really took every jab like this to heart, he would wear himself out in no time!

"Then you guys should try harder than this!" Having said that, Zhang Yang headed back to his team without sparing a second glance.

"Noob tank, what did you say to him? That guy looks mad!!" Wei Yan Er laughed.

Zhang Yang put the gaming helmet on, shrugged his shoulders and said, "Who knows?!"

The Five of them logged in the game one by one, and after a while, all of them teleported to the virtual arena and entered the final stages of preparation.

Brilliant Star's 5-man team members included:

Hawk Striker, Level 62, Male Orc, Bandit, 15,780 HP.

Slip and Fall, Level 61, Male Dwarf, Guardian, 19,260 HP.

Chaos Thought, Level 62, Male Dwarf, Sacred Knight, 14,820 HP.

Purple Carrot, Level 62, Female Elf, Phantom Assassin, 14,970

HP.

The Second Red Lotus, Level 61, Male Human, Cryomancer. 14,550 HP.

"We are going to have to blitz this! Focus fire on the Guardian first, force their Thieves to emerge from stealth. Then, I will use {Vanguard's Aggression} on all of us. I'll keep them busy with {Thunder Strike} and {Blast Wave} and use {Rearm} to start off the cycle again! We'll defeat them within 20 seconds, okay?" Zhang Yang looked at the four girls.

"Yeah! Violent and brutal, just the way I like it!"

'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke versus Brilliant Star will officially begin after 10 seconds!'

Bang!

When the invisible wall disappeared, Zhang Yang and his team rushed towards their opponent.

Both teams' melee attackers came into contact.

Zhang Yang and his four teammates, along with Whitey, started hammering the enemy Guardian down!

Are they mad? Focusing their fire on a Guardian, of all things,

right off the bat?!

Nobody in the entire hall could figure out what Lone Desert Smoke was up to!

While there was no denying the durability and toughness of Guardians, even they could not withstand an all-out onslaught from six enemies like this! Within three seconds, the Guardian's HP was at a critical state.

Even though Chaos Thought healed Slip and Fall with his greatest effort, Slip and Fall was already under a debuff that reduced 75% of his healing effect! Slip and Fall had no choice but to use {Warrior's Will} to cancel Sun Xin Yu's {Kidney Shot} while activating {Shield Wall} and {Blast Wave}at the same time.

As Wei Yan Er and Han Ying Xue were standing at both sides of Slip and Fall while Zhang Yang was directly in front of him, his {Blast Wave} could only strike a person! Out of the three, Slip and Fall decided to target Zhang Yang!

Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot both emerged from stealth mode, one of them stunning Wei Yan Er with {Ambush} while the other used {Blind} on Daffodil Daydream, incapacitating her momentarily. They then focused fire on Wei Yan Er!

"Hah! Bout time you guys showed up!" Zhang Yang laughed loudly, activating {Warrior's Will} and casting {Sacrifice} on Wei Yan Er. Almost immediately after, he took a few steps back and unleashed {Blast Wave}, stunning all three of them.

Wei Yan Er also quickly shook the stun off herself using {Warrior's Will} and the team started raining blows on Hawk Striker!

"Slip and Fall, quickly activate {Vanguard's Aggression} protection barrier!" Chaos Thought hurriedly shouted, knowing that Hawk Striker would fall in no time!

"I can't, my {Warrior's Will}'s cool down is not completed yet, and I'm still stunned for another 3 seconds!" Slip and Fall shouted loudly in the team.

"Let me use {Blur}!" Hawk Striker was the leader of Brilliant Star's team. Befitting of the role, he was calm and analytic. His shadow blurred as he entered {Blur}'s state, where Zhang Yang's team had only a 25% chance of hitting him with physical attacks!

This was a survival skill for Thieves. They could activate it while stunned, similar to the Warriors' {Shield Wall}.

Only Daffodil Daydream's Magic attacks continued landing on him with continued damage.

"Change target to Purple Carrot!"

Purple Carrot also activated {Blur}.

"Keep attacking her!"

Currently, Slip and Fall had {Shield Wall} activated, while the other two Thieves were in {Blur} states. Their Knight and Hunter were standing too far away to assist. A 75% evasion rate would not grant them full invincibility. As long as they reduced Purple Carrot's HP to 20% she would be as good as dead, as {Killing Cleave} was unblockable, and had a guaranteed chance of hitting!

Four seconds later, {Blast Wave}'s stun effect ended, but Purple Carrot still had 10,000 hitpoints. This was thanks to the effects of {Blur} and Chaos Thought's continuous healing.

Brilliant Star quickly launched a counterattack against Zhang Yang's team!

Zhang Yang activated {Vanguard's Aggression}, protecting his entire party.

The battle had seemed to be at an impasse!

However, Slip and Fall's {Shield Wall} duration ended. Zhang Yang and the gang quickly switched their target to Slip and Fall once again!

Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot used {Vanish} without hesitation, and then used {Ambush} to stun some of Zhang Yang's team, so that they could buy him some time, and immediately started lashing out like the sneaky thieves they were!

"Fall back!"

Both opposing Thieves were still under {Blur}'s state and his {Thunder Strike} would not necessarily land, forcing them out of stealth! However, the disadvantage of {Stealth} was a reduced movement speed, and as long as Zhang Yang delayed them for a few more seconds, {Blur}'s effect will be gone, and then it would time for them to attack!

Back off, back off, back off!

Zhang Yang mentally counted down the seconds. Suddenly, he advanced, stamping on the ground and launching a {Thunder Strike}!

Pa! Pa!

Two shadows were instantly struck out of the thin air--Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot!

"How..?" Hawk Striker was shocked. Zhang Yang had accurately predicted the locations of both thieves, forcing them out of stealth with a single move!

Zhang Yang flashed his teeth. He was already competent at "catching" Thieves in his past life, all of them professional players with four to five years of experience, these substantially less experienced thieves were child's play to him! Besides, even after

taking all of that into consideration, Sun Xin Yu was still, definitely more skilled at "catching" thieves than he was!

Wei Yan Er stepped in, unleashing {Blast Wave} stunning the two thieves!

Slip and Fall hurriedly used {Vanguard's Aggression}. As both Thieves were stunned, unable to move nor dodge blows, all their survival skills spent, they were in deep trouble!

"Attack their Guardian!" Zhang Yang issued a new command.

All of them dashed towards Slip and Fall.

The {Vanguard's Aggression} barrier could not be moved after activation! Thus, Slip and Fall did not back off but dashed towards Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot. He needed to run into the protection barrier and wait for Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot's stunning effects to end before he could launch attacks!

'{Thunder Strike}!'

Zhang Yang stomped the ground, and Slip and Fall's speed was slowed down immediately!

Lone Desert Smoke proceeded to unleash all of its firepower on Slip and Fall!

Slip and Fall was a tank. But tank or not, when faced with the Yellow-Gold attacks of an entire team, there was no point deluding yourself! Slip and Fall had already used his {Shield Wall} and he was also under the effects of {Destructive Smash}, so he was all on his own now.

Within six to seven seconds, Slip and Fall became the first player to be eliminated!

Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot quickly dashed towards Zhang Yang! As Zhang Yang also already used {Vanguard's Aggression}, they still had a chance to win!

Zhang Yang only laughed and resetted all skills' cool down by using {Rearm}, and then he launched another {Blast Wave} to stun the oncoming Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot!

Hawk Striker and Purple Carrot could just cry there and then. They had been stunned three times within 30 seconds! It was oppressive! They were the dancers in the shadows, flitting through the dark, striking when least expected. But now, they had been turned into clumsy ducklings out of water, constantly being stunned again and again!

Such a tragedy!

With no more survival skills, and no protection, it was all over for them!

1–0, Lone Desert Smoke won the first match!

Chapter 279: Rigged?

The second match started five minutes later!

Brilliant Star's team was still discouraged from last game's loss. After some half-hearted, disorganized swings, they were quickly defeated.

2-0, Lone Desert Smoke wins!

"Noob tank, you are Level 67 and I'm Level 64! When we get the championship, I'll gain three levels, along with the MVP award which grants me another level, so I'll be level 68, one level above you!!" Wei Yan Er grinned. She loved stepping on Zhang Yang's head.

"Silly girl, if your elementary school's math teacher heard that, he would run headfirst into a wall!" Zhang Yang sighed.

The others at the dining table only smiled gently.

Wei Yan Er bit her fingers for a while and said, "Humph, can't people act cute for a little?"

"Eh, you see..." Fatty Han pointed at a corner of restaurant, Liu Wei was sitting closely with a tall, young man, their faces so close to each other that it was inevitable for Fatty Han to suspect that they were lovers.

That tall and young man was not just anyone else, but the Top tank from Zhang Yang's previous life, One Sword Stroke!

What in the world were these two guys doing together? In Zhang Yang's previous life, they were never even mentioned in the same breath!

"What's wrong, Brother Fatty? Something interesting about those two?" being the blabbermouth that he was, Lost Dream immediately perked up and asked.

Fatty Han was a pretty good bullshitter himself. He immediately made up a romantic man's love story that broke secular prejudice between Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke, which caused Lost Dream's eyebrows to wiggle like earthworms. The others started commenting about the eyebrows instead of Fatty Han's story.

Could it be that since Liu Wei failed to bribe Lone Desert Smoke, he decided switched his target to Imperial Sky?

Zhang Yang was deep in thought. But, the guild Liu Wei bribed was Blue Sea. Could the timeline be altered at this point once again? But, why would One Sword Stroke even consider Liu Wei's deal?

As One Sword Stroke would be the China's S-Class League iconic character in the future, along with all sorts of endorsements in advertisements, his annual income would exceed more than 400,000,000 dollars! Besides, he was the successor of Sky and Ocean Electronics, why would he collaborate with Liu Wei?

Zhang Yang suddenly had an epiphany, and whipped out his phone to surf the net, looking up Sky and Ocean Electronics' information. He nodded in understanding.

Five years from now! Currently, Sky and Ocean Electronics was still a small medium sized company, worth less than 50,000,000 dollars. Also, because of Zhang Yang's intervention in this life, him winning all the First Clears had really sent the other teams down a notch!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, First Clear competitions were much intense, and Imperial Sky had rose dominant out of them all! Furthermore, Imperial Sky also successfully obtained the first territory in China under One Sword Stroke's leadership!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, One Sword Stroke was much more of a legend than he was now! Just like Zhang Yang now had, he had his equivalent of Thunderstorm Castle and Little Merchandize Shop! Even now, would he have collaborated with Liu Wei?

Obviously, the answer would be no!

If Zhang Yang did not exist in this timeline, Liu Wei's first target would definitely have been Imperial Sky. However, in his previous life, One Sword Stroke had obviously said "no" to Liu Wei, but this time...

Zhang Yang realized just then, he was the matchmaker of these two men!

Liu Wei was wealthy and One Sword Stroke was strong in leadership, Zhang Yang could not imagine what kind of power these two men would produce together!

Zhang Yang clenched his fist forcefully, a friend of Liu Wei's was an enemy of his! The friend of my enemy is my enemy! He would have to make moves against Imperial Sky should they threaten his position.

Liu Wei met Zhang Yang's gaze and the handsome, charming man lifted a hand up, firing an imaginary pistol at him. Poof his mouth went, a sinister gleam in his eyes, like a serpent which could swallow a person in a single mouth! Zhang Yang felt a chill rising up his spine.

This was the Liu Wei in Zhang Yang's impression, the arrogant and evil person that he knew!

"F*ck, that pretty boy is so arrogant!" Fatty Han roared, having seen the gesture as well. He had unbuttoned his top collar, ready to punch Liu Wei.

"Fatty, sit down!" Zhang Yang said calmly, keeping his eyes locked on Liu Wei, Zhang Yang slowly raised his right hand, and then kept his another four fingers and only his middle finger remained upright!

"He he!" it looked fun for Wei Yan Er, so she also followed Zhang Yang, and vulgarly showed her middle finger as well.

"Ha ha ha!" the rest of the gang also followed Zhang Yang, and showed their middle fingers at Liu Wei one after another, even Sun Xin Yu.

With their dining table being so full of pretty girls, several guests were actually sneaking occasional glances at Han Ying Xue and other pretty girls. The guests were stunned when they saw the pretty girls pulling off such indecent gestures! However, a few people also found it interesting, and like obedient sheep, they started throwing middle fingers in the same direction as the girls.

Humans tend to have herd mentality, and more fingers raised up, as it seemed to be the cool thing to do at that moment.

All of a sudden, hundreds of people in the restaurant stopped eating and drinking to show their middle fingers at Liu Wei.

Liu Wei felt his gut sinking into nothingness! His handsome facial expression turned red and pale, he was so embarrassed that he wished there was a hole in the ground for him to bury himself in!

Zhang Yang did not think that his random gesture would cause such an effect with the help of those pretty girls. Zhang Yang was astonished, and could not help but laugh.

"Ha ha ha" Han Ying Xue and the rest broke out in laughter, not expecting that effect themselves.

The laughter influenced the crowd and the restaurant was suddenly filled with clueless. pure laughter.

Liu Wei's face turned extremely red, and he snorted in disgust, glaring at Zhang Yang one last time before walking out from the restaurant like a wounded animal making its escape. It only fueled the crowd's laughter even more.

On the evening of the 28th of December, the first semifinal match started with Sunset Amber versus Imperial Sky!

Both of these teams were definitely close in power. Sometimes, one of the team members would do a minor mistake and get caught by the opponent, and this situation was juggled between the two sides until the match ended!

1–1, both teams had drawn in two matches and started the crucial third match!

It was supposed to be a wonderful match, but one of Sunset Amber's Thieves made a fatal mistake! He was supposed to use {Blind} to daze the opponent's healer and defeat the opponent, but his {Blind} inexplicably missed the target!

Everyone knew that when {Blind} was being activated, all a player had to do was to keep their eyes on their target, and it would never miss!

The audiences dropped in dead silence, as voices started to boo. Accusations of match fixing flew through the air. Regardless of it being a deliberate move or a mistake, Sunset Amber regrettably lost to Imperial Sky with the score of 1–2!

At 9.00 pm, another semifinal started, Lone Desert Smoke versus Breaking Dawn.

Breaking Dawn was the only team who had two healers when they broke into final top 16 positions. Their healers had strong healing endurance and healing capability! Because they had two healers who could provide healings to all the team members, thus, even focus fire on a single member would prove difficult!

As long as they dragged on the duration of match, their longterm heals would shine and wear the opponent down!

However, nobody blitzed better than Zhang Yang and his team. Breaking Dawn had no options of defending themselves against the overwhelming offense!

Zhang Yang's {Destructive Smash} removed 75% of healing effects, turning both of them into half a healer! Even without that, the combined attacks of Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er, Daffodil Daydream, and Whitey would already overwhelm the healing rate of even 2 healers. Breaking Dawn simply stood no chance.

Zhang Yang's team defeated Breaking Dawn effortlessly. A lot of teams were actually frustrated with Breaking Dawn's dual healer strategy, but Zhang Yang's team had steamrolled over them with sheer brute force!

Absolute dominance!

Lone Desert Smoke's team proudly broke into the finals. They would compete with One Sword Stroke for the finals tomorrow night.

• • •

"Ding Ding!"

The doorbell rang. Zhang Yang walked to open the door, and saw Radiance's guild master, Sword of Light together with Sunset Amber's guild master, Greensleeves Prince standing at the corridor. Zhang Yang was a little surprised and greeted them, "Oh, guild master Sword of Light and guild master Greensleeves Prince, please, please come in!"

Zhang Yang stepped aside graciously.

Currently, left Zhang Yang was alone in the guest room as Fatty Han had picked up a sexy girl on the way back, and had gone on a date.

"I never would have thought that two of you were close!" Zhang

Yang made two cups of coffee for both of them and being surprised. They were from different cities, different servers after all.

Sword of Light shook his head and said, "Although I knew of Greensleeves Prince long ago, I have never met him before, not till today!"

Greensleeves Prince nodded silently in affirmation.

Zhang Yang was puzzled and asked, "So...what's this visit about then?"

For a brief moment, Sword of Light's face flashed with fury, and he said, "Guild master Zhan Yu, you may call me a sore loser for this, but our loss to Imperial Sky raised up too many questions! The circumstances of it were simply too suspicious! Venshi simply cannot explain how he made such mistake!"

Venshi was the Spellcaster who made a careless mistake when they were battling with Imperial Sky's team for the third match yesterday. Because of his careless mistake, the hope of Radiance breaking into the semifinals was ruined.

Greensleeves Prince also said, "Lonely Tree's mistake was also inexplicable! When I saw Radiance's match, I could not help but think, why do such newbish, amateur mistakes only occur when Imperial Sky is involved?"

Sword of Light continued, "I did some asking around on my team, and they said that Venshi had been sneaking around a few days ago, constantly whispering into his phone. They had thought that it was a family member, or his lover, but nobody asked!"

"Lonely Tree also met a stranger for two hours this morning, and I too have no idea on what they are talking about. However, I have good reason to believe that both Venshi and Lonely Tree have been paid off to throw the matches!"

"I agree!" Sword of Light nodded in acknowledgement, "But it's too late for that now. We have lost our battles, people would only think of us as sore losers if we voiced this out! However, we cannot let such underhanded tactics pass! Guild master Zhan Yu, Lone Desert Smoke is definitely stronger than Imperial Sky, anyone could see that. You must be careful, there's all the more reason for them to resort to dirty tricks!"

Chapter 280: Tricks

After Sword of Light and Greensleeves Prince left, Zhang Yang went deep in thought.

Although he had not known One Sword Stroke well in his past life, he would never expect such a distinguished figure to use such contemptible ways!

Liu Wei!

That's right! Zhang Yang's eyes shone, only Liu Wei would slink around and manipulate people in such manner! Only with his wealth could offer such important key persons in Radiance and Sunset Amber to turn their coats!

Everything about it spoke of Liu Wei. In Zhang Yang's previous life, Liu Wei had headhunted all the talented members in Blue Sea and had left with only an empty shell. Finally, he built The Myth and replaced Blue Sea!

What if Liu Wei bribes Zhang Yang's 5-man team?

Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er were money-grubbers, however, they were in it for the fun of earning, not the money itself. They had more than enough wealth to go around for themselves. In fact, if Liu Wei really wanted to bribe these two money-grubbers, Liu Wei would definitely lose his money and go bankrupt! These two ladies were billionaires, it was an absolutely ludicrous idea!

Sun Xin Yu? You won't be bribing her, you're just paying for your own execution fees!

Daffodil Daydream? That girl may not have been born with a silver spoon in her mouth, but she has been with Zhang Yang for a while, and in addition to the fixed 100,000 dollars monthly salary, she still had additional earnings from the sales of her dungeon runs, as a result, she would already be earning millions! As long as she did not have a screw lose somewhere, she definitely would not consider such short term benefits! Besides, she had proven her loyalty time and again, directly managing the guild's wealth and storehouse!

Well, that leaves only Zhang Yang himself! Oh, Liu Wei did already approach him, but only got humiliated in return!

His team was basically impregnable!

"Ding Dong!"

The doorbell rang once again.

Sword of Light and Greensleeves Prince again? Zhang Yang walked to open the door and saw a waitress who came with a dining trolley. He frowned and said, "Wrong room, I didn't order anything!"

The waitress looked at a paper, revealed a smile and apologized,

"I'm sorry to bother you!"

"It is okay!" Zhang Yang took a step backwards, but when he wanted to close the door, he saw the waitress holding a spray bottle and an odd smell rushed into his nasal cavity, "You..." Zhang Yang could only speak a word, before dizziness overcame him and he lost his balance. He leaned against the door and sank to the ground. His world became dark.

Bang!

Zhang Yang stirred. As his vision recovered, he found himself lying on the bed in the room with about seven to eight cops with uniform surrounding him!

What was happening here?!

"You are under arrest for prostitution!" a cop with a strong Shanghai's accent said.

Two cops immediately came over and cuffed him!

Prostitution??

Zhang Yang scanned the surroundings, and realized that a woman lay at his left side, blankets wrapped around her naked body. Her long hair covered her face, hiding her identity! Liu Wei....only he could come up with such a scenario!

However, prostitution was not a serious crime. Zhang Yang would only be slapped with a fine and spend a few nights in lockup!

But he had much bigger things to worry about now!

Tomorrow would be the finals of the Soaring Swords competition, and as long as Zhang Yang remained in the lockup, Lone Desert Smoke would be severely handicapped. In a four versus five matchup against Imperial Sky, they stood no chance!

Zhang Yang did not have time to bother about being wrongly arrested or falsely charged. Zhang Yang would only bother about it after the Soaring Swords competition!

The Liu family's home base was in Lin Hai City, and Liu Wei could easily pull the wool over everyone's eyes in Lin Hai City! In Shanghai City, Liu Wei had so much sway that this was child's play for him!

Zhang Yang forced his body to move, but he heard one of the cops mutter, "Resisting arrest?" The next moment, he felt the sting and shock of an electric baton, and fell back helplessly. Still weak from the drug, he was basically rendered comatose.

A few cops bodily manhandled Zhang Yang out of the hotel and drove off.

After they reached the police station, the cops simply flung him into a cell without any due process, and went on their own business.

What should I do?

Zhang Yang was deep in worry! Claim his innocence? Obviously, the cops were acting under Liu Wei's orders, they would not listen to him!

He had no chance of making a phone call, for he was basically naked when they discovered him, all he had was a blanket to cover himself!

Damn it! Damn it!

Liu Wei must have sent that sexy girl to get Fatty Han away and leave Zhang Yang alone in the room! It was pointless no matter how cautious Zhang Yang was, as Liu Wei would have thought up of a plan anyway!

There was no other way of undermining Lone Desert Smoke, so Liu Wei had to come up with a different kind of trap! Liu Wei's motive was to keep Zhang Yang in the lockup for at least one day!

Zhang Yang racked his brains to find a solution, but could not think of anything else until next day, at 5.00 pm, a cop came patrolling, and Zhang Yang's eyes shone suddenly. ...

In front of the Soaring Swords competition showcase stage.

"Eh, where is that silly Yu? Where in the world is he?!" Han Ying Xue tapped the ground with a foot impatiently as their match was only half an hour away!

"Little Yang is not back yet?" Fatty Han panted, running over.

"Fatty pervert, aren't you staying in the same room with silly Yu? How could you do not know where he is?" Han Ying Xue questioned Fatty Han.

Fatty's face turned red and answered, "I'm sorry that I'm so charming. I was approached by a sexy girl last night, and as a result, I was 'busy' the entire night! I did not see little Yang when I went back to the hotel room this morning. Maybe he got jealous of me getting all the action and decided to go hunting himself? Heheh, he's really 'busy' huh, doing it for almost a whole day!"

"Fatty, can't you ever say anything good? Guild master is not a person like that!" Daffodil Daydream immediately spoke up.

"Ha ha, pretty sis Daffodil Daydream, don't you fancy little Yang?! Do you want me to be your matchmaker?" Fatty Han started to ramble on.

"Something's not right! No matter how dumb silly Yu is, he will

not go missing at such a critical moment. What should we do? The match is going to start!" Han Ying Xue was anxious.

Sun Xin Yu was leaning against the wall at a corner, her face deep in thought.

"What happened in the hotel?" Lost Dream scratched his head.

"Little Yang left his mobile phone behind. I glanced through the room just now and his clothes are still in the room. It's weird, as if someone took him in his sleep or something!" Fatty Han started to worry, but thought about Zhang Yang's skills and shrugged the thought off.

"Lone Desert Smoke, the final will begin in 20 minutes, please hurry up and prepare!" a staff member walked towards them.

"Alright!" Han Ying Xue answered and turned back to the group, worry lining her face.

"Forget about it, since noob tank is not here, it's up to us four ladies. Let them taste the capability of our female army!"

"Eh, aren't you are Miss Han and Miss Wei?" Liu Wei suddenly came to them, smiling sinisterly, "I do not seem so see your guild master here? Sigh, oh dear, what an irresponsible person? How could he go missing at such a moment?"

"Pretty boy, what are you talking about?!" Fatty Han rounded up

on him.

"It is nothing, I just wanted to remind you guys. Ah, the final will be started in 19 minutes and 12 seconds! Ha ha, I should not disturb you guys, I shall look for a seat to watch the contest. See ya!" Liu Wei laughed out loud and went into the hall.

"What an annoying fellow!" Wei Yan Er spat on the ground.

"Let's go in!"

"Excuse me, may I know who is police officer Sun Xin Yu?" when all of them wanted to go in showcase stage, a policeman in uniform ran towards them, his brow shiny with sweat.

Sun Xin Yu took a step forwards and replied, "It is me!"

That policeman was astounded by Sun Xin Yu's beauty, and he quickly blinked, he whipping out a mobile phone while saying, "I'm Zhang Yang's university friend, oh, right, you guys know him as Zhan Yu. He is in our lockup now, and he got a recording for you guys. He thought of calling you guys, but he cannot remember any of your phone numbers and he also thought of calling the hotel, but you guys were nowhere near your rooms!"

"Your police station?"

"Why is little Yang captured?"

"What happened to silly Yu?"

"How could the boss be in the police station?"

All of them peppered him with questions.

Sun Xin Yu played the recording in mobile phone, and Zhang Yang's frantic voice rang out, "Ice cube, quickly make a call and get me out of here! That bastard Liu Wei set me up, he drugged me last night, and got me arrested! Some prostitution thingy, I don't know the details! I will tell you everything else when I get out of here, the owner of this phone is an old friend from my university, his name is Zhao Xiao Song! He will cooperate!"

"F*ck, it's that pretty boy!"

"No wonder he came over just now, it was his doing!"

"Such a shameless person!"

"So despicable!"

"Sister Sun, do you have any connection in Shanghai? Otherwise, we'll get Lost Dream to help us. Isn't he always saying that his dad is so capable?" Fantasy Sweetheart said.

"Damn, my dad is really very capable!" Lost Dream retorted as his

father was a Deputy provincial level's military office! However, he did not bother to elaborate further and quickly asked Zhao Xiao Song, "Which area is your police station?"

Sun Xin Yu had already taken out her phone and was dialing furiously.

"Dong Ming Street Police Station!" Zhao Xiao Song quickly answered.

Sun Xin Yu walked to a side and started talking. Then she walked back to the crowd within 30 seconds, her facial expression remained unchanged like nothing had happened. Lost Dream was also on the phone, chatting like a machinegun.

"How long does it take to travel from Dong Ming Street?" everyone looked at Zhao Xiao Song.

"If there is no traffic jam, at least 20 minutes!" Zhao Xiao Song answered immediately.

"Even if that silly Yu is released now, he won't make it for the first match!" Han Ying Xue thought for a while and said, "Let's just buy him time in the first round, and hope he makes it to the next round!"

"En!"

Chapter 281: Here I Come!

It was 7:30 pm, the first match of the Soaring Swords Competition Finale had begun!

The audience immediately noticed the situation and started chattering among themselves! Would a guild master and party leader simply not show up at such an important event? Did he get cold feet? Was he lost in some paradise of his own?

The rules of the competition, only the five players who registered for the competition can enter the competition. If anything led to the shortage of one person or so, they would have to make do!

There came a wave of 'Boo' from the audience!

Since the beginning of the quarterfinals, those parties who went up against Imperial Sky all seemed to suffer some misfortune! During the quarterfinal match, the spellcaster from the Radiance was acting silly; during the semifinals, the thief from the Yellow Flame was floating about like an idiot; and now, someone was completely missing!

Everyone could connect the dots at this rate!

Even if Han Ying Xue and the others unleashed 120% of their real strength, they were outnumbered and mismatched from the start. Furthermore, One Sword Stroke was the number one tanker in Zhang Yang's previous life, and was a powerful player in his own right! With his coordinated control between his {Sacrifice},

{Vanguard's Aggression}, {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike}, and some additional outstanding tactical commands, the 'girl-team' had to swallow down the first trace of defeat ever since they debuted!

"I'm so mad now!" Han Ying Xue crossed her arms with a violent, sudden jerk, causing her massive, outstanding pair of jugs to jiggle in shock as they were momentarily crushed, before spilling over her arms, as she surveyed the area with her bewitching eyes.

"Why isn't the noob tank here yet?!" Wei Yan Er was positively wailing now, her tough facade completely shattered! They now saw clearly, the importance of a Guardian. Although Guardians definitely lacked offensive power, they were an irreplaceable class in the arena. They provided massive support to their allies, while controlling the movements of the enemy!

"This is bad, the second round of the match will begin in 10 minutes time..." Daffodil Daydream almost looked nauseous.

It was not that they were sore losers, but to be defeated under circumstances was laughable!

Without a word, Sun Xin Yu took out her cellphone. The girls could only hear something about "cutting the power" and "I shall take full responsibility". They could not help but to look at each other in the face. What sort of woman possessed such power?

This is Shang Hai City! In an internationally recognized financial metropolis, how much influence would it take to cut the power

supply of a large hotel?

Liu Wei laid back against his seat, smirking contentedly.

The rich would always control the world! He would only need to sit back while setting his grunts to work! What good would the skills and combat prowess of Zhang Yang be when he could just make him disappear like that! This was just the beginning, since Zhang Yang had insulted him time and again, he intended to slowly 'take care' of him! First, he would buy over the core members of Lone Desert Smoke, and after hollowing out their 'backbone', he would leave Zhang Yang as a general without an army!

In an online game, what can one person do? Give a player a full set of Yellow-Gold equipment, and have the player triumph over tens of thousands of players?

After securing the championship of the Soaring Swords competition, Imperial Sky would rise to fame, while under the lead of One Sword Stroke and his leadership, Imperial Sky shall become the strongest guild in the whole of China! When that time comes, their 'backbone' too, shall be hollowed out. After ousting One Sword Stroke from the guild, he could finally write his own myth of 'Liu Wei'!

That's right, myth! And after that, his guild shall be named after as 'The Myth'!

"All contestants please log in, the second round of the match is

beginning shortly!" the voice of the hostess, Liu Wan Fei began to echo.

Victory was almost at hand! The smile on Liu Wei's face only grew wider with each passing moment!

Pak! Pak! Pak!

The lights of the showcase hall went out of a sudden, and the crowd rose in uproar and shrill screams. Soon after, people started turning on their cellphone flashlights. They started muttering unhappily.

"What's with this power failure!"

"A big hotel like this having power outage? Where's the backup generator?"

"Time for some touchy touchy in the dark!"

"Argh! Pervert!"

"Someone touched my butt!"

"Beat him!"

A brawl instantly broke out!

"Everyone, remain calm, the hotel management is doing all that they can, the power will be restored shortly!" the hotel staff shouted over the din.

Liu Wei was stumped, he had not considered power outage, out of all things! But... power failure was just a power failure, Zhang Yang was still sitting in the jail, this would only be a short delay to his great uprising!

"Sister Sun, you are really something, you know that, did you really do this?" Wei Yan Er looked at Sun Xin Yu in admiration.

Sun Xin Yi only smiled knowingly for an instant.

Even after 10 minutes, there was no sign of power being restored, and the crowd was getting hot and furious, trapped in warm, stale air, and darkness.

Sun Xin Yu's phone rang and after listening to the other end, she simply said, "Let's give them back power!"

Pak! Pak! Pak!

The hall was instantly lit up again.

Liu Wan Fei was shaking her round butt to left and right as she catwalked up to the center stage. Those with sharp eyes

immediately spotted a trickle of white, milky liquid at the edge of her lips. There was only red wine on her table, there was no milk on it!

At that instant, countless pairs of murderous eyes swiveled around to burn holes in the straight faces of the two officials sitting close to the back of the stage.

"Alright, the power has been restored back to normal, let us now move back on to the match between Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS Imperial Sky, the second round of the match shall carry on immediate---"

"Wait!" the voice of Zhang Yang suddenly echoed through, as he bounded towards the stage, "Hahaha, can you believe it I actually overslept! My bad, my bad!"

Wow!

The audience lost their minds. The very air shook with their cheers and screams, as if the messiah himself has arrived!

"Hehe, guildmaster Zhan Yu's timing couldn't have been any better! Your party has already lost one round, things were really looking back for them!" Liu Wan Fei pointed her finger towards the location of Han Ying Xue and the party, and then her tone got more serious, "Guildmaster Zhan Yu, please make ready, the competition is about to start!"

Liu Wei's eyes almost popped out of his sockets then!

What was going on? Didn't he already 'notify' them to keep Zhang Yang in a 24-hour custody? They couldn't even handle such an easy task?

"Are you Liu Wei?"

Just as Liu Wei was scratching his head, wondering about the incomprehensive situation, two policemen in uniforms went up to his side, flashing their badges. The two bodyguards of Liu Wei immediately stood up, with the 'I dare you to make a move' expression on their faces.

Liu Wei quickly reached his hands out, hinting the two bodyguard not to act rashly! This is Shang Hai, not Ling Hai, and he could not flaunt his prowess without knowing what is in these waters! He spoke calmly, "I am Liu Wei, so what brings you two officers here?"

"We suspect that you are connected to a murder case, please come with us!" One of the policemen took out a pair of handcuffs and dangled it in front of Liu Wei, "Please cooperate!"

The blackout was unfortunate, and the sudden appearance of Zhang Yang was unprecedented. They could have been dismissed as unfortunate coincidences, ridiculous as they seemed. But now, something was really wrong here! He could not help but go numb with shock!

Anyone with a fair bit of connection could easily arrange for Zhang Yang's release. But to cut the power supply of the entire hotel, and for as long as ten minutes, required serious power! What sort of influence did this guy possess, or rather, who was it who had this man's back?

People do not fight against the government, which included their government servants, and furthermore, a powerful dragon cannot crush a snake in its old haunts! Liu Wei searched his thoughts hopelessly before looking up to where Zhang Yang was. With the face of a defeated man, he slowly raised his hands up in surrender.

• • •

"Noob tank, you are finally back!" Wei Yan Er patted her flat chest, "You made us miss you so much!"

"Oh? To think that the little girl actually has a crush on me!" Zhang Yang chuckled while putting on the helmet.

"Humph! How rude! I only meant well! If that's how you're going to respond, I'll throw you back in the cell!"

The five of them went online one after another, and immediately, they were teleported into the virtual arena once again.

"This time, we are going to handle them with 'care'!" Wei Yan Er was cracking her knuckles with ferocious intent.

"Yes!" Daffodil Daydream nodded earnestly.

Zhang Yang glanced at the formation of the opposition party, and he said, "I will take care of One Sword Stroke, I shall leave the rest to you guys!"

"Fine!"

The formation of five members of the Imperial Sky are ---

One Sword Stroke, Level 63, male human, Guardian, health points 19,120.

Blooming Ichor, Level 63, male elf, Assassin, health points 15,780.

Fire Fountain, Level 62, male human, Pyromancer, health points 15,420.

Soul Striker, Level 62, male human, Priest, health points 16,390.

Lord Wicked Virulence, Level 62, male dwarf, Sniper, health points 16,740.

'Ding! Lone Desert Smoke First Party VS Imperial Sky will begin in 10 seconds!' As the invisible air walls vanished, all party members from both sides immediately charged out. Zhang Yang followed closely behind Whitey, and when they were 10 meters away from One Sword Stroke, Whitey instantly used {Wild Charge} and knocked One Sword Stroke into a stunned state.

Zhang Yang did not activate his {Charge}, but said, "Everyone try to stay 10 meters away from One Sword Stroke, don't give him get the chance to use his {Charge} on you!"

Under Zhang Yang's control, Whitey turned and began to charge towards the opposition's healer, Soul Striker.

One second later, Zhang Yang activated his {Charge}, stunning One Sword Stroke again!

He then weaved to the back of One Sword Stroke and began to work with his weapon.

'-897!'

One Sword Stroke took damage, while the rage gauge of Zhang Yang increased from 12 points to 30 points.

Another second passed, and One Sword Stroke recovered from the stun effect. Knowing that Guardians worked best with their team mates, he decisively ignored Zhang Yang and ran straight towards Wei Yan Er.

{Thunder Strike}!

One Sword Stroke was inflicted with a damage value of '-o', but his movements were visibly slowed!

After struggling to move forward, he had to abandon the stupid intention of his, and swiftly, he turned around, ready to engage with Zhang Yang for one big battle! But, there was no sign of Zhang Yang! His blood boiled in frustration.

Zhang Yang had already left him behind, and was attacking Lord Wicked Virulence. With a {Blast Wave}, the sniper had been stunned!

Zhang Yang glided through the battlefield, more like an assassin than a guardian, as he followed up with {Horizontal Sweep}, inflicing a damage of '-2183' on Lord Wicked Virulence, while immediately turning towards Blooming Ichor who had, in that moment, been forced out of stealth by Sun Xin Yu! He was constantly moving across the battlefield, giving this guy a slash, that guy another blow, sealing up their movements!

One Sword Stroke was dragging his two feet that had been loaded with lead, crawling like a snail. Gritting his teeth, he threw his {Vanguard's Aggression} out onto Blooming Ichor!

Because the disadvantage of {Vanguard's Aggression} was that it

could not be moved once cast, it was best used on an existing area where another buff is active! If used like how One Sword Stroke just did, it would only bring out it's life-saving effect! An ideal situation for the usage of {Vanguard's Aggression} was for a thief to keep someone locked up in the bubble with him, while the party finished off that unlucky bastard, all the while taking only 10% of the damage from the enemy who would try to save their team mate!

"Focus fire on One Sword Stroke!" Zhang Yang calmly voiced out. The other four members of the Imperial Sky had already entered the effective area of the {Vanguard's Aggression}, having no intention of attacking at all!

One Sword Stroke had finally obtained the chance to use {Charge}! He knocked Wei Yan Er who was running in front of him into stunned state, while at the same time activating his {Shield Wall}!

Fire Fountain and Lord Wicked Virulence are both ranged profession players, so they could still launch their assaults from within the effective area of the {Vanguard's Agression}.

Instantly, they targeted Wei Yan Er.

"Retreat!"

The entire party fell back, drawing a distance of more than 30 meters between themselves and the party of Imperial Sky who had refused to leave the effective area of the {Vanguard's Aggression}.

That distance had exceeded the maximum range of any Imperial Sky party member.

After the first clash, One Sword Stroke had been forced to use his ultimate skills like {Shield Wall} and {Vanguard's Aggression}. The same could not be said of Zhang Yang's team!

10 seconds had passed, and both {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Shield Wall} expired uneventfully!

"Stay put for now, let my {Charge} and {Blast Wave} cool down first!" Zhang Yang smiled slyly.

"Noob tank, you are really mean!"

The five members of the Imperial Sky had been forced onto the defensive, and had no intentions of chasing after their opponents. With a wave of his hand, Blooming Ichor disappeared into thin air, entering stealth mode with {Vanish}.

With a 'humph', Sun Xin Yu mirrored her counterpart's move. After approximately 10 seconds, Zhang Yang's {Charge} had been completely cooled down, and with {Blast Wave} almost ready, he said, "Go!"

The second clash was underway!

Poor One Sword Stroke was once again stunned by Whitey and Zhang Yang. After recovering from his extended stun, {Blast Wave}

was waiting for him, and he was forcefully pinned to the ground for another 4 seconds! He instantly removed the stun effect of {Blast Wave} by activating his {Warrior's Will}, and quickly activated {Sacrifice} on Fire Fountain who had become the focal point of their attack!

Zhang Yang activated his {Thunder Strike} and left One Sword Stroke unattended! As his ultimate skills had been forced out into the field already, as long as they stay away from the range of his {Blast Wave} and {Thunder Strike}, he had been rendered totally useless!

Lone Desert Smoke began to focus their assaults on Lord Wicked Virulence. Zhang Yang activated his {Vanguard's Aggression} while Sun Xin Yu used her Status Effect skills to pin the sniper who fell shortly after! They turned around and began to focus their assaults on Fire Fountain, forcing him to use his {Ice Frame}. During that moment, Blooming Ichor used {Ambush} on Sun Xin Yu, but Sun Xin Yu quickly shook it off with {Blind}.

It was now five members of Lone Desert Smoke vs four members of Imperial Sky!

Blooming Ichor was killed!

Fire Fountain was killed!

Soul Striker was killed!

One Sword Stroke sighed dejectedly, and automatically, he admitted defeat and left the arena.

The score was 1:1, the final clash was coming up next!

A powerful dragon cannot crush a snake in its old haunts: Even a person with great power cannot defeat a local villain in his/her own territory.

Chapter 282: We Are The Champions!

After a short break, the climatic battle was beginning to unfold!

"Just charge forward! Use any violent means necessary and crush them!" Zhang Yang raised up his battle sword and let out a war cry!

The two sides drew closer, the battle had begun!

Both sides had {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Shield Wall}. After using {Rearm}, Zhang Yang had activated {Vanguard's Aggression} once again, forcing Imperial Sky's thieves and spellcasters to activate their {Blur} and {Ice Barrier}!

The fire power of Lone Desert Smoke was already ridiculous to begin with, and after waiting out for their opponents to exhaust their life-saving skills, they simply took out the enemy one after another, under concentrated fire!

It was like breaking the dead branches off a tree, they were simply unstoppable!

In term of attack power, Lone Desert Smoke had the advantage. In term of defense, Zhang Yang had {Rearm}, giving him the ability to use {Vanguard's Aggression} and {Sacrifice} two times in a roll! In terms of individual strength, Sun Xin Yu was the future monarch of thieves, while Daffodil Daydream will be one of the Top 10 Spellcasters, and Zhang Yang had an additional five years worth of experience in the game and knowledge of several intangible factors of the game!

After merely holding on for a minute, the final member of the Imperial Sky had finally been hewed right down to the ground courtesy of Wei Yan Er's large axe! Violent, just as Zhang Yang said!

2-1!

Victory has been claimed by Lone Desert Smoke!

"Congratulations to Lone Desert smoke for managing to obtain a victory after such an unfavorable start! I present to you, the Champions of this year's Soaring Swords tournament!" Liu Wan Fei began to clap enthusiastically.

The audience quickly followed after her applause. Lone Desert Smoke had always been more popular than Imperial Sky. Also, due to the suspicious circumstances of Imperial Sky's advancement through the tournament, many of their feats had been thrown into doubt.

Zhang Yang and his party members took off their game helmets, opening their eyes to the deafening cheers of the real world! Fatty Han and the others stormed to the stage, grabbing them in hugs. Of course, boys were only hugging boys while girls were only hugging girls.

After giving her obligatory, insincere congratulatory speech, Liu Wan Fei said, "Now, let's begin with the award distribution! Firstly, this moment belongs to the four parties who made it to the

quarterfinals! So let's give our applause to the five members of the Radiance! Please step up to the stage to claim your rewards!"

The five of Radiance walked up the stage to claim their rewards, one after another.

A lucky-draw counter lay in the middle of the stage. All they had to do was to press the button, and the wheel on the screen behind the stage will begin to spin. After 10 seconds of spinning, it would stop, showing the name of the player and attributes of the equipment drawn.

The Radiance members were a bit out of luck, as none of them were able to hit the 10% rate for the special prizes! All they got were some Green-Copper equipment. However, strong guilds like Radiance would not even be interested in Gray-Silver equipment, so the entire event did not really interest them in the first place.

Afterwards, Crimson Rage, Angel Wings and Brilliant Star took their turns. The pretty ladies of Crimson Rage fared slightly better, with three of them drawing Gray-Silver equipment, and the left the stage cheerfully!

Next it was the turn of Sunset Amber and Breaking Dawn, the semifinalists.

Among the draws, Greensleeves Prince of Sunset Amber and Sardine of Breaking Dawn got lucky and managed to draw Yellow-Gold equipment for themselves, top of their range at that, too! The two of them were visibly ecstatic!

After that, it was the Imperial Sky's turn, the first runner-up, to earn their draws.

"May the gods on the ground, and the gods in the sky, under the command of the father of gods, bless these scums with Black-Steel equipment!" Wei Yan Er began to draw circles in the air.

"Little girl, the first runner-up will get Yellow-Gold equipment at the very least!" Zhang Yang informed her.

"I know! That's why I'm trying to curse them!" Wei Yan Er rolled her eyes backward towards Zhang Yang.

The first four members of the Imperial Sky obtained Yellow-Gold equipment, however, when it was One Sword Stroke's turn to draw, he actually drew out a piece of Violet-Platinum equipment! Immediately, the attribute of that equipment was shown on the big screen!

[Ring of Endless Desire] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +202

Strength: +58

Upon equip: when attacked, 116 damage absorbed.

Use: All damage received will be turned into health points, lasts for 2 seconds. Cool down: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

That was just wicked sick!

Seeing the attribute of the equipment on the big screen, all of the audience members 'oooh'ed! Well, calm down, this is a Violet-Platinum equipment after all, it was to be expected!

One Sword Stroke had not anticipated that he would actually draw a Violet-Platinum equipment, so he burst out in triumphant laughter. While he was at it, he shot a victor's pose at Zhang Yang.

"Wah argh! This is driving me mad!" Wei Yan Er immediately rolled up her sleeves.

"Little girl, did you actually bless them with a Violet-Platinum equipment instead? You got your chant all wrong!" Zhang Yang could not help himself but laughed.

"And finally, the long await turn for the Champion! Let us welcome Lone Desert Smoke up to the stage with a warm applause!" Liu Wan Fei was bouncing her badonkers up and down while walking to Zhang Yang and the party, and then she gave everyone a warm hug.

"The bounce is strong in this one, eh?" Han Ying Xue couldn't help but teased Zhang Yang who had an uncomfortable look on his face.

She was absolutely worthy of the name 'Sexy Goddess'. That pair of round, huge mountain tops, were probably more famous than their owner, dragging her to worldwide acclaim. Words simply could not describe the level of her sexiness! Zhang Yang smiled vaguely and said in a soft voice, "Don't be jealous, I believe that yours are bouncier!"

Han Ying Xue blushed and turned beet red, for once rendered completely speechless.

The lucky draw had finally begun, Wei Yan Er was impatient, so she leaped on front of the line.

The big wheel turned for awhile, and finally, the prize was revealed!

[Silver Wolf Mask] (Violet-Platinum, Armor)

Defense: +80

Vitality: +806

```
Strength: +540

Agility: +240

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Level Requirement: 80
```

The Champion party had a 30% of drawing Violet-Platinum equipment, this little girl was pretty lucky!

Following the first draw, Daffodil Daydream was the second person to walk up for the lucky draw. After a thrilling spin pf the big wheel, her prize was also shown on the big screen.

```
[Moonstream Gown] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +8

Vitality: +288

Intelligence: +270
```

```
Vigor: +115
{Level 2 Socket 1}
{Level 2 Socket 2}
Level Requirement: 60
```

Unfortunately, her luck was out of it on that day, she could only claim a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment. Although Yellow-Gold equipment were a luxury that commoners could only dream of, compared to the other potential draws, this was a letdown! She couldn't help but walk away rather sadly.

However, Daffodil Daydream was already equipped with a full set of Yellow-Gold armor set, so this piece of Yellow-Gold equipment was basically useless to her. She could still earn a huge fortune by selling it, at least!

Han Ying Xue became the third person to step forward. This woman always had a ridiculous amount of luck, when it came to finding things, and earning equipment. She could have even bedded the system itself for all you knew, and the outcome of her draw was no big surprise!

[Gown of Devotion] (Violet-Platinum, Cloth Armor)

Defense: +16 Vitality: +806 Intelligence: +540 Vigor: +230 {Level 3 Socket 1} {Level 3 Socket 2} Required Profession: Priest Level Requirement: 80 Heart of Devotion armor set (1/8): 3 pieces: increase your maximum mana points by 5000 points. 5 pieces: when player uses a healing skill, increase 10% casting speed, last for 10 seconds, can stack up to 3 layers at maximum. 8 pieces: Any of your healing skill has a 5% rate of summoning a mirror of yourself, aiding you in healing!

This woman really had a level of luck that challenged the gods in the heavens! Not only did she draw out a Violet-Platinum, that equipment was also an armor set piece!

The usually stone-faced Sun Xin Yu had an uncharacteristic gleam in her face, unable to hide her excitement. She walked to the stage with a rather lively gait that wouldn't be usually associated with her.

The big wheel once again spun, and stopped!

```
[Titan Greaves] (Violet-Platinum, Armor)
Defense: +80
Vitality: +806
Strength: +230
Agility: +115
Equip: absorb 232 damage when attacked.
{Level 3 Socket 1}
```

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Required Profession: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

Titan Armor Set (1/8):

{Titan Helmet}, {Titan Necklace}, {Titan Chest Plate}, {Titan Cape}, {Titan Gaunlets}, {Titan Greaves}, {Titan Boots}, {Titan Wall}

3 pieces: increase your maximum health points by 10,000 points.

5 pieces: With every effective {Block}, your {Shield Bash} will not consume any rage points, and you gain 100% damage! Last for 3 seconds.

8 pieces: Every time when you are attacked, there is 1% chance to acquire 'Blessing of Titan', stun enemy for 10 seconds. This effect is effective against all boss monsters below the grade of Violet-Platinum.

A Guardian's Armor Set!

Zhang Yang could not stop himself from rubbing his hands

against each other, and he basically drooled at Sun Xin Yu as she was on her way back, and he said, "Ice queen, you really are gorgeous today, I love you so, so much!"

Even the icy cold personality of Sun Xin Yu gave way, and she rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang, saying, "Did I ever mention anything about giving it to you?"

"Hehe!" This woman was a volatile flame. A little teasing would work on her, but any further, she would only be angered! Zhang Yang smiled wisely and walked towards the lucky draw counter to claim his prize.

Spin, and spin, and spin!

Zhang Yang reached out his hand and pressed the button, immediately turning around to look at the big screen on his back.

The wheel stopped!

The prize was ---

[Love's Thorn] (Violet-Platinum, Dagger)

Attack: 1259-1659

Base Attack Time: 1.9 seconds

DPS: 768

{Level 3 Socket 1}

{Level 3 Socket 2}

Upon equip: Successful attacks on the target have the possibility to inflict 'Love's Thorn', decreases 20% of the target's attack, lasts for 5 seconds.

Level Requirement: 80

What a terrifying DPS! That is actually double the damage value compared to Zhang Yang's [Dark Enigmatic Sword]! With the Base Attack Time of 1.9 seconds, it was definitely unmatched among the equipment of thieves. Being stabbed by this would not be fun!

Zhang Yang walked back towards his party and smiled, "Icy, it seems you stand to gain a lot more!" Thieves depended on their offensive power far more than anything else. This would turn her into a legend among thieves!

Sun Xin Yu smiled vaguely without saying a word, expressing naked, unrestrained joy on her face. It was a very fresh outlook of her. "And now, we shall hand out the Most-Valuable-Player award! Let us move forward to the final lucky draw! And this final candidate is ---" Liu Wan Fei drew out a piece of paper from the envelop on her hands, paused for a moment and said, "Mr. Zhan Yu!"

The crowd instantly cheered for him.

Wei Yan Er pouted unhappily, "Hmph! Such bad taste! I performed so much better than that noob tank!"

Liu Wan Fei pulled Zhang Yang close and hugged him tightly, once again. This time, she made a point of bumping her massive badonkers against Zhang Yang's chest a few times, before saying, "Mr Zhan Yu, you are the guildmaster of Lone Desert Smoke, and also the MVP of the Soaring Swords competition. Do you have any words to share with the players around the world?"

Zhang Yang gave it a thought before saying, "{{God's Miracle}} is not just an outstanding platform of the gaming world, it is also a society within a virtual reality, one in which anyone can find joy and discover new worlds! I hope that more players will join {{God's Miracle}}. Let us conquer the world together and claim our future!"

The hall erupted in cheers and applause.

"Hehe, well said, Mr. Zhan Yu! Then, let us proceed to the drawing of the grand prize for the MVP of the competition!"

Zhang Yang took a deep breath before pressing the button once again!

Spin! And spin! And spin!

And the wheel stopped!

One fine thick shield immediately appeared on the big screen behind Zhang Yang, and the incredibly strong attributes left everyone speechless!

[Titan Wall] (Violet-Platinum, Shield)

Defense: +1920

Vitality: +1344

Upon equip: absorbs 696 damage when attacked.

Upon equip: Increases the duration of {Shield Wall} for 5 seconds.

Required Profession: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80

Chapter 283: Second Adjustment Of Class Mechanics

One Sword Stroke was sure that he had popped a vein somewhere in his temple. But he did not care!

This was just too convenient! Lone Desert Smoke has been well-known to be highly efficient in dungeon progression. To witness Zhang Yang being conveniently provided with two pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment, it was stupidly ridiculous! By the time Zhang Yang achieves Level 80 who in the world would stand a chance against them?

He may have obtained one piece of Violet-Platinum equipment, an accessory at that too! Normally, accessories such as rings and necklaces are extremely difficult to find, they were a gem among all other equipment, but the odds of drawing two set equipment would put that accessory to shame!

Zhang Yang had obtained two pieces of the [Titan Armor Set], if he could only get one more piece of the set, then he would have fulfilled the conditions for first set effect! He will instantly gain an additional 10,000 health points! This would only mean that his error margin for dungeons would be widened--it wasn't like his skills needed further cushioning--and he would also last much longer against open world bosses!

Holy sh*t, this is bad, this is really bad! How did he draw so many good items!

One Sword Stroke was already sinking into despair, his face darkening with each passing moment!

In contrast, Zhang Yang was experiencing utmost joy, because for Guardians, their shields defined their entire being! Getting a good shield was so much more important compared to anything else!

After the lucky draw session, a few officers of the Organizing Committee took turns giving their utterly useless speeches, and finally, the Soaring Swords competition came to closure.

The servers of {{God's Miracle}} would be shut down for 6 hours starting from 2 a.m, for a server maintenance, and new patches and updates would be implemented.

Other than that, the large-scale epic movie -- {{Heart of the Knight}} which was filmed entirely in the {{God's Miracle}} by the 'Counting-Gold-Stones Film company' in association with 'Dream Technology', had already been wrapped up, and ready for release. The movie would be aired in cinemas and in the game on the 1st of January, so audiences can choose to watch it in the cinema or to experience a spectator's view of the epicly marvelous and magnificent war movie!

The Organizing Committee had already aided the contestants in purchasing their tickets back to their respective homes, but they did not provide anything for players such as Zhang yang and Han Ying Xue who lived closer to Shang Hai. As the 10 members of the Lone Desert Smoke left the hotel, they arrived at the beach located 10 miles away from the metropolis. Although the cold wind was strong, but it did not cool down their warm hearts, as they had

supper, and fulfilling conversations. They only went back to the hotel to rest at almost 3 am in the morning.

As the Organizing Committee only took responsibility for the staying cost until 12 pm the next day, if any players wished to stay, they would have to dig out their own pocket money to cover the expenses.

On the next day at about 9 am, everyone only began to wake up one after another. After a heavy-hearted goodbye, Zhang Yang, Fatty Han, Sun Xin Yu, Han Ying Xue, and Wei Yan Er finally began their journey back to Zhou Su city.

Sun Xin Yu reported straight back at the police station after her leave of absence, while Fatty Han drove Zhang Yang back to the narrow road of his housing area.

"Little Yang, just who is that lady cop?" Fatty Han finally asked, out of curiosity. Releasing Zhang Yang out of the prison cell with one call, and cutting the power supply of a high-class famous hotel in Shang Hai for more than 10 minutes just by saying 'I will take full responsibility'. It was mind-blowing!

Contacting the local police station demanding for the release of a person charged in 'dealing with prostitutes' wasn't that difficult, even an influential person like Lost Dream could have done it. But to cut the power supply of a large hotel for more than 10 minutes, even the grandfather of Lost Dream might not have the power to do so!

It was not that his grandfather could not do it, but if the matter was found out by the government and used it as a 'weapon' against his family, there would be no way out for them!

However, even the next day after, the incident of the 'Jin Yuan' hotel blackout had not been published or even mentioned in any of the news channels, and not even a crumb had shown up on the internet! Just how terrifying is her influence and strength then?

Although Lost Dream had a big mouth, he was no idiot. He had stated that unless his grandfather became the governor himself or was the governor's aide, only then could he pull off this sort of thing in his own turf!

So who is Sun Xin Yu? Zhang Yang had never asked her before, leaving him to question himself: He was really a failure of a boyfriend!

After sending Zhang Yang back home, Fatty Han continued to coast around the area slowly. Zhang Yang could see the wretched fatty stopping his car to pick up a woman after driving a few hundred meters away from his drop off!

That pervert!

He could only shake his head, as he went up the stairs, opening his door, embracing his home. He squeezed himself back into his comfortable lair that he had left unattended for days. He went straight online to check the official website of the game to see if there was any new information about the upcoming updates.

The first information was about the adjustment of the profession skills, and the information related to warrior classes were ---

'1. All instant spells, skills will have a 1 second common cool down period after activation.'

Not just warriors, but this one statement would weaken every single class in the game!

For example, when a berserker is being {ambushed} by a thief, losing health points in the stunned state, would still boost their rage points up to 100 points. As long as there is 1 health point left, the berserker would have one chance of retaliating, and regular attack + {Tornado Cleave} + {Destructive Smash} + {Force Strike} could all be activated in the same instance. Due to the extreme power of a two-handed weapon, it might even instantly kill an opponent!

However with this new implementation, after doing a regular attack + {Tornado Cleave}, berserker players would have to wait for 1 second before they can activate their {Destructive Smash}, then wait for another 1 second before being able to activate {Force Strike}.

It did nerf every class, but it would affect warriors the most!

'2. The skill {Vanguard's Aggression} has been revised. It is now similar to an {Aura} effect, the shield can be moved around with the activator as the center point, it would still be 3 meters wide in diameter, and still last for 10 seconds.'

This can be considered to be a powerful upgrade, as it increases the flexibility and possibilities in both party PK and dungeon battles.

'3. The rage point consumption of some warrior's skills are adjusted! The rage point consumption for {Force Strike} has been increased from 30 rage points to 40 rage points. The rage point consumption for {Tornado Cleave} has been increased from 20 rage points to 45 rage points. The rage point consumption of {Destructive Smash} has been increased from 30 rage points to 45 rage points. The rage point consumption of {Horizontal Sweep} has been increased from 20 rage points to 45 rage points.'

That was simply ruthless, seriously impeding the explosive force of the warrior class!

After that, the Professional League Championship which Zhang Yang had long waited for finally surfaced on the news feed!

Just like it was in his previous life, the Professional League Championship will be divided into two levels, the S rank and the A rank, and the championship will be held in the form of regional matches.

There would be a total of 16 parties in the S rank level while there

would be 32 parties in the A rank level championship. All of them will be ranked based on their accumulated Championship Points.

Each party can have 10 party members, and the competition will implement seven 1 VS 1 battles and one 5 VS 5 party battle as the layout. 1 match point is awarded to the winning side in the 1 VS 1 match, while 2 match points will be awarded to the winning side in 5 VS 5 match!

When one party has acquired 5 match points, they will be awarded 1 accumulated Championship Point.

Each player can only enter 1 VS 1 match once, but the 5 VS 5 party match would not take note on whether the player has taken part in any previous matches or not.

The championship is scheduled to begin by the beginning of February, spanning until the end of December. After that, the top two winners on the ranking list in every region of the S rank championship will be appointed to join the World Elite League Championship for the finals which will be held in January, entering into contest for the title of the worlds best achiever's champion!

Other than that, the last four parties on the ranking list from the S rank championship will compete with the best four parties from the A rank championship, and their opponents will be decided through the drawing of lots. The winning party will either proceed further into the competition or continue to stay in the S rank championship for next year, while the losing party will be pushed down to the A rank championship.

The contestants of the S rank and the A rank championships will be paid annually by Dream Technology, but only the contestants with an active rate higher than 30% will be paid. Because of having only seven 1 VS 1 matches, and the same contestant being able to repeatedly enter for the 5 VS 5 party battles, Dream Technology was worried that some parties may deliberately hide two or three inactive names to rob them of some cash!

Other than the S rank and A rank championship, there are also the other B, C, D rank championship which implemented the 'ladder climbing' method of accumulating points. As long as the contestants are capable, they can swiftly leap from the D rank championship straight into the B rank championship.

Similarly, when S rank and A rank championships are on break, the eight parties of the bottom eight of the A rank championship shall compete with the eight parties of the top eight of the B rank championship in the elimination matches.

Those who win will be able to proceed into the A rank championship while those who lose will have to fight in the B rank championship!

The parties that managed to enter the top 16 in the previous Soaring Swords competition in Shang Hai will be selected as the seeded parties in the S rank category championship. As for the A rank category, 32 parties will be competing against each another. 16 parties out of the 32 will be selected as the seeded parties in the A rank category championship. As for the remaining available 16 slots in A rank championship, players who decide to take part will

have to compete among each other in a regional competition among main cities, and the top 32 entries of this regional competition will go through an elimination competition to secure their slots into the remaining 16 slots in the A rank category competition.

Parties that have been selected as the seeded parties had a choice of dropping out, but they must report to the system by the 10th of January, next year so that the organizer will have an easier time finding replacements.

Other than that, the comparative ratio between the game time and the reality time will become 3:1 starting from 1st of January, and players can also adjust themselves into sleep mode while playing the game. In other words, three days in the game would be equal to one day in the reality, and players can play while they slept, this function has given the white collar workers a great blessing!

At the same time, otakus would be able to play for half a month without having to worry about food and sleep!

Zhang Yang took up his game helmet and logged into the game, and instantly, a series of system voice notification exploded in his ears.

'Ding! Congratulation on acquiring the 'Champion' title of the Soaring Sword competition (China)!'

'Ding! You have leveled up by 3 level!'

'Ding! You have obtained 1 skill point!'

'Ding! You have acquired an item: [Love's Thorn]!'

'Ding! Your cash prize has been deposited into your locked on bank account, please check the amount!'

'Ding Congratulation on acquiring the 'MVP' title of the Soaring Sword competition (China)!'

'Ding! You have leveled up by 1 level!'

'Ding! You have acquired an item: [Titan Wall]!'

The body of Zhang Yang streamed in continuous beams of gold light, and his level was elevated from Level 67 to Level 71 in just a brief moment, becoming the highest leveled player in the whole of China!

He added the skill point that he acquired from reaching Level 70 and the award he received from being the champion onto his {Warrior's Will}, with the addition of the skill point he earned from the First Clear of the Thunderbolt Prison, his {Warrior's Will} had been upgraded up to Level 7, and the cool down time had been shortened to only 4 minutes!

At his logging in, his members flooded their leader with

congratulatory messages, one after another. Hundred Shots was still on the plane, so everyone was taking that opportunity to butter up Zhang Yang through the guild channel. If they missed this opportunity now, when the 'tiger' is back in the lair, these kittens will never get another chance to fool around!

As Zhang Yang did not have the momentum to level up at that moment, he decided to go for some bidding in the Auction House. As he looked around, he unintentionally found the recipe for the [Beginner Mobility Potion]! The person who was auctioning this piece of recipe was obviously not aware of the value of this piece of alchemy recipe, and only wanted 500 gold pieces for it!

Zhang Yang immediately locked in on the auction and bought the recipe. Yu Li happened to be online, so he contacted her, handing over the recipe for her to master! Then, he took out the [Frozen Ice Weedings] that was stored in the warehouse long ago and passed it to Yu Li to craft the potions!

Yu Li had returned to {{God's Miracle}} ever since her mother had been discharged from the hospital, and she had dedicated her time in the game to her alchemy profession. Under the strong support of Zhang Yang, she had managed to upgrade her alchemist skill to the professional level in just a short amount of time. However, the recipes of the [Beginner Anti-Shadow Potion] and [Level 3 Fire resistance Potion] were not easy to come by, so she did not get the chance to master them.

It was fortunate that the demand for these two type of potions had passed their peak seasons, so she had not lost out significantly.

Ever since the night when he popped her cherry... the two of them had repeated their nightly activities several more times after! Ever since that night, Yu Li had been sexually awoken, and her appetite had only grown, as did her finesse and skills in that field, giving Zhang Yang a really 'hard' time!

Chapter 284: Snow White

Another day passed, and the players who participated in the memorable Soaring Sword competition had arrived at the doorsteps of their cozy home, and the profile icons that had been left dimmed for a day in the friend list started lighting up one after another, as players got back to their daily lives.

Zhang Yang logged into the game early in the morning, and the first thing he saw was the portrait icon of Wei Yan Er glowing brightly in his friend list! Shocked, he sent her a private message asking, "Little girl, did you just skip your classes again?"

"Who said that I am? It's New Years Eve for Christ's sake! We have three days off!"

"Even so, don't you have anything else to do? Are you planning to get a degree in {{God's Miracle}} or something?"

"Stupid stupid! I specialize in art, I am going to be a great designer! What's the use of sh*t like maths and science? The company will be managed by professional managers, all I'll have to do is to capture the fashion sense according to time and make the best designs ever!"

"... You sure come up with wonderful excuses for your slackiness, you know that?"

"Hmph! Bully! Just leave me be! Pui!"

After partying up with Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream, Zhang Yang led the party towards the Level 70 dungeon, the Kingdom of Oz.

Because Fatty Han and Hundred Shots were only in their mid sixty levels at the moment, therefore, only the members who joined the Soaring Sword competition together with Zhang Yang met the requirements to enter a Level 70 dungeon. Each of them had been elevated by 3 levels as one of their rewards. Other than Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu was currently at Level 68, while Han Ying Xue, Wei Yan Er and Daffodil Daydream were currently at Level 67, and they could merely sweep the monsters in a Level 70 dungeon for now.

One large region may have up to six Level 70 maps, or three Level 80 maps, or only one Level 90 map! However, the map sizes would grow proportionally larger as they grew lesser! The area of the Kingdom of Oz was basically six times larger than the total mass area of the Forest of Tanila!

The Kingdom of Oz was built by men, but these men were unaffiliated to any of the other human kingdoms. It is a neutral kingdom, having great relationships with the centaur, the dryad, the half-elf and many other races, together, resisting the corruption of the undead and demons across their land!

As the four of them traveled across the rainforest, they finally arrived at a small ancient town. Close to the entrance of the town there were a few pieces of wanted posters pasted on the notice board, and surprisingly, one of the wanted posters was blinking

with a yellow exclamation mark. It was a player quest.

[Wanted: Snow White] (Quest Difficulty: B rank)

Quest description: Snow White is the princess to the Kingdom of Oz, but because she murdered her own father, the great Ontario The Third, she is now being wanted for treason and murder by the queen herself! Take note, Snow White is an extremely dangerous individual and is good in manipulating people! Therefore, one must be extremely cautious of her words, and once her whereabouts are discovered, please inform the authorities of the kingdom immediately, or kill her on sight! The queen will provide handsome rewards! Latest news: It was rumored that a person that looks like Snow White was last spotted in the Butterfly Valley!

The four of them exchanged looks, and Han Ying Xue began to speak, "Snow White and the Seven Dwarfs?"

"Dream Technology and move rip-offs!" Zhang Yang nodded.

"Are we accepting this?"

Zhang Yang smiled and said, "Of course we are accepting it! Didn't you see 'handsome rewards'?"

"Oh, noob tank, you really are heartless, Snow White is already

so pitiful, framed by her stepmother for murdering her own beloved father, on top of persecution from her stepmother, and now you are accepting this quest to kill her! I was wrong about you! Boo!" Wei Yan Er was drawing a clear demarcation between whom to hate and whom to love, stating that she was furious with Zhang Yang's decision.

"Silly little girl, if we don't look for Snow White, who would help her fight against her evil witch stepmother?"

"Oh! We shall depart for Butterfly Valley then?"

"Of course!"

The location of the Butterfly Valley was not indicated on the wanted notice, and the new map was still covered in the fog of war, showing only the areas that were explored before. But, right beneath the nose of a person were a pair of lips, so all they needed to do was flap them and ask!

Although the NPCs of the town never spoke in detail, they did point them to the direction the needed to head for!

After leaving town, the four of them headed east. After an approximate time of 20 minutes, they arrived at a small valley where flowers bloom in every corner of the place, and grass grew green all over the ground. There was a deer chewing on some grass, and countless colourful butterflies danced in the air around them, and they seemed to form a letter 'S' which later turned into a 'B'.

"What a great place, so this is the place where the seven dwarfs and Snow White live?" The three ladies were filled with joy and they were couldn't wait to venture further, for it was every girl's dream to meet their prince charming.

Fortunately, Fatty Han wasn't there, or he would have said something crazy like having an orgy of eight to immediately destroy the fantasies of the three ladies!

Walking all the way into the deep valley side, the place grew smaller and tighter, just like a 'V' shape. When they arrived at the bottom of the valley, the distance between the two walls beside them were merely 20 meters apart from each other. Located at the deepest part of the valley, there was a row of very low houses. One, two, three, four, five, six, seven, a total of seven low houses!

There was a vast garden in front of the houses, surrounded by a fence made of bamboo. In the middle of the garden stood a beautiful woman who looked like she was in her mid-twenties, sitting quietly on a deck chair made of wood, basking in the sun light. She was wearing a dress made of silk, and had long hair that went straight down to her waist. Her skin is as fair as the colour of milk, smooth and white!

[Snow White] (Elite, Humanoid creature)

Level: 76

HP: 152,000

Defense: 400

Note: "Evil" princess, by the queen's decree, to kill on sight!

As Zhang Yang and the gang walked straight into the range of Snow White's aggro, she was immediately shocked, and then she shouted, "Have you been sent here by that wicked witch to rid the world of me as well? I will not let her do as she pleases!"

Shoof! Snow White instantly charged forward and initiated her attack on Zhang Yang and the gang.

Zhang Yang immediately reacted and activated his {Charge} to meet her charge, knocking Snow White into a state of stun. He begun kiting the hostile enemy.

Even if she slightly outleveled them, she was just an elite NPC, and under the strong fire power of the small party, Snow White was taken down to the ground in no time, leaving her with only a small amount of health points left. However, she became invincible almost immediately after, which could only mean that they had triggered a script.

"Please don't kill me! Please! I beg of you!" Snow White begged pitifully, her eyes welling up with tears. "I did not murder my own beloved king. He was my father, it was the deed of that wicked

witch! She framed me, and attempted to shut my mouth once and for all! She plans to turn every single one of the citizens of the Kingdom of Oz into her slaves!"

'Ding! You have two options:

- 1. Kill Snow White, present her heart to the Queen of Oz and claim your rewards!
- 2. Spare Snow White, and maybe she will ask for your aid in doing something!'

Zhang Yang and the gang received a system indication at the same instance.

"Of course we are picking option number two! How can we help the wicked and kill the innocent!" Wei Yan Er spoke another corny line that she had picked up from the garbage she was watching these days.

"... Silly Yu, if we kill the queen, do you think we'll get her magic mirror? Once I look into the mirror, it shall say, 'Han Ying Xue, Han Ying Xue, you are the fairest among them all!"

Zhang Yang frowned a little and said, "Let me teach you something easier, all you have to do is to record this phrase and play it to yourself everyday! Isn't that nice?"

"You really aren't romantic at all! Hmph!"

"So, all in favor of option one then?"

"Yes!"

Zhang Yang nodded and took a step back, then he began speaking to Snow White, "Princess Snow White, we believe you!"

'Ding! You have made the decision for your party, the quest: 'Wanted: Snow White' has been automatically dropped from your quest list!'

Snow White was clearly relieved and grateful, and she tearfully told her story, "My father was a great king, but three years ago after my mother died, my father married this wicked witch! She did not only murder my father, the King, and take over his throne, but also tried to get rid of me, his legitimate flesh and blood. She will not rest till then!"

"Travelers, are you willing to aid me in getting rid of this wicked witch, and return the glorious days of old back to the Kingdom of Oz?"

Wei Yan Er quickly took the initiative to speak to Snow White, and she said, "Princess, we will definitely help you! Rest assured, we are going back the way we came from and rid the world of this wicked witch, once and for all!"

"No! It is not possible! That wicked witch has a mirror with

unlimited immense power, which can kill anyone with ease! Even the great gods tremble in fear before the power of that mirror!" Snow White quickly shook her head, "To be able to handle that wicked witch, one must destroy that of mirror first!"

"Alright! Let us move on to destroying the mirror!" Wei Yan Er thumped her chest and immediately turned to leave!

Snow White immediately stopped her from doing so, she said, "Brave and just warrior, you must not be hasty about this, that mirror is incredibly strong, normal weapons are definitely not going to damage it!"

"So what do we do?"

"You have to defeat the Stone Giant Herlow and get his heart. It is made out of the strongest stone in existence, even the thunder strikes from the Gods cannot destroy it! Use the heart of Herlow to shatter that mirror, and then you will be able to destroy the mirror once and for all!"

'Ding! Snow White has provided you a quest: The World's Strongest Stone, accept or decline?'

The four immediately accepted the quest.

[The World's Strongest Stone] (Quest difficulty: A Rank)

Quest description: Slay the Stone Giant Herlow, get his heart to destroy the wicked queen's mirror! Take note, the Stone Giant Herlow is extremely powerful, it is recommended that you invite more friends to aid you in this quest! You may find Stone Giant Herlow at the south side of the Mount Heaven's Fall.

Limit of players for the quest: 5 players (can be shared)

Completion: Obtain the heart of the Stone Giant Herlow 0/1

"The quest can be done with five players? Then let's go find the boss first, when icy comes online, let her use the [Lover's Charm], and then we shall complete the quest together!" Zhang Yang looked at the quest description while saying it.

Han Ying Xue humphed lightly and said, "Silly Yu, you really care for her don't you, always remembering to count her in, every single time!"

"If you are talking about that now, don't I treat you even better? When have I ever not called you along for any boss fights?" Zhang Yang fought back against her claim.

"It's obvious that you are using me like a mule! Bringing me along just to be your walking potion!"

While joking around with smiles and laughter, the four of them

headed towards the exit of the valley.

Suddenly, Wei Yan Er was reminded of something, "Argh! We actually forgot to drop by the houses and take a look at the dwarfs!"

Daffodil Daydream smiled and said, "Yan Er, the seven dwarfs must be the dwarfs that we all know of, so there shouldn't be anything special to look at!"

"Oh --- "

Arriving back at the small town, Zhang Yang tried to pry for information about the location of the Mount Heaven's Fall from the NPCs. Only after asking seven or eight NPCs, they finally knew that the general direction to Mount Heaven's Fall was to the west. They were unable to get any other details!

The party of four rode out towards the west, and after one and a half hour, they finally arrived at the next small town. Once again, they asked the NPCs around and continued heading towards Mount Heaven's Fall.

"Noob tank, why is it taking so long just to find a monster?" Wei Yan Er began to feel impatient. They had been running around all day long, and she was getting frustrated.

"Calm your badonkers, starting from tomorrow, the time in the game and the time in our reality shall be adjusted to the ratio of "Wouldn't everyone be moving in fast forwarded pace then?"

Zhang Yang laughed out a while and said, "Our human thinking ability is measured in light speed, even with the adjustment of 3:1 ratio, you will not feel any difference!"

"... Does that mean that traveling on a journey to some place else will still consume a large amount of time?"

"Indeed, from your perspective, everything will still remain the same!" Zhang Yang nodded.

After another hour of traveling, finally, they arrived at the Mount Heaven's Fall. This was a tall mountain that pierced through the layer of clouds, but the tip of it was remarkably flat, as if it had been sliced off by a sharp sword, leaving the whole mountain with an entirely flat head! Legend had it that this Mount Heaven's Fall was connected straight up to the palace of the Gods. However, as the gods grew tired of being disturbed by mortals, they cast their power to cut Mount Heaven's Fall into half, which led to the appearance it had now.

Zhang Yang and his party arrived at the south of the foothills of Mount Heaven's Fall. They found a way into the stone valley and entered this deep and quiet valley.

"Humans! Please leave, now! This is the abode of the great

Herlow, no trespassers shall interrupt him!" a humanoid shape, its body being made entirely out of blackened mud suddenly crawled out from a pile of mud not far from them, speaking to the four of them in a deep voice.

[Stone Valley Mud Man] (Elite, Elemental Creature)

Level: 72

HP: 144,000

Defense: 800

The monster's name was yellow in color, meaning that the monster was currently non-hostile. However, if Zhang Yang and the party ventured any further, it would probably turn red and attack them.

Wei Yan Er took out her big axe and shouted, "Hey mud monster, let's see how I turn you into mud pile of sh*t!"

She charged forward with a shoof, starting the fight.

Zhang Yang chuckled a little and took over in kiting the monster. With his current defense, one heal from Han Ying Xue will would completely counteract any damage the mud man could deal, allowing him to unleash his damage with joy.

In less than 10 seconds, the Mud Man was really beaten into a pile of mud sh*t.

The gang continued to push forward, and more Mud Men crawled out of the mud piles by the side of the corridor they were passing through. As they had already entered the territory of the monsters, the Mud Men were immediately hostile and attacked them relentlessly.

Killing these Mud Men was nothing more than genocide, for they did not even drop any loot! That drove Han Ying Xue and Wei Yan Er so mad to the point, that they were releasing their anger by shouting out to the heavens, complaining about how stingy the system was!

After killing about 20 or more of these mud monsters, finally, one equipment was dropped!

[Stone Helmet] (Green-Copper, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +10

Vitality: +84

Strength: +42

Agility: +21

Level requirement: 70

Stone Armor Set (1/5)"

Stone Helmet, {Stone Chest Plate}, {Stone Gaunlets}, {Stone Greaves}, {Stone Boots}.

3 pieces: Increase defense by 200 points.

5 pieces: Increase HP by 2000 points.

"An [Armor Set], not bad at all!" Zhang Yang nodded continuously.

Daffodil Daydream was confused, so she asked, "Green-Copper [Armor Set], isn't the quality a little too low?"

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "After the appearance of the second set of armor, there will be no more [Armor Set] pieces appearing again, and only open world bosses might drop this kind of armor pieces! Therefore, don't overlook its Green-Copper tier, it is one of the mainstream equipment in the eyes of most players. Well, at least it will remain this way until players reach Level 80!"

Daffodil Daydream understood and said, "So after level 80, when

a Violet-Platinum boss appear, they will be the new Gold-Yellow! And the Gray-Silver bosses in the future shall be the same as Green-Coppers to us. So, the Gray-Silver grade equipment shall become worthless goods that would be easily found by the roadside at leisure!"

Chapter 285: Stone Giant Herlow

After running forwards for some distance, the rate of Mud Men appearing from the sides began to decrease, and eventually, they disappeared. After going through a narrow and small exit, the gang instantly saw a stinging light in front of them, and a huge temple appeared right in front of their eyes!

This temple was in the shape of a pyramid. From the looks of it, there was no telling of how many floors the building had. Every single surface of the building was smooth and shiny, and the height of the building was approximately hundreds of meters. The base of the building alone was already 30 to 40 meters tall, it was a magnificent sight to behold!

Within the peripheral view of the temple, there was a large number of rock monsters patrolling back and forth, their heavy footsteps issuing out continuous rumbles, like the sound of thunder along with the tremors of earthquake!

[Stone Man of Mount Heaven's Fall] (Elite, Elemental Creature)

Level: 73

HP: 146,000

Defense: 1000

"The game company is really mean, how am I going to play when each move consumes so much rage points?" Wei Yan Er began to complain about the new adjustments made by the company. Because after yesterday's adjustment on several game mechanics, her damage output had been significantly reduced! She was really unhappy about it!

"Previously, the damage output of the warrior was indeed a little too high. For hunter and thief class, their focus points and mana points recover consistently, so their damage will more or less be constant, but warriors gain power the longer a battle drags on, meaning that the longer they engage in battle, the more powerful they become. Therefore, it's only appropriate that they get nerfed to balance things out!" Zhang Yang spoke out pertinently, hitting right in the point!

He was a tanker, so the increase in the consumption of rage points did not hit him as much as imagined. Because as long as he is hit, he will be able to accumulate rage points.

"Oh yea, are we required to take part in the Professional League Championship?" Han Ying Xue asked in a sudden.

"Of course we are!" Zhang Yang nodded, "Why? Is your 'Silky Soft Bra' planning to crown it's name upon our party again? Please no, I really am afraid of you people. Won't we lose all our face and dignity if we are to be called the 'Silky Soft Bra' party every time we go on stage!?"

"I can't believe you're so childish! What's wrong with the name 'Silky Soft Bra', are you saying that you don't wear your underwear?"

"The main thing is neither the bra nor Silky Soft, it is because when these two name are combined together, it's such a blatant statement! Would you run on the streets on the streets, shouting bra, bra, try out this bra?" Zhang Yang shook his head in shame.

"Pui! Of course anyone would treat you as an idiot if you shout and run like a madman on the streets, it wouldn't matter what you're shouting about!"

"Back to the topic, guildmaster, a party of 10 members is one of the absolute requirements for joining the Professional League Championship, and now that we are short of members, how do we solve this?" Daffodil Daydream voiced out to Zhang Yang about the issue.

Zhang Yang gave it some thoughts and said, "We are definitely pulling Hundred Shots and Lost Dream over to our party! As for the remaining three members, I have not thought about it yet. We really need to let some core players stay back at our second party to prevent them from becoming a laughing stock in the S rank category championship!"

Han Ying Xue said, "If we cannot find any good party members, I'd rather we withdraw our second party from the competition!"

"We shall see about that, we might be able to buy some skillful

players over to our side!"

"Goodness, noob tank, I can't believe you would do such an act, stealing players form other guilds! I'm wrong about you! Pui!"

The four of them pushed forward up the stairs. Although the stone monsters had very high defense, but Zhang Yang had {Eagle Eye} and Wei Yan Er had a two-handed weapon of a Yellow-Gold grade! So the monsters' high defense did not affect either of them much.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The stone monsters were smashed into pieces of small stones onto the ground one after another, it was like watching a fireworks extravaganza! But unfortunately, there no valuable loots dropped from the monsters they defeated. What stingy developers!

The number of monsters inside were definitely much more numerous than the mud monsters out there. Zhang Yang and the gang had been clearing the monsters from the afternoon until the evening, yet they still cold not clear all of them! After having their dinner and logging back into the game, they found Sun Xin Yu online.

Zhang Yang added Sun Xin Yu into the party, and used the [Lover's Charm] to teleport her over to their location. It was extremely convenient!

"Hey noob tank, why is there only one pair of this [Lover's Charm], and none other have ever appeared since then?" Wei Yan Er was feeling depressed, because they had already slain the Frozen Fractal Witch Spectre, Luke Vick several more times, and there was still no sign of any [Lover's Charms]. Sun Xin Yu had been generous enough to let her use it once, but she simply refused to part with it now!

Zhang Yang shook his head and said, "It's possible that this accessory was just a one-time drop, you better give up on it already! Oh yea, Icy, here's your [Love's Thorn]!"

He traded over the top-class weapon, [Love's Thorn] over to Sun Xin Yu while she handed over the [Titan Wall] over to him.

Zhang Yang could not hold his smile and he sent her a private message and said, "So does this count as us having traded our tokens of love with each other?"

"... " Sun Xin Yu could only roll her eyes at Zhang Yang.

With Sun Xin Yu joining their party, they started killing monsters in droves. In just an hour, they had managed to clear everything and enter the magnificent temple.

This gigantic temple was designed to only take up one floor, and on top side of the temple, there were countless stones, made of uncertain materials which glowed gently, lighting up the entire temple! They could even see the sand and dust on the floor! The floor of the temple is paved up with strong bricks, and each of those bricks were as large as approximately 10 square meters!

The temple had no pillars supporting it at all, the pyramidshaped walls held itself up under constant tension, making it possible for such magnificent building to exist!

Anyone who stood in the middle of the temple will feel how tiny oneself's existence is!

It surprised all five of them at the same time. As they thought that such large temple would be filled with monsters, they had not expected the interior of the temple to be so empty and quiet to the point that it was scary. It was like the noises on the outside had been totally blocked out of the temple's interior area!

At the center of the temple, there was a large stone man sitting cross-legged. Zhang Yang and the party were like the size of an ant to the stone man, they seemed so insignificant before him!

[Stone Giant Herlow] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Creature)

Level: 75

HP: 7,500,000

Defense: 2000

"I can sense your aura!" The seemingly asleep stone man suddenly opened it's mouth to speak. His voice was thunderous, and the air began to surge as if a storm was just pouring over them, causing them to stagger back from the impact!

Zhang Yang took out his sword and walked forward, then he said, "I'm really sorry, we need to borrow your heart for something!"

"Let me guess, you are going to use my heart to destroy the 'Mirror of Truth'?" suddenly, there was a strong fluctuation on the voice of Herlow, "So, you are the underlings of that wicked Snow White, you shall die!"

Herlow stood up and swung his fist towards Zhang Yang and his party!

The body mass of the boss was just too large, that right fist was already larger than a truck! Zhang Yang quickly shouted, "Dodge! Just dodge!"

He raised his shield up high and activated {Block}.

Boom!

The large fist of Herlow was forcefully blocked back, but that was because Zhang Yang had activated his skill {Block}. If it wasn't for his skill, all five of them would definitely taste the impact of the fist and become pancakes themselves!

Immediately, Zhang Yang raised up his sword and swung it, igniting a spark on the fist of the boss, inflicting a damage of '-1140'. After that, he swiftly charged towards the boss.

"Snow White is just pitiful! First she was framed as the murderer of the king, and then she has to bear with all these false accusations! You stinky rock monster, I will smash you to bits!" Wei Yan Er let out her high-pitched war cry. She dashed to the back of the boss and began to hit as hard as she could.

Another punch of Herlow was thrown into Zhang Yang.

'-6206!'

Zhang Yang was inflicted with a significant damage value, but his rage gauge had been boosted up to 50 points already!

{Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}! {Cripple Defense}!

Zhang Yang and Wei Yan Er coordinated with each other, making the activation of {Cripple Defense} upon the boss as their priority. They stacked five layers of {Cripple Defense} onto the boss and weakened the defense of the boss down to 1000 defense points. That had significantly increased the total damage output of Zhang Yang, Sun Xin Yu, Wei Yan Er and Whitey!

Bosses that are Level 60 and above, nine out of ten, would be

equipped with {Aura} skill. Of course, Herlow was one of them! His aura skill is {Rock Fall Aura}.

[Rock Fall Aura]: To attack with rock fall, the targets within the effective range area is inflicted with 1500 physical damage in every 2 seconds. Range of the aura: With the user as the center point, a radius of 60 meters in diameter.

Zhang Yang could ignore the damage, but for the rest of his party members, it was a headache that cannot be taken lightly! It was fortunate that Han Ying Xue is a priest, able to provide group healing. Furthermore, with her powerful equipment, she could still manage healing everyone up.

But having to heal Zhang Yang as well while making sure everyone's health bars were at a safe state, Han Ying Xue was so busy to the point that she almost cried!

99%, 98%... The health bar of Herlow had finally began to reduce slowly.

Charge! Charge! Charge!

The battle had just began for awhile, suddenly, countless stone thorns drilled their way out from the surface of the body of Herlow, making the smooth body of Herlow to become spiky in an instant! Zhang Yang realized it and halted his assault right before his attack landed on Herlow, then he took a few steps back. Immediately he shouted out into the party channel and said, "Stop your attacks! Stop!"

But it was already too late!

He could control Whitey at his will, but Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu could not halt their attacks in time, so their weapons had already been smashed against the ankle of the boss.

'-9800!'

'-988o!'

Two high damage values appeared right above the heads of Wei Yan Er and Sun Xin Yu respectively! Another additional wave of damage from the {Rock Fall Aura} would very likely finish them off! Fortunately, Daffodil Daydream had instantly canceled her own casting the moment she heard Zhang Yang's words.

'Ding! You are inflicted with 9800 physical damage from the {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage} of Herlow (200 damage reduction)!'

'Ding! You are inflicted with 9880 physical damage from the {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage} of Herlow (120 damage reduction)!'

The two ladies received the notifications from the system respectively.

"The boss has a reflective damage effect!" Wei Yan Er quickly shouted out loud to remind everyone!

"... Your reaction... is indeed fast enough..."

It was fortunate enough that the reflective damage effect of the boss only lasted for 10 seconds. The intimidating stone spikes all over his body swiftly retracted into his body soon after, giving the party the opportunity to continue unleashing their assaults upon the boss.

"We must keep an eye out for those spikes! None of your health points are above 20,000, two reflects would be enough to kill you!" Zhang Yang explained.

After engaging them a little while longer, Herlow once again activated his {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage}. Upon closer observation, they realized that the boss would activate his {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage} once every 30 seconds.

After a few {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage}, everyone was very familiar with the skill of the boss. They could even pull back their attacks one second right before the {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage} was activated. That had largely decreased the pressure of Han Ying Xue in healing them all.

Although Herlow was a Yellow-Gold boss, but he was not too difficult to handle. Other than the annoying damages inflicted by the effects of the {Rock Fall Aura} and the {Stone Spikes Reflective Damage}, his other strong points were his physical damages. But to

engage with an outstanding tanker like Zhang Yang himself, those physical attacks were basically useless. The health points of the boss was decreasing down slowly but steadily!

10 minutes later, the boss had finally crumbled down to the ground and dropped many loots, including a piece of shiny stone that glittered silver, about the size of a fist.

Chapter 286: Destroy The Magic Mirror

[Heart of the Stone Giant Herlow] (Quest Item)

Item Description: The entire essence of the stone giant concentrated into a rock. This is the world's strongest rock that can break anything!

"We got it!" Zhang Yang picked the stone giant's heart and kept it in the inventory before looking at other items.

"Oh man...Why didn't this boss drop any weapon shards?" said Wei Yan Er. She had yet to get over Zhang Yang's Dark Enigmatic Sword. Even though there were three Yellow-Gold items and a bunch of Gray-Silver items around, there was not a single piece of weapon or armor shard.

Zhang Yang snickered at her and said, "This boss is as easy as a pie. Moreover, it's a quest based boss. It was kind enough to drop some Yellow-Gold items for you! What more can you ask for?"

"Stop talking and start picking! And don't forget to post the item descriptions if there are any good equipment!" said Han Ying Xue disgruntledly.

Who best to tame the raging Han Ying Xue besides little Wei Yan Er? Instantly, she had picked up the three Yellow-Gold equipment and posted it on the party channel.

[Obsidian Ring] (Yellow-Gold, Ring)

Vitality: +50

Strength: +47

{Unidentified}

Use: You have received the blessing of the Obsidian stone. Increases 700 Strength for 5 seconds.

Cool Down Time: 30 seconds

Level Requirement: 70

"Not bad. This item can grant a sudden burst damage. The cool down is a little too long though," said Zhang Yang.

"Rings have bonus attributes while Accessories doesn't, that should explain the length of the cooldown. Correct? After Identifying the item, the bonus Strength should be around 1000, right?" Wei Yan Er asked.

"Hm. That's right." Said Zhang Yang. He scratched his chin and added, "Little brat, I think I want this ring. High Vitality, good

strength, yea...I like this. Besides, I only have two Level 50 rings!"

Wei Yan Er then quickly clutched the little metal ring in her hands and shook her head left and right vigorously. "Hell no! No way! Mine! Mine!"

Everyone could not help but laugh at her comical act.

[Emerald Crown] (Yellow-Gold, Cloth Armor) Defense: +8 Vitality: +202 Intelligence: +189 Spirit: +100 {Unidentified} Level Requirement: 70

Zhang Yang voiced out promptly. "Snow b*tch and Daffodil have Yellow-Gold equipment. I say we leave this one out for Fantasy Sweetheart."

Han Ying Xue immediately pouted. "Cough Somebody sure have a greedy heart. Just when you can't get enough from your own bowl, you've started to scoop from the pot!"

Zhang Yang frowned. "What are you saying?"

"I'm saying, you already someone for you! Why are you still trying to pick up someone else?"

"Huh? Since when have you been in my bowl?"

"Oh please...I'm not talking about me, I'm talking about Daffodil! That girl is full on lady wood for you. Just look at the poor girl, she's been your guild secretary and personal assistant!" Han Ying Xue pulled Daffodil by the sleeve and pushed her forward, turning her cheeks crimson vermillion.

"Sigh...calling you a b*tch would be an insult to all b*tches out there. Please calm your titties! Why would you even try to tease her?"

[Defender's Gauntlet] (Yellow-Gold, Heavy Armor)

Defense: +40

Vitality: +101

Strength: +40

Intelligence: +20

{Unidentified}

Equip Effect: Absorb 81 damage on attack.

Level Requirement: 70

"Damn! That Endless Starlight is freaking lucky!"

Disgruntled, Zhang Yang kept the equipment that was meant for Defenders into his inventory. They may have looted plenty of Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment from this boss, but since there were so many mouth to feed, there was a situation that even the main tank of the secondary raid team, Endless Starlight had not yet have a complete set of Level 60 Yellow-Gold equipment.

"Hmph! We can't just give it to him for free! We should charge him for it!" said Wei Yan Er.

"Yeah. I agree. At least 5,000 gold coins!" said Han Ying Xue.

Endless Starlight had always been hanging out with Fatty Han, a lot. Both of them had been casually spouting nonsense annoying

the females.

Zhang Yang sighed at the pathetic Endless Starlight and said, "Cut him some slack, girls! Do you really think that charging 5,000 gold coins would be too much for that kid? I say, we charge him 50,000!"

"...what the hell...I had never knew that noob tank would be that sly! Nyehehehe!" said Wei Yan Er.

After collecting all the battle loots on the ground, the team went out of the temple and headed back to the valley to finish up the quest.

Along the way, the entire team was silent and quiet. There was not a single conversation going on. Eventually, the party, mostly just Zhang Yang and Han Ying Xue, had to create some kind of joke just to tease the little girl, which had annoyed the ever so hyperactive Wei Yan Er. After "cutting ties" with Han Ying Xue for god-knows-how-many times, the team had arrived at the Butterfly Valley and spoke to Princess Snow White.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Strongest Stone in the Universe. Obtained 4,000,000 Experience Points!'

Snow White held the stone and pressed it against her chest and expressed her appreciation. "Adventurers! You have done it! You have brought the stone back!"

"It was nothing but a small task, my princess!" said Zhang Yang as he saluted the princess.

"I do not wish to pour cold water over this celebration, but the toughest part would be what comes next!" said Snow White as she gazed into the distance. "You will have to take this stone and infiltrate the Royal Castle. There, you will need to search for the magic mirror and destroy it with this stone! Only then, would the magical power of the evil witch be weakened! Dear adventurer! I plead of you, would you extend your help to save this Kingdom of Oz?"

'Ding! Princess Snow White has a quest for you: Destroy the Magic Mirror! Will you accept it?'

Zhang Yang stretched a little, doing a little warm-up before saying, "My princess, your wish is our command!"

"That's wonderful to hear! Here, I have something for you." Snow White took out a large cloak and gave it to Zhang Yang. "This magic cloak helped me escape the Royal Castle. Imbued in this cloak is the magic from my godmother which can be used to hide your body! Without it, I would have...*sigh*. Now, I give this to you. You can use this cloak to sneak through the Royal Castle outposts with ease. The magic mirror should be hidden in the deepest part of the Astrology Tower."

[Snow White's Magical Cloak] (Quest Item)

Item Description: Holy smokes! This cloak is truly fantastic! It could actually increase in size!

"Please make haste! That evil magic mirror is omniscient! If the evil witch had asked the right question, your lives might be in danger! Please hurry! Godspeed!" said Snow White nervously.

Zhang Yang received the cloak and turned to the princess. "My princess, rest assured, we will bring good news upon our return."

The five of them left the valley and not long after, Wei Yan Er slammed the back of her chocobo hard and it jumped in surprised. "Oh crap! I forgot to enter the house to check out the seven dwarfs!"

Other were also shock and thought that it was something more vital...

Along the way, Zhang Yang and the team rode rather quickly. He looked at the time and spoke. "After tonight, the time in the game will be altered. The time in the game will be three time slower than reality. A 3:1 ratio. Additionally, you can also play the game in sleep! It's 11.38pm. Let's logged off first and wait until midnight. Let's play together in our sleep then!"

"...Please! Who would want to sleep with you!"

Everyone agreed and logged out of the game to have their late-

night supper, rest, and carry out other temporary recreational activities to pass the time. After 12 midnight, they logged back into the game and noticed the system announcement, saying the time in game and reality had been set from 1:1 to 3:1.

"I'd say, if the game time ratio was set to infinity, would that mean that we could live forever in the game?" asked Han Ying Xue.

"I think that would be an endless dream!"

"Somehow, that's a little scary."

"Pssh. Let's just focus on doing our quest. Let's not dwell too much on this."

After the game time was set, the players could feel no difference. Zhang Yang and his merry friends did not behave nor responded differently. The five of them rode down to a small town to inquire the location of the Royal Palace.

As the party venture on, they had spent more than five hours, and finally arrived to an ancient castle with high walls and barricade. Standing at the bottom of the mighty construction, they felt like they were literally ants in a gigantic mega structure. (Author's Note: Whenever time was mention in the game, unless specified, will be game time, not reality.)

Riding around the castle wall, they found a huge door and immediately entered the castle.

'Ding! You have entered Hera's Castle!'

You can observe the entire detail of Hera's Castle simple by opening the world map and focused on the castle. The Royal Palace was located at the center most point! Thus, the party rode forwards from the wall, towards the center.

Outside the Royal Palace, stood 16 well-armed, heavily-armored soldiers guarding the entrance to the palace. The ones to the right were armed with swords, and the remaining were armed with long spears. Each of them were extremely well-built, irradiating with enough malice to send any weak-spirited soldiers back home and cry for their mama.

[Royal Guard of Oz] (Elite. Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 400

Note: Oz's most powerful soldiers. Each of them have been through thousands of battles and have been honed to perfection. "16!? 1,000,000 HP elite monsters!?" Zhang Yang felt like his balls had just shrunk a little. "This is just the front gate! God knows what we will expect inside!"

"Quick! Take out the magic cloak!"

"Calm down, Harry Potter. Don't need to be that feisty!" Zhang Yang laughed at the little girl and took out the magic cloak. "Come to me. Try to squeeze in a little bit more. I think this cloak could fit us all!"

Even though the decryption had mention about its flexible size, there was still a limit to how large it could expand. The party literally had to squeeze together like sardine in a can to have the cloak effect.

"Gah! I---I have trouble breathing!"

"Can we even move properly like this?"

"Damn! Please woman! Have the courtesy to start dieting! You're so fat that you're taking up more space than I am!'

"Please, boy! Are you calling me fat? Just so you know, I'm well-figured!"

"Riiiiight..."

It was rather hard for the five of them moving together. They hobbled together at snail's pace. Like five drunkards wobbling about, the five of them bumped into each other repeatedly while they made their way into the palace.

thud

They had even accidentally bumped into once of the guards. Fortunately, no matter how realistic the graphics of the game may be, the system of the game still relied on the visible spectrum in the sight of monsters to trigger their aggro. Since aggro was decided on sight and proximity, the party had not triggered any aggro and the guards remained silent and stoic.

"Nyehehehe. This is fun!" said Wei Yan Er. The little girl had taken the liberty to have fun while being squished like human sandwich; playing around and pushing the persons in front, while using her butt to bunt the person behind her.

"Damn! Stop playing, stupid! That dummy is touching me all over now!" Han Ying Xue squeaked. She was positioned directly behind Zhang Yang. Since Wei Yan Er had been playing around, she had caused Han Ying Xue to pressed her ample breasts against Zhang Yang.

Zhang Yang immediately took offense and snarled. "Come on! This is just a game! Even if I were to unleash my beastly desires on you, you won't be affected one bit! That precious hymen of yours will still be there! Geez!"

"D-D-Dummy..." Han Ying Xue whispered quietly as blood rushed to her cheeks.

Obviously, rape or any sexual intercourse would not occur in the game. Still, everything we feel, see, hear, smell, and touch are all decided by electrical impulses in the brain. Even though in reality, Han Ying Xue and Zhang Yang had not made any physical contact, the game would generate a similarly tactile sensation that could not be distinguished from real life!

Secretly, Han Ying Xue was greatly aroused by the constant rubbing and pressure. Her breath was getting ragged and the most embarrassing part was, she could feel the tips of her globes stiffening up.

Chapter 287: Shaenita

After a short series of curving route and corners, the party had finally arrived at the deepest parts of the palace. There, a hundred-meter-tall tower stood there, covered in a completely silver outline which practically glowed brighter than the moon itself!

"Hm...silver...not appealing enough. It would be better if it was made of gold. It will look rather bold that way, no? You know, it looks like Sun Wu Kong's Ru Yi Jing Gu Bang?"

Ru Yi Jing Gu Bang – The golden magical staff that Sun Wu Kong wields which is capable of adjust its size according to the wielders' will.

The place where they were right now should be the Astrology Tower. Unlike other places that were fully guarded, this towering structure had only four guards securing the entrances and no one else inside. There was practically nothing inside but a long spirally stone stairway, twisting up all the way to the peak of the tower.

Zhang Yang removed the cloak and everyone finally sighed a breath of relief and moved away from their own personal space. Other than Wei Yan Er, who expressed her dissatisfaction of not having enough fun, the rest of the girls were flushed pink like a glowing peach. They could not be helped but to glance a Zhang Yang once in a while, while cowering away with a mild sense of embarrassment. The five of them were practically on skin to skin contact during the sneaking part, which meant only one thing. Almost all the forbidden places had been "fondled" away. That explained the peachy-ness.

"Well...Time to climb the tower now," said Zhang Yang, oblivious to their predicaments, as he scratched his forehead after seeing how tall the tower was.

"This is going to be a pain in the arse."

The five of them protested a little but have no choice but to walk up the long flight of stairs.

"What a drag! huff huff Why couldn't they install a freaking elevator!?" Wei Yan Er complaint as she was huffing and puffing along the way.

In the game, a character could get tired after a certain period of action. The fatigue could be alleviated after a simple rest. If the character were to chew on bread or snacks, the recovery rate would be faster. There were other factors that would contribute to stamina as well, such as a player's Strength value. The higher the Strength, the longer one could endure without being tired. Han Ying Xue and Daffodil Daydream were already panting like mad dogs, were drenched in sweat.

Zhang Yang saw how exhausted those two unathletic ladies were and had to stop.

"Let's take a break." He said.

Even though one could travel a thousand miles on a mount, players would have to rely on their own two feet to climb a tower.

After a short rest, the team continued on for another 20 minutes and arrived at the top of the tower.

The area on top of the tower was surprisingly huge. At the center of the of the circular space was a gigantic telescope that looked like it was a hyper-mega-particle-beam cannon from one of those spaceships in sci-fi movies, giving the tower a true sense of an authentic astrological study. The only remaining missing piece was an old man with a walking stick gazing into the heavens via the telescope. Hanging on the left side on the wall of the dome shape observatory, was the door-sized mirror that glowed with a golden luster. The surface was the mirror was smooth like ice, yet the reflection of it was slightly darkened as if it had a protective barrier in it.

[Mirror of Truth] (Tool)

Level: 1

HP: 100,000,000

Defense: 1,000,000

Magic Defense: 1,000,000

"Is this the so called magic mirror?" asked Han Ying Xue. Like a fish attracted to a bait, the girls started to flock over the mirror and stared into it to observe their own reflections.

The sheer HP and Defense value of the mirror was so bewildering that the mere thought of shattering the mirror via brute force was abandoned immediately.

Without delay, Zhang Yang took out the [Heart of Herlow] and wanted smash the mirror with it. He was immediately stopped by Han Ying Xue just when he was about to thrust the stone-like object.

"Wait!" said all the girls.

Zhang Yang was stunned. "What's wrong? Don't you want to finish the quest?"

"Of course, we do! Just wait for a minute..."

Han Ying Xue was the first one to spoke to the mirror. "Mirror, mirror, on the wall, who is the fairest of them all?"

If you could actually see Zhang Yang's face right now, it would look like the emoticon that look like this -_-|||.

"My lovely lady. Princess Snow White is the fairest lady of them all!" A face materialize in the mirror and spoke in a voice that was hard to distinguished between a man and a woman.

"Oho...I see..." Han Ying Xue waltzed over to Zhang Yang and took the [Heart of Herlow] from him.

"Mirror, mirror, on the wall, do you know what am I holding in my hand?" she asked.

"My lovely lady. That is the Heart of Herlow."

"Now tell me mirror, what will happened to you, if I took this piece of rock and smashed you with it?"

"My lovely l-l-lady...I-I-I would shatter into a thousand pieces and perish!"

Han Ying Xue grinned. "I see that you understand the situation. Now tell me once more, O mirror, mirror, on the wall, who is the fairest of them all?"

"My lovely lady. You are the fairest of them all!" The mirror lied immediately.

Zhang Yang quietly praised the programmer of the game for even making an object like that possess such a level of AI.

Satisfied with the answer she had obtained, Han Ying Xue passed the rock to Daffodil Daydream and went to rest at one side. Under the threat of the [Heart of Herlow], the mirror could not help but to lie his reflective *ss off to satisfy all the girls around. Wei Yan Er was the last one to receive the baton and she asked. "Magic mirror!

Magic mirror! What is my name?!"

"My lovely child, your name is Drizzler!"

"Haha! This is fun! It actually knows my name!" Wei Yan Er squealed in delight. She then walked closer to the mirror and was only 2 inches away from it.

She asked again. "Magic mirror. Do you think that my chest will grow any bigger?"

Zhang Yang frowned and facepalmed himself so hard that it actually left a mark on his forehead. This little girl had the impression of the mirror really knows it all! But lo and behold, the mirror really did answer her question!

"My lovely child. Everything you wish for shall come true!"

Wei Yan Er squealed again in delight. She turned over to Zhang Yang swiftly and said, "hey noob tank! I like this mirror! Let's take it back!"

"Are you playing?!" said Zhang Yang angrily as he snatched the [Heart of Herlow] from Wei Yan Er. Without waiting for any answer or response from the girls, Zhang Yang quickly threw the rock towards the mirror and broke it.

Piang!

The 100 million HP mirror immediately shattered into uncountable pieces.

"Sigh...what a shame." Said Daffodil Daydream. The rest of the girls seems disappointed as well.

As they completed their mission, instead of walking down the tower, the party tore their [Teleportation Scroll] and went to Thunderstorm Castle instead. There, it was nearer and faster to reach to Oz instead of walking back from the Astronomy Tower.

Three hours of riding later, the party arrived to Butterfly Valley for the third time.

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Destroy the Magic Mirror! Obtained 5,000,000 Experience Points!'

"O brave adventurers! You have done it again!" Snow White cheered happily. "Now, it's time to eliminate the evil witch! Once I have regained my rightful place in the throne, I shall reward all of you handsomely!"

"My princess, let us go together and vanquish this evil witch!" Wei Yan Er cheered.

"Adventurer! Would you assist me in eliminating the evil witch?" Snow White asked the party anticipatingly.

'Ding! Snow White has a quest for you: Take Back the Throne! Will you accept it?'

"Yes! Yes!" Wei Yan Er frantically nodded his head.

[Take Back the Throne] (Difficulty Level: A)

Quest Description: Kill the evil Queen Shaenita and rescue the Kingdom of Oz! Heroes! Hopes lies just over the horizon!

Quest Participant Limit: 5

Progress: Kill Shaenita 0/1

"Let's ride then! Onward!" Snow White waved her hands and summoned a blood red Direwolf and rode it bravely.

"How cool!" said Wei Yan Er. Her voice was a mixture of both jealousy and adminration.

As the party rode out of the valley, the princess waved her hands again. She cast a skill {Haste} on everyone which increased the movement speed by a fewfolds. Like a rampaging squall, the six of them rode at a breakneck speed towards the kingdom.

In less than one hour, the party had arrived at Hera's Castle.

There, Snow White took out a magic cape and put it on herself. "I will follow your lead to the Royal Castle!" she cried.

As she put on the cloak on herself, the magic seeped in and rendered her completely invisible.

Zhang Yang led the party to proceed on toward the palace entrance. There, the muffled voice of Snow White broke through the air and said, "I will protect you with my magic cloak! Go on!"

A sudden darkness blanketed their vision and after a quick second, their vision returned. They just realized that Snow White had just covered all of them with the magic cloak.

"At this time of the day, the witch should be having tea by the flower garden!" said the princess. She then led the party forwards and moved around the palace with great precision as if she was extremely familiar with the route around the palace. In no time at all, the party arrived at the garden.

There were a total of 11 guards patrolling the entrance. All of them were Level 77, elite tier with 150,000 HP! One of them guards was even a Yellow-Gold tiered boss!

[Guard Captain, Angelo] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 7,800,000

Defense: 1,400

Note: Angelo was once a Hunter.

"Someone's there!" Angelo sniffed something in the air and yelled from the top of his lungs. He pulled out a long sword from his back and pointed at the direction where Zhang Yang was hidden.

As expected of a Hunter, with instincts and senses like a dog!

The other guards were confused at Angelo's sudden outburst and went on surround the area where Zhang Yang and his party were, even though, from the guard's perspective, they were just surrounding nothing but air.

"Reveal yourself! My sense of smell will never be wrong!" Angelo bellowed.

Without any means of warning, Snow White yanked off the cloak on her and revealed herself to Angelo. "Angelo! I need your help! Oz needs your help!"

"Princess!?" Everyone, including Angelo and the rest of the guards around were stunned.

"No, princess! You have lied to me! I may have spared your life the last time! But my will and loyalty is still to the Kingdom of Oz! You have plotted against your own father, the great and benevolent Andalu the Third. This sin of blood must be repaid in blood! You will die!" Angelo bellowed and swung his sword towards Snow White.

Before the sword landed, Zhang Yang, who had already anticipated, pulled on the reins of his bear and intercept the sword strike with his shield held up high.

{Block}!

Pang!

The sword clashed heavily against the shield and sent thousands of sparks flying off into the air. Zhang Yang had successfully blocked the boss' attack.

"Brothers! Kill the traitors!" Angelo stabbed the sword into the ground and commanded his troops to attack.

Well, d*mn!

Zhang Yang swiftly activated {Blood Rage} and increased his Rage to over 60. He waited a quick moment for the guards to approach nearer and activated {Horizontal Sweep}. Numerous waves of attack blasted off as the Dark Enigmatic Sword effects were triggered repeatedly, causing 4,000+ damage over and over again.

Zhang Yang was rather lucky this time as the sword had triggered a total of six counts and had dealt more than a total of 300,000 damage to all.

"That's ridiculous!" Han Ying Xue cried in surprise.

"Indeed, it was!" said the ever-silent Sun Xin Yu which had added on to their surprise.

"Hehe! What are you waiting for?! Stop staring and start killing!" Zhang Yang yelled.

While facing a large group of monsters, the capabilities of the Dark Enigmatic Sword would increase tremendously! The more enemies there were, the better it would be! Zhang Yang activated {Blast Wave} to attack and this time, the skill was triggered three more times and caused a relatively high damage!

"Kill the minions with your AoE skills first! We'll target the boss last!" Zhang Yang screamed.

'-6,206!'

Angelo attacked Zhang Yang, and this time, his {Block} was on cool down and had to take the hit head on.

Zhang Yang's bear was already at Level 71, with a HP of 19,640! After combining with Zhang Yang, their shared life would boost Zhang Yang HP to a whopping 48,780 HP. The boss slashed at

Zhang Yang and had only chipped away one eighth of his total HP.

"Brothers! Kill them! Kill them all!" cried Angelo. With a sudden burst of red hue, the guards gained a buff.

'Ding! Angelo has used {Raging Command}!'

[Raging Command: Increased 20% Melee Damage. Last for 2 minutes.

"Nice! That skill is awesome! I want one!" cried Wei Yan Er as she yanked Zhang Yang sleeves.

Even though all the monsters aggro was on Zhang Yang, the number of monsters that could only attack him was three at a time. Zhang Yang had relied on his positioning and constant maneuvering around the boss to block the monsters around which had limited the number of monsters engaging him. Coupled with his strong defense armor, Zhang Yang was only taking close to 5,000 damage per second.

While Zhang Yang was taking all the damage, the rest of the girls had start releasing all their AoE skills, leaving Han Ying Xue to throw healing spells on Zhang Yang. With her healing rate close to 3,000 HP per second, Zhang Yang could only last for approximately 24 seconds before he would be in danger. If he relied on {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, and {Rearm}, he would at least last for another minute or so.

If he was to win this battle, he would need to hurry up with clearing all the guards before he starts taking on the boss.

Princess Snow White was a Berserker class NPC. With a long sword in her fragile-looking hands, she danced around like a butterfly and attacked the guards around swiftly. She did not have any AoE skills, her damage was not as strong, hence, she was not just an ornament in the battlefield!

Still, Zhang Yang had quickly used up {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal}, and {Rearm} to repeat his cycle of skills again. Luckily, with the effect of the Dark Enigmatic Sword and the girls with strong equipment, everyone had managed to kill all the monsters right before Zhang Yang started to get worried about his HP.

One thing led to the other; and once the monsters around were gone, the boss was nothing but a simple target to kill. Even though Angelo was a Yellow-Gold boss, it was just gatekeeper boss that was meant to guard doors, nothing spectacularly powerful. It true that the skill {Raging Command} was powerful, but only when the surrounding allies were many. Once the monsters around had been weeded out, its skill would not be of much help alone. The long 7,800,000 HP was nothing but a delay of the inevitable. In just ten minutes or so, Angelo grunted loudly before falling, defeated.

"Adventurers! We have now passed the final obstacle. The evil witch is just inside there! The last fight is there!" said Snow White, before rushing into the garden on her own.

Before moving to the garden, Zhang Yang instructed, "Take the loots first! We'll distribute them after the battle with the witch!"

As expected of royalty, even the garden of the palace was as huge as a football field. The party followed closely after Snow White and after sprinting for a few hundred meters, they had arrived at where the last boss was at!

Not far from the garden was a grand swing with a huge wooden seat in the middle. Sitting quietly on the swing was a beautiful lady dressed in a black. She was reading a book, occasionally flipping the pages along with her right hand. Beside the swing were four maids standing quietly, awaiting orders from their master. They were all elite tier.

[Queen Shaenita] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

MP: 4,000,000

Defense: 1,400

Note: The stepmother of Snow White, a witch with unlimited magic power.

[Loyal Maid] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 78

HP: 1,000,000

Defense: 400

"Shaenita! I've returned!" cried Snow White boldly with rage.

Surprised, the lady stood up frantically from the swing. Her tall slender body was filled with the elegance of a true born royalty aura. She lifted her fair, pale finger and pointed them furiously at Snow White. "You...You dare to show yourself here!"

"Shaenita! Today will be the day you die!"

Chapter 288: The Truth About The Dark And The Light

"Snow White! You evil being! I will never allow Oz to fall into your hands! Your evil ways will cause Oz to fall into the depth of the abyss!" Shaenita held up a dark magic staff and stepped forwards boldly.

She raised her staff up high and chanted something rather mysterious. However, after a quick rumble, she stopped halfway. Her confident expression went pale immediately. She looked up to Snow White, with horror written all over her face.

"You...You've destroyed the Mirror of Truth!?"

Shaenita looked in despair at Zhang Yang and the party. Her voice trembled as she spoke. "The Mirror of Truth is the one and only thing that could repel Snow White! She could have never destroyed it herself! It was you! All of you! How could all of you be so dumb and stupid to help her!? Imbeciles! You have assisted evil itself! What have you done?!"

Zhang Yang was stunned. It was a huge, sudden change of events.

"Did we just help the villain?"

"I think the evil witch is the good guy here, and Snow White is the evil one!" "Damn! We have been duped into thinking that the plot will follow the actual fairy tale! This is 'God's Miracle'! Not the world of Grimm's fairy tales! Snow White isn't the real damsel in distress! And the stepmother isn't the real villain here!"

"Sneaky developers!"

"I think it's on us. Remember when we met Snow White for the first time, the system had given two choices. To kill her or to spare her. We were the ones who chose to help Snow White with her evil plot!"

"Oh I see! No wonder why we haven't seen the seven dwarfs! She must have killed them all!"

Snow White laughed. It was not the same kind of laugh of a woman. It was the exact same cliché laugh of a villain. The deep, long, maniacal, and draggy laughter. "You're absolutely right! These gullible adventurers had helped me! The only thing I had to do was to tell them a pathetic story and they had bowed down obediently to me! With a simple request, they had agreed to help me to kill Herlow and get his heart for me, sneak into the palace for me, and destroy the Mirror of Truth for me! Hahaha! Shaenita! Without the mirror, you're not worthy of being my opponent. Today, I will let it rain blood all over the Kingdom of Oz! I will summon the darkness to envelop Oz for as long as I breathe! I will instill fear into every one here! They will fear me! They will worship me! For I, am, Snow White!"

Shrom!

Black rays started to leak out of Snow White and blasted off everywhere like a massive explosion. More and more rays blasted out of her in the form of sharp swords. As the rays dimmed a little, Snow White's black hair floated around wildly. Her eyes glowed brightly. Another sudden flash of light blasted off her and she gained a three tier jump.

[Snow White] (Violet-Platinum, Humanoid)

Level: 80

HP: 8,000,000

Defense: 2,400

"Violet! Platinum!" Everyone gasped in horror.

"Adventurer! Your acts have led to this result! Because of your foolishness, you Snow White now roams free! Now, you have to do what is right! Kill her now! Do not let her win! Or Oz will forever be plunged into darkness!" Shaenita pleaded the party.

'Ding! Your quest: Take Back the Throne has been forfeited.'

'Ding! Shaenita has a quest for you: Atonement! Will you accept

Accept!

[Atonement] (Difficulty Level: S)

Quest Description: Due to your inconsiderate acts, Oz is now facing the greatest threat against humankind. Without the Mirror of Truth, the evil Snow White is now undefeatable! You will have to atone for your mistake and kill the princess to save Oz from certain doom!

Quest Participant Limit: 5

Progress: Kill Princess Snow White 0/1

The quest had just completed a huge loop, from killing Snow White back and back again. The only difference back then, was Snow White was just an elite tier monster, but now, she had turned into a formidable Violet-Platinum boss. Which was, by far, the strongest boss in the game!

With that quest level of difficulty, it surely had to come with a certain level of reward!

If the party had killed off Snow White when she was only an elite tier monster, the rewards obtained from the quest would be relative to that level. However, after the sudden change of events that had led to Snow White gaining a huge upgrade, the quest had also been upgraded to an S Level difficulty! Not that an S level quest was that scarce throughout the game, but once a quest was set to an S level difficulty, the rewards would most definitely be luxurious!

Zhang Yang was the first one to intercept Snow White's attack. With a quick flash, Zhang Yang swung his sword and hacked at Snow White.

```
'-1,005!'
```

With a 2,400 Defense value, Zhang Yang unbelievable attack was diminished to only 1,000, even though he had {Eagle Eye}.

Snow White retaliated with a raging roar and countered Zhang Yang attack with her own long sword.

```
{Block}!
```

Wham!

As her huge long sword clashed onto Zhang Yang's shield, the huge difference in strength and power had pushed Zhang Yang a few steps back! This proved the formidable power of a Violet-Platinum boss!

The worst was not over just yet. In just two seconds, Snow White

rushed to Zhang Yang and attacked again. This time, Zhang Yang was forced to take the attack head on!

'-12,606!'

Even though he may be a Guardian with huge physical attack defense, and also, by far, had the strongest equipment in game, Zhang Yang still took an insane level of damage from the boss.

"GRAHHHH! How dare you deceive this young lady's good heart! I will smash you good!" cried Wei Yan Er as she started attacking Snow White furiously. Without much delay, Sun Xin Yu and the rest of the attackers followed Wei Yan Er and started to attack as well.

Still, no matter how spirited they were, everyone besides Zhang Yang could not deal much damage. Since Snow White was a Level 80 Violet-Platinum boss with ultra-thick defense, coupled with the huge level gap between the party and the boss, all their attacks were greatly reduced.

Wei Yan Er was still able to dish out visible damage values since she was wielding a two-handed weapon to begin with. However, attackers like Sun Xin Yu could all scratch the boss with her tiny daggers and deal only three digits damage numbers to the boss! Daffodil Daydream's attacks would not be affected by the boss defense, however, since the level gap was too huge between them, and they were penalized for a different reason.

The only person who could deal a visible amount of damage was

Zhang Yang alone. He was, by far, the highest-level player in the game at Level 71. He had a nine Level gap, the damage reduction was not too severe. Besides, he was always able to hit the boss, ignoring all Defense with {Eagle Eye} and {Cripple Defense}.

However strong Zhang Yang was, Snow White was several times stronger than he could ever be! Even though she could not instantly kill Zhang Yang, her strength was so strong that the super-healer Han Ying Xue could not keep with the HP loss! She had been putting all she has on Zhang Yang and still could not keep him out of danger!

On the other hand, what made things worse was that Zhang Yang had already used all his strong skills during the fight with Angelo! {Shield Wall}, {Berserker's Heal} and even {Rearm} was on cold down!

"Foolish peasant! You dare to attack me!? Die!" Snow White bellowed thunderously and spun around with her long sword far out.

```
'-27,080!'
```

^{&#}x27;-27,000!'

^{&#}x27;-27,160!'

^{&#}x27;-27,160[']

'-19,966![']

'Ding! You have received 27,080 damage from Snow White {Tornado Cleave} (120 damage reduced)!'

• • •

'Ding! You have received 19,966 damage from Snow White {Tornado Cleave} (6,240 damage reduced)!'

The AoE of the skill was so huge that even Han Ying Xue, who was standing far behind, received the attack! The damage was so great that everyone besides Zhang Yang was instantly killed! None of them even had the split-second window to use their skills such as {Ice Frame} or {Vanish}.

Though Zhang Yang still had over 10,000 HP in his HP gauge, he quickly jumped down and escape more attacks with {Shadow of the Void}.

'-16,600!'

When Zhang Yang had vanished and cleared his aggro, the only one target left in the battle field was the white bear. A single strike from Snow White was enough to kill the bear, allowing Zhang Yang to safely escape.

Zhang Yang was pissed. He was so ticked off that he resorted to using his trump card. Swiftly, he took out the [Friendship Jade],

equipped it, and canceled {Shadow of the Void}.

When his character reappeared, his appearance had undergone a major change. From the rotting flesh, to dangling ribs, his entire appearance was changed into a spectre!

After successfully killing off the players around, Snow White shifted her target to Shaenita. The fight between two NPC boss was on another level. Still, Shaenita was just a Yellow-Gold tier boss. Though she may had the help from her four elite tier maids, Snow White had killed them all by spamming {Tornado Cleave} on and on until Shaenita herself was at the brink of death. Snow White herself had only lost 10% of her HP after the ordeal.

Zhang Yang walked closer to the bosses and lightly pressed the jade in his palm. At the top of his rotten lungs, he cried. "Come to me! Shadow of Smaug!"

Voom!

With a strong blast wave of an unknown force, a shadow emerged out of the [Friendship Jade] and materialized in midair, taking the form of Smaug, The King of the Forgotten One. Though he had a single skeletal wing protruding out from his back, and a fully skeletal body, Smaug was not lacking in his threat value!

[Shadow of Smaug] (Holy, Summon)

Level: ???

HP: ???

Defense: ???

Note: This is but the shadow of Smaug, yet it still possesses tremendous power!

The moment Smaug appeared in the battle field, his dominating presence had even cause Snow White and Shaenita to stop their skirmish for a good second! They lowered their weapons and stared at Smaug, terrified!

Zhang Yang pointed his boney finger to Snow White and commanded. "Kill her!"

"Growl!" Incapable of any form of speech, Smaug growled and brandished its copy of the Blood Shadow Blade and rushed towards his target.

DIIING!

Fearing for her life, Snow White frantically lifted her sword up to parry Smaug's attack. The strike was so strong that a single metal clashing sound was as loud as a gunshot fired right beside your ears. The strike was not just for show. It had managed to send Snow White flying back a good 10 meters and more, leaving a deep

mark on the floor where Snow White had dug her feet in.

'-200,000!'

It was not a glitch, nor was it a system error. Smaug had indeed dealt 200,000 damage on Snow White with just one parried strike.

"Noob tank! What's happening?" Just when Han Ying Xue and the girls were running back to the fight as fast as they could, Wei Yan Er sent a message via the party channel.

Zhang Yang laughed. "Just hurry up! You're missing a good show!"

The shadow of Smaug was relentless. One strike after the other, the shadow did not stop to rest for even a second as he struck at the enemy with all his malice.

Before the appearance of Smaug in the battle field, Snow White had seemed unstoppable. However, right after Smaug was summoned, she was immediately turn from a formidable enemy to a mere punching bag as she continually had her HP chiseled away like nothing. Just so you know, after Violet-Platinum, there would still be the Mythical and Ethereal rank before coming to Holy tier! With a three tier gap between the two of them, it was obvious who was going to perish!

The gang quickly made their way back to Zhang Yang and was instantly shocked at at his appearance. While talking, the girls

quickly munch on recovery snacks.

"Woah. Dummy Yu, what had happened to you?"

Zhang Yang scoffed. "If I hadn't become like this, how do I summon that awesome ultimate weapon!?" Zhang Yang replied Han Ying Xue and also posted the properties of [Friendship Jade] on the party channel.

"Holy-macaroni! That is awesome! Why didn't you tell me about this awesome thing!" Wei Yan Er puffed angrily. "Hey! There's only two uses left! Give it to me! I wanna play!"

"Dumb girl. Don't you see it's bound to me?"

Wei Yan Er squinted and stuck her tongue out at Zhang Yang. "Noob tank! Call me dumb one more time, and I will cut ties with you!"

Chapter 289: The Second Territory Command Order

The shadow of Smaug continued slashing away like a butcher, hacking away Snow White's HP down from 8,000,000 as if it was just a piece of butter. How could a mere Violet-Platinum boss last for long, under the attack from a Holy tier summon?! One hack and 200,000 HP was gone!

That being said, no matter how strong Smaug was, being their ally and all, Han Ying Xue and the rest of them had just jumped out of the pan, and surely enough, they know where is the fire was. As far as they could go, there's they will be. Smaug was hacking Snow White like madman slapping his child. However, Snow White was still a fearsome boss with attacks strong enough to whack everyone dead with a slap to the face. If they were to get a little hot headed, it would be like ants trying to walk between the battle of two huge tornadoes. Since a pet mount can only be summoned 10 minutes after being killed, Zhang Yang's own 30,000 HP would not be enough to guarantee him a safe sideline show. Not that he could even deal much damage to begin with anyway.

In the end, Snow White slain by Smaug's shadow in just less than two minutes. After the usual wailing and cries of utter defeat, Snow White fell defeated and dropped a heap of battle loots. There were even a few metallic purple glows among the loots!

'Ding! Congratulation on being the first party to defeat an Open-World Violet-Platinum boss! Your glories achievement will be recorded in history! As the party leader, please name your party to be registered in the records!'

A system notification, followed by an input box appeared right the moment when Snow White was defeated.

Zhang Yang shrugged and keyed in the advertisement-like comment. Just one second after he hit the enter button, the server was flooded with the system announcement, followed by roaring responses from players from China. There were discussions, arguments, minor discourses, but overall, players were impressed with the ability of Lone Desert Smoke managing to pull off this feat. The guild was even rowdier than ever with players cheering and applauding Zhang Yang, on and on. How could they not? When the guild's fame increases, they could wear their guild tag over their heads proudly.

Snow Seeker, Sky Shaman, Sword of Light, and Greensleeves Prince all sent their private massages to congratulate Zhang Yang. At one point, he was so busy replying them, that Han Ying Xue had to walk over to him and give him a nudge.

The reward for having the First-Kill of an open-world boss was a Luck attribute. After killing Snow White, Zhang Yang's Luck was raised to 10.

"S-S-Spectre!" Shaenita cried and glared at Zhang Yang with hatred in her eyes. She quickly reverted to a defensive stance.

Zhang Yang swiftly unequipped the [Friendship Jade] and reverted back to his original human form. As the item was removed, Smaug's shadow followed and disappeared into thin air.

It was quite a huge waste there since Smaug's shadow would have remained for another 10 minutes. If only he could actually kill Shaenita. Since she was a Yellow-Gold boss...her loots would be...

NPCs would always behave like NPCs, clueless as ever. Once Zhang Yang returned to his human form, Shaenita relaxed and lowered her guard, talking to Zhang Yang as if nothing odd had happened a few seconds ago.

"You have atoned for your mistakes! You have my thanks! However, you must know that you had destroyed the Mirror of Truth. Still, you also helped in eliminating the evil Snow White from Oz, for good! With that, I thank you again!"

'Ding! You have completed the quest: Atonement. Obtained 5,000,000 Experience points!'

'Ding! You have obtained the reward: Obtained 5,000,000 Experience points!'

'Ding! You have obtained the reward: {Unyielding Rage}!'

With his eyes wide open, Zhang Yang quickly open his inventory and took out a deep purple skill book.

[Skill Book: Unyielding Rage]

Use: Teaches you the skill {Unyielding Rage}!

Class Requirement: Warrior

Level Requirement: 10

Bound.

Without further delay, Zhang Yang pats the book on him to learn the skill.

[Unyielding Rage (Passive)]: Increases your maximum Rage point to 120.

Good stuff. Be it only 20 extra Rage point, this upper limit not only will allow the user to use more skills, but will also increase the maximum destructive power f the skill {Killing Cleave}.

"Did you obtain a skill book?" Zhang Yang asked the team.

"Yeah! I got {Unyielding Rage}!" Wei Yan Er answered swiftly.

"Mine was {Inferno}! Daffodil Daydream spoke up.

"Haha! What a loot! We were quite lucky!" Zhang Yang smiled.

"And then there's still the Violet-Platinum equipment!" cried Wei

Yan Er happily as she collected all the gold coins and equipment on the floor.

Snow White was the first Violet-Platinum boss that was killed in the game, thus, the battle loots were so rewarding that just equipment-wise, there were three pieces of Violet-Platinum and seven Yellow-Gold, enough to fill a player's equipment tab!

[Ancient Killer Long Boots] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor) Defense: +48 Vitality: +564 Strength: +161 Dexterity: +378 {Unidentified} Class Requirement: Thief Level Requirement: 80 Ancient Killer set (1/8):

Ancient Killer Face Mask, Ancient Killer Necklace, Ancient Killer Cape, Ancient Killer Chest Plate, Ancient Killer Gloves, Ancient Killer Leggings, Ancient Killer Long Boots, Ancient Killer Ring.

3 Set Equip Effect: Increase 500 Dexterity.

5 Set Equip Effect: Reduce {Vanish} cool down time by 1 minute.

8 Set Equip Effect: Grant a 1% chance to cast a shockwave attack on every attack. 5000 physical damage will be deal to all target in a small conical shape area in front of the caster.

Finally, a Thief set equipment!

Without a doubt, this piece of equipment went to Sun Xin Yu.

[Titan Necklace] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +141

Strength: +40

{Unidentified}

Equip Effect: Absorb 81 damage.

Equip Effect: Grant a 5% chance after a successful {Block} to cause 2000 physical damage to the attacker.

Class Requirement: Guardian

Level Requirement: 80.

Zhang Yang was extremely pleased. "Very nice! The third piece of the Titan set equipment! I could finally bring out the first set equipment effect!"

It was a pity that the third Violet-Platinum equipment was not a set equipment.

[Heaven's Hunting Bow] (Violet-Platinum, Ranged Weapon)

Weapon Attack: 1,843 – 2,243

Attack Interval: 3.8 seconds

DPS: 538

{Unidentified}

Level Requirement: 80

"Haha! It's either Hundred Shots or Fatty Han who's gonna get lucky!" exclaimed Zhang Yang as he kept the bow.

The remaining seven Yellow-Gold equipment were rather good, however, most of them were equipping Level 60 Yellow-Gold set equipment, and were unwilling to break up their set effects. To make things simpler, they were aiming directly for Level 80 set equipment. Thus, all the Yellow-Gold equipment loots were headed straight to the shop for sale. It would be worth a whole lot since Yellow-Gold equipment was the gold standard for other players, and even major guild masters out there had not yet even managed to get their hands on a complete Yellow-Gold set!

This time, they had just realized that they have not yet gone through with the battle loots from Angelo! However, though Angelo's fight seemed easy, the battle drops were appropriately level to its difficulty, that is, two Yellow-Gold equipment and five Gray-Silver equipment, which were all going to the shop to be sold as well!

As they finished their quest, the five of them went back to Thunderstorm Castle and teleported back to White Jade Castle via the Teleportation Point. One by one, they Identified their new equipment and burned a hole in their pockets just to socket a Level 3 Gemstone.

Each Level 3 Gemstone costs at least 500 gold coins each, and had a 30% socket failure rate! At their current stage, the exchange rate between in-game currency and real-world currency had leveled out with each other; 1:1. 500 gold coins was now worth 500 dollars!

After the money-wrecking ordeal, Zhang Yang stored the three Titan set equipment in his storage warehouse. He could not help but sigh at the sight of the purple metallic luster of the equipment, counting down the days as he got closer to equipping them. With that, his motivation to reach Level 80 was as high as ever.

'System Announcement: The second Territory Order has been found. The battle for the Territory will commence tomorrow night at 7pm (real-world time). Please make your preparations! The location of the Territory is Meadow Flatlands. The coordinates for the battle will be announced at the start of the battle! The battle for the Territory will last for three hours! After the battle is over, the last person who still holds the Territory Command Order will become the Territory owner!'

A system announcement flared up, causing a ripple of chaos throughout the entire server. Discussion, argument started again, some were debating which guild will the second Territory belong to. The other professional players were worried about the battle tomorrow, whether it will become a bloody ordeal or a complete chaos.

It did not take long before the news spread, claiming the guild that found the second Territory order was none other than Imperial Sky, and the person who found it was One Sword Stroke! As expected of the rival guild of Lone Desert Smoke, the runner up of the Soaring Swords competition. Looks like they might have some luck on them after all!

The new about Imperial Sky obtaining the Territory Order was revealed by One Sword Stroke himself. He had broadcasted it proudly at his own Violet Star City and have blatantly requested that all players from that city assist his guild to secure the Territory. As a reward, all teleportation fees will be waived once he secures the second Territory Order!

Never underestimate the value of just one gold coin. It would still be a mountain of gold coins once accumulated. On average, a player would have spent at least 10 to 20 gold coin on travelling alone! With the huge incentive offered y One Sword Stroke, players all over Violet Star city had given their support and had expressed their willingness to help Imperial Sky fight in the war!

"D*mn bro, that One Sword Stroke guy is quite impressive!" Lost Dream sighed. Zhang Yang had gone up and recruited all of the main attacking force.

A city would approximately have at least 6,000,000 players! Mind you that the number would only grow larger and larger! To waive one whole city's teleportation fees would be losing out on approximately 1,000,000 players! (Since they was still a majority of players that were still below Level 50). That being said, the profits lost there would be close to 20,000,000 gold coins a month!

Zhang Yang grined. "He's smart. When we took down Thunderstorm Castle back then, we had helped from Crimson Rage, Lost Paradise, and also Sky High. He may have sacrificed the earnings of an entire city, but he has been compensated for it by having a large army to defend his position."

"Hey hey! Are we going to make some trouble for them tomorrow?" Ever since the PvP competition in Shanghai, Wei Yan Er had been treating Imperial Sky with hostility since their dirty methods had been made known.

"Of course we would. How could we let them sit comfortably and get that Order? I'd say, let's bring them hell!"

"Hell yeah! Even if we don't get that second Territory, we should not let it fall into the hands of Imperial Sky!"

"That bunch of wenches! Let's f*ck them up!"

Just two days after the Soaring Sword competition had ended, Venshi from Radiance and Lonely tree from Sunset Amber had left their own guild and joined Imperial Sky. By doing so, everything was made clear!

Not only were Radiance and Sunset Amber had been raging on about this matter, their anger was shared among other players as well. One by one, they had filed their complaints to the organizers to rescind the runner up title from Imperial Sky, for cheating.

'Ding! Player One Sword Stroke has used Monster Attack City Order on Thunderstorm Castle! 7pm tomorrow (real-world time),

there will be hordes of monster attacking Thunderstorm Castle. The defensive battle will last for 3 hours! During the war, the teleportation point in Thunderstorm Castle will be deactivated. This Territory will only allow access to Lone Desert Smoke players at this time! If monsters have destroyed the main hall of the Thunderstorm Castle, the entire Territory will be erased permanently.'

Chapter 290: Monster Raid

"F*ck! D*mn, that One Inch 'Sword'! How dare he pull off such a move! We won't be able to leave Thunderstorm Castle unoccupied now!"

"Hmph! Obviously, he's afraid of us!"

"You got that right! That little boy doesn't dare take us head-on! That's why he's playing tricks like a schoolgirl! What a p*ssy!"

In an instant, members from Lone Desert Smoke had started to flood the guild channel with a massive number of angry complaint despite the warnings from Hundred Shots. It was clear that the system announcement was not narrowcasted to Zhang Yang alone, but to all members of Lone Desert Smoke.

Zhang Yang shook his head. There was more to this. He spoke in the party channel, "Lone Desert Smoke is big, but our presence does not necessitate the usage of such a rare item. We are strong. We are large, having 20,000 members. But all that is nothing against the might of an entire city! Our strength is not even up to scale!"

"What do you mean?"

"I'm saying that One Sword Stroke is a man with big ambitions. Not only does he intend to have the Territory for himself, at the same time, he wants to crush the Territory that belongs to us! That way, he would be the only person to own the one and only

Territory in China! It is a good strategy. Why have competitors at all if you can crush them directly and leave everything to yourself?"

Everyone looked at Zhang Yang, their eyes wide open in realization. One Sword Stroke was indeed a greedy man!

"Noobie tank! How did that spineless worm get himself a Monster Attack Order? If Imperial Sky really do get their hands on the second Territory Order, we should get ourselves a Monster Attacking Order and raise them hell on Earth!" cried Wei Yan Er, puffing with angry steam.

Han Ying Xue interjected just when Zhang Yang was about to open his mouth. "These monsters, are they hard to subdue?"

Zhang Yang replied with a sulk on his face. "That is a good question. For that, which I do not have any answer to."

During a Monster Attack event, only the guild members of the Territory could participate in the war. Once the battle starts, non-affiliated players will be automatically kicked out of the warzone. In his previous life, Zhang Yang had only managed to catch a few glimpse of how a monster attacking event took place. Some guilds were able to overcome the madness, while the unfortunate ones will be washed away by the waves of monsters.

Everyone knew that Zhang Yang was the person to go to, the person who knew it all, the beta tester; where no matter what sort of trouble they got themselves into, as long as Zhang Yang shone a light over their shadow, they would always get it right. But now, with even Zhang Yang left clueless, everyone knew that something was not right. Perhaps, this time, they were really in trouble.

Like the angel of death itself had just passed through the scene, the atmosphere was deathly silent and tense. The party went quiet. Everyone was fidgeting in their own way, wracked with worry. The atmosphere felt so tense that a single drop of needle could probably blow up the place.

Zhang Yang laughed. "Relax, guys. The game developers would not create something impossible. I'm sure there will be a way for us to prevail. As long as we work together, we will surely prevail."

"Okay!" Everyone replied in unison.

Since the in-game time and real world time had been set to 3:1, everyone took the opportunity to train heavily. Perhaps, before the decisive battle starts, they could just gain a little more strength. This was particularly true for those who had a nine in their levels. With just one more level to go, they could at least make some vital changes if they could, such as changing into new equipment, or obtaining new skills. That being said, Zhang Yang had just taken notice that he had not yet obtained his Level 70 class skill even though he was already at Level 71. Her then rode on his white bear and rushed over to Ani, the Warrior class instructor.

As always, Ani's sexy body and alluring posture had drawn in a few perverted male swines, ogling at her from the side. Judging by the level of these useless scum, they had been squandering here for a long time. Their levels were only around Level 20 to 30. Without

wasting any more time, Zhang Yang proceeded on and claimed his skill.

The Level 70 Warrior class skill was {Spear of Obliteration}.

[Spear of Obliteration]: Trust your weapon forward and deal 100% melee physical damage to a target. Attack ignores all Defense value. While Shield is equipped, this skill will generate a huge amount of aggro on the target.

Requirement: Melee Weapon

Range Distance: 3 – 30 meters.

Cool Down Time: 10 seconds.

This skill is the only ranged skill that a Warrior could have. The skill does not consume any Rage. The animation of the skill itself was rather flashy. However, since the skill was a ranged attack and had a 3 meter "blind spot", a Warrior would have to move away in order to use this skill, since all Warrior are melee attackers. That, or the skill could be used to start a fight. Besides that, this skill could be used in turn with {Thunder Strike} during PvP fights to kite an opponent to death.

With great power, comes great responsibility. This skill was strong, and it cost Zhang Yang 700 gold coins to learn. It could not

be avoided. The developers had set it that way. There is no way of escaping the expenditure of this pot of gold.

After getting himself a new skill, Zhang Yang went to the auction house to do a little shopping. Lately, players have been getting smarter and better at doing business. Items such as recipe and skill book that would only reveal their use upon learning, were not auctioned before their functions had been determined beforehand! The players will do their research through forums or the item database, and set the price of the item only after they had determined the items' capabilities.

Take the [Beginner Mobility Potion] that Zhang Yang obtained yesterday. That bargain was truly a purchase of once in a blue moon. The kind that you could only encounter but not seek. Still, after searching for a bit, Zhang Yang managed to find himself another good bargain. It was a [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll]!

This scroll functioned as a means to Engrave a pet skill and allow another pet to learn the fore mention skill. However, the skill that is Engraved will be lost from the host. It was just like the "cut-andpaste" function in a computer, the original skill will be moved, instead of being copied.

Though the [Gold-Eared Bear King] was currently the strongest pet in the game, it was only temporary. After Level 80, there will be Violet-Platinum tiers, Level 110 will have Mythical tiers, Level 140 will have Ethereal tiers and so on so forth. At most, this white bear could only follow Zhang Yang until he reached Level 110, after that, the bear will have reached its limit and could no longer aid Zhang Yang any further.

It was a shame that the bear had learned a decent skill, that is the {Icy Build}. The skill was extremely strong against Ice based attacks! It would be extremely wasteful to let the skill be discarded along with the bear. Now, with the help from the [Pet Skill Engravement Scroll], it would solve the problem! Zhang Yang could easily pick out the skill that he deemed worthy and use it on the next pet he gets!

It was another shame that this absolute item had only two stocks in the auction house. Both of them were sold at 5,000 apiece. Without hesitation, Zhang Yang took out his wallet and purchased both items, keeping them in his own personal storage until later use.

With the upcoming war drawing closer and closer every second, Hundred Shots was constantly rounding up members in the guild channel. The emergency announcement requested that all higher-level players to gather tomorrow night at 7pm (real-world time) to participate in the Territorial Defense. With that, many players were getting their hopes up by training vigorously and making preparations for tomorrow.

Seeing his own guild members working round the clock for the war tomorrow, Zhang Yang could not allow himself to slack off, since he was the guild master after all. Just as he was his the way to the grinding field, he received a voice call from Snow Seeker.

"Guild master Zhan Yu, Imperial Sky has found the second Territory Order. The war will start tomorrow. We, Crimson Rage would like to form an alliance with Lone Desert Smoke and fight for the Order. That being said, since you guys already have Thunderstorm Castle in your grasp, I'm sure that you would let us have it this time around. Right?" Her voice was extremely pleasant to hear. However, Zhang Yang sighed heavily.

"I'm so sorry, guild master Snow. Even if I would love to help you guys out. I'm afraid that we are occupied during the war tomorrow."

"What's going on?" she asked, concerned.

"I have no idea where did One Sword Stroke get his hands on a Monster Attack Order, but he had it and had used it on the Thunderstorm Castle. He had purposely set the Monster Attack event to happen tomorrow, during the Territory Order war! I have to get all members of Lone Desert Smoke to prepare for the Defensive war tomorrow. If we lose, Thunderstorm Castle will be erased from the map."

Snow Seeker sucked in a sharp breath. "What a greedy person! If I'm correct, he wants to be the only player in China to own a Territory and monopolize the market!"

As expected from Snow Seeker, not only was she thinking from the game's perspective, she had a business-oriented mind as well!

"I'm sorry I cannot help you out this time!"

"It's completely fine!" Snow Seeker laughed it off. "How about

Crimson Rage sending over a few of our elite players over to help you out?"

This woman was indeed a true ally, as gracious and generous as she was!

"It's fine. There's no need to do that! This Monster Attacking event can only be participated by players of Lone Desert Smoke. Other non-affiliated players would not be able stay within the battle field. Guild master Snow, I think you're better off making some trouble for Imperial Sky. However, I really do appreciate the thought! Thanks!"

"Don't mention it. I hope the both of us will have favorable outcomes tomorrow!"

After the conversation with Snow Seeker, Sky High and Crimson Fire had also contacted Zhang Yang. Both of them were also seeking help from him to fight during the war. However, unlike Snow Seeker, after knowing the situation that Zhang Yang had gotten himself into, they did not offer any help.

That being said, Zhang Yang understood their position and what they did was reasonable. However, Zhang Yang could now differentiate their standings. Crimson Rage was a guild, willing to fight together as close friends. On the other hand, Lost Paradise and Sky High were simply allies in war.

They say, an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth. Zhang Yang was no saint. But at least he knew when to reciprocate a good will, and

when to have revenge when it comes to it.

• • •

At Zhang Yang's current level, grinding at a Level 60+ map would not do him any good. The monsters there were too low leveled for him. He then decided to give up on this place and proceed to Oz, hoping to grind there.

With his strong equipment and many AoE skills in hand, along with the Dark Enigmatic Sword in his hands that could replicate {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave}, his killing speed was several times faster than any other players around! Coupled with his ridiculous damage, he managed to raise his experience bar from 7% to 17% in just one night!

Starting from Level 70, gaining another level would take approximately 30 days of in-game time. Based on Zhang Yang's current grinding speed, it would take him half of the estimated time, which was only 15 days!

• • •

On the second night 6.30pm, a large number of Lone Desert Smoke members had gathered together and were ready to intercept the monsters.

While Zhang Yang was overseeing the operation, he received a voice call from Liu Wei himself.

His in-game-name was Heaven's Pride. Ostentatious and arrogant, as always. It takes a ridiculous amount of hot air and pride to call yourself Heaven's Pride.

"Well...well...Mr. Zhang Yang. Do you feel the regret dragging your guts down into the depths? Those who defy me will only face failure in his life! Now, I shall take away your Thunderstorm Castle. Who knows, perhaps tomorrow, it could be your Little Merchandize Shop! I will make sure that you will own nothing! You may rise from the dirt again, but I will simply force you back down again!"

Zhang Yang responded with a light smile. "Master Liu must have been treated well in prison for the past two days! That's why you're surprisingly chirpy today!"

"You---" His face went blue.

Liu Wei was the only son of the Liu family. He had been treated like prince ever since he was born. Being born with a silver spoon in his mouth, that man could never endure the hardship in prison for even a minute! However, there was nothing he could do in Shanghai! The only thing he could do was to suppress the news of him being arrested in Shanghai to prevent him from becoming a laughing stock. That being said, Liu Wei wanted to have his revenge. However, Shanghai nor Zhao Su City was in the Liu family's territory! He could not figure out what kind of background did Zhang Yang have, backing him! Without being able to address that uncertainty, Liu Wei was careful not to make things a little too complicated.

Liu Wei tried to control his breath before speaking, "You best look after your own skin now! I would really love to see the sight of Thunderstorm Castle being torn down! That would be a spectacular scene to witness!"

"Haha! I'm sorry to disappoint you, but that would never happen! Perhaps, you should keep an eye on One Sword Stroke. There is no guarantee that Imperial Sky would take the second Territory Order!"

The conversation between the two opposing players was dropped without any proper farewell.

While Zhang Yang was busy getting under Liu Wei's skin, Hundred Shots had taken the helm and had arranged everyone's positions. He had positioned ranged attackers to occupy the castle walls and melee attackers were positioned at the castle gates. Once the gates were breached, all melee attackers there will form a line to hold off monsters from proceeding further into the castle.

Right then, the castle gates were only at level one, with a HP value of 1,000,000, Defense and Magic Defense at 1,000. It was a shame that it could not be healed or else, Hundred Shots would have simply positioned all the healers at the gates. There was a total of three magical cannons on the castle wall, which was the maximum limit a Territory could own. All three cannons were commandeered by three cannoneers with two Power Source Crystals in each of the players' inventory. One Power Source Crystal could be used to fire 10 shots. Six Power Source Crystals had costed Zhang Yang a whopping 6,000,000 gold coins!

As painful as it sounds, it was an expense that could not be avoided. If he had tried to save up some gold coins, he might be dooming the castle instead. That would be a regret that would drive him mad for an eternity. Still, Zhang Yang had the intention to purchase a few more Power Source Crystal but the system had limited the number of shots to only 20 shots per cannon! It would be a complete waste if Zhang Yang had purchased more.

Having spent so much time and money just to defend against a deliberate attack from Liu Wei and One Sword Stroke, Zhang Yang gritted his teeth so hard with intense fury that he was sure to break them off if it was in real life. He swore to himself that this is a revenge that he will return tenfold!

Lo and behold, the clock struck 7pm. The long-awaited war had arrived.

'System Announcement: The second Territory will spawn at coordinates XXXXXX, YYYYYY. Territory name: Margulos Town! The War for the Territory will last for 3 hours! The player who holds the Order shall become the owner of Margulos Town! From now on, Meadow Flatlands has been set to a special battle field. All players cannot go in or out of this battle field. Upon death, players will be teleported to their own major cities to be revived.'

'System Announcement: Current player that holds the Territory Order: One Sword Stroke! Players that hold the Territory Order will be marked and cannot leave the battle field!'

'System Announcement: War of the Territory Order starts! Count down commence!'

At the same time, all players from Lone Desert Smoke heard a different announcement.

'Ding! Monster Attack Order has commenced! There will be a total of 6 waves! Each wave of monster will have one boss. Each wave will last for 30 minutes. Monsters will constantly spawn, while the boss will spawn after 20 minutes. Once the boss of each wave appears, the monster will stop spawning. After 30 minutes of each wave ends, monsters shall start spawning again whether or not the previous boss monster is defeated!'

'Ding! Be advise, a debuff {Fallen} will be inflicted on players who die. The debuff will stacked up to three times, and will reduce all attributes by 10% on each stack. Upon the third stack, the fourth death will cause the player to be sent back to the city to be revived.'

'Ding! Within 3 hours, if monsters successfully infiltrated the Territory Main Hall, the war will be over and Thunderstorm Castle will be erased from the map.'

Standing in the main hall of the castle, Zhang Yang stretched his shoulders, before drawing his sword. A flag with the emblem of Lone Desert Smoke appeared in the hall with a long HP gauge of 1,000,000 appearing on top of the flag. This flag represented the state of the entire war. If the flag survives the entire ordeal, it would be Lone Desert Smoke's victory. If not...

Zhang Yang summoned his white bear and walked out of the hall with a commanding aura flowing out of him. He raised his sword up high and shouted at the top of his lungs. "Brothers and sisters of Lone Desert Smoke! Let's give 'em hell!"

"OOOOOHH!!!"

Chapter 291: Defend The Territory (1)

'Ding! The first wave of monsters have started the attack!'

Zhang Yang rode on the back of the white bear towards the castle wall. From the high altitude, Zhang Yang observed the far horizon and saw a cloud of dark dust rushing towards their direction. The earth trembled from the sheer number of monsters charging their way to destroy the castle. After just a few moments, the cloud of dust had dispersed, leaving a massive horde of monsters closing in. At that distance, Zhang Yang could finally identify the types of monsters.

It was a large number of Twin-Head Demonic Wolves, covered in pitch black fur. Panting frantically, their eyes were unfocused, with fresh blood dripping from the edge of their sharp fangs.

[Twin-Head Demonic Wolf] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 64

HP: 6,400

Defense: 60

"These normal monsters are easy to deal with. Do not fire the cannon on them. Save the ammo for later." Zhang Yang

commanded all three of the cannoneers. Under his personal command, there were at least close to 1,000 players following him. All of them were the strongest, well-equipped, and best players in the guild. The cannoneers were also in his small party of 50 men to allow better communication between them.

After a few short moments, Zhang Yang finally decided to act. He came down to the castle gates and commanded. "Open the gates, I'll take the front line!"

Zhang Yang knew that all the monsters around were unable to deal any damage to him. Knowing that, he stood at the forefront to better protect the castle gates. As long as the gates were unharmed for as long as possible, the chances of them winning the Monster Attack event would be higher.

"Dummy, do you need me?" asked Han Ying Xue.

"No need. Save your MP. These monsters would not be able to put a single scratch on me."

Klang! Klang! Boom!

The gates were lowered and Zhang Yang was the only player emerging out of the castle. He stood bravely at the front lines, facing approximately close to 1 million monsters all by himself. Because of such an epic scene, many female players were already on the verge of climaxing, thinking in their mind that Zhang Yang was the bravest and coolest guy that could ever be encountered.

"I'll be d*mned! I should have picked a Guardian or a Defender! If I could only be standing next to Zhang Yang, I'm sure the girls will be wetting their pants for me as well! Argh! I'm proud of you Little Yang! You're living the dream! Every men's dream!" Fatty Han cried.

As the horizon was finally covered with a sea of black wolves, Zhang Yang got himself ready. Her unsheathed his sword and stabbed it in the ground. With a calm heart, Zhang Yang closed his eyes and waited.

The noise got louder. The tremors felt stronger. An uncountable number of wolves could be heard, their roar and pants nothing compared to the nervous heartbeats of the players inside the castle.

```
500 meters...400...300...
```

The tiny pebbles underneath Zhang Yang's feet started to dance around violently.

```
200...100...
```

The sound of water splashes could be heard. The wolves had gone through the river around the castle and were approaching the gates, to where Zhang Yang stood guard.

```
10...5... 3 meters!
```

Shriing! At lightning speed, Zhang Yang pulled out the sword and imitated the quick sword drawing technique of the samurai and slashed one of the millions of wolves that had engulfed him completely.

'-2,226!'

His Rage point rose to 42 points. Zhang Yang used {Blood Rage} and activated {Horizontal Sweep}.

Wham! Wham! Wham! Wham!

In an instant, waves of monsters were damaged with more than 4,000+ damage. Two of which had died with a critical strike. It did not end there, the sword effect was triggered and {Horizontal Sweep} was proceed for a total of four counts! In that split second of chained attacks, the monsters around Zhang Yang dropped to the floor dead, filling the ground with corpses!

Since dead bodies in the game were non-corporeal, and anything else could phase through a dead body, other monster from behind had started to flock forwards to fill in the empty space in front of Zhang Yang to surround him. Know that the all Level 60 normal tier monster have less than 1,500 attacking power. Their attacks were strong, but Zhang Yang's defense was impeccable. Their attacking power could never penetrate Zhang Yang thick defense, and they could only deal o damage to him!

Zhang Yang waited until the space in front of him was filled with monsters before he activated {Blast Wave}.

Unlike {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}'s damage was far from strong, however, the skill was a true AoE attack type, which meant that, all monster within the effective AoE will receive damage! Within less than a fraction of a second, close to 20 monsters in front of Zhang Yang had received more than 700 damage! The more targets the skill struck, the higher the rate of which the Dark Enigmatic Sword could proc! Before the damage texts could float away, another wave of damage texts proc again! Be it DPS or total damage output, Zhang Yang would always do something that no one else could comprehend!

Witnessing the prowess of their guild master in action, the players who were positioned up in the castle walls were all stunned and had forgot to start attacking!

"Holy lord baby jesus! Guild master! You're just too awesome!"

"Hmph! As expected of our guild master! His damage is much higher than a boss!"

"Hm~ Guild master Zhan Yu! Please take me in! Please be my boyfriend! Marry me!"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Haha! Guys! Enough with the jokes! Please, start attacking!"

[&]quot;Sir! Yes, sir!"

Spells and arrow filled the sky as players from the top of the castle wall flung their attacks out, killing waves of monsters that were further behind!

'-623!'

'-556!'

'-68o!'

Out of the blue, more than 10 {Fireballs} were blasted out of the mouths of the Demonic Wolves. They peppered Zhang yang with minor damage. Though the damage was insignificant, in large numbers, it might prove to be a little more dangerous for him. A few more monsters could deal more than 10,000 damage would only make the defense of the gate harder than expected. Zhang Yang had to resolve this matter quickly before the situation takes a turn for the worse.

"Press the attack!" Zhang Yang roared.

The first wave of monsters were not strong to begin with, with the low HP, players positioned at the top of the castle could easily defeat a large number of the monsters with a few AoE skills. Within 5 to 6 seconds, most of the threats were removed. The atmosphere became casual as players could chat and attack nonchalantly. The melee attackers were bored to death. Those behind the castle gates could only gaze up at the ranged attackers who could at least throw a few skills out now and then.

20 minutes passed, the monsters outside the gates started to thin out. As the sounds from them grew softer, a sudden loud roar could be heard from afar.

'Ding! Twin-Head Wolf King, Karmos has joined the battle!'

A twin headed wolf, with size larger than a full-grown elephant appeared from the horizon. With the speed of the wind, the beast sprint towards the castle.

Zhang Yang prepared himself and took every chance he could to examine the properties of the incoming boss.

[Twin-Head Wolf King, Karmos] (Gray-Silver, Beast)

Level: 65

HP: 10,000,000

Defense: 700

"The boss is here! Team 1, get out of the castle and attack the boss! We must take this boss down as soon as possible! Do not let the second wave of monster to spawn before the boss is down!" Zhang Yang commanded.

The gates was lowered and a group of 1,000 players flooded through the gates and came rushing out to form a proper formation around the castle gates. These 1,000 players were the strongest players of Lone Desert Smoke, with incredible power and strength. With haste, the party wiped the area clean of monsters before the boss could arrive.

Zhang Yang leapt onto his white bear and rode towards the incoming boss without delay. His current level was so much higher than the boss! This time, instead of being overpowered by it, with a complete Yellow-Gold equipment on him, and the OP Dark Enigmatic Sword in his hands, Zhang Yang practically butchered the wolf with no mercy! The party joined the fray and managed to kill the boss within 3 to 4 minutes!

The boss dropped a total of seven Gray-Silver equipment. Zhang Yang looted all of them and auctioned them all to the guild members.

The first wave of monsters was dealt with smoothly without any hiccoughs. After a blood bath, not a single player was down. The only prick in his beautiful strategy was that the castle gate had sustained more than 50% damage to it, leaving only 520,000 HP left.

30 minutes passed, and the system started the second monster wave.

'Ding! The second wave of monsters had started the attack!'

Again, from the horizon, monsters started flooding in. This time, instead of a cloud of dust, bright little orbs of light was observed from as far as 500 meters away from the castle wall. As they approached, players could easily identify their enemies as burning little red imps that were only half a meter tall!

[Burning Imp] (Normal, Demon)

Level: 67

HP: 6,700

MP: 3,500

Defense: 60

D*mn! Magic type!

Zhang Yang cried out loud, "Everyone! Into the castle! It's a magic type!"

"Ah! So even you would withdraw from battle, guild master!"

"F*ck! This is not the time to put up an act! You could really get your *sses burst into a nice crisp!"

Everyone laughed. Unlike Hundred Shots, who was managing the guild's public relations and human resource, Zhang Yang was slightly fun to be with. Everyone could have a good time chatting or joking with him. But if Hundred Shots was there, none of them would dare to make a noise. The only sound that could be heard, would be the sounds of crickets!

In no time at all, the burning imps had flocked and flooded the grounds near the castle gates. From the top of the castle wall, you could just see a sea of flame instead of monsters. The flames on the imps were so hot that you could see and feel the heat wave gushing up to the sky!

"Kill them all!"

Once the monsters had entered the ranged distance, the attackers on top of the castle walls started their assault. With nothing better to do, Zhang Yang stood from afar and only used {Spear of Obliteration} to attack one Burning Imp one at a time. Since it did not need any Rage to begin with, it was a good way deal some damage!

The monster started to retaliate!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The monsters below the castle wall started to show their strength in numbers. With the unorganized attack pattern, the aggro was in complete chaos. Some players were only being target by one monster, while the unfortunate ones were target by seven to eight monsters simultaneously! One monster could deal around 1,600 damage with one blast, seven to eight of those blasts could easily insta-kill a poorly-equipped player!

"Argh!"

"Urgh!"

Lone Desert Smoke started lose men! One by one, players that were killed had started to fall down from the top of the castle wall! Even though the players killed could easily run back and revive from the nearby graveyard, they will be inflicted with a debuff that will reduce all attributes by 10%! The worst part was that, if those player were not careful enough and got three stacks of the debuff, they will be sent back to White Jade Castle and could no longer participate in the defensive battle!

Sensing that the players would need some help, Zhang Yang commanded. "Attention! Please withdraw after casting your AoE skills! Balance out the aggro value! Don't think you could just stand at the front at keep on attacking!"

"Aye sir!"

The players started to form their own organization. All ranged attackers formed three lines volleys. After the first line of attacker had casted their skill, they withdrew to the back and allowed the second line of attack to attack. That way, with the aggro still on the first wave of attackers, the monster could not attack them since the first line of attacker had withdrawn back! The death rate

of the player was greatly reduced!

However, this tactic was a double-edge sword! To attack the players who still had the aggro of the monsters, the monsters moved further up the river and attack the castle gates in order to get closer to the fore mentioned players. Seeing how things had turned, Zhang Yang cried out and signaled the party. "Team 1 tanks! Follow me! We will go out of the gate once it's breached! We will stand ground there and make sure no monsters enter the castle!"

"Hurah!" everyone acknowledged!

This party of tanks were the best tanks in Lone Desert Smoke. In term of skills and equipment, they were the best. However, even though they were the best, they were only equipped with a full Gray-Silver Level 50 equipment. Their maximum HP was only close to 9,000! But with their damage reduction skill and damage absorption equipment effect, in a large group, they could form a nigh-impregnable wall of blockade!

Without lady luck on their side, the castle gate was breached in just seven to eight minutes. The flock of burning imps rushed into the castle, signaling the next stage of the war!

Gates were meant to be broken in the first place. Zhang Yang was expecting to have the gates to down in the first wave itself! It was out of his expectation that even the second wave of monsters would take quite some time to breach the gates!

"Have at them!" Zhang Yang roared.

The tanks picked up their swords, axes, and shields and started to attack. They kept on pushing the monster further and further away from the entrance and utilized the narrow walkway to bottleneck the monsters, allowing a better killing rate!

The fighting had entered close quarters!

Zhang Yang took the liberty to stand in the front to intercept a great deal of attacks! With strong damage reduction and absorption passive, coupled with his boss-like HP, his tanking ability shone in the face of these weak monsters. Their weak attacks, around 1,600, were reduced down to only around 300! After combining his HP with the bear, his long 50,000 HP allowed Zhang Yang to stand a little further up. He would be safe, as long as he does not allow himself to get overwhelmed! Without delay, Zhang Yang readied his plans and attack pattern in his head and rushed into the flock of monster, killing his way further like a giant dragon weeding down weaklings!

Chapter 292: Defend The Territory (2)

Zhang Yang went deeper into the swarm of monsters. Nervous and worried sick for him, Han Ying Xue leaped to her feet and followed Zhang Yang from a safe distance. There, she kept on casting healing spells, {Regeneration} to keep him alive and kicking!

It was now, where the difference in individual strengths would be made apparent. Like the character, Zhao Zi Long, from the Romance of the Three Kingdoms, Zhang Yang was weaving about in the battle field, with his sword held out, he twisted and turned, turning living monsters into dead corpses without much effort and strength. From afar, you can really see that Zhang Yang was more like a dancer instead of a fighter. If those judges were present in the field, sitting behind a desk, they would surely be holding up scoreboards of 10! Full marks!

Making use of what little firepower they had at the moment, Zhang Yang had arranged a small group of players from the top of the castle wall to be positioned behind the castle gates. There, their attack would be more or less be effective enough to lay waste! Even though the first two wave of monsters were nothing but appetizers, a few Lone Desert Smoke players had already succumbed to death. Still, they quickly made their way back to the battle field, albeit with penalized attributes. It did not feel long, but 50 mins were up and the second wave boss soon made its appearance.

'Ding! Demon Servant, Morlock has joined the battle!'

Measuring 10 meters tall, this humanoid monster looked like a spawn from hell itself. Its color scheme was mostly just brown and green. It had two horns on its head and a cow's tail at its rear and cow hooves for its feet. The only thing that resembled a human's was the human face that it bore. That was about it. A lot of care had been taken into designing its appearance. With each large step it took, flames burst out from the bottom of its feet and spread out as far as 60 meters away before dying down. Theatrical!

[Demon Servant, Moloch] (Gray-Silver, Demon)

Level: 68

HP: 12,000,000

MP: 6,000,000

Defense: 700

Zhang Yang stared at it and urgently shouted. "Team 1, follow me!"

The players in team 1 were those who had already been following him since the beginning, that is Fatty Han, Han Ying Xue, the little brat, Sun Xin Yu, Hundred Shots, Fatty Han, and others who were considered to be the top 10 strongest players in the guild.

The boss carried a DoT burning aura that would cause 1000 Fire damage every 2 seconds. The AoE would be as far as the fire reached out, which was 60 meters. Whether it be ranged attackers or healers, anyone who would want to attack the boss would have to take the boss' aura damage. A normal healer would not survive long enough to heal others! That being said, Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart were well-equipped. Aslo, Priests were better at mass-healing. Han Ying Xue and Fantasy Sweetheart could support a maximum number of 10 players at a time, as exhausting as it may be.

The 10-man party rushed toward the boss with Zhang Yang in the lead. 30 meters away, Zhang Yang used {Spear of Obliteration} on the boss.

'-1,790![']

Moloch roared immediately and retaliated by reaching out with its right arm and forming a ball of flame in its palm. The ball blasted out, growing in size with each passing moment. At that moment, the boss' aura effect kicked in and almost all non-tank players around received a good -1,000 damage. The two healers quickly dismounted from their Direwolves and started getting to work.

Zhang Yang ran close to the boss and activated {Blood Rage} and {Crash Magic}!

Immune!

As the game progressed on , boss monsters that were capable of raiding cities, like the one Zhang Yang was fighting, would be much stronger and the usual boss. Judging from the HP of the boss alone, it sufficed to say that it was much stronger than the usual Yellow-Gold or Violet-Platinum boss! This boss had so much more HP! It was made purposely that way to balance out the system. With lower HP, players could easily swarm around and overwhelm it via sheer numbers! That was why, these bosses were all immune to interruption skill or status affect skills! Otherwise, they would be easily exploited, such as having a bunch of Thieves simply spamming {Ambush} and stunning the boss from the moment it appears, all the way till it fell!

Just then, the ball of fire on the palm of Moloch's palm was completed. The spell was completed and it was instantly flung at Zhang Yang.

'Ding! You have received 3,806 damage from Moloch's {Fireball} (1,200 damage reduced, 994 damage absorbed)!'

Such pitiful damage. It's not even worth being worried about!

Zhang Yang cooperated with Wei Yan Er, one hitting from rear, the other attacking head-on. Before any other skill, {Cripple Defense} would always be the first skill to be stacked on the boss!

With loud bangs and booms, the party rounded up around the boss and started their butchering. With their top-tier equipment, and their high levels that no one else could compete with, no other

team such as them could yet be assembled in entire server! Compared to the boss, this party were like hungry wolves, preying on the poor like cow! Molock was slain within 8 minutes!

"Hehe! What a noob!" said Wei Yan Er happily.

"I wonder how is Imperial Sky doing now?"

"Hmph! I hope they lose the Territory Order." Han Ying Xue snorted.

Zhang Yang shook his head. "If that was the case, the system would have announced it! And based on One Sword Stroke's personality, that guy would not be handing over the order to someone else for safeguarding before the battle ends."

Just than, Fatty Han clapped his hands. "Dammit! I should have taken the Territory Order for myself! Why did I give it to Little Yang then!?"

"Nyehehe! You dumb Fatso!" Wei Yan Er teased Fatty Han, laughing gleefully.

After the boss was killed, everyone looted the battle drops and quickly made their way back into the castle. The next wave of monsters would only be coming in the next minute or two.

60th minute.

'Ding! The third wave of monsters have started the attack!'

Expecting to see something appearing from the horizontal, players had gathered close to the edge of the castle walls, only to see an empty field.

"Hmmm....I don't see anything..."

"What's this? Server lag? System bug?"

"Well, if it's a bug, don't mind us! We'll be able to take a break"

"Are you stupid!? Just look at your EXP gauge! We gained so much experience points just after two waves of monsters!"

"Woah! You're right! Holy smokes! I've gained 17%!"

Even after the system had made the announcement for the third wave of monster, nobody could catch sight of anything. However, the atmosphere was still gloomy. The ground was bare, yet it was covered in floating dust that had yet to settle down, as if, an invisible army was marching towards them!

After listening to the debates of the players around, Lost Dream could not help laugh. "Perhaps, Imperial Sky just did us a huge favor! I mean, just look at the experience points!"

Everyone laughed at the irony.

Zhang Yang gazed at the dusty battle field and frowned worriedly. In an instance, his eyes widened, as if he had seen through the deceit of the enemy. He pulled out his sword and got into his battle stance. "Get ready! The enemies right beneath us!"

"What!? Underneath? What kind of monsters are they? Spectre?"

"No! Worms!" Zhang Yang roared.

Boom!

Just as Zhang Yang had announced the d*mning word, a large hole broke out at the bottom of the castle wall. In an instant, a large, centipede-like monster burst out of the ground and rose into the sky. The worms were very large, at seven to eight meters long, and as thick as the huge stone pillars of the roman colosseum. Like an earthworm, its body was ribbed and pink, with dark, slimy dirt sticking to its body!

Once the monsters had burst into the battle field, be it the rear or the head of it, the monsters had spewed out a green, viscous liquid at all the players on the top of the castle wall.

```
'-1,623!'
```

^{&#}x27;-1,530!'

'-1,723!'

Just as the green liquid made contact with the players, damage was inflicted and even the castle wall had received a {Corroding} status!

[Burrowing Earthworm] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 70

HP: 7,000

Defense: 70

"Oh bloody hell! It's bloody disgusting!" female players started to react in disgust, causing them to stop attacking to find a place to cower behind, dropping the damage output down to 90%!

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

One by one, many more worm monsters started to surface and attack the castle wall with their repulsive green liquid. These monsters' attacks were annoying. Not only they were AoE type, they also did not require any cast time! The only good thing about them was the long two minutes cool down time!

This time, the players could no longer depend of the castle wall to defend themselves from the monsters' attacks. The casualty rate had increased dramatically.

Taking the helm, yet again, Zhang Yang commanded. "All melee fighters! Get out of the castle and kill all the monsters! These monsters can burrow underground! The castle walls would not do us any good! Attacking from inside will only disrupt us! Out! Everyone out!"

Having waited idly for two waves, the melee attackers were extremely delighted to receive that command. They cheered in excitement and followed Zhang Yang out of the castle gates.

Not only were the worm monsters highly annoying to deal with, they were also extremely sly and cunning! The monsters would stay hidden for the most part, pop out, attack once, and then burrow down into the ground again when their attacks were in cool down, leaving the spellcasters who needed some time to cast their spells especially frustrated!

This time, the physical attack classes were much more effective. Classes like Thieves and Hunters that have a fixed Focus and Stamina recovery duration, would merely have to wait and charge their "MP" up, before the monsters resurface. When the monsters revealed themselves, the Thieves and Hunters will unleash all their skills at once, dealing goog damage. It still consumed time, but at least they could do some damage!

It was like war in real life. The monsters were dying off like flies, but the guild was also suffering heavy losses! Many had already come back twice after reviving themselves, losing a great deal of attribute points! A majority of players that had died twice were all too careful with their attack and stance. Dying just one more time will send them back to White Jade Castle for the rest of the duration of the war!

"Dummy dear, is it time to use the cannons?"

Zhang Yang waved his hands off furiously. "Not yet. It's just the third wave! Besides, the monsters are capable of hiding underground! It's hard get a clear shot at them!"

As the violent battle between the attacking monsters and the players of the guild continued on, the number of players were gradually dropping as well. The problem with this fight was the fact that the monsters did not have a fixed aggro target. Once they burrowed down the earth, their aggro values would be resetted when they resurfaced, they will randomly pick a target and attack. Tanks were unable carry out their roles, taking the brunt of the punishment on behalf of the others! These bastards were capable of sneaking through the tanks in the front line and head straight towards the attackers in the rear! Even if the tanks wanted to die honorably, there was nothing that they could do to stop the monsters from burrowing!

After barely surviving the 80th minute, the worm monsters had finally stopped spawning, and the boss finally decided to show up.

'Ding! Earth King Burrowing Worm, Tumorase has joined the

battle!'

Thum! Thum! Thum!

From a distance, the earth rumbled heavily and formed huge waves in the ground, as if the monster was actually speeding through the earth at a great speed! Currently, the boss was still underneath the ground, rendering its properties and level hidden away.

Zhang Yang was the first person to charge towards the boss and commanded his troops to fall back. "Move away! Do not stand in the monster's pathway if you don't want to get killed instantly!"

Just then the earth rumble even violently as it approached Zhang Yang, the ground in front of him burst open, as if someone had set off an explosion underneath it. As the dirt and dust cleared a little, the silhouette of the monster was reveal. It was three times larger than the previous monsters, 30 meters in height and a 5 meters thick, the monster was extremely huge! At least,, it was easier to determine which was the head and which was the tail. A pair of round, coal-black eyes were seen at the top and a large opening, covered in fangs, was probably the mouth!

[Earth King Burrowing Worm, Tumorase] (Gray-Silver, Beast)

Level: 71

HP: 14,000,000

Defense: 800

When Tumorase appeared, it immediately spewed out a large amount of green, sticky liquid at Zhang Yang. However, unlike the other worm monster that would immediately burrow down into the earth after the attack, Tumorase remained on the surface and thrust its long, ribbed body towards Zhang Yang.

Chapter 293: Defend The Territory (3)

The boss's attack was considered to be a ranged attack, which could not be blocked. Since the attack was an instant-cast, Zhang Yang could not even react in time before a quick, loud "Pak", caused him to be covered in a splat of green, sticky goo. Right then, he looked like as if someone had just dumped a large bucket of green, gooey slime on him.

As a guild master, many members had greatly admired him. Though he may not be as stern as Hundred Shots, his position as the guild master had made others think that Zhang Yang was a little harder to approach. That impression was made even stronger when Zhang Yang was the person who had led the guild to take all the First Clear Achievement so far! He had even led Team 1 of Lone Desert Smoke to win the championship title of the Soaring Sword Competition in Shanghai! The image around him was more god than man!

However, that being said, he was just human. Despite all his unparalleled achievements when it came to killing and getting achievements and so on and so forth, everyone laughed their butts off when they saw how ridiculous Zhang Yang looked then! They saw how approachable he truly was! Zhang Yang was just a normal human after all!

'Ding! You have received 4,634 Natural damage from Tumorase Acid Attack. (1,404 damage reduced, 994 damage absorb!)'

Just as the system notification rang in his ears, Zhang Yang quickly responded by raising his shield up high to intercept an

incoming attack!

THUM!

The strong, massive attack was so forceful that it created a thunderous boom, sending both Zhang Yang and the bear a few meters back!

"Growl!" The bear growled ferociously as it regained its footing and began leading Zhang Yang to counter attack.

Following standard procedure, Zhang Yang stacked up {Cripple Defense} and laid down the attack order. The others started to surround the boss and attacked from various positions. No matter how large or ferocious the boss may be, it was just a Gray-Silver tier. With limited damage output, the boss was completely overwhelmed by the swarm of players attacking it, like a bunch of ants nibbling on small pieces of bread crumbs on the floor.

Just after 30 seconds into the battle, the boss twitched violently and burrowed down into the earth.

"I need you guys to move away when the boss resurfaced! Don't attack! The small ones will attack randomly when they reappear! I think the boss will do the same!" Zhang Yang advised. Everyone around nodded their heads, his logic undeniable.

As the dust cleared a little, there was silence in the battle field. Aside from the ragged panting of players around, nothing else could be seen moving or making any noise. 10 seconds later, the boss burst out of the earth, somewhere far from Zhang Yang. As expected, the boss had cleared its aggro value and targeted a nearby Spellcaster, spitting the green liquid on him.

'-7,000!'

Luckily, the players who Zhang Yang had selected to attack the boss with him were all top-tiered players in the guild. The Spellcaster had decent equipment that granted him a maximum HP of over 9,000. Although the attack did not kill him in one shot, it was enough to force him to cast {Ice Barrier} to save himself.

{Spear of Obliteration}!

'-2,236!'

With one attack, Zhang Yang had managed to draw the boss attention, sending it into a violent rage, and it charged towards Zhang Yang like a huge truck. Zhang Yang intercepted the attack and the entire process repeated itself again. The boss would burrow into the earth after a while, where everyone would stop attacking, before the boss reappeared, and everyone continued to attack again. It was rather easy defeating the boss. After approximately 10 minutes or so, the boss was defeated and dropped a large number of loots for the guild.

Zhang Yang looted all the drops swiftly and cried out, "Get into the castle now! The next wave will appear any second!" 'Ding! The fourth wave of monsters have started advancing!'

Just as he finished his sentence, the announcement rang in their ears. 500 meters away from the castle, a large number Abominable Snowmen spawned. With spears in their hand, they roared, almost simultaneously, sending a strong shock wave that resounded against the castle walls.

[Abominable Snowman] (Normal, Humanoid)

Level: 73

HP: 7,300

Defense; 70

"Tank Team 1, follow me and form an absolute defense line! We have to make sure that all the others get into the castle!" Zhang Yang cried.

The tanks quickly lined up and prepared to meet the enemy's charge. Just then, the Snowmen had arrived and started their attacks.

Shush! Shush! Shush!

The snowmen were all Hunter class monsters. From afar, they could hurl their spears at the players on the castle wall. Since the monsters were all Level 73, the players that were 10 levels and lower would receive a much higher amoung of Unrepressed Damage due to the enormous level gap!

Unrepressed Damage was caused by huge level gap between two combatants. Unrepressed Damage could go from a 50% penalty, to a 100% damage bonus. This was the reason why players would not grind at higher level maps. Firstly, their own damage will be reduced to a certain level, and secondly, the monster's attack will be stronger! Even though the system would award additional experience points for killing a monster that exceeded the level gap, it was too much work.

"Hey noobie tank! How are those monsters throwing spears again and again?! I mean, where do they get their spears from?" Wei Yan Er asked an unfathomable question.

Zhang Yang thought hard and finally replied with a cold sweat. "I think, they're just like us, characters in a game, to be precise. Having an inventory that could fit many items?"

"Oh! That means, their inventory must be humongous! Look at them! They have been throwing for quite some time now and there's no sign of shortages!"

Talking to this little brat would be the same as talking to a cow about playing the piano whilst thinking of string theory. Just by answering her question, one could be spending all their energy just thinking up a suitable answer for her absolutely ridiculous questions! Zhang Yang ignored Wei Yan Er's bombardment of question and cried out to Endless Starlight. "Starlight! Let's go! It's the two of us!"

Among all the tanks around, only Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight were well-equipped enough to stand among the monsters and not take a beating from the Level 70 monster army. Even so, they had the sense not to charge into the thick! The Defense value provided by the Shield will only be in effect when attacks are taken from the front! Once a player is surrounded, the attacks from behind the character will not take the shield defense value into consideration and inflict greater damage. The number of snowmen out there was overwhelmingly large! So large, that even if each of them only dealt 100 damage with a single range attack, they could easily stack up to 100,000 when their sheer numbers added up!

Both Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight took the helm and guarded the front line like the jackal-headed Egyptian statues! Endless Starlight was not good in offense, so he merely held his shield up, while Zhang Yang took the liberty to take on the assault role and blasted all the Level 70 monsters to hell with various AoE skills like {Horizontal Sweep}, {Blast Wave}, and the proceing ability of the Dark Enigmatic Sword. He was acting as a true sword and shield.

With envy swirling in his eyes, Endless Starlight asked, "Boss, when you grow out of that Dark Enigmatic Sword, could you give it to me instead?"

Zhang Yang laughed. "Sure. I can give it to you. But let me ask you this, what AoE skills do you have that would proc the sword's

effect?"

Endless Starlight was baffled.

One of the multi-target, AoE type skills that a Defender had would be {Devotion}. However, the skill does not require any melee weapon to trigger, which meant that, it would not trigger the sword's effect. The next skill would be {Hammer Drop} which would only strike a maximum of three targets! It would be difficult, triggering the 2% proceing rate of the sword.

"D*mn! Dream Tech is so biased! Do they have a grudge against Defenders!?" Endless Starlight complained.

Zhang Yang could not be help but silently agree. To put both classes in comparison, a Warrior-class tank was more versatile in attacking and crowd-control. However, there were specific roles being assigned to their classes. As such, Warriors were known to be excellent in controlling just a single target, whereas a Knight excelled in mass control. That being said, bosses rarely spawn in groups, so a majority of players would use the Warrior-class tank to face the boss, and Knights would be left with the duty of kiting monsters.

Without the fighting spirit to face a boss, a tank would never reach the height of his potential!

As the two of them were having their discussion, attacks from players who were station at the top of the castle wall were raining down on the snowmen. As their name suggested, these snowmen were highly resistant against ice attacks. Cryomancers were having a tough time dealing damage to them since most of their attack had been reduced by half, and sometimes they would fail to even deal any damage at all.

While the ice elemental attackers were having a tough time, the fire elemental attackers were doing extremely well. The only problem was that the number of Cryomancer in the guild far exceeded the number of Pyromancers! So, even though the Pyromancers were dishing out solid damage on the snowmen, the number of Cryomancer and Pyromancer did not balance each other out, and as a whole, the guild was not doing very well against the enemy.

Time waits for no man, and the 100th minute checkpoint has arrived.

'-1,406!'

A sudden damage text of 1,000 popped up on Zhang Yang head. Zhang Yang frantically looked around for the source of it. That really came out from nowhere! Based on his current level and defense value, even if a monster attacked him from behind, they would only deal as much as 400 damage! So, what and who had attacked Zhang Yang?! The attack had actually come flying from the front!

Did a boss spawn without him noticing? Was he too busy to hear the announcement?

No, if a boss did spawn, the damage would not just be 1,000! Alarmed, Zhang Yang searched around for the source of the attack. About 20 meters north, he found a slightly larger snowman with silver streak of fur on his snow-white coat. Other than that, it looked exactly like the others!

[Silvervine Abominable Snowman] (Elite, Humanoid)

Level: 73

HP: 146,000

Defense: 400

Crap, the elites have spawned!

Zhang Yang searched around, and was horrified to see many more Silvervine Snowman spawning behind it! It was obvious that the normal snowmen had stopped spawning and were being replaced with the elite-tier snowmen!

"Be careful! The monsters have been upgraded! There are elite monsters coming! Watch out!" Zhang Yang issued a warning.

As the sound of the trampling elite snowmen got louder and louder, the earth rumbled and the dust started to fill the air.

One within attack range, the snowmen started their attacks, tossing their sharp spears at incredible speeds towards the players.

"Get back! Get back now! Find cover in the castle walls!" Zhang Yang cried. Even he did not dare stand in the front lines any longer. He had to drag a slightly reluctant Endless Starlight all the way back to the castle gates. There, he commanded the troops to prepare themselves to strike when the monsters begin filing through the bottleneck.

GROWL!

Like water, the monsters rushed into the castle gates, 10 monsters at a time. Here, Zhang Yang and the other tank-class players clashed with the monsters while the ranged attackers rained down assaults from the rear. Even though the monsters were elite, they were quickly overwhelmed.

However, increased HP was not the only buff that the elite monsters had, their attacks were also rather strong. After a short while, player casualties started to skyrocket. Lone Desert Smoke was growing significantly weaker as time passed.

"Dummy! Isn't it time use the cannons!?" Anxious, Han Ying Xue felt that they should start using their trump card.

Zhang Yang shook his head. "Just hold it for a little while longer! This is only the fourth wave! The monsters will only get stronger after each wave. The fifth wave monsters should be Level 76. The

sixth wave should be Level 79! When that comes, everyone else besides me will have their attacks reduced! When that happens, we can use the cannons to substitute the damage loss! The damage from the cannons are fixed and will not be affected by the level gap. That is why, until that comes, we must hold on! If we cannot hold this wave, how could we hold on for the next two?!

"You don't have to yell at me like that. Hmph!"

Thank god the elite monsters spawned 10 minutes after the normal snowmen. At most, the elite monster will continue spawning for another 10 minutes and stop when it's time for the boss to show up.

It felt like an eternity before the system finally announced the arrival of the boss.

'Ding! King of Snowmen, Akemoshi has joined the battle!'

Without any difficulty, a hundred-meter-tall snowman could be easily spotted appearing from 500 meters away. Its massive body was covered in the usual white coat of fur. Behind it, a long stretch of gold fur stretched from the top of its neck all the way towards its pelvic region. The monstrous snowmen was huge, and it seemed to be as ancient as the world itself. Each step it took was strong and heavy. The earth shook, as if it could not bear the weight of the beast! This was, without a doubt, one of those moments where you could hear the gulping of saliva from everyone.

[King of Snowmen, Akemoshi] (Yellow-Gold, Humanoid)

Level: 74

HP: 16,000,000

Defense: 1,400

"Y-Y-Yellow-Gold!?" When the players checked the boss' properties, a majority of them gasped in horror and surprised. Yellow-Gold bosses were still a rare sight for everyone. Some of them had not even encountered, let alone fought one! Yet, right there and then, they finally had the chance to bear witness to the prowess of a Yellow-God boss! How could they not be surprised?

Now that almost all of Lone Desert Smoke knew how strong their guild master was, everyone was filled with tremendous hope and confidence, that Zhan Yang would lead them in slaying this monstrous beast! That being said, it was a major benefit to all guild members since an open-world boss would be dropping a large number of equipment! Anyone could get their hands on strong equipment as long as they had a sufficient amount of guild contribution points! It's Yellow-Gold! Yellow-Gold equipment!

Even at this point, where players such as Zhang Yang or One Sword Stroke have already obtained Violet-Platinum equipment, Yellow-Gold equipment were still a rare encounter! By simply taking any one of them and selling it, you could easily fetch a good price of 100,000 gold coins! If you were lucky enough, you could

sell a Yellow-Gold tier weapon for close to 1,000,000!

Seeing the smiles on their faces, Zhang Yang smiled as well. "Alright guys, take care of the smaller monsters before we go kick some boss' arse!'

"AWW YEAA!" Everyone cheered.

From the looks of it, even after Zhang Yang had spent a lifetime worth of gold coins for the cannon's Power Source Crystals, he would be reaping more profit than loss just by collecting the battle loots from the boss! Still, the Power Source Crystal was Zhang Yang's personal expenditure, whereas the battle loots were all shared equally among all players of the guild.

Still, it was not all bad for him. As long as the Territory remained intact, it was a golden goose, laying golden eggs for him, every day! So what, if he had spent more than a million gold coins? The future profits would always be lucrative!

That being said, it would all be for naught if Lone Desert Smoke does not survive this entire ordeal! After all, the monster will only get stronger after each wave! There was a possibility that the next wave of monster would all be elites! If they lose this defensive war, taking down a Yellow-Gold boss would be like saving a nickel from a collapsing bank!

Chapter 294: Defend The Territory (4)

With the presence of a Yellow-Gold boss in the field, everyone was pumped up. The incensed players started wiping the monsters at a faster rate, taking bigger risks, bigger swings.

Akemoshi's strides were so massive with it took less than 10 steps to reach the castle gates, walking over all the other monsters, and jumping into the castle area!

The last thing that they wanted was to have any monsters getting into the castle gates. Zhang Yang hurriedly activated his {Spear of Obliteration} and rode on his white bear towards the boss.

'-2,346!'

Akemoshi growled. Provoked, and agitated, the boss hurled its massive fist at Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

Zhang Yang blocked the attack, however, he was knocked back several meters, along with the white bear. The other players around had waited for Zhang Yang to build up the aggro. Even though they had no clue on what kind of skill does the boss had, all melee fighters had already surrounded the boss, ready to attack with all their might. With severe time constrains, none of them could afford to slack off. Who knew how long, it would take for them to kill this boss? By then, the fifth wave of monsters would have already spawn! If the boss was not killed by then, the

situation will start to fall like dominos as more and more monsters flock into the castle grounds!

"AURGH!"

Akemoshi roared, and it looked like its muscles were actually expanding. Zhang Yang had a bad feeling something that bad was going to happened. But before he could warn anyone, Akemoshi slammed the ground with all its might, sending a shockwave across the ground, as if it was its personal mattress. The ground literally folded in and out as players started to wobble around as if they had just drank 10 shots of Flaming Lamborghini.

The attacks went on repeatedly. Each time Akemoshi struck the ground, he caused close to 2,000 damage to every player within 40 meters around him. The AoE were strong and quick. Some players had managed to run out of the AoE circle before they were killed. However, no matter how swiftly they ran, the slams came every second for the next 5 to 6 seconds. Many players were already dead by then. The attacks lasted for 10 seconds.

Akemoshi looked around him and started to pound his chest like King Kong in the movies. The attack was call {Quake Slam} which dealt 2,000 physical attack every second to every target within 40 meters, for 10 seconds!

Zhang Yang began to shout orders around. "Those with lower HP please give up on this boss and get away! Ranged attackers, get yourself out of that range! Healers, please stand further back! Melee attackers, move to the outside of the castle gates and attack the elite monsters instead! You are not allowed to attack the boss!

Healers won't have time to heal you!"

Everyone else nodded and made their way outside the castle walls to attack the snowmen. Wei Yan Er was the only one who stayed with Zhang Yang, as she had a battle mount. Together, they had up to 30,000 HP. Wei Yan Er could easily withdraw to get herself healed! Such were the benefits of having a battle mount!

Seeing how Wei Yan Er was performing extremely well in the battlefield, Han Ying Xue could not help but feel a little envious of her little cousin sister. "Dummy! Give the elder sister a battle mount as well!"

As the situation was controlled and the number of dying player were reduced tremendously, Zhang Yang could actually reply Han Ying Xue. "Not anytime soon. However, there will be plenty of chances for you to catch a battle mount in the Chaos Realm! That being said, the rare ones are really difficult to find!"

Akemoshi's {Quake Slam} was strong; strong enough to completely overwhelm 90% of all the tanks in the world. However, while the others players yelled in alarm as they ran out of danger, it was nothing Zhang Yang couldn't handle with a little bit of healing.

The attack was activated once every 30 seconds. Once everyone got the gist of it, they could properly move to safety before the skill was activated and move back after the 10 second duration ended. However, Akemoshi had another skill which was activated at every 10% HP bracket. The skill was similar to that of a Warrior's {Blast Wave}, which blasted a conical shaped shockwave, stunning

anyone within the AoE for 10 seconds!

If both {Quake Slam} and the {Blast Wave} were used together, it would be a lethal combo! If Zhang Yang had the luxury of time, he could properly control the skill activation so that both skill would never be used together! However, with the next wave spawning in around 7 to 8 minutes, he would have to simply attack the boss without giving much thought! That, or many players will start to lose their spirits, and the guild would lose many more players to the boss!

The good news was that, Healers were not receiving any damage from the {Quake Slam}, and the ranged players were kept alive by the healers. However, players were all human, afterall. Someone was bound to make a mistake or two. The casualties could not be completely halted.

After the fourth wave of monsters, a majority of the players around had sustained the debuff - {Fallen} on them and had their attributes reduced by 10%. After having two stacks of {Fallen}, not only would the attacks will be reduced tremendously, the survivability of the player will also drop.

'Ding! The fifth wave of monster had started the attack!'

Just when Akemoshi still have 30% HP left, the fifth wave of monster had spawned. Luckily, all of the snowmen had already been eliminated beforehand. Zhang Yang had his hands full with the current boss. He quickly contacted Endless Starlight. "Starlight, what do those fifth wave monster look like?"

"They are all elite-tiers! Something call Wind Surfers. I think they are all melee type!" he replied instantly.

"Alright, lead a squad down there and hold the gates!" Zhang Yang commanded.

The battle with Akemoshi lasted for two more minutes before it fell under the focus fire of the ranged attackers. Zhang Yang first looted all the equipment and drops from the boss and kept it in his inventory. The equipment were all Level 70, which still exceeded the current average level of the players in the guild. Auctioning would have to wait! He could not afford to distract them! Even if the auctions only took a few seconds, the entire process will greatly affect the damage output! He could not afford to spare a single moment.

After having things cleared the castle grounds, Zhang Yang rode out of the castle gates and found Endless Starlight and a few others having a tough time, dealing with the new monsters. These Wind Surfers were surrounded with visible vortexes of wind. Their upper bodies were human-like, yet they did not seem to possess any lower halves. Instead, that area was just a focused sphere of condensed wind...that kept them floating up to 20 to 30 centimeters above the ground. They were definitely elemental beings, with a few modifications. Unlike the usual elemental being, these monsters carried swords in their right hands, and shields in their left. They seemed to be the tank equivalent of monsters.

Level: 76

HP: 152,000

Defense: 400

The monsters were highly leveled. And since they were elite tier, they were too strong for almost 90% of all players of Lone Desert Smoke. Their attack could deal at least 6000 to 8000 to anyone beside Zhang Yang! Luckily, Endless Starlight and the other tanks were holding their ground. A few of the monsters had managed to pass through the defense line and were causing chaos in the castle grounds. The situation could only get worse as more of them slip in.

"Cannoneers! Aim the cannons at the most concentrated areas and fire! On my mark! Cannon number 1! Respond!" Zhang Yang commanded.

"Aye sir!" The player in charge of cannon number 1 replied, and took aim. He then loaded the Power Source Crystals and wait for Zhang Yang's green signal.

"3,2,1 FIRE!"

"FIRE!"

BOOM!

The cannon burst out a bright ray of light and struck the area beneath the castle wall at a particularly thick clump of monsters. Not a trace was left behind.

With that strike, close to 1000 and more Wind Surfers were annihilated, leaving a void in the middle of the sea of monsters! The drawback was that they did not award any experience points or loots. Still, it was a rather spectacular sight, like seeing something out from a movie.

"Awesome! Good shot!" Everyone cheered in awe.

Being monsters, or rather simple programming, these monsters knew no fear. After witnessing their own comrades being blasted away into smithereens, they hurriedly filled in the gap and cramp together once again.

"Cannon number 2! Fire on my command!" Zhang Yang waited until the time was right and commanded cannon number 2 to aim at the same spot.

"FIRE!"

"FIRE!"

Boom!

Another shot was fired. Another void was created. The cycle continued on with cannon number 3. This time, the cannon was aimed at some place where the monster had already breeched the defense line.

The best usage of the cannon was to wait for monsters to clump up together and fire at them. Since the cannon's damage and the size of the AoE was fixed, a good strategy was to lure all the monster together instead of waiting for them to miraculously lump together. As long as the castle gates stood, players could be situated there, where they would herd the monsters through the bottleneck. This time, it was the cannon's turn to wipe the monsters out.

Boom! Bang! Bam!

Fearing the sixth wave of monsters, Zhang Yang had only used half of their resources for the cannons. Yet, they had only managed to kill half of the incoming monsters. How hard it was, at least it had reduced the massive burden of the tanks in the defense line at the front of the castle gates.

As the battle prolonged, there were many more player that had been sent back to White Jade Castle after accumulated three stacks of the debuff {Fallen}. With that, the defensive power of Lone Desert Smoke had hit a snag. From 19,724 players, the remaining survivor were reduced down to only 7,234 just after 20minutes into the fifth wave.

'Ding! Wind Surfer Moriarty has entered the battle!'

Similar to the previous bosses, a huge air elemental spawned about 500 meters away from the castle wall. A hundred meter high, the boss shared the same appearance with the elite Wind Surfers. The only difference was the weapon and the shield that it was using. Instead of a sword, the boss was using a Yellow-Gold battle hammer, while carrying a torn off castle rampart as a shield. It moved at an incredible speed towards Thunderstorm Castle.

[Wind Surfer Moriarty] (Yellow-Gold, Elemental Being)

Level: 77

HP: 18,000,000

Defense: 1,400

Moriarty floated towards the side of the castle, and began pulverizing the walls with its hammer. A loud crashing sound was heard, and a large cloud of dust was formed. As the dust settled, a large, gaping hole in the wall was made.

Zhang Yang had no intentions of using the cannons to fight the boss! The magic powered cannons were strong, but they would only deal around 200,000 damage a shot. Zhang Yang would need to burn through a large sum of gold coins just to fire a few shots!

Left with no other choice in hand, Zhang Yang rode on his white bear and charged towards Moriarty.

"Sha..." Speaking in an inaudible noise, Moriarty shook his "butt" and emitted a clump of white gas that spread across 40 meters out from him.

"YUCK!" As expected from well-behaved ladies of the guild, everyone pinched their nose even though there were no smell in the air. Still, it had appeared, that the giant boss had just farted at them!

Fatty Han eye's glinted with a mischievous intent. He quickly cried out, "Do not fear! Brother Han is here! Come to me, my darlings! I will protect you!"

Sometimes, when things get out of hand, with mass panic, things might just work out the way you want them to. This time, a few girls had actually listened to Fatty Han and had ran towards his embrace.

They say that, there's always a catch, when things seemed to work out just the way you want them to. When Fatty Han saw the faces of the girls who had come to him, he jumped and cringed, as most of them were extremely unpleasant to the eyes. He then sent a private message to Zhang Yang saying, "Boy! Next time, please set a certain level of requirement during recruitment! Don't be inviting those ugly b*tches man! I almost crapped my pants just now!"

Zhang Yang turned around to glare at Fatty Han who was far behind the defense line and rolled his eyes. "In that case, you'll be the first person I'll kick out of the guild!"

"Hey! What's that's supposed to mean? I'm just fat! There's nothing else wrong with me!"

Ignoring Fatty Han's jokes and comments, Zhang Yang continued to fight the boss. When he walked into the area where the white gas had spread, Zhang Yang and white bear started to float upwards!

Chapter 295: Defend The Territory (5)

'Ding! You have received the effect {Weightless}! You have gained the ability to Float. Movement speed reduced by 70%!'

Like the air elementals, Zhang Yang had floated several centimeters above the ground. The white bear beneath him was wiggling its feet frantically like a dog in the water. They may have been slowed down, but the good part was the fact that he could fly!

"Eh!? Little Yang! What are you doing? Are you finally going to the heavens?"

"Haha! Even Aladdin needs a magic carpet to fly. Our boss only needs a giant polar bear to fly!"

"Eh!? Hell nah! Everyone can fly. It's easy as getting stoned!"

"What...?"

"What?"

Everyone started to laughed at Fatty Han and Endless Starlight jokes and forgot to fight.

"Hey! Wankers! Don't just yap around, start attacking the boss!" Zhang Yang sternly scolded.

Without any further delay, Wei Yan Er and the rest of the party hurried to the white gaseous area and followed Zhang Yang, floating upwards like a bunched of oversized party balloons.

"What does this {Weightless} do?" Players started to throw the same question at Zhang Yang. It did not seem to aid the boss or undermine the players in any particular manner.

Zhang Yang shrugged without answering. 'God' Miracle' was just too vast, and to explore every single thing was too much of a hassle.

As if they were underwater, players were able to "swim" upward and "dive" downward, and while it may seem fun to move around in the air, the speed of it was extremely slow. Some players had trouble controlling themselves and were floating haphazardly. Many of them had never experienced underwater combat like Zhang Yang did when he was hunting for the Python skins. Curious, those player experimented with it while attacking the boss at the same time.

Shush!

The boss struck Zhang Yang with its hammer. Though Zhang Yang managed to activate {Block} in time and nullify the attack, Zhang Yang's character was launched at an extreme speed, as if he was plummeting like a cannon ball. At incredible speed, Zhang Yang was sent out of the white gaseous zone and slammed into the ground, hard.

'-3,000!'

Zhang Yang had just received damage from falling. Unlike the other types of damage, such damage would never be reduced or absorbed by any kind of skill. A character will always receive a fixed amount of damage as long as the character had fallen down from a high altitude, unless the character possessed an Invulnerability status.

After striking Zhang Yang, the boss remained in its place without moving. Instead, it turned to the players that were floating around him and swung at them. With a nice curved swing, anyone in the hammer's pathway was struck out of the gas zone. As a Level 77 Yellow-Gold boss with basic attack of 11,000, coupled with the falling damage, the accumulated damage of 15,000 was enough to kill any fully geared Gray-Silver player! Unless they fitted all their sockets with Vitality type gemstones, the attack would only result in death!

The boss's behavior was extreme odd. Whenever a player exited the gas zone, the boss will completely ignore them and turn to other players within the gas zone. By the time Zhang Yang had gotten back to the boss, it had already killed more than 10 players! Only those who were part of the main attack party, such as Wei Yan Er, survived the attack as their equipment were "tanky" enough.

"What a sh*tty boss! You'll be flung out of the fight with just a single strike! This is just plain annoying!" Endless Starlight

complained. After Zhang Yang was sent out of the gas zone with a home run, Endless Starlight was next in line to be flung out.

"Healers! Stay out of the boss' attack range! Attackers! Watch your HP! Those who can withstand one strike may remain attacking! Those who cannot, leave the area!" Zhang Yang cried out after thinking up of something.

Nodding their heads, the players obeyed. What that was supposed to be a serious fight, turned out to be quite fun. Players who were floating and fighting the boss were flung out like one of those amusement park rides. Every one or two seconds, 10 or more players will be flung out of the gas zone.

However, Moriarty was still the boss monster for the fifth wave, it will bound to have other skills beside this play thing. Just as everyone was having the time of their life, the hammer in the boss' hand glowed brightly. In an instant, the boss started spinning like a motor. Without any warning, everyone inside the gas zone was flung out! Everyone received more than 15,000 damage in just one attack! Coupled with the 2,000 to 5,000 additional damage from falling, many who had underestimated the boss' attack were killed instantly as they splattered onto the ground.

"What!? {Tornado Cleave}!?" Gasps of horror filled the air as players started to frown. The battle had just gotten much harder. With the recent deaths, there was an obvious decrease in the number of players, as a whole lot of them were already stacked with three {Fallen} debuff and could no longer return to battle.

One problem came after the other, Zhang Yang felt a sudden

headache like never before. Open-world bosses were just like that! Since the number of participant in an open-world boss was unlimited, a boss could be as strong as they want to be! Do not hope that the game developers would just present you with a straightforward battle! Most of the open-world boss often required heavy sacrifices to win the battle!

If the situation was different, Lone Desert Smoke would have been willing to send out as many sacrifices as much as they can without giving in to any worries. However, this battle was very much different! Once a player dies three times, they will not be able to come back! There were still many more monsters to clear after this! If more players are sacrificed, how would the guild face the next wave of monsters!?

There was only one thought running inside Zhang Yang's mind. Should he use the [Friendship Jade], and summon Smaug's shadow to fight this boss? Judging from the current situation, to use the two remaining uses of [Friendship Jade] on a Yellow-Gold boss would not be worth it! However, the situation was dire! The Territory was at stake! On the other hand, he also had to worry about the next boss!

Zhang Yang finally came to a final conclusion after serious consideration. If the next boss was even stronger than the current boss, he will drag the boss battle on for longer than 10 minutes after his appearance! Even if Lone Desert Smoke could not defeat the next boss, the Territory should be fine as long as the main Territory hall is left intact! However, if he does not kill Moriarty right now, it will kill more players! Any more losses, and they may be overrun by the next wave!

Without further due, Zhang Yang put on the [Friendship Jade], turned himself into a skeletal soldier, and summoned Smaug.

"Woah! Boss! That's awesome!"

"Long live Zhan Yu guild master! Even as a skeleton, he sure makes a handsome one!"

"KYAAAA! Zhan Yu! I love you!"

There were a few female player with an odd sense of romance cried out for Zhang Yang's attention, which he completely ignored.

Swiftly, Zhang Yang commanded Smaug's shadow to attack Moriarty. "Everyone! Back away now! Let the professional handle this!"

With the speed of the wind, Smaug's shadow hastily jumped into the gas zone! Miraculously, he did not receive any {Weightless} effect and was able to maintain his feet on the ground. He then swung the Shadow Blood Blade and cleaved Moriarty with over 200,000 damage in a single blow.

Besides Han Ying Xue and his own original crew members, the rest of the guild members were oblivious to Zhang Yang's secret weapon. They had always known that their guild master was strong, not I-can-command-holy-tiered-bosses-to-do-my-bidding kind of strong! Would that not mean that Zhang Yang was undefeatable? Unrivaled?! If there was a word to describe the

feeling beyond admiration, beyond worship, that would be the word to describe the feeling of how the members of Lone Desert Smoke felt about their guild master.

With Smaug's strength, he only took less than 3 minutes to kill off Moriarty! With no other targets in sight, Smaug returned to guard Zhang Yang. After the entire ordeal, Smaug had only lost less than 10% of his HP! Strong would be an understatement that would not do him justice!

Still, Zhang Yang felt far from joy. He was mourning the second last use of the friendship gem.

Zhang Yang could not help but sigh. After a while, he laughed. Even though the [Friendship Jade] was just a Yellow-Gold tier, it was still able to summon a Holy-tier boss to come to his aid. If it was able to summon Smaug for an unlimited time, that would be too ridiculous! If that was the case, changing the item rarity to Ascended would have made sense instead!

With the early death of the boss, they had won themselves four minutes of rest before the next wave spawned. Everyone took their sweet time to heal themselves with recovery snacks. During that time, Zhang Yang took all the items from the previous bosses and auctioned them out to the members. The session went by quickly without a hitch. Those that had won the bid were happy and those that did not, were not all too disheartened. They knew that the time would come again, in the future!

'Ding! The sixth wave of monsters have started the attack!'

The 150th minute threshold of the battle had started, with the last wave of monsters spawning, 500 meters away from Thunderstorm Castle.

When Zhang Yang the final wave of monster approaching the castle, he froze. Not in his wildest expectations was he prepared for an entire wave of spectres! Every single one of the monsters out there rode atop a skeletal war horse! These Death Knights were all wearing pitch black armor and long broad swords hung on their backs. From afar, you could feel the chill of death coming towards you! Other than their blackened armor, the only part of them that you could see clearly were the glowing green flames in their eye sockets that reeked of doom!

[Death Knight] (Elite, Spectre)

Level: 79

HP: 158,000

Defense: 400

In perfect formation, they started galloping forth, even the sound of the hooves in tandem.

With such a display, fear surged across the players, tremendously

lowering their morale.

Without wasting precious time, Zhang Yang commanded Smaug's shadow to guard the castle gates. With only 11 minutes left on the timer, this Holy tier boss should be able to last for that period of time. Riding the mount, the Death Knights were able to reach the gates fairly quickly, where Smaug growled, drawing them to him. With a roar, the Death Knights began to surround Smaug, only to be hacked by him. Without a proper AoE skill, Smaug could only kill the Death Knights one at a time! With millions out there in the battle field, Smaug killing speed was extremely limited!

As expected from a Holy tier boss, Smaug possessed ultra strong defense that all the Death Knights were unable to deal more than 1 damage to Smaug, despite having more than 5,000 basic attack damage. Joining the fray, players from the top of the castle wall laid down their attacks. The cannoneers were also attacking from behind the wall. With each strike killing thousands of monsters in a single blast, the cannoneers spared no expense and fired all 30 shots with haste.

Soon, the 11 minutes counter has finished and Smaug's shadow disappeared into the air. Without the ultimate tank, a large number of Death Knights had rushed into the castle gates and had started engaging with the players.

With no choice left, players could only resort to using themselves as human shields to hold off the Death Knights from proceeding further into the castle. The Death Knights were all Level 79 elite tiers! Other than Zhang Yang alone, everyone else would be affected by the huge level gap! They would deal out penalized damage, while taking even more damage from the monsters! Both attackers, and tankers were having an extremely tough time dealing with the swarm of monsters!

With players all dropping like flies, more and more Death Knights were able to make their way further into the castle. Finally, the inevitable had occurred. The Death Knights were able to punch a huge hole in the last "absolute defense line" and had turned the battle into a one-sided massacre.

Chapter 296: Defend The Territory (6)

A lot of Death Knights charged into the castle, some of them clashing with players. However, most of the Death Knights which had not been attacked by the players were riding their Spectre Skeletal Horses directly towards the territorial hall!

After all, the ultimate goal was not to annihilate each other! One side had to destroy the guild flag in territorial hall, while another side had to defend and protect the flag from being destroyed by monsters within the time limit. Therefore, Zhang Yang's ultimate goal did not necessarily involve the annihilation of the enemy!

As a result, a lot of Death Knights directly rushed into territorial hall once they entered the castle! The guild flag always was the target of attack within Death Knights' aggro list, and unless Death Knights were attacked by players, they would ignore everything else and head directly towards the hall!

"Pull back!" Zhang Yang frowned as he shouted.

The purpose of castle gate was to block the enemy from coming into the castle, but, once the castle gate was broken by the enemy then castle gate would lose its purpose! Besides, this was the last wave of monsters attacks, they merely had to survive for another 20 minutes, not wipe out all their attackers!

Lone Desert Smoke's remaining players retreated inwards one after another, and Zhang Yang stayed back to slow the advance of the Death Knights wave after the tank defense lines were destroyed.

However, not all tanks were like Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight. Lone Desert Smoke's members were being overwhelmed by the attacks of the Level 79 elite monsters, and a lot of players were either killed or wounded heavily! These Death Knights would also launch {Death Strike} and cause double attacks. Due to the differences in levels, the Death Knights' attacks were magnified by at least three to four times. As a consequence, one {Death Strike} could actually kill a tank with Level 60 Gray-Silver equipment instantly, which was terrifying!

The number of surviving players kept reducing. Halfway through the retreat, the number of surviving players had been reduced to 2,000 players!

"Get into the territorial hall. We'll make our stand there!" Zhang Yang roared.

The attacks were violent and ferocious, if it Zhang Yang had not used his [Friendship Jade] to summon Smaug's phantom, all of them would already have been annihilated by the fifth wave's boss, Moriarty. They wouldn't even be around to continue resisting at this point.

Damn it, One Sword Stroke and Liu Wei! Zhang Yang had made up his mind. He too, must get the [Monster Attack Order] and let Imperial Sky taste their own medicine!

Zhang Yang did not believe that One Sword Stroke also had

something like the [Friendship Jade]!

'Ding! Hoarfrost Death Knight Alps has joined the battle!'

It was the 170th minute and the last boss also made his grand entrance at the battlefield!

Zhang Yang and the rest stayed inside the castle. They could not even see what Alps looked like! They were flooded by thousands of Death Knights who struggled to rush into the territorial hall that was located at the highest point of the castle.

Ouch! Ow! Ah!

Along the way, players were constantly whittled into pieces by Death Knights' rapiers. A lot of players had already died three times, so they had been directly teleported back to White Jade Castle! They could only cheer for the surviving players in guild channel. At this moment, Hundred Shots was too busy to bother about the non-chatting rule.

Pulled back! Pulled back again! We just need to hold up for another 10 minutes!

With the efforts of Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight holding the defense line, nearly a thousand of players eventually made it into the territorial hall. Now, they could only concentrate their fire power on the final bottleneck at the entrance!

The Death Knights kept coming! Luckily, the entrance of territorial hall was narrow, which was easier to defend, compared to castle gate. Zhang Yang and the rest of the players formed a defense line to hold up for a short time!

Due to the huge level restraint, except for Zhang Yang, the rest of the players' attacks were extremely low, which barely slowed the monsters down! Only Zhang Yang's occasional usage of {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave} could cause huge damage to an area of monsters.

Except for Zhang Yang and Endless Starlight, the rest of tanks hardly survived more than a few seconds under Death Knights' attacks. Players' screams were uttered from time to time and fall defeated. Some players could still be resurrected, and had come back running, continuing their resistance, while, some players experienced their third deaths and had to return to White Jade Castle!

The tanks at the back rapidly filled in the defense line. They used their own bodies to prevent the monsters from crossing!

Two minutes later, the Death Knights' finally started to thin out!

"Have we killed them all?"

"We won?"

Sha! Sha! Sha!

Some strange whispers hissed through the air, carrying ancient voices, they could not even understand what they said.

Clop! Clop! Clop!

At this moment, a skeletal war horse with burning flames on its whole body went into the passage of territorial hall. It seemed far heavier than its skeletal frame suggested. Emerald flames burned within its eye sockets, it puffed out fire from time to time.

A Death Knight in full armor sat atop this spectre war horse, its eyes were burning with white gas which turned into frost and fell on the ground around it!

[Hoarfrost Death Knight Alps] (Violet-Platinum, Spectre)

Level: 80

HP: 20,000,000

Defense: 2,400

This was the second Violet-Platinum boss to appear in the game!

"Violet-Platinum boss, we are going to make a big fortune this

time!" Fatty Han was drooling as he said.

"Brother Fatty, you must act like a professional, stop drooling!" Endless Starlight said.

"Damn, take a good look at yourself in the mirror first, you aren't any better!"

Alps did not wait for the players to prepare themselves. His head turned to the guild flag in the territorial hall. "Qiang!" Alps took out his war blade, the war horse under him raised its hooves and dashed towards the guild flag.

Zhang Yang quickly used {Charge} to intercept it and wielded his [Dark Enigmatic Sword] to slash Alps!

Alps uttered a low roar, he flung his war blade and slashed at Zhang Yang's head.

'-12,606!'

A huge damage text floated across Zhang Yang head immediately. This damage had almost reduced 40% of Zhang Yang HP!

Zhang Yang wanted to use {Block} but he was more worried about Alps' {Death Strike}. {Death Strike} was an ulti that could cause double damage! Zhang Yang could not use his battle mount in the territorial hall, and as a result, his masimum HP was only about 29,000. If Zhang Yang received damage from {Death Strike}

without a full HP bar, he would definitely be killed instantly!

Alps' single attack was powerful. However, Alps did not have much AoE skills other than {Dividing Slash}, and as long as Zhang Yang did not stand in front of Alps, he would not receive any damage!

There were a lot of surviving healers in territorial hall, Han Ying Xue, Fantasy Sweetheart and a healing Knight started healing Zhang Yang's HP. They managed to keep up with the boss.

"Leave the boss be, and go hold up the monsters ahead! We just need to hold up for another six minutes!" Zhang Yang yelled loudly.

Without a doubt, Violet-Platinum bosses were precious. No matter how precious the Violet-Platinum boss was, it still had far less value than a territory!

Everyone circled around the fight, running to form defensive lines.

Four minutes, three minutes, two minutes, one minute!

1,500 players, 1,000 players, 500 players, 100 players!

As the time went by, the number of players kept reducing!

"Everybody, let's work harder! Just a little bit more! Victory is in front of us!" Daffodil Daydream cheered everyone up.

50 seconds!

30 seconds!

10 seconds!

"We are almost there! We are almost there!" everybody started counting down, "9, 8, 7..."

3, 2, 1!

"Server Announcement: Claim for Terra Nullius has ended, the final holder of [Territory Command Order] is player One Sword Stroke! Margulos town is now a private territory, everyone will be sent back to the main city!"

'Ding! You and your companions have held fast, you have successfully beaten back the monsters and obtained victory!'

Two system messages rang in Lone Desert Smoke's members ears at the same time. The players in White Jade Castle began cheering!

When the time limit of three hours monster attack had ended, all the elite Death Knights disappeared out of thin air like they had never existed before! However, Alps was still in the territorial hall and continued to slash at Zhang Yang violently!

Zhang Yang cried jubilantly, "Well, well, they left us a grand prize! The boss is still here! Everyone, hurry back here and fight the boss!"

At Zhang Yang's command, all of his members started rushing back to Thunderstorm Castle. After that, they summoned their mounts and rushed towards territorial hall!

1,000 players, 3,000 players, 7,000 players!

The numbers kept increasing!

Although most of the players had no way of breaking through Alps' defense, only causing 1 point of damage, their numbers were slowly whittling down his HP! This was because Alps did not have any strong AoE skills.

10 minutes, 20 minutes, 50 minutes!

They used about an hour to defeat Alps by slowly emptying out his HP bar. Alps uttered a cry, and crumpled into a pile of bones along with his horse.

Zhang Yang looted the drops as swiftly as he could, shoving them into his inventory! The monster attack had ended and non-Lone Desert Smoke players could also enter Thunderstorm Castle. It would be most wasteful any of these Violet-Platinum and Yellow-

Gold equipment were looted by anyone else!

Only when the last Yellow-Gold equipment was placed into Zhang Yang's inventory did he let out a sigh of relief and said, "Ladies and gentlemen, with everyone working together, we have successfully defended the territory! This victory belongs to everyone! This honor also belongs to everyone!"

"Roar!" everyone in the guild roared loudly.

Zhang Yang laughed loudly as he said, "Alright, let's distributes the equipment! Alps dropped four pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment and nine pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment. All of these will be auctioned using the guild's contribution points. Since everyone is already familiar with the rules, let's get right on it!"

[Death Blade] (Violet-Platinum, Two-Handed Sword)

Weapon Attack: 2,246 – 2,646

Attack Interval: 3.5 seconds

DPS: 699

<Unidentified>

Equipment: Each time the target is struck, there is a 3%

chance of causing {Death Strike} to the target, causing double attack.

Level Requirement: 80

"The average weapon attack is at least 2,400 before identifying. After identifying, it will exceed 3,400?"

"En, DPS will be increased by about 1,000 after identification!"

"That's amazing! Look at the special effects, after identifying, there is at least a 5% chance of activating special effects!"

"The basic weapon attack is so strong, if the special effects and critical attacks were triggered side by side, oh my god, there will be at least be 20,000 points of damage from an attack!"

Everyone was acclaimed and astonished by this [Death Blade]

"Auction starts for 500 guild's contribution points, with a minimum increment of 20 contribution points for each bid. All Berserkers and Templars also can join the bid, be quick!" Zhang Yang said.

Those members who had enough guild's contribution points quickly placed their bids, whereas those members who did not have enough guild's contribution points could only drool at one side! This was a Violet-Platinum equipment! These days, having a

full set of Gray-Silver equipment was enough to attract looks of envy. What if a player had a piece of Yellow-Gold equipment? Most players would worship them.

If I could get this Violet-Platinum equipment... A lot of players kept drooling, lost in fantasy.

Zhang Yang saw Wei Yan Er standing aside, watching the auction. He asked, "What happened? Little brat, you don't like it?"

"The attack interval is fast, and it's no axe. I won't get any bonuses!" Wei Yan Er pursed her lips as she replied.

Zhang Yang laughed and said, "Although the attack interval is 3.5 seconds, it's a Violet-Platinum weapon. Even without the axe specialization, it is still far stronger than your broken axe!"

"Hmph!" Wei Yan Er clenched her little fist and said, "So you have to find me a high-quality Violet-Platinum axe with an attack interval of 3.8 seconds before I reach Level 80! That will be my 18th birthday present!"

"Eh, are you really near 18? I just don't see it!" Zhang Yang sympathetically gazed at Wei Yan Er's flat-chest.

Daffodil Daydream asked, "Yan Er, when is your birthday?"

"About half a month more!" Wei Yan Er fiercely stared at Zhang Yang, before she turned around to Daffodil Daydream and answered, "23rd January, easy to remember, right?!"

Zhang Yang laughed out loud and said, "Little brat, when you celebrate your birthday, will you be asking your guests to bring lunchboxes with their own money?"

"You idiot, am I that stingy?" Wei Yan Er snorted angrily, she tilted her head to one side as she said, "Noob tank, sister Sun and you must come! By the way, please do not forget to bring along my presents, it doesn't have to be expensive, at least ten thousand dollars will do!"

Fatty Han looked at Wei Yan Er with his disgusting puppy eyes and said, "Little brat, why didn't you invite me?!"

"I'm going to invite the girls in my class, you pervert fatty. You'll scare them off!" Wei Yan Er replied flatly, with a straight face.

Fatty Han was instantly filled with tears and ran to one side to mope. I've been behaving well these few days!

"By the way, sister Daffodil and the others from out of town don't have to came. We've just eaten at the hotel anyway. I'll be able to save some money with fewer guests!" Wei Yan Er's next sentence immediately exposed her intrinsic nature, "However, you guys still can send me presents! Although I will be embarrassed, but if you insisted, I will not refuse your kindness!"

Everybody broke into laughter.

Chapter 297: A Handsome Reward

Wei Yan Er not joining the auction of [Death Blade] was good news for the other Lone Desert Smoke's members. As part of Zhang Yang's team, naturally, should she choose to bid, nobody would be able to outbid her!

Even if she did, they wouldn't be complaining! No one could deny their contributions that brought such fame to Lone Desert Smoke in the first place!

Finally, the auction ended, and the [Death Blade] was finally obtained by the Berserker in the secondary team, Galileo. The young cute little boy was so overjoyed, that he feverishly bowed to everyone, greeting them by big brother, big sister. Everyone laughed at his antics.

[The Heart of the Abyss] (Violet-Platinum, Necklace)

Vitality: +141

Intelligence: +94

<Unidentified>

Equipment: When your spells cause any damage or healings, you have a 1% chance of increasing your spell's damage by 200 points. Lasts for 5 seconds.

Level Requirement: 80

Han Ying Xue fought for the bidding without hesitation, instantly obtaining [The Heart of the Abyss].

[Agulos's Hat] (Violet-Platinum, Leather Armor)

Defense: +48

Vitality: +564

Strength: +161

Dexterity: +378

<Unidentified>

Level Requirement: 80

This was a high-quality hat for Thieves and Hunters, but neither did Sun Xin Yu, or Lost Dream, or Fatty Han or Hundred Shots placed any bids which made Zhang Yang greatly puzzled. After asking them, only did he find out that these four persons planned to directly acquire their Level 80 Violet-Platinum set equipment!

Zhang Yang started to sweat, Do they think that set equipment would come raining from the sky? The second set equipment could be found in dungeons, so the chances of open world bosses dropping Yellow-Gold set equipment parts were high. But starting from the third set equipment, set equipment would not be found in dungeons, and even the open world bosses would rarely drop set equipment!

Instead, minions held the chances of dropping their variations of set equipment! But the grade of set equipment dropping from minions would be very low and the set equipment effects were ordinary, nothing like the set equipment dropped by bosses!

After the auction of the hat, next up was a pair Defender's boots and this boots was successfully bid by Endless Starlight! This person was easily satisfied and his greatest wish was to lead a bunch of pretty girls to fight dungeons every day, a dream that was already more or less achieved!

Alps' last Violet-Platinum equipment came up, and finally, it was something that Zhang Yang could use!

[Ring of Imprisonment] (Violet-Platinum, Ring)

Vitality: +141

Strength: +40

<Unidentified>

Equipment: Absorbs 81 damage points when you receive attacks.

Use: Imprisons the target, stunning it. Lasts for 2 seconds. Cool down time: 30 minutes.

Level Requirement: 80

Endless Starlight was already greatly pleased after earning a piece of Violet-Platinum equipment, so he did not compete with Zhang Yang for the ring. Besides, Endless Starlight would not possibly have matched up to him in terms of contribution points. The ring fell into Zhang Yang's hands without incident. Before Zhang Yang reached Level 80, he had already collected four pieces of very powerful Level 80 top grade equipment!

11 pieces of Yellow-Gold equipment were also distributed and those who got the equipment were extremely happy.

Lastly, there were two skill books that Zhang Yang did not put on the guild's auction. These skill books were different, as equipment would be phased out over time but skill books would grow over time. Skills would remain relevant for a long time!

So Zhang Yang intended to keep the skill books, giving it only to

the suitable players to learn!

The first skill book was {Death Strike}!

[Skill Book: Death Strike]

Use: Grants the skill {Death Strike}.

Class Requirement: Berserker, Templar, Death Knight

Level Requirement: 80

Zhang Yang posted the description link in the party channel. Han Ying Xue and the rest were astonished.

"Silly Yu, what's this Death Knight class? Obviously, this class option is not available during character creation!" Han Ying Xue opened her pretty eyes widely as she said.

"Is that a hidden class?" Lost Dream asked excitedly.

'God's Miracle' was a virtual reality game, but its realism features was off the charts! However, with only six classes, branching out into a total of thirteen specialties, the options of creating your perfect character was somehow limited. Compared to the various mechanics in 'God's Miracle', they just didn't add up!

Zhang Yang thought quietly of a way to enlighten them as "beta player" instead of someone who travelled from the future, and then he said, "I have never hear of hidden classes in 'God's Miracle'. But after players achieve Level 100, they will obtain some special class' inheritances by collecting a series of items, and completing a series of quests! I believe that's the equivalent of earning hidden classes, because not only to you get to retain your original class, and you will learn a few new class' skills as well!

"Oh!" their eyes lit up and even Sun Xin Yu also asked, "For example?"

"For example..." Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Let's talk about the vampiric inheritance. There are seven [Inheritance Fragments], each respectively representing the head, neck, torso, left hand, right hand, left foot and right foot. You are required to collect all these seven [Inheritance Fragments] in order to activate the inheritance quest! The inheritance quest is cumbersome and very lengthy. But when you have completed this quest, you will be entitled to the vampiric inheritance! One of the skills in vampire inheritance is that the player's body can be turned into thousands of bats for a short period of time, the player can fly physically and also rush to their enemies suck their blood and recover own HP bar!"

Fatty Han suddenly gave out a perverted smile, who knows what thoughts ran through his mind at that moment.

[&]quot;So, there's a Death Knight's inheritance?"

"I guess so!" Zhang Yang nodded and continued, "It is also very troublesome to obtain inheritance. In the case of the vampiric inheritance, you must collect the seven [Inheritance Fragments] in order, not missing a single one of them, and it is impossible to retry or restart the quest! Some of the inheritances can be obtained repeatedly but some inheritances are unique! If two players held pieces of the same set of inheritance, they would be lighted up in each others maps. They would then have to fight for it!"

"Seems to be fun, I'm looking forward to it!" Wei Yan Er chirped happily.

"Alright, alright. Quick, little brat, do you want this [Skill Book: Death Strike]? Otherwise, I will give it to Galileo!"

Wei Yan Er quickly nodded her head repeatedly and replied, "Yes! Of course I want it!"

After little brat received the [Skill Book: Death Strike], she patted it against her body and learned the skill. She also posted the description of {Death Strike}.

{Death Strike} (Level 1): Immediately launches an attack on target, causing 100% melee attack of Shadow damage and recovering 10% HP. Requirement: Two-handed melee weapon. Cost: 50 Rage points. Cool down time: 30 seconds.

[&]quot;Not bad!" Wei Yan Er smiled with satisfaction.

Zhang Yang shook his head again and again as he said, "That's really too much, this skill does not only cause Shadow damage which ignores defense values, but it also recovers your HP turning it into both an offensive and a defensive skill. And all you have to say about that is 'not bad'. What more do you want?!"

The other skill book was not for the players to learn, but was a pet's skill book {Iron Build}!

Zhang Yang privately kept this skill book to himself, and he immediately handed it over to his Gold-Eared Bear King.

{Iron Build (Passive)}: Increases the pet's HP by 30%.

Currently, Gold-Eared Bear King's HP had exceeded 20,000 points, while its 30% HP was equivalent to 6,000 HP. After "combining" with Zhang Yang, this skill also increased Zhang Yang's HP by 6,000!

Zhang Yang thought for a while and said, "Hundred Shots, get some people to find out, where did Imperial Sky get that [Monster Attack Order]!"

If it was not Zhang Yang's [Friendship Jade], 90% of them would be annihilated! Although [Friendship Jade] had one use remaining, Zhang Yang couldn't get this off his mind. Zhang Yang wanted to turn the tables on Imperial Sky and Liu Wei. It's best he let them taste their own medicine.

Hundred Shots immediately nodded in acknowledgement.

He did not care about the means that Hundred Shot would use to obtain this information. Be it by bribery, or favors, it did not matter. He was willing to stoop to the same level of these villains in order to get back at them!

Zhang Yang disbanded the team. Some of the members logged out from the game to rest and relax. Others continued training.

After a while, one of Zhang Yang's guild members sent a message to Zhang Yang and said, "Guild master, Imperial Sky's territory has changed its name to Imperial Sky Castle and their territory's teleportation fee is only 90 silver coins. They are now advertising in all main cities!"

Zhang Yang could not help get riled up again, as the most annoying thing about doing business was this kind of price war that purposely attempted to ruin the market's value. In the end, nobody was bound to win in this!

When Zhang Yang reached in White Jade Castle, Imperial Sky's members had flooded the area channel by asking people to boycott Thunderstorm Castle, and instead go to their Imperial Sky Castle! They even wantonly slandered Lone Desert Smoke, saying that teleportation fee of one gold coin simply exploited the players!

Zhang Yang felt disgusted. Was Imperial Sky not doing the same? Would a 10% discount make all the difference?

For the majority of the players, it did not matter which territory to go to and as long as the teleportation fee was cheap then they would choose the territory! Therefore, a lot of players immediately changed their mind and bound their [Teleportation Scrolls] to Imperial Sky Castle. However, some of the players did not really bother to switch places as they had already adapted to Thunderstorm Castle's environment. Besides, it was just difference of 10 silver coins, it was not really a big deal for them!

After a day, Zhang Yang's usual 7,000,000 gold coin profit of teleportation fees was instantly reduced to 3,280,000, with at least half of going to Imperial Sky Castle!

Fatty Han acted like a gangster and said, "Little Yang, let's lead a team block the way to Imperial Sky Castle's gate, and rob them, scare them into coming back to us?"

Zhang Yang started to boil up in anger instantly, but quickly burst in laughter upon realizing what Fatty Han said. He choked, "Do you have any idea of stopping 3,000,000 players? You can defeat one or two players but if you provoke everyone's anger, at least a few hundred thousand players will come for your head. Tell me, how many soldiers should I dispatch to rescue you?"

Zhang Yang gazed into the distance and continued, "Currently, we only have to find out how Imperial Sky found the [Monster Attack Order]. As long as we also find this [Monster Attack Order] and use it on them, Imperial Sky Castle will be flattened to the ground. It will take care of all these problems at once!"

Chapter 298: Heading To The Japan-Korea Region

Hundred Shots did not disappoint Zhang Yang, as it only took two days to come back with useful information!

Imperial Sky had defeated a Yellow-Gold boss, the Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses Morchason, and this boss actually dropped [Monster Attack Order]!

Hundred Shots had purposely searched the information about Morchason at the official website: Level 70 Yellow-Gold boss, Beast, 7,000,000 HP, Melee Attack, Body height of 56 meters, Basic Attack of 11,000, Attack Interval of 2 seconds, Spawns in Northern part of Mountains of Miduo at Meadow Flatlands, Re-spawn time is 1 month (Real time)!

Zhang Yang grew frustrated, realizing that they needed to wait for a month for the re-spawning of Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses. Even if they defeated this boss, it would not necessary drop a [Monster Attack Order]! According to the information from the official website, there was 20% chance of dropping [Monster Attack Order] for First Kill but the subsequent kills would have only 1% chance of dropping [Monster Attack Orders]!

In 'God's Miracle', as long as the players knew the name of the monster, they could get the specific information of the monster, such as monster's HP amount, basic attack amount, type of attack and even its special drop. But if the players searched for the information of items in the official website, such as [Monster

Attack Order], the official website would only show the attributes of [Monster Attack Order], without telling the players where to get this item!

Wait a minute!

Zhang Yang's eyes suddenly shone, he immediately logged out from the game and switched on his computer, checking on the official website. He searched for Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses Morchason in official database and rows of information about Morchason were all listed out.

Zhang Yang scrolled the web page as he browsed the database and he stopped at the number of killings!

Currently, Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses Morchason had been killed seven times in the eight servers around the world but the Morchason in Japan-Korea server had not been killed yet!

Zhang Yang revealed a happy smile on his face and logged onto the game once again. He checked his friend list but Sun Xin Yu was offline.

Zhang Yang loitered around when he finally saw Sun Xin Yu logging onto the game in the evening. Then, he quickly sent a party request to Sun Xin Yu.

"Do me a favor!" Zhang Yang replied, "I need you..."

"... Pervert!" Sun Xin Yu immediately shot him down.

Zhang Yang was stunned, realizing Sun Xin Yu had already jumped to conclusions and he immediately explained, "Don't get me wrong, only you can do this, and I really need you..."

"Do you want to die?" Sun Xin Yu started to grit her teeth.

"Damn it, will you please let me finish?!" Zhang Yang shouted.

Strangely, Sun Xin Yu remained silent after Zhang Yang shouted.

"I need you to go to Mystical Turtle City and head to the Meadow Flatlands, and then find a place known as Mountains of Miduo. After that, I will use the Lover's Charm to teleport to your location, as I want to kill a boss!" Zhang Yang explained.

Sun Xin Yu pondered for a while and asked, "How do I go to Mystical Turtle City?"

The teleportation portal between main cities could only function within the region, and if they wanted to travel across the region, they must first enter Chaos Realm and then go through the realm gate and enter another region! However, players must reach Level 100 in order to enter the Chaos Realm!

Zhang Yang smiled as he answered, "A hermit must have her own ideas!"

"Flattering lips!" Sun Xin Yu complained.

Even an icy woman like her would bother lecturing people? Zhang Yang felt his heart flutter. It was not that he liked to be scolded, but it was rare to see so much emotion from Sun Xin Yu! Zhang Yang ran towards Sun Xin Yu atop his Whitey.

After running for a while, he saw Sun Xin Yu standing elegantly in one corner. Although her face was still covered with a black cloth, her exquisite leather armor outlined her voluptuous body shape, like a beautiful piece of art!

Zhang Yang dismounted from his Whitey and took out his precious [Destination Teleportation Scroll] that had already been stored a long time ago in his inventory. He had won this [Destination Teleportation Scroll] from Ghostly Leaf after making a bet with him. Zhang Yang handed over the [Destination Teleportation Scroll] to Sun Xin Yu and said, "This is a [Destination Teleportation Scroll], you can use this to teleport to any main city in all eight regions of the world!"

A trace of curiosity appeared across Sun Xin Yu's eyes and she immediately made to tear off the [Destination Teleportation Scroll] after taking it from Zhang Yang.

"Wait a minute!" Zhang Yang suddenly said.

Sun Xin Yu stopped tearing off the scroll, looking at Zhang Yang with her puzzled expression and large, elegant eyes.

"Please be careful!" Zhang Yang said with serious expression.

Sun Xin Yu's fair cheeks immediately blushed, even through the black cloth that covered her face. Her delicate body shivered slightly, unable to hide her emotions. Staring at staring Zhang Yang with anger and embarrassment through those big eyes, she continued tearing the [Destination Teleportation Scroll].

A mini teleportation circle rapidly appeared beneath her feet, a white light flashed and encircled her body which was already in stealth mode. Then she was gone.

Stealth mode!

This was the reason why Zhang Yang had asked Sun Xin Yu to travel on his behalf!

Across the world's eight regions, each of the regions were hostile to each other. If Zhang Yang was teleported to Mystical Turtle City, he would be beaten to a pulp by the players and NPCs in Japan-Korea server! No matter how strong Zhang Yang was, what chance would he have against all the players in a region?

In contrast, a thief could enter stealth mode and stalk about! Sun Xin Yu was a peerless Thief Lord and her skills were unmatched. After Zhang Yang had considered so many other factors, he could not find any other candidate than her!

Lost Dream? That was right, he is a strong Thief but the main issue was that, Lost Dream was a male and Zhang Yang would be unable to use Lover's Charm to teleport to Lost Dream.

Sun Xin Yu was sneaking into the enemy's region alone so she would need to be extra careful. Zhang Yang shrugged, settling down at a place and started training, by killing monsters.

Because of the in-game time and real time adjustment, the players now would gain levels faster! Before Zhang Yang had reached Level 72, Han Ying Xue and the rest were already catching up. Currently, most of them were at about Level 69.

However, once they reach Level 70, that speed would drop!

After Zhang Yang pulled and cleared two rounds of monsters, he received a voice call from Hundred Shots, "Zhan Yu, our people discovered a mining cave!"

Zhang Yang blinked in surprise and asked, "What sort of materials?"

"Mithril, and small amount of brass!"

"That's great!" Zhang Yang clenched his fist triumphantly, as mithril was a third grade mineral and it only spawned in Level 60 and above area maps, and was difficult to get into mass production! The mining cave made it so that players would not need to run around the area maps to obtain the ore. Having enough miners in the mining cave would do!

In Zhang Yang's previous life, each time a new mining cave was discovered, guilds would fight for it! In the later stages of the game, a standard of measuring the strength of a guild was determined by whether the guild owned a territory or mining cave. If the guild did not have any of these two, then the guild would not be considered strong!

This should be the first mining cave in the China server. Other guilds would even be aware of the existence of mining caves yet! Zhang Yang commanded, "Send our miner type players, and station them in that mining cave. Then, arrange the appropriately leveled members to train in that vicinity and protect the mining cave!"

"Roger that!"

Hundred Shots was a very compliant right-hand man, Zhang Yang had complete faith in him. So, Zhang Yang did not ask about anything else, other than the exact location of the mining cave, which Coral Jade Mining Cave, in the west of Forest of Tanila.

Zhang Yang continued pulling and clearing monsters to gain experience. After at least seven to eight hours, he received a private message from Sun Xin Yu: "Come over!" Zhang Yang immediately equipped the [Lover's Charm: Yang] and then he was teleported to Sun Xin Yu's location.

'Ding! You have entered Meadow Flatlands (Japan-Korea Server). This is a hostile region, any players can initiate the attack on you and they will not be penalized with the Red Tag! You will be automatically have a red-tag on your name, and if you are killed, the chance of dropping your equipment has been increased by 100%!'

The system notification immediately rang around Zhang Yang's ears.

Sun Xin Yu stood there, silent and still, like a snow lotus on the iceberg, as pure as settled snow.

Zhang Yang suddenly had an urge of pulling her down to the secular world from high above the clouds, to see what this lukewarm woman would actually look like if she started laughing out loudly! Zhang Yang could not help but asked, "Will you laugh?"

Sun Xin Yu looked at suspiciously and answered, "What nonsense!"

"Then, show me how you laugh!"

"..." Sun Xin Yu's pretty eyebrows were furrowed. This was definitely a sign of her getting angry soon.

Zhang Yang laughed as he asked, "Do you still remember when you last had a laugh?"

Sun Xin Yu's eyes widened in recognition, as if she did remember, but she did not reply Zhang Yang.

"Look at you, you don't even remember when was the last time you laughed out loud happily!" Zhang Yang shook his head and asked again, "Are you happy with your life, at where you stand?"

"None of your business!" Sun Xin Yu answered coldly.

"On what days are you off work?"

"Why?"

"I want to take you out and have some fun!"

"I don't want to go!"

"Then I'll look for you at police station!"

"I just said that I don't want to go!"

Zhang Yang stared at Sun Xin Yu, who maintained her gaze evenly. The main characteristic about this woman was that she was unwilling to lose.

Unyielding?

Zhang Yang walked up to Sun Xin Yu and she backed off uncertainly, but she saw the intensity in Zhang Yang's gaze. When Zhang Yang came even closer, Sun Xin Yu finally took another step backwards, keeping a distance of about one meter from Zhang Yang.

"Tomorrow, 8.00 pm, I will take you out for dinner. I won't take no for an answer!" Zhang Yang said.

"

It was tiring, talking to this woman!

Zhang Yang relaxed his tensed up body and summoned Whitey, saying, "Let's go for a boss!"

Both of them summoned mounts and started to gallop within the Kalojar Highlands of the Japan-Korea server. Luckily, this area was not a popular place for training, so they only met a few players who they tried to avoid.

Although both of them had hidden their character information, this server would forcibly display all their information. Both of their names were shown, along with the "China Server" tag. Being red-tagged also attracted a few hostile players.

However, this was Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. They wouldn't be beaten by any random party!

After killing off the annoying players, Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu made their way into Mountains of Miduo. Although the official database showed the Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses – Morchason's approximate location, it did not show the specific coordinates, so players would have to search for the specific coordinates themselves.

After an hour, both of them reached a canyon. Zhang Yang felt that they had come to the correct place, as the monsters in this valley were all Mythical Tyrannosauruses!

Chapter 299: Mythical King Of Tyrannosauruses - Morchason

[Scavenging Mythical Tyrannosaurus] (Normal, Beast)

Level: 65

HP: 6,500

Defense: 60

These mythical tyrannosauruses looked basically just like the dinosaur itself. Every single one of them was about 10 meters tall, with lower bodies that looked incredibly strong and powerful while having a pair of short tiny hands with claws. They looked just like the feet of chickens popping out of their chests! Each of them had long and thick tails that looked like steel whips. Their entire bodies were dark-gray in colour, and they had gnashing big maws full of blade-like teeth!

However, Zhang Yang would not waste his time looking at regular monsters! He patted Whitey's head gently and said, "We shall charge forward and just ignore everything else along our way. If anything follows, we'll just wipe them out!"

After finishing his words, he rode on Whitey and began to charge into the valley, and naturally, Sun Xin Yu followed behind closely.

As they passed through, a large number of mythical tyrannosauruses detected their presence, and power coursed through their muscular legs as they began to give chase!

Zhang Yang did not give a damn about these regular monsters as he was riding on Whitey. Whenever the monsters got close enough to snap at Sun Xin Yu, he would activate his {Horizontal Sweep} and {Blast Wave}, or just jump down from his bear to activate {Charge} and {Thunder Strike} to take out the 'trash'. After that, he would jump onto the back of Whitey with a flip and continue his journey.

Since they were here to hunt for a boss, nothing else mattered!

After a seven to eight minutes of charging forward, the two of them were already closing in on the bottom of the valley. As they turned around, they saw hundreds of monsters charging towards them in a furious stampede! If not for the aggro system where monsters would stop their pursuit after a certain distance, that 'army' of monsters that followed them over would have been two times more!

Zhang Yang turned around, and as his rage gauge was full, he activated his {Horizontal Sweep}!

Instantly, the monsters were inflicted with damages of 4000+, which repeated itself over and over again! One second later, the common cool down had ended, Zhang Yang activated another {Blast Wave}, blasting the and dazzling the monsters around!

Sun Xin Yu wouldn't leave all the action to him. She peppered the monsters with {Fan of Daggers} from one side, throwing out her knives that spread out in eight directions, inflicting a series of outstanding damage! However, she lacked the special effect on her weapon, so they never came close to Zhang Yang's output!

If other players had been surrounded by so many monsters, the players would have been quickly overwhelmed even with hundreds of healers supporting them! But Zhang Yang's equipment were simply out of this world, leaving no chance for the monsters!

After some time, all of the Scavenging Mythical Tyrannosaurus had been slain, leaving the ground with glittering loots. Zhang Yang glanced through all the loots and picked up a few pieces of equipment. The other items did not even have good selling values, so there was no point picking them up.

Zhang Yang took a look at Sun Xin Yu and began to smile, "Now, you should just look at me in admiration. That should stroke my ego!"

"... boring!"

She began to summon her [mount] while trying to ignore him.

"Wait just a second!" Zhang Yang suddenly pointed towards a direction, "There is a Mythical Tyrannosaurus over there, the size of it looks odd, could it be ---" He had already began rushing over

there.

Sun Xin Yu followed closely from behind on her mount, and as they were approaching it, they saw a mini-sized little Mythical Tyrannosaurus. It's whole body was crimson red, it was definitely different from the others in the wild! That was not the main point, the main point was that this little Mythical Tyrannosaurus was labeled as Level o!

[Crimson Red Mythical Tyrannosaurus] (Yellow-Gold Battle Mount)

Level: o

HP: 50

Caution: Can be captured.

A Yellow-Gold [Battle Mount]! It was a jackpot out of the blue! They actually encountered another such mount!

Zhang Yang smiled at Sun Xin Yu and asked, "Did you bring your [Sealing Leash]?"

"Of course!" Sun Xin Yu nodded and pulled out a [Sealing Leash] from her backpack. Without waiting for Zhang Yang, she instantly threw her {Sealing Leash] straight at the little Mythical

Tyrannosaurus.

As she began to cast the spell to activate the [Sealing Leash], 1%, 13%, 45%... Pak, failed!

The first [Sealing Leash] had been broken into two, however, Sun Xin Yu was not rattled or anything. She took out another [Sealing Leash] from her backpack and threw it at the little Mythical Tyrannosaurus once again.

Activating the [Sealing Leash]... Failed!

For the third attempt! Forth attempt... the eighth attempt!

'Ding! You have successfully sealed the Battle Mount - Crimson Red Mythical Tyrannosaurus!"

At last, Sun Xin Yu received the sweet and satisfying voice of the system notification in her ears.

"You are now a mother with a child!" Zhang Yang told her solemnly with a straight face. She rolled her eyes at him.

The two continued to push on forward, and they slayed another wave of monsters. Eventually, they arrived at the deepest bottom of the valley.

A gigantic Mythical Tyrannosaurus with the height of up to 30

meters was lay in a deep slumber by it's nest, it's nostrils ejecting jets of hot air, threatening to blow off the leaves on the nearby trees.

[Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses - Morchason] (Yellow-Gold, Beast)

Level: 70

HP: 7,000,000

Defense: 1,400

Sun Xin Yu turned to Zhang Yang with a questioning stare, then she asked, "So much health points, how are the two of us going to pull this off?"

According to the official database, the basic attack of Morchason is approximately 10,000, therefore, Zhang Yang would probably take 6,200 damage per hit. The boss would attack every 2 seconds, and considering the fact that Zhang Yang could use {Block} once in every 6 seconds, the damage sustained should be around 2,000 --- all these calculations had not yet taken the boss' other skills into account yet!

Zhang Yang would have a total amount of 60,000 health points when mounted on Whitey, and with him able to activate two

{Berserker's Heals}, two {Shield Walls}, he would probably last for 2 minutes! However, to deplete the 7,000,000 health points of the boss within that two minutes, the DPS of Sun Xin Yu and Zhang Yang must reach up to 50,000! Well, that was out of the question!

One option was to have Sun Xin Yu use the [teleportation scroll] to travel back, and then pass her [Lover's Charm: Yin] over to Han Ying Xue, allowing their 'Super Healer' to teleport over to him! Possibly being the most well-equipped player in China, she will be able to leisurely give Zhang Yang all the time in the world to chew the boss off, bit by bit. It would definitely be a piece of cake!

However, when Zhang Yang pulled up his friend list, he saw that the avatar portrait of Han Ying Xue was dimmed, and the same went for Wei Yan Er.

Han Ying Xue was a priest, leveling up all on her own would be extremely difficult and inefficient. She would always be paired with Yan Er. Miraculously, Wei Yan Er did actually attend her classes today, giving Han Ying Xue reason to be offline as well, as she was probably out shopping at that very moment!

At this time, he could not depend on Han Ying Xue! Furthermore, if he really did shoo Sun Xin Yu back to Thunderstorm Castle for this particular reason, this Icy queen would definitely explode --- who does he think she is? To summon her when she is required, and to send her away when she is no longer needed?!

Still, it was not a wise move to go up against the boss in their current situation!

If he was already Level 80, equipped with several pieces of Violet-Platinum equipment, then it could have been possible for him and Sun Xin Yu to work together in bringing down this Mythical King of Tyrannosauruses! But now... Zhang Yang raised up his head and looked around. He really would not want to waste the final summon of the Friendship Jade!

"Are we going to engage or what?" Sun Xin Yu demanded in her crystal clear voice.

Zhang Yang revealed a smile on his face as he said, "Engage!"

"Huh? If we are engaging, why are you moving back then?"

"Silly girl, with just the two of us to go head on against the boss, won't we get raped by the boss?" Zhang Yang patted Whitey as he arrived at the flat side of a mountain.

"... who are you calling silly?" Sun Xin Yu sounded dangerous.

Zhang Yang couldn't help but tease her further, "What a silly girl, making me repeat myself twice! Oh dear, there's no cure for this one!"

'Qiang!' Sun Xin Yu pulled out her dagger.

"Don't get mad, it was just a joke! I say that you, icy, should smile

more often. If you keep your face that tense all the time, your face might not last through your 30s!" Zhang Yang began to laugh.

Sun Xin Yu was silent for a moment before she asked.

"The boss is at the other side of this area, how are you going to engage with the boss from here?"

"Mountain men will play by the mountain! Got it?" Zhang Yang nudged his head in the direction at the mountain wall, trying his best to crack a mountain joke.

"Stop being so lame!"

"Can you see the cave by the top side?" Zhang Yang pointed at the mountain wall.

As Sun Xin Yu raised her sight of view upwards, and she saw it, 40 meters above the ground she was standing now, the mountain wall had seemed to have been skewered by gigantic spears countless of times, leaving a series of crack marks on it. Some of the crack marks were shallow, but some of them were deep enough to hide people in it. Some of them were actually as deep as seven to eight meters!

"So, what's with them?"

"The entrance of these caves are extremely narrow, at least for the boss. That big-mouthed idiotic Tyrannosaurus will never fit into it, we fight from the cover of it and wear the boss down!"

"Well, but he would be out of your range as well, what good would the cover do?"

"Indeed! But, we will control the rhythm of the battle! When we feel like engaging, we can just engage! When we are out of health points, we can retreat into the narrow cave and get patched up, take our time for our skills to cool down. We can kill him at leisure!"

Sun Xin Yu gave it some thought, and then she asked, "That being said, the problem is still unsolved. How are you going to reach the cave on the mountain wall?"

Those crack marks are basically 40 meters from the ground, making it impossible for any player to jump up to any of them! It sounded like Zhang Yang was making a pointless suggestion!

At that instant, Zhang Yang could not help himself but smile, as he took a piece of item out that he left it long in his backpack --- [Frog King's Powerful Flippers], upon activating, player can jump extremely high for the next 10 seconds, cool down: 1 minute only!

And it is a Level 20 equipment! Sun Xin Yu was shocked by what she just saw, "I can't believe you actually held on to that!"

Zhang Yang smiled, always believing that such equipment with unique abilities would always have their use, someday! He would not even abandon a level 1 equipment with such attributes!

After putting on the [Frog King's Powerful Flippers], Zhang Yang activated the equipment's special effect. With a powerful leap, he instantly leaped over a height of approximately 50 meters, and started climbing up the cliff face.

However, the duration of the "powerful leap" had ended by the time he was climbing. So Zhang Yang had to wait for another minute doing nothing but stand on the shelf of rock before he could continue to leap for a higher 'milestone'! It took him about six or seven minutes before he could squeeze himself into one of the crack holes on the wall. When he saw that it wasn't deep enough, he had to spend more time jumping further up to try the other holes.

Another five or six minutes had passed, and Zhang Yang had finally found himself an ideal crack hole which was about 10 meters deep, 2 meters tall and 2 meters wide, enough for a player to move around freely.

"Icy, I am counting on you to get the boss here! After I've taken its aggro, you can freely interpret the situation to attack or use {Vanish} to clear yourself from the aggro of the boss."

Without a word, Sun Xin Yu rode on her wolf mount straight towards Morchason.

The range of the boss's aggro was approximately 30 meters wide. The moment Sun Xin Yu entered that range, Morchason instantly let out a thunderous roar and lumbered to its feet. With the powerful and muscular legs powering it forwards, Morchason opened up it's bloody big mouth and crunched its teeth at Sun Xin Yu!

Sun Xin Yu immediately started running!

Morchason was right behind her with it's two powerful, long and muscular legs! Every step it took shook the ground with incredible vibrations, emitting out a series of thunderous rumbles!

Zhang Yang pulled out his [Dark Enigmatic Sword], waiting for Morchason to enter the range of his attack. The moment Morchason stepped into the range distance of 30 meters from him, Zhang Yang immediately fired a {Spear of Obliteration} straight at the boss!

'-2,298!'

The first damage value inflicted on Morchason appeared right on top of the boss's head!

Sun Xin Yu had merely gotten close to the boss. Compared to a direct attack; after that obliterating strike from Zhang Yang, most of Morchason's aggro value was pulled over towards Zhang Yang, so the boss began to advance ferociously towards Zhang Yang who was standing at the entrance of the crack hole.

{Block}!

Raising up his shield upon the activation of his skill, his shield was caught between the mouth of the boss! With the shield pressing against the sharp teeth of the boss, sparks flew, with a horrifying screech! While holding out until the boss withdrew it's mouth, a number of scratches were seen on the [Titan Wall]!

That was why equipment were designed to have a of durability in this game!

After a long period of time using an equipment, it will naturally be damaged or even break! Engaging in a seriously intense battle would greatly decrease the durability. And when the durability of that equipment hits zero, it would lose all of it's additional attributes, which meant that players would need to find a blacksmith to repair it, in order to use it again for future battles!

Furthermore, the durability of an equipment would increase correspondingly to the quality of the equipment. The better the quality meant greater durability, meaning a longer time of use. For players, having their equipment 'damaged' was not too big of a deal, as the equipment would still function with all of it's additional attributes, as long as there is still one durability point remaining, as long as it is not 'broken'!

For tankers, their shields take the most impact of all other equipment. So the game developers have made the shield far more durable, compared to other equipment. [Titan Wall] had a durability of 800, which was far more durable than the other equipment on his body, like [Furious Chest Plate] which had only 100 durability points!

Unfortunately, monsters did not have the attributes of equipment durability!

If not for that, players could have depleted the durability of all the boss's teeth, leaving it as a toothless hag!

Zhang Yang was waving his sword around to fend off against the ferocious attacks from the boss while shouting out to Sun Xin Yu, "Icy! You may start attacking!"

Both of them started attacking from both sides.

After a few seconds of battle, Morchason suddenly let out a thunderous roar, lashing out its tail which was as thick as a tree tunk at Zhang Yang! But before the tail could reach Zhang Yang, it struck the mountain wall first! The powerful strike of the tail actually shook the while mountain for awhile and the rocks and dust were dropping from the ceiling within the crack hole!

Although the sound made by the attack was extremely loud and intimidating, the attack stopped there!

Zhang Yang could not help himself proudly ask, "How is it, Icy? Are you impressed?"

Sun Xin Yu instantly rolled her eyes at Zhang Yang.

However, Zhang Yang could not mount his [Battle Mount] within holes and caves. After merely a minute, his health points were starting to get low. He quickly activated his {Shield Wall} and continued to rely on the activation of the health recovery effect of his [Armor Set], and when things got tensed up, he activated his {Berserker's Heal}.

Even with all his powerful skills activated, he could only last against the assault of the boss for 50 seconds long before his health became critical!

"Icy! Use {Vanish} now! I am about to draw back!" Zhang Yang shouted out, and began to run inwards into the crack hole. Of course, Whitey was twerking it's big fat butt, following closely.

As they were retreating, Morchason tried to snap at them, but it failed to touch Zhang Yang. The boss went berserk, flinging it's large head around while ramming at the entrance of the crack hole, shaking up the mountain stones, causing the stones and dust on the ceiling within the crack holes to rain down.

At that moment, the boss was like a continuous wave of explosives! Anyone who got too close would only become it's victim!

Zhang Yang threw another strike of {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss. After that, he calmly took his sweet time to patch himself up with the [Silk Bandage] that he brought along.

[Silk Bandage] (Consumable)

Use: Recovers 8,000 health points within 10 seconds. While patching up, you cannot have any other movement, or else the effect will immediately be interrupted. The cool down time will be shared across all other types of bandages.

Cool down time: 1 minute.

Required: Professional tier First Aid

As Zhang Yang had previously acquired the title of 'Specialist tier First Aid', and with only one [Silk Bandage], he immediately healed himself by 16,000 health points!

Chapter 300: Takeshi's Fort

Zhang Yang launched another {Spear of Obliteration} at the boss, and resumed his assault on the boss.

Morchason was truly frustrated, and it let out a series of thunderous roars, fruitlessly gnashing its teeth against the rocks. Sun Xin Yu had immediately followed up.

Actually, if Zhang Yang wanted to, he could have used the special terrain of this crack hole to launch a series of attacks every six seconds, using his {Block} to immunize himself from any damage, even being able to slay the boss without receiving any damage! But if he did so, he would make Sun Xin Yu feel awkward, therefore, he abandoned the thought and decided to carry on.

From the looks of it, Zhang Yang seemed to have found a way to cheat. But the game initially encouraged players to discover new battle tactics to engage in battle. The repetition of using only the same tactics are just meaningless and boring! However, only a few players could implement newly discovered tactics like what Zhang Yang was doing right now, before the implementation of flying mounts!

After some time, Zhang Yang's health bar was about to hit the bottom again. He quickly informed Sun Xin Yu, "Icy, I am about to retreat again, you can activate your {Blur} to force your way to stay alive for awhile!"

He went straight for the crack hole as he spoke.

As Morchason could not lay it's assaults on Zhang Yang, it turned all it's aggro towards Sun Xin Yu and immediately began to stomp it's way towards Sun Xin Yu.

One toe of the boss was as large as seven or eight Ping Pong tables bound together! The damage from the stomping covered a large area, and even with the activation of {Blur}, it was inevitable for her to be inflicted with damage! Sun Xin Yu quickly activated her {Sprint}, increasing her movement speed. Then she began to run towards the opposite direction.

At that moment, Zhang Yang ran out of the crack holes in time, once again attracting the aggro of Morchason, luring the boss to abandon Sun Xin Yu. The boss turned around and began to charge back at Zhang Yang. But just before it reached him, Zhang Yang quickly withdrew again.

Morchason could only turn back around to attack Sun Xin Yu. However, Sun Xin Yu had already ran a distance away.

Apparently, Zhang Yang was calculating the time frames silently. The poor boss was being meddled with like a marionette! As the boss will turn to whoever had the higher aggro value within it's range of attacks, it could only turn back to look for Zhang Yang.

{Block}!

That little time was enough for his {Block} to cool down, so he took the opportunity to give it another blow before running back

into the crack hole. At the same time, the cool down for the [Bandage] had ended, and he quickly patched himself up, restoring himself back to his solid state!

Reengaging into battle!

The aggro value was the most important basic knowledge when it comes to battling against monsters and bosses! If the aggro value distribution is erratic, the monster would either be really easy to defeat, or impossible to fight! That would leave the battle full of unpredictable possibilities! And because of the existence of this aggro value distribution system, only could players be divided into different roles; tankers kiting, healers healing, and damage output!

Thanks to this aggro value distribution system, Morchason had become an idiotic monster from head to toe. It was more like a toy, instead of a Yellow-Gold boss, being played around by Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu!

As long as the boss does not heal itself, it will surely be taken down in just a matter of time!

Half an hour later, Morchason was left with only approximately 300,000 health points, close to it's demise!

Zhang Yang once again patched himself with a [Bandage] and went out of the crack hole. Just when he was about to land on the ground, he activated {Charge}, clashing into the thick, muscular lower body of Morchason!

Safely landed!

Whitey landed in similar pattern, and then Zhang Yang leaped onto the back of Whitey, instantly boosting his health points to 52,381/57,810!

Morchason gave a thunderous roar and attempted to stomp on Zhang Yang with it's gigantic foot claw.

190,000! 180,000! The boss was near death! Just when things were getting smooth, suddenly, a party of approximately 20 players rode into the scene. Their leader was tagged, 'Sanada Jubei, Level 66, Male Human, Templar, {Takeshi's Fort}' right above his head! The rest of his party members were maintaining a distance of about 3 meters away right behind him, clearly revealing him as their leader.

These players were all from 'Takeshi's Fort'!

Zhang Yang was not familiar with any player from the other countries, so he had no idea if this Sanada Jubei was a famous player or not in his previous life! Every country, region used different languages, however, the game had an in-built translator. Even though the translations were not always accurate, the meaning would always be conveyed.

They were staring Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu, and three of them were pointing at Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. As they were still very far away, Zhang Yang could not hear what they were saying. But he could recognize that those three were among the players that he and Sun Xin Yu slaughtered while they were searching for the boss!

Reinforcements! What 'great' timing!

"Icy, let's pick up the pace! We've got company!"

The two of them were increasing their strength in slaying the boss, while Zhang Yang managed to push the boss a little backward!

There were over 20 Japanese players coming their way. Knowing the fact that these Chinese players had crossed the border over to their territory to snatch the bosses within their area, and killing three of their members along the way, who could ignore that!

The party started charging at them.

"Is your cool down time over?" Zhang yang asked.

"17 seconds left!"

"Alright. Let's wait until they enter the aggro range of the boss, then I shall use {Shadow of the Void}, and you shall use {Vanish}! Let the boss handle those shorty japs!" Zhang Yang laughed.

The players of the Takeshi's Fort had already collided into them. Other than Sanada Jubei, the rest of them had jumped down from their own [Mounts] and had began their assaults on Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu. At first, Zhang Yang thought that Sanada Jubei had a [Battle Mount], but upon closer observation, the player wasn't even attacking him, he was only trying to act tough!

Sun Xin Yu activated her {Blur} without hesitation as she turned around and began her counter attack against the players from Takeshi's Fort. Her equipment was very powerful, and her assassin profession was specialized for player versus player battles! After a few sidesteps and slashes, an enemy fell! The player dropped a pair of gaunlets that glittered in a greenish light.

A Green-Copper equipment? They actually came to seek for a fight with such low grade equipment?

"Just, disappear!" Sun Xin Yu said.

Although Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu are powerful, kiting a boss while engaging 20 over players, was a little too much to ask!

"Time to disappear!"

{Shadow of the Void}, {Blur} were both activated at the same instant! Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu immediately disappeared from the sight of the Japanese players.

But poor Whitey could not disappear together with Zhang Yang. Immediately, it became the main target of the boss. Boom! Boom! Boom! With every stomp inflicting more than 10,000 damage,

Morchason stomped Whitey to it's demise!

The moment Whitey was dead, the aggro of Morchason immediately switched straight onto those Japanese players! With a deadly swing of it's long tail and a resounding sonic boom, the Japanese players were all flung into the air!

When the city gate catches fire, the fish in the moat suffer from it!

Sanada Jubei and his party members were screaming in agony. Why did this boss turn against its 'countrymen'?! It was alright if it did not aid in chasing down the foreign intruders, it actually began to attack it's compatriots!

Left without a choice, they were forced to engage!

Although Morchason was basically a fool right before Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu, it now acted like a true Yellow-Gold boss! With some stomps and swings of it's tail, the party was wiped out!

20 seconds had passed, and Zhang Yang came out from the void. Seeing how the boss was chomping down their asses, Zhang Yang could not help himself but to laugh out loud.

Afterwards, he quickly ran towards the boss --- because if Morchason killed every single players on it's aggro list, it will disengage from the battle and recover all of it's health points. By then, all of the trouble that he and Sun Xin Yu went through will

all be for nothing!

"You filthy Chinese pigs! I am going to tear you both into millions of pieces!" Sanada Jubei was cursing in rage!

Zhang Yang arrived at Morchason, however, he did not launch any of his attack but only pointed the tip of his sword at Sanada and said, "Dream on! Just get lost!"

In China, many people had amicable terms with the Koreans and Japanese, several being fans of their media and culture, but so were those who used terms like 'Shorty Japan' and 'Gaoli bangzi'. Zhang Yang had no idea which type of people were the majority, but he was very sure of one thing, he did not have any good opinion towards Japanese men!

Although Sanada managed to activate {Sacred Protection} to grant himself a 5-second of invincibility, it only prolonged the inevitable. The moment the {Sacred Protection} vanished, Zhang Yang pierced through Sanada's chest with his sword and fresh blood oozed out like a fountain, depleting all of Sanada's remaining health points!

Grunting in anger, his body slowly slipped onto the ground. How could this had happened? They were having the advantage in numbers, while the two China players were engaged in a boss battle! Logically speaking, it should be just a walk in the park to take them both out for good, but how did the situation get turned around like that?

"Just roll away with your 'eggs' and get lost!" Zhang Yang withdrew his sword and turned back to the boss, blocking the big mouth of Morchason! The moment these bunch of Takeshi's Fort players were all dead, the aggro of the Morchason was instantly switched back onto Zhang Yang.

Sanada Jubei was releasing his soul back to the the graveyard while posting comments on his regional channel saying, "There are two China pigs trespassing over into our territory, just by the Mountains of Miduo, and he is a Guardian! Gather around and chop up the two China pigs into pieces!"

In just an instant, the regional channel was full of their unrestful voices, with countless of them swearing to start a war.

In their previous attempt, the players of the Takeshi's Fort had managed to reduce the health points of the boss by a few 10,000, leaving Morchason with only about 70,000 health points left. Zhang Yang and Sun Xin Yu finished off the boss in a short time, leaving behind tons of loots on the ground!

Zhang Yang quickly began to search the ground. He did not have the interest of finding any equipment, what he was looking for was the drop of the [Monster Attack Order]! Hoping, praying for it to drop!

After conveniently picking a few of the Yellow-Gold equipment and some Gray-Silver equipment, and finally, Zhang Yang found a piece of pale purplish parchment. It was just the size of a palm, one side of it was had the word 'Order' and the other side had the word 'Monster'.

[Monster Attack Order] (Consumable)

Use: Marks a territory and lead monsters into bring destructive damage to the territory that is targeted.

Zhang Yang could not help himself but to reveal a sinister smile on his face, having thought to himself, "One Sword Stroke, Liu Wei, I bet none of you would have guessed... that I would obtain a [Monster Attack Order]... I shall make you look 'good'! Don't you guys love to fight for glory? Don't you guys want China to only have one territory? I shall fulfill your 'dream'!"

Shorty Japan - a term used to make fun or discriminate Japanese.

Gaoli bangzi - a common Chinese slang term used in damning the Koreans.